



# **A UFO LOVE STORY 2**

**The Adventure Continues**

**By Erik Neilsen**

A UFO LOVE STORY 2  
The Adventure Continues

by Erik Neilsen

## Table of Contents

### Preface

Chapter 1, pg. 1.	Going For A Ride
Chapter 2, pg. 22.	Planet Til
Chapter 3, pg. 52.	After Brunch
Chapter 4, pg. 74.	Feeding The Smaller Animals
Chapter 5, pg. 91.	Flying The Houks
Chapter 6, pg. 114.	Over The Falls And Beyond
Chapter 7, pg. 138.	A Forlix Ride
Chapter 8, pg. 158.	Post Forlix Ride
Chapter 9, pg. 180.	Back Outside
Chapter 10, pg. 205.	The Multa Arrive
Chapter 11, pg. 233.	Ready For The Ride Back
Chapter 12, pg. 261.	After The Scare
Chapter 13, pg. 279.	Sunset On Planet Til
Chapter 14, pg. 312.	Time To Leave
Chapter 15, pg. 334.	Getting Our Things, Then Back To Earth
Chapter 16, pg. 351.	A New Day
Chapter 17, pg. 377.	Going Out To Dinner
Chapter 18, pg. 400.	Waking Up To Love
Chapter 19, pg. 424.	My Love Awaits
Chapter 20, pg. 452.	Another Big Day
Chapter 21, pg. 480.	Zem And Bev's Return
Postscript.	Bartok words. Pg. 499

## Preface

This is a continuation of the first book, "A UFO Love Story." I have made that book available for free on the internet. I would recommend that you read it first. In it, you will find the physical descriptions of the Reall couple, Zem and Bev; their two sentient machine-being helpers and friends named Pim and Mim; (Their kind are called Nal) their pet Panny; the kinds of clothing we were all wearing at this point and many other things. But if for some reason you can't, I will at least tell you that Zem and Bev are fairly similar to humans. Zem is only about a couple inches shorter than me. The Reall have attractively set blue eyes that are slightly larger than human eyes. These are also just slightly more almond shaped. Their heads are bald with craniums that are a bit larger than humans. Pim and Mim are jet black spheres about six inches across. Though they look alike to human perception, they are male and female Nal and a couple. Panny is a cute little creature with reddish hair. It looks like a cross between a cat and a lemur with a fur covered, prehensile tail. I am a blond male. Though I don't like to brag, I am quite attractive. Sue is a blond super fine ultra goddess. Who, if you read the first book, is a human woman I met by chance and fell in love with back on the ship Pol-Wim. Though to suit their own tastes, Zem and Bev had Pim and Mim change the color of Sue and I's hair, for the time being, to platinum blond.

## Chapter One Going For A Ride

If you read the first book, you know that Zem, Bev, Sue and I were on our way out of Zem and Bev's island beach house. We are heading to the door to go outside. Heading toward their spaceship that they had parked out on the beach. Panny, a creature called a Falik and a female falik named Lika were out playing on the beach. Zem and Bev were walking arm in arm. Sue and I were walking arm in arm following a few paces behind them. Zem and Bev exited their house and walked out onto the beach. As Sue and I exited also, Sue looked at Zem and Bev and said with a big smile, "The first place we're going to. Do you visit it very often?" Zem and Bev turned slightly with smiles on their faces. They paused briefly to let Sue and I walk next to them. As they did so, Bev said, "We sometimes do. But most often in our free time, we just explore." While we walked toward the ship, I noticed that off toward the horizon the clouds were beginning to break up and there was more blue sky showing through the gaps. I said, "It's too bad I couldn't send my sister some postcards. Boy would she flip out."

Zem, Bev and Sue chuckled a little. I just grinned more widely. Zem said, "I'm sure she would. But something tells me she is going to be flipping out at some point in the future anyway." (As you probably remember from the first book, human caused global warming was going to cause the earth's demise a lot faster than anybody expected. In about fifty years, most of the live on earth will be gone. But Zem and Bev were going to allow us to save our families) I chuckled a little as Sue beamed a wide grin at Bev and Zem. I then said with a wide beaming grin myself, "I suppose she will be. I can't wait to see the looks on their faces." As we approached the ship, I could see Pim and Mim settling into their hemispherical depressions on the front instrument panel. Zem said, "Do you know if your sister or her husband believe in U.F.O.'s?" I said, "My sister and I discussed it a few times in the past. We both came to the conclusion that they probably existed. As for her husband Ed, we never discussed it." Zem said, "Well hopefully they won't flip out too bad. And the less religious they are, the less they will flip out." I said with a more somber expression, "I don't think my sister or her husband Ed are very religious."

As we all stepped onto the ramp of the ship, Bev said, "I hope not. I would hate the thought of helping anybody who thought of advanced beings such as ourselves as demons." We paused at the back of the ship and turned back toward the beach as I added, "I know my sister wouldn't. But if Ed even hinted at it, though I love my sister and am fond of my niece and nephew, I would just leave them to their fate." Zem said with a slight smile, "Well that will be your decision to make." Sue said to Zem and Bev with a smile, "As I said before, after learning what Erik and I have learned, I can't see anybody holding onto any stupid monkey voodoo religion." Panny and Lika had come over to the edge of the ramp. Zem looked at Panny. Probably thinking something to him, he reluctantly came aboard. Making slight little whimpering sounds as he kept

2

looking back at Lika. Panny turned around and sat down when he got to the inside of the ship. Lika had her cute little front paws on the ramp. Lika was making a little louder whimpering sounds as she and Panny looked at each other longingly. Sue said with some slightly sad compassion in her voice, "Aw. It looks like Lika wants to be with Panny."

Zem said to Sue, "She'll get over it." This didn't do anything to lessen Sue's compassionate state. After glancing at Zem and giving Lika another look, Sue turned to me and buried her face in my shoulder and said sadly, "I can't watch!" Zem said to Sue in a consoling manner, "It isn't as if he'll never see her again." Bev looked at Zem and said, "Can we bring her?" Zem looked at Bev with a somewhat stern look and said, "We've talked about this before. You know what a handful two of them can be." (As you remember, back on the ship Pol-Wim, Sue came out of the bedroom after everybody had gone to bed. Sue looked at me with a hopeful look mingled with a little apprehension. The whole event which we later showed to Zem and Bev) Bev clasped her hands over her chest and said with pretty much the same expression as Sue had, "Please darling." Sue and I also looked at Zem with hopeful looks. A loving look came over Zem's face as he looked at Bev. Zem caressed his hands up Bev's arms as he said, "You know what that look does to me darling. I suppose it will be alright." Sue and I grinned at each other.

Bev kissed Zem and then hugged him enthusiastically. Then Bev said, "Thank you sweetheart!" Zem became more pleased as Bev hugged him. After a few moments of this, Bev seemed to think something to Zem. Because Zem said verbally with passion in his voice, "Oh darling!" Zem had his eyes lightly closed with a loving look on his face as he embraced Bev a little more firmly. Sue and I looked at each other as we grinned and hugged also. After a few extended moments of their loving embrace, Zem and Bev parted a little and they both smiled at Lika. One of them must have thought something to her.

Because Lika abruptly leapt onto the ramp, scampered aboard the ship and tackled Panny. They rolled around on the floor chattering excitedly to each other. They were obviously happy to be together. Zem and Bev released each other more as we all grinned at them. The ramp began to raise and the little bit of sand that was on it slid off from it as if pushed by some invisible broom. Panny and Lika were running around on the couches as Sue and I smiled at Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev smiled at us as Bev said, "One of our favorite places happens to be in this galaxy. We'll go there first."

Sue and I were grinning with anticipation as Zem and Bev turned and started walking toward the front of the ship. Sue said to Zem and Bev as we went with them, "Can we set up front with you?" Zem and Bev both grinned at Sue. Bev said, "Sure." Zem said, "Erik is half way to being a UFO pilot anyway." Though Sue and I figured that Zem was just being kind, Sue and I's grins widened a little. Panny and Lika were still excitedly scampering around. Panny jumped on Zem's mid section to very briefly hold on before jumping off of him to the other couch. Lika followed Panny in the same manner. Zem glanced at Panny and Lika and apparently thought something to them. Because they immediately settled down. They held onto each other with their arms and tails as they still had happy

3

expressions on their cute little faces. It was adorable to look at. As we approached the front of the ship, I stepped over by Panny and Lika, as they hugged each other on one of the sofas. I held out my arm and said, "Panny, Lika." Zem and Bev glanced back with smiles on their faces as first Panny and then Lika jumped on my arm and clambered onto my shoulders. Zem, Bev and Sue laughed as Sue reached and took hold of Lika.

Zem said, "I told you two could be a handful." I laughed a little as I took hold of Panny in my arms and Sue took Lika in her arms. We both petted them as we continued toward the front of the ship. Zem sat down in the front seat on the left. Bev held out her hands to me and said, "I'll take Panny for now." As I handed Panny to Bev, I said, "Ok." After Bev took Panny, she held him in her arms and petted him as she sat across Zem's lap. I sat down in the other front seat and Sue sat across my lap. Both Zem and I held our girls a little as they petted their pets. The holographic sphere appeared in the air. As before, it was near where Pim and Mim were. It showed a representation of the galaxy we were in. This quickly changed to an arm of the galaxy. Which then changed to a group of stars, then a solar system and then to a planet. The view outside the window went black for a few seconds and a half lit planet materialized out the front window. Bev turned to us and said, "This is a very popular destination. This planet's called Sachen. I wouldn't be surprised if we saw some other beings about."

As Bev was saying this, Zem flew the ship toward the lighted area of the planet at a frightening speed. Panny moved from Bev's hold and sat his back paws on Bev's thigh. He put his front paws on the instrument panel. As he excitedly looked out the front window, Sue said, "Panny isn't going to activate something he shouldn't is he." Zem continued to pilot as Bev smiled at Sue. At the same time, Bev put an arm around Zem's shoulders and said to Sue, "The instruments aren't programed to respond to the touch of a falik." We stopped abruptly in the atmosphere. Though as usual, I didn't feel a thing. We must have been about eight to ten miles above the surface. Below us, I could see partially forested mountains and canyons. There were lakes and rivers here and there. To the right, there was a bit of ocean in the distance. There were large puffy clouds scattered about here and there below us.

Zem smiled at Sue and I and said, "Without Pim and Mim around, they will respond to a human touch. So be careful." This made Sue and I grin. Sue said, "I'm not touching a thing!" This made Zem, Bev and I laugh a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Lika was wiggling around a little. Apparently she wanted to do what Panny was doing. So Sue released Lika. Lika put her front paws on the instrument panel with her back paws on Sue's thigh. Lika happily took in the scenery too. Sue put an arm around my shoulder as I petted Lika a little. Bev looked out the front window and looked back to Sue and I. Bev said, "This planet is a little larger than earth and the atmosphere is a bit thicker. But at this altitude, you won't notice much difference."

Then Zem slowly moved the ship down lower and off to the right a bit. In the distance, there appeared to be a rather large mass of birds. Though as we got closer, I could see that they weren't all of the same size and they weren't quite

4

as bird like. Sue said, "Wow!" as we got closer. Getting closer yet, they started to become more massive. Panny chattered excitedly. I had no doubt he had done this before. Following Panny's lead, Lika also chattered a little excitedly herself. Looking at the flock of creatures, there had to be at least a hundred of them. The closest thing I could describe them as would be manta rays. But a tiny bit thicker. Along the bottoms of them, they were fairly flat. Though there was a bit more outward curvature along their backs. Here and there, the wings of some slowly flapped up and down in the air. As we got close to them and started flying amongst them, Sue and I's expressions had changed to amazement. These creatures were massive. The largest had to be two hundred yards across and nearly as long. Though there were a few babies flying that weren't quite as big as our ship.

There were a few others which were laying on larger ones' backs and others on their undersides. They had wide mouths in the front and



rather small eyes off to the sides of their mouths a little distance. The color of these creatures on their undersides was pale bluish color. Though their backs were a deeper shade of greenish blue. Sue said, "They're beautiful! What are they called." Zem and Bev grinned at Sue and I. Zem said, "They're called Tasers. (The first S is pronounced as an S. Not a Z) And they're a lot of fun to ride too." I said, "It that what we're going to be doing?!" Bev then said, "Yes." Sue and I looked at each other with surprised, happy looks on our faces as Zem and Bev looked back out the front window. Sue and I's surprised, happy looks turned to grins and we turned also to look out the front window. Bev pointed to one and said, "Let's go to that one honey." Zem brought the ship quickly to a point about sixty feet above the back of the one Bev pointed to. Bev grabbed Panny and set him on the floor. Sue did the same with Lika. They both happily scampered toward the back. Chattering a little excitedly as they went. Then Bev and Zem stood up and smiled at Sue and I.

Sue and I were still grinning as we stood up also. Bev said, "Shall we go?" Sue and I took hold of each other's hand as we started toward the back of the ship. Zem and Bev took hold of each other's hand as they walked next to us. Pim and Mim followed them. Sue said to Bev as we went, "It isn't going to be too cold up here with your top is it?" (Bev was wearing the same top she had on back at the beach house. It was light blue and long sleeved. The collar was slightly V necked. There was a solid band of material that went around the top at breast level. The solid strips of fabric that went down the tops of Bev's shoulders, around her collar, cuffs and around the bottom of her top were appropriately wide. The rest of it was made up of strips of fabric that were about an inch wide. These ran horizontally and vertically. Between the strips of fabric were squares about an inch wide that had no fabric. Making these areas look like a lattice) Answering Sue question about her top, Bev said, "No. It's nice out." Panny and Lika were happily playing around a little at the back of the ship.

As you know if you read the first book, some maketake machines had two alcoves. One for making and one for taking. The one on this ship had a larger than normal sized single maketake alcove. As we approached the back of the ship, eight Nal came out of the maketake alcove in a group. These split up and

5

two came to hover near Sue and I. Another went to hover near Panny and Lika. The others went up near the top of the ramp. Eight more Nal came out of the make alcove. These all lined up near the ceiling where the other ones were. The back ramp began to open. As soon as there was room, the Nal that were lined up near the top of the ramp darted out. As we stopped near the ramp, Sue and I turned to Zem and Bev. Sue said, "Where are those Nal going." Bev said, "You have probably seen nature shows showing fish around reefs who go

and hang out while smaller fish clean them. Well the tasers appreciate it when we send Nal to perform the same sort of function. Though they can do a little more than just clean.” Sue and I smiled at each other. Bev’s answer made perfect sense.

The smell of this atmosphere was clean and fresh smelling, with a tinge of coolness to it. Panny and Lika scampered onto the ramp before it was completely down. The back ramp stopped at a horizontal position. Bev stepped over to the maketake machine and retrieved what I took to be a beach blanket. Bev handed it to Zem. As Bev went for another, Zem said, “The tasers aren’t that dirty. But a blanket will help.” This brought grins to Sue and I’s faces again. Then Bev handed me a blanket. I said, “Thank you.” Zem held their blanket as he and Bev walked out onto the ramp. Sue and I went with them. We paused out on the ramp to take in the view. It was magnificent. We were about three miles above the surface of the planet. There were tasers flying all around. One near us was a little over half the size of the one we were above. It was about thirty five feet above and fifty feet behind the back end of the one below us. The distance between most of the tasers averaged about a hundred yards. Some were flying higher than ours and some were flying lower. Here and there, we could hear these creatures give out short, foghorn like calls. We all walked to the back edge of the ramp. Zem looked at us with a grin and said, “Lets go.”

Zem and Bev then jumped off the ramp. Panny and Lika went next. Sue and I briefly exchanged grins. Then we jumped. We fell about thirty feet. Then, just like when Pim first levitated Zem and I back on earth, I again had that brief sensation of being surrounded by water. We then all floated down onto the back of the taser. After we all landed on its slightly spongy feeling back, it started to move a bit erratically up and down. Sue and I briefly took on slightly alarmed looks as Sue steadied herself and said, “Whoa!” Zem and Bev weren’t bothered much. Which quickly relieved any anxiety Sue and I were feeling. Zem said in a slightly jovial manner, “Everybody scratch!” Zem dropped his blanket as he and Bev dropped to their knees. Then they started scratching all around them. Panny and Lika started doing the same. Sue and I dropped to our knees too as I dropped my blanket next to me. We started scratching all around us too. The skin of this creature felt like somewhat soft plastic.

Our taser gave out a low frequency foghorn like call that seemed to have a hint of pleasure in it as the creature settled down. I could also feel the sound through the parts of my body that were in contact with the creature. Bev looked at us with a smile and said, “He’ll be fine now.” Sue and I both grinned. Which Bev and Zem did too. The Nal that accompanied Sue and I flew off to tend to other tasers. Panny and Lika’s Nal flew to just in front of and a few feet above the

head of our taser. Pim and Mim stayed behind. Bev and I picked up our blankets as we all stood up. While we did so, the other smaller taser that had been behind us flapped its wings a little quicker and started to glide toward us at slightly above the height of my head. I could tell that it would easily fit between us and our ship that was hovering above us. Bev dropped her blanket and said, "It looks like somebody wants a pet." I dropped my blanket again. Pim and Mim lowered a little to let it pass. Sue and I instinctively ducked a little and we both said with awe and surprise on our faces, "Whoa!"

Again, rather than being bothered, Zem and Bev found pleasure in this. Probably because it was something that they were used to. Zem and Bev started happily scratching on its underside. Sue and I did the same as it slowly passed over us. I could feel its body vibrate briefly as it emitted a low frequency sound that was almost too low to hear. Our taser gave a similar response that I could feel through my feet. There were two fairly large nostrils near the front underside of the taser passing over us. Farther off to either side were two areas with five slats that appeared to be gill like structures. Which I took to be used for filtering things out of the air. It made a low pitched, moaning like call from its mouth as it continued to pass overhead. Its nostrils opened as it passed over. I could hear air rushing in and then out. Once it had gone past us, it banked a little off to the right and gained a little altitude. The Nal that had apparently been under our taser, cleaning it, started making passes around its mouth.

Our taser opened its cavernous mouth and the Nal went inside. Presumably to clean in there as I had seen videos of small cleaner fish do with larger fish around reefs. A baby taser had been on the back of a nearby, apparently adolescent taser. It peeled itself off its back and did a spin in the air as it flew in our direction. It flew down and started heading toward the back of our taser. We all grinned as Bev said, "Look at the baby!" Sue said, "It's adorable!" It made a more high pitched call as it came to land on the back of the taser we were on. It landed a little ways closer to the rear. The taser we were on vibrated. Emitting a sound from its body that we could feel in the air and through our feet. Though it was at too low of a frequency to actually hear. Zem said, "I think it's curious." Other tasers without a Nal tending to them seemed to be heading in our direction. I could see some other Nal coming from the back of our ship and head toward these other tasers. I didn't know if they were going to chase them off or clean them. Maybe they were going to do both. I was too enchanted by the baby taser to bother asking.

I looked at Zem and said, "Could you make a couple more Nal to take more panoramic shots of us?" Zem said with a grin, "Sure." Then Zem seemed to briefly think something. We all then went back to looking at the baby taser. I could see the baby taser's eyes looking us over. It then undulated its wings across the back of the larger one we were on and came right up to us. Our grins widened a bit as we all knelt to pet this creature around its front. It had its mouth open a little

and was breathing in and out of it. I figured that it was using its nostrils on its underside to create a suction for holding on. Panny and Lika climbed onto its back and started scratching it a little. Sue said to the creature, "You're so cute!" Bev giggled a little. Zem said while he was rubbing it, "What ya

7

doing little fella!" The baby wasn't exactly what I would call little. But it was cute. It gave out five short higher pitched calls almost as if it was answering Zem. It also vibrated its body a little. The creature we were on again vibrated itself in its own fashion. We continued to rub and scratch around the front of the baby. I ran my hand across its lower lip.

Sue saw what I was doing and did the same. The baby snapped its mouth shut on our hands. Sue gave out a delighted little high pitched utterance and pulled her hand out. It didn't hurt at all. Sue giggled. Zem, Bev and I laughed a little. Then I pulled out my hand. Sue started petting the baby again and said, "I think we'll call you "Snappy." We all laughed at this new name as we continued scratching and rubbing around its front. As we did so, it gave out another series of short, higher pitched moaning like calls. Bev said with a grin, "This is a friendly one. They don't often initiate contact this." We continued to pet it as Sue said to Bev with a grin, "Maybe it's because it hasn't seen a human before." Zem said with a smile, "I don't think one this young has seen much of anything before." Then Zem grinned again as the rest of us were doing. I said, "I can see why this is one of your favorite places. This is all so amazing!" Bev said to Sue and I, "We knew that you would like it." Sue's grin was accompanied by a bit of a surprised look as she said to Bev, "How could anybody not!" Zem, Bev and I laughed a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on.

We were of course all in agreement with Sue's enthusiasm. Panny and Lika continued to help us pet the baby as they sat on its back. Bev started to rub a hand along the baby's lips again. Sue did the same. The baby again clamped its mouth shut on both of their hands. This made both Bev and Sue give off giggle-laugh. Zem and I laughed too as Bev and Sue pulled their hands out. The baby taser then gave out a few short calls. Almost as if it was expressing amusement too. After a few extended moments, it blew some air out from its underside and flapped its wings a little. The front of its body started to rise up. Panny and Lika slid off its back as it rose up into the air more. It then started to glide over us. Zem, Bev, Sue and I scratched on its underside as it slowly passed over. It seemed to like this as it gave out a little louder, higher pitch call. As it passed out of reach, it flapped its wings and slowly rose up to near the other one that had flown over us earlier. We all stood back up. Sue said, "That was wonderful!" I said, "Yeah. But I'm glad it didn't poop on us."

Zem, Bev and Sue laughed. Which I quickly joined in on. After a few moments, Zem added with a little bit of laugh still coming out of him, "That would have been pretty bad." We all laughed a little more. After the laughter, we all grinned at each other again. Bev said, "We can have a seat now." Bev bent down and picked up her beach blanket. Sue bent over and picked up the other as Bev unfurled hers. Zem helped Bev lay theirs out. The blankets were light blue with colorful, artistically styled pictures of tasers and clouds on them. Sue and I stepped over and laid ours next to theirs. As we did so, Sue said to Bev with a smile, "The pattern is adorable." This made Bev grin. Which the rest of us did too as Bev said, "Thank you." When we were through, we all sat on our blankets and put an arm around our partners. Panny and Lika went to sit next to each other on Zem and Bev's blanket. Sue looked over at Zem and Bev and

8

said with a smile, "How do these creatures stay afloat." The rest of us were of course smiling as Bev said, "They have a number of hydrogen filled sacks inside them."

Sue said with a slight look of concern on her face, "Isn't that dangerous?" Bev said, "No." Sue smiled again as Bev added, "They are pretty fire retardant. Even getting struck by lightening is unlikely to kill them." Zem then said, "As Bev mentioned, the atmosphere is also pretty thick. Along with oxygen and nitrogen, there is also a good amount of xenon gas in it. Which helps keep them afloat." I said, "What do these creatures eat." Bev said, "At night, the tasers fly lower to scoop up insects that rise up above the forests. During the day, they receive a lot of their energy from photosynthesis." I said, "That must account for some of the green color." Zem said, "Yes. A green chlorophyll like substance is quite common throughout the universe." We all looked at the incredible panorama in front of and around us. Sue pointed off to the right a bit and said, "Look over there. A U.F.O.!" We all laughed. It was pretty funny, seeing how we were sitting underneath what people on earth would consider to be a U.F.O. We looked over to where Sue pointed.

About three miles away, there was a craft roughly the same size as ours coming down out of the sky. Zem said, "Looks like someone else is out for a ride and a view." We all grinned at each other as Sue said, "This is an amazing activity." Sue and I then briefly grinned at each other. Then we turned our attention back to the other spacecraft. It came down to just above another large taser about three quarters of a mile away. Apparently not being all that interested in the sight, Zem and Bev went back to looking at the amazing surroundings. Sue and I did the same. Though we would occasionally glance over at the other spaceship. It wasn't too long before I saw two beings lower down from what must have been an opening in the bottom. One of whom was carrying what must have been a blanket. I couldn't make out a lot of

their features at this distance. All I could really make out is that they were fair skinned, bipedal and wearing somewhat normal looking clothing. Sue saw what I was looking at. Then Sue said to Bev and Zem with a smile, "What kind of beings are those." Zem and Bev smiled at Sue and I.

Bev said, "Their kind are called Imlen." Sue and I looked over at them. As did Zem and Bev. I could see them laying out a blanket. Sue said to Bev and Zem, "Are they nice beings." Bev said, "Yes, they are quite nice. We would say hello. But I doubt if they came here to socialize." Sue and I nodded understandingly at Bev. Then we went back to taking in the wonderful scenery. Zem and Bev leaned the sides of their heads together. Sue and I did the same. Panny and Lika were laying next to each other near the front end of Zem and Bev's blanket. As they looked at the scenery too, they entwined and caressed each other's prehensile tails. It was very adorable. Zem and Bev as well as Sue and I every now and then would give our partners a little extra caress or nuzzle with our heads. After about five minutes of this, the creature we were on pitched downward a little. This didn't really alarm any of us at all. As we had seen other tasers occasionally do the same thing either going up or down. Though we all parted our heads from our partners and took in the sight with interest. Panny  
9

and Lika sat up a little and took on a bit more of an excited look. The air rushed pass by us a little quicker as Zem chuckled and Bev said, "Wee!"

Sue and I laughed a little. Even though this maneuver gave us a slightly alarming view of the planet's surface far below us. But Sue and I knew that we were in no danger. We also got a good view of the other tasers that were flying around here and there in front of and below us. After this slightly downward plunge, the creature rose up again giving us a good view of the sky and the other tasers that were flying around above us. We couldn't see Snappy anymore. He had probably landed on the other slightly larger taser near us. Our taser then resumed its level flight. It gave out another low pitched, moaning, foghorn like call and vibrated a little. Sue said, "I wish the earth had creatures like this." I looked at Sue with a bit more of a somber look and said, "If the earth had a habitat to support them, I doubt if they would like it. You know how our kind unfortunately like to exploit things." Sue took on a somber look too.

Zem looked at us and said, "They would have probably even found a way at one point to use them in warfare." Sue and I gave Zem and Bev somber nods in agreement. Bev smiled and said, "But having learned a better way, you will find humans on planet Bev to be different." This made Sue and I grin. Then we all turned our attentions back to our happy surroundings. After a few minutes of this, Sue looked at Bev and Zem with a grin and said, "Let's take a picture of us

sitting closer together.” Bev said with a grin too, “That would be nice.” Sue got up and sat next to Bev. Zem and Bev released each other as Sue did so. I got up and sat next to Sue as Bev and Sue put an arm around each other’s backs. Pim and Mim hovered a little bit above us all. The Nal that was near the front of our taser came over and rested on the taser about eight feet in front of us. Zem and I took hold of our girls’ shoulders as we all leaned in next to each other and grinned at the Nal. Bev said, “Say cheese!” Zem, Sue and I chuckled a little. Then we all said, “Cheese!” Even Panny and Lika looked at the Nal with their sharp toothed grins.

The Nal emitted a flash of light. Probably to let us know that a picture had been taken more than anything else. No doubt with the tasers here and there in the sky behind us, along with the puffy clouds here and there, this would make for a very nice picture. Sue looked up at Pim and Mim. Sue said, “You didn’t grin!” We all chuckled a little. Mim said, “Sorry.” Then Sue said as we all grinned at them, “That’s ok. Let Erik and I hold you for the next one.” Sue and I held out the palms of our hands. Pim came down and sat in the palm of Sue’s hand. Mim settled in mine. Then Sue said to Pim and Mim, “You two ready?” Grinning mouths appeared on their surfaces facing Sue and I. Just like they had done when we were taking wedding photos. Sue said, “That’s better.” Zem and Bev grinned at each other briefly before returning their attention back to us. Pim and Mim rotated their grins around their surface to be facing in the direction of the picture taking Nal. Pim said verbally, “Everybody say cheese!” Panny and Lika looked at the Nal too and did their adorable grin imitation again. The rest of us leaned into each other again.

Then the picture taking Nal flashed again. We then straightened ourselves out. Then Sue looked at Bev with a grin and said, “That will be a keeper too.” Sue

10

then grinned at Pim and held him up a little more. Sue said, “Thank you Pim.” I held Mim up a little too and said, “Thank you Mim.” Pim and Mim made their grins disappear as they started to rise up in the air. As they did so, Pim said verbally, “You’re welcome.” Mim said verbally, “Thank you too.” They started circling around each other’s surfaces at differing angles as they rose a little farther into the air. Zem, Bev, Sue and I grinned at each other. Zem said, “It’s a good thing that Pim and Mim don’t need to keep photo albums. It would be an exceeding thick photo album if they did.” We all chuckled a bit. I said, “I have no doubt.” Then I got up and helped Sue up. Sue and I stepped back onto our blanket as Zem and Bev again embraced each other. Sue and I sat down and did the same. We all returned our gaze back to the wonderful panorama in front of us. All of us had smiles on our faces of course. The picture taking Nal went back to where it had been for a panoramic view.

As we flew along, we were heading toward a big, puffy cloud that was roughly about a mile across. We could see other tasers in the flock begin to disappear into the wall of vapor. I said, "This should be fun." Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. The Nal that was near the front of our taser rose up a little way and shot to the back of it. It stopped about twenty feet behind and above our taser. As it did so, I said to Sue, "Hold on honey." Then I moved behind Sue and wrapped my legs around her a little. I also embraced Sue a little. Sue caressed my arms a little as I did so. Whatever it was going to be like in the cloud, I wanted Sue to be as comfortable as possible. Zem said to Bev, "Let me hold you too darling." They repositioned themselves and sat like Sue and I. As we got closer to the cloud, Bev smiled at Sue and I and said, "It's going to get a little foggy for a bit." We all briefly grinned at each other before returning our attention to the cloud we were approaching. As we got next to the cloud, the side of it loomed above us. As we passed into the cloud, Sue said, "Wee!"

Sue's exuberance made us all laugh a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on as we all became enshrouded in a thick fog. Panny and Lika also showed a little excitement. Though Lika more so. Our taser gave out one of its taser calls soon after we entered the cloud. It was also followed by the creature vibrating. Sending out another low frequency call that was below at least Sue and I's range of hearing. As it was a little cooler in the cloud, Zem and Bev cuddled each other a little closer. Sue and I did the same. I looked up, but could no longer see our ship that was above us. Sue said, "This is fun. I've never really been in a cloud before. That is, without a plane around me." Bev briefly glanced over with a smile and said, "There's a first time for everything." Sue and I lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together a little. Which caused more loving, contented smiles to come over our faces. I said to Sue, "I love you dearest." Sue brought her hand up to stroke my other cheek and said with a little extra nuzzling, "I love you too darling." Zem cuddled and nuzzled Bev a little more. Both of them took on more loving, contented smiles as Zem said to Bev, "I love you darling."

Bev nuzzled Zem a little more and caressed his arms a little more as she said to Zem, "I love you too darling." I was feeling extremely contented and full of love for Sue. Which no doubt Sue was feeling with me and Zem and Bev were feeling with each other. We all sat in silence for a few minutes. I said to Sue

11

lovingly, "You're just as cuddly in a cloud darling." Sue turned a little and said, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we went back to cuddling. A few extended moments later, the fog quickly began to become more illuminated. The sky beyond quickly become more visible. We then passed again into open air. The Nal that had gone behind and above our taser was now in front of and



above our taser. No doubt taking pictures of us exiting the cloud. The wonderful vista again revealed itself as the wall of cloud began receding behind us. Our taser gave out another low pitched call. We all looked back at the cloud as another taser emerged from it. We all looked at each other with big smiles on our faces.

Sue said, "I couldn't imagine some of the wonderful things you two must have seen in your lifetimes." Bev said, "We could show you many other places you two would no doubt find equally amazing. If not more so. Many of which, in time, we will show you." Sue and I briefly grinned at each other before turning our grins back to Zem and Bev. I said, "For Sue and I, the sight of you two is always going to be our favorite." Sue nodded in agreement as we all took on sentimental smiles. Bev said, "That's so sweet." Zem then grinned and said, "Even if we're not naked?" We all laughed. (As you remember from the last book, Sue and I did accidentally see both Zem and Bev naked for a brief moment) After the laughter, Sue said with a rather plaintive edge to her amused response, "You know that was an accident!"

This caused us all to laugh again. After the laughter, I said, "I try not to think about it. Though I would have to imagine that the Reall aren't as hung up on nudity as humans are. So I hope you won't be embarrassed when I say that if not for this expression on your faces," (I then demonstrated Zem and Bev's surprised and slightly shocked expressions when Sue and I accidentally saw them naked. Which caused even more laughter) After the laughter, I continued on, saying, "You two would have made wonderful, if a little risqué, marble sculptures." We all again smiled sentimentally at each other. Bev said, "Thank you. But we have Reall eugenics to thank for that." Changing the subject a little, Sue said, "As for the various places in the universe you may have to show us, it's hard to imagine anything being as wonderful as this. I know you enjoy having us around. But to us, we're just us. It's always going to make us feel a little guilty that you have more to offer than Erik and I." Zem said, "We can't help it that we're advanced beings. Please just try not to worry about it. Besides, as I said before, what may seem to be a big deal to you isn't all that big of a deal to us."

I said, "All Sue and I can do is try to not be too annoyingly grateful." We all grinned at each other before returning our gaze back to the wonderful vista around us. As we watched the incredible sights, an adolescent taser had flown in nearby the larger taser that had flown over us earlier. I saw Snappy fly ahead of the larger taser. Snappy had probably been riding on its back. Then Snappy headed toward the adolescent taser. Sue looked too and said, "There's Snappy." We all looked with smiles on our faces as Snappy flew over to the back end of the adolescent taser. Then Snappy clamped onto the back of it with its mouth. We all laughed as the adolescent taser made a series of short calls. It then began to do a wide inverted loop with Snappy biting down on its rear end.

No doubt Snappy was enjoying going along for the ride. Sue said, "I hope we didn't give Snappy any naughty ideas about biting." Bev looked at Sue with a smile and said, "You didn't. I've seen them do this before." Bev and Sue briefly grinned at each other before going back to observe Snappy's playing.

Snappy let go after their loop and they both playfully flew around each other. Though the adolescent didn't get too rough with Snappy. After we watched all of the amazing scenery for a while, I decided to suck on Sue's earlobe a little. So I moved one of my hands and caressed Sue's hair back on one side. Then I started to give Sue's ear a little love. That is as well as I could with Sue's earring in the way. Sue cocked her head to the side a little. We both had our eyes lightly closed with pleased, loving looks on our faces. I moved my arm back down around Sue. Sue lovingly caressed my arms as Sue nuzzled my lips back a little with her ear. After a few extended moments, I figured I had better stop before I became aroused. But Sue and I were apparently the same wavelength. Because before I actually did stop, Sue said with a pleased voice, "Don't start anything you can't finish darling." I pressed my cheek against Sue's ear and chuckled a little. Zem and Bev grinned at us. Then Bev said with a little playful curiosity to her voice, "What are you two up to." Sue and I grinned at them too.

Then Sue said, "Erik's just nibbling on my ear. And he knows how much I like it. But this isn't the place for it." To which I added, "But it's just too much fun." Zem said, "I know exactly what you mean." Zem began kissing Bev's ear. Both of them lightly closed their eyes with pleased, loving looks on their faces. I nuzzled my cheek against Sue's ear. We both lightly closed our eyes with loving looks on our faces. As Sue caressed my cheek back with her ear, I said in a soft, loving voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue said in a soft, loving voice as she turned her lips toward mine, "Oh darling!" We kissed each other tenderly as Sue turned a little and slid an arm around my back. As we caressed, our kissing started to turn a little more passionate. Zem and Bev also started giving each other a caress filled kiss. Panny and Lika moved off Zem and Bev's blanket. They started scampering around and playing together on the back of our taser.

That thing I didn't want to happen down below did start to happen. Luckily, it felt like it was going to expand in a direction that wouldn't get bunched up and uncomfortable. Sue and I kissed for about a minute. Then we embraced each other. Sue whispered into my ear as we caressed each other, "You're lucky we aren't alone right now darling." We parted enough to look into each other's loving faces. Sue stuck out her tongue just enough for the tip of it to be visible between her lips. I knew what that meant. So I brought my lips to Sue's and slowly sucked Sue's relaxed tongue in past my lips. Then we started kissing passionately again. My tongue and Sue's wonderful tongue slid around each other's as we kissed. I heard Zem say to Bev

in a soft, loving voice as Sue and I kissed, "I love you darling." Bev answered Zem in the same sort of voice and said, "I love you too darling." Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then we sat upright a little more. Sue and I turned to again look at the amazing scenery as I laid my cheek near the top of Sue's head. Both of us had loving, contented looks on our faces.

Zem and Bev were doing about the same thing. Panny and Lika playfully

13

scampered back over onto Zem and Bev's blanket and laid down near Zem. The puffy white clouds here and there around us looked so nice as they went off into the distance. We could all see a bit of the planet from our taser's back. The tasers would occasionally call out or alter their flight a little like ours had done earlier. There were also some other smaller ones off in the distance of various size that would occasionally fly past each other while rubbing against each other. Sometimes doing loops in the air. They often called out in what seemed to be a playful taser manner as they did so. It was all so beautiful. But still, as I was sure it would always be, having my dear sweet love in my arms was the most beautiful thing of all. After a while, I looked over at Zem and Bev and thought to them. I said, "Zem, Bev. I'm not interrupting any thought kisses am I." Including Sue in this telepathic link, Sue picked up on it also. Sue gave me a little extra loving caress as she smiled at Zem and Bev too. Zem and Bev smiled at us. Bev said, "Not really. Besides, I'm sure you know how it is by now. When your souls are entwined, there isn't a lot of need for words."

This caused sentimental looks, combined with a little emotion, to come over Sue and I's faces as we all gave our partners a little extra loving caress." Zem briefly gave Bev a little extra loving look before smiling again at Sue and I. I said to Bev, "What are you trying to do. Get Zem and I to drag you girls off to some bedrooms?" This caused everybody to laugh verbally. We then grinned at each other. Sue thought and said, "Mind if we think to each other as we take in the view?" I heard Zem say in my mind, "For as long as you want to." We all turned to take in the view again. I said, "The sights are so wonderful. It's hard to look away." Sue said, "It certainly is amazing. But I'm still a little afraid of one of the tasers up there pooping on us." This caused us all to laugh again. Bev said, "These creatures usually avoid eliminating waste on each other. But even then, Mim and Pim could make anything unpleasant they detected heading our way disappear." Sue smiled up at Pim and Mim. Who were hovering about six feet above and between us couples. Then Sue said, "It's another reason why it's so nice having you two around."

As the rest of us smiled at them, Mim said, "Thank you." Pim said, "And we like being around." This causes us to grin at them. Our

attention caused them to start circling a little faster around each other's surfaces at different angles. Then Bev, Zem, Sue and I grinned at each other before turning back to look at the scenery. We all got snugly with our partners again. Then I said, "I was thinking about the advanced state of your species. I know that you're the product of eugenics. But how did your kind know when it was time to become immortal." Zem said, "By about ten thousand years after our species was at the level of advancement of yours, we had learned of a large number of species who had mental abilities that were beyond our kind. Using some of them as a benchmark, we as a species decided to put off our immortality until we, as biological entities, were at least a match for most of them. Though by that time, our kind were living, on average, about a thousand years. This of course slowed down our eugenics program. But our kind weren't in any great hurry."

Then Bev added, "Our kind of course could have taken the easy road and genetically modified ourselves to be whatever we wanted to be. But it was

14

unlikely that we would turn out better than evolution or eugenic breeding would lead us to be. So to be safe, as usual, we chose the slightly more difficult path." Zem then said, "We also have the same saying that you have on your planet. Which is that it's better to be safe than sorry." Sue said, "What about the Reall who passed on before you decided to become immortal. Weren't they bitter about it?" Bev said, "Not at all. In fact, sometimes they come back physically for a visit if they feel "lifesick." Which isn't very often." Then Zem said, "There is an added benefit to being a superior being. Which that the afterlife for us becomes even more lifelike. So there isn't really anything to miss. In one aspect, you yourselves have experienced how real that afterlife can be." Sue and I looked at them with surprise on our faces. Zem and Bev turned to look at us too with slight smiles on their faces. I said verbally, "That virtual reality game we played. That was actually an example of the afterlife!"

Bev said, "No. But for the Reall, you wouldn't notice any difference. Though as we said, actual life is still more preferable. In the afterlife, we can experience any reality we like. Which given our vast knowledge of the universe, you just couldn't imagine the variety of things to choose from. Though as for the reality of the existence itself, it isn't quite as real for humans as yet. Neither do you have the control we do. But for most humans, it is better than nothing." Sue and I looked at each other with amazed looks on our faces. We then looked again out into the wonderful scenery and took a few moments to absorb this new revelation. I then thought to Zem and Bev, "From what I have heard, the thing Hindus look forward to most is simply not being reincarnated."

Zem said, "Scientists on earth have discovered microbes that have managed to survive on the spent fuel rods of nuclear reactors. Which for the microbes, must have been an unpleasant evolution. With the kind of filth Hindus are born into, it's no wonder that they wouldn't want to be a part of that process again. Though their whole concept of reincarnation is stupid anyway." I said, "I suppose that humans, like microbes, could adapt to live in all sorts of filthy conditions. Fortunately, they will be destroyed before they get a chance to de-evolve to that point. There may be a purpose to flies enjoying putrid, stinking flesh. But it would be disgusting for an advanced species to adapt to what would be basically similar conditions." Sue then thought to Zem and Bev and said, "Learning the things we have from you two is sure a lumpy ride. On the one hand, learning all of the amazing things that we have. Also, seeing and experiencing the wonderful things like this. Along with experiencing my love for Erik (I gave Sue a little extra loving squeeze at this point. Which Sue returned) or my affection for you two.

"Another thing is that even though I leaned a little more toward being an agonistic, I can't thank you enough for completely freeing me from the cult of religion. Then on the other hand, there is the unfortunate aspect of knowing of our limitations compared to the Reall. Or learning about terrible things like the destruction of the earth. I must say, it has been an amazing experience that no science fiction movie could ever have prepared me for." Zem said, "I take it you approve then." Sue and I looked at them with big grins on our faces. Zem and Bev smiled at Sue and I, then grinned too. Sue then said verbally, "More than

15

words can describe!" Bev said, "We're happy you're happy." I then added, "But we're happier you're happy." This made Zem and Bev laugh. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Bev said with a mirth filled voice, "Don't make us start tickling you again!" This caused us to all start laughing again. I could even feel telepathic humor coming from Pim and Mim. Back on the island, when there was a mock argument between Zem and Bev and Sue and I as to which couple was happier, Pim and Mim certainly seemed to enjoy themselves helping Zem and Bev tickle Sue and I.

After the laughter, Sue said, "That was fun." Then Sue turned her grin up to Pim and Mim. The rest of us grinned at them as Sue said, "It was also interesting how you guys made it possible for us to tickle you." Mim said, "We're full of surprises." I said, "You certainly are." After a moment, we all looked at the scenery with contented smiles on our faces. After a minute or so, I thought and said, "I have seen things about time travel in many science fiction shows. Is such a thing possible?" Zem said, "To the extent that it is shown in your science fiction, I'm afraid it is only a fanciful plot device in those stories. To go

into the past for example and alter things would set up an alternate reality. But there is only room for one reality in reality. So with the time traveler being the path of least resistance, even the slightest change to that reality would bump them out of it like they weren't even there. As for going into the future, for the most part, you can't go somewhere that doesn't exist yet. Though if somebody could, anything that such a time traveler brought back with them that altered that time line would also disappear. Which makes going there pointless."

Bev then said, "Speaking of fanciful, many of your scientists have theories about parallel universes that occupy the same space, but are somehow invisible to us. But it just isn't true. They have also tried to explain the weakness of gravity as it being a leftover bleeding through from some other dimension. Being largely clueless, some have even tried to invent a fifth basic building block of matter. Calling it a chameleon particle. I wouldn't be surprised if they even tried to blame the effects created by what they refer to as dark energy or dark matter as an artifact that is bleeding through into our reality from sort of out of sync, invisible, parallel universe. Your scientists can guess all they want. Unfortunately, humans on earth are going to be out of time long before they have a chance to stumble across the way things actually work." Sue said, "Wouldn't the afterlife be considered an alternate universe?" Zem said, "All of what you see around here for instance exists in the realm of reality. What exists in the afterlife exists basically in the realm of thought. Though the one can sometimes have effects on the other, they are both basically different things."

Sue said, "It's kind of a shame about the time travel thing. Though we could no doubt do so in virtual reality, I thought it might be interesting to see some earth dinosaurs." Zem and Bev looked at each other with surprise on their faces. Their surprise caused Sue and I to look at them with a little surprise on our faces too. Zem and Bev turned happy, surprised faces to Sue and I. Then Zem said verbally, "The coincidences just keep coming with you two!" Sue and I quickly and briefly shot each other even more surprised and happy looks before turning these expressions back to Zem and Bev. Zem then added, "It just so happens

16

that we're very well acquainted with a planet that has them and many other large creatures." Sue and I were grinning of course as Bev quickly added, "And I was going to suggest that we go there next!" Sue said with a bit of excitement in her voice, "We can't wait to see it!" Zem said, "What are we waiting for." Then Zem gave Bev a little extra squeeze, then a kiss on her cheek. Zem then said, "After you dear."

Bev turned to Zem with a sweet smile on her face and gave Zem a quick peck on the lips. Then Bev stood up. Panny and Lika also sat up and looked excited as Zem, Sue and I stood up also. At this point,

some Nal flew in from somewhere. Two came over to Sue and I. Two others this time hovered near Panny and Lika. I could see others heading back into our ship. Zem and Bev stepped off their blanket. Panny and Lika also got off of it. Then Sue and I stepped off ours also as Zem and Bev picked up and started folding their blanket. Sue and I did the same. When their blanket was folded enough, Zem folded it the rest of the way. Then Zem held their blanket in his hands and it fairly quickly faded out of existence. Sue and I both looked at Zem with a bit of an impressed look on our faces. Then Sue said, "I don't know if I'll ever get over your being able to do that." As Sue folded our blanket up, Zem said with a smile, "It's easier than creating things." Bev held out her hands for Sue to hand her our blanket.

As Sue did so, Bev told us basically the same thing that Zem had told me when we were on our way to the examination room back on the Pol-Wim. Bev said, "For us Reall, it isn't so much a matter of what we can do, (As the blanket Sue handed Bev disappeared in her hands, Bev added) but how many different ways we have of doing things." Sue looked at Bev with a look of happy surprise and said, "I still think I would rather be a Reall." We all grinned at each other. Then Zem said, "There are a few ways of getting off a taser. But I think the most fun way is to jump off." This made Sue and I's grins widen a bit. Zem said to Sue, "You remember Bev beating you back to the beach house?" This made Sue look at Bev with a mock angry look. Sue said with a little drawn out emphasis, "I remember." This made us all laugh. Afterwards, Zem said, "Well this is your chance for redemption." We all laughed again. Then Zem said in a jovial manner, "Everybody, off with your shoes." We all started taking off our shoes. As we started doing so, Bev said to Sue in a joking around manner, "I'm still going to beat the pants off you!" We all laughed again. Sue said gleefully, "You wish!" We all laughed a little more.

As we stood there holding our shoes, I said to Bev, "If you do beat the pants off Sue, leave her to me." Zem laughed. Which I quickly joined in on. Bev and Sue looked at each other with a playful look of open mouthed shock and surprise. Sue briefly turned her expression to me and then back to Bev. The girls reaction added a little more zest to Zem and I's laughter. Then they started laughing too. Zem then looked up at Pim and said, "Pim, would you go make sure that the taser holds still?" Pim and Mim started moving toward the front of the taser. Then Zem looked at the rest of us and said, "Ok. Everybody line up." We all took our shoes in one hand and lined up. Zem looked at Panny and Lika. They chattered excitedly and lined up also. We were all grinning as we all faced the

17

front of the taser. Then Bev said, "The last one in the air is a rotten egg!" We all laughed a bit. Pim was about seven feet in the air near the front of the taser. Mim was a little above and to the left of him. If I

had to guess, I would say that Pim was emitting some sort of force into the taser's brain that would keep it from reacting to our running on it.

Then Zem said, "On your marks! Get set! Go!" We all took off toward the front of the taser. The race was on! The taser vibrated some and gave out a call as we ran toward the front. But it didn't make any erratic movements. Not surprisingly, Panny and Lika took the lead. Bev was the next one and I was the next closest. Though Zem and Sue were just about with us. We were all having a lot of fun. Near the end, Sue gave off a burst of speed and overtook both Bev and I. I was impressed. My girl could really run! Bev let out an excited, high pitched yell as Sue began to pass us. Zem began to overtake Bev and I. Panny and Lika jumped off the front of the taser. Their Nal followed them as they fell out of view. Sue was the first to jump off after Panny and Lika. Zem was the next to jump off. Whether it was Bev or I who went next was too close for me to call. But it didn't really matter.

We all whopped and yelled as we launched into the air and began falling. Pim stopped whatever he had been doing and quickly caught up with Zem. Mim did the same with Bev. The view was a magnificent sight. With the planet below, the few clouds here and there and some other tasers flying below. The Nal let us fall about a hundred feet before slowing our fall. We were all at slightly different altitudes when we finally stopped. All of us were still breathing a little heavily from our race. We were no more than twenty feet apart. All of us laughed as the Nal began to bring us all to a level plane. The taser we just jumped off of was passing overhead. Our breathing was nearly back to normal as we were brought near each other. Zem said with a grin, "That was fun!" Panny and Lika were also chattering excitedly. Sue said to Bev and I, "I don't know which of you were the rotten egg!" I said, "It was too close to call. But it doesn't matter." Sue reached out to me and said, "Even if you were the rotten egg darling, at least you're my rotten egg."

Having pulled each together, Sue and I embraced as we held our shoes in one hand. Then Sue and I lovingly kissed each other. Zem and Bev also took hold of each other. Then Zem said to Bev, "It was a good race darling." Zem and Bev then kissed each other too. As they did so, our ship descended near us. While our ship came toward us, a few more Nal were flying inside. No doubt going back into the maketake machine. It didn't take long for the ship to come down and bring its ramp level with our feet. Our other Nal floated us onto it and set us down. As we all stood on the ramp and grinning widely at each other, Sue said, "Can we say goodbye to Snappy?" Bev said, "Sure." As the ship flew up, Panny and Lika scampered around a little on the ramp. Playing with each other as they did so. Our ship came up to about fifteen feet in front of where Snappy was flying. Snappy made some seemingly excited body movements and gave out a few short calls. We all dropped our shoes back a little on the ramp. At the sight



of Snappy, Panny and Lika chattered excitedly a little more. Sue and I let go of each other and held out our hands.

18

We were all grinning at Snappy as Sue called out, "Here Snappy!" Zem and Bev also let go of each other and held out their hands to Snappy. Bev called out a little too and said, "Commere you little dear!" Panny and Lika did the same with chattering like sounds. It was very cute. Snappy gave out a few more short calls. Giving its wings a couple stronger flaps, it flew up to us. We had to push back on it a little to impede its forward momentum. Then we again started rubbing and scratching him. (Though I didn't know if it was a him or a her. Or if there was any such distinction with this species) Snappy seemed to enjoy our attention as he gave out a few more short calls and vibrated its body. Not being able to reach well, Panny climbed up my pant leg and Lika climbed up Sue's. Sue and I took hold of them and set them on Snappy. Which made it easy for Panny and Lika to pet him too. As Sue petted him, Sue said, "We're going to miss you." I said, "You would make a good pet. But you'll get too big." Bev said, "I hope we meet you again you little sweetheart." Zem said, "You're such a good little taser."

Panny and Lika also made chattering sounds as they petted him. Snappy gave off a few more short calls as we petted him. After a little more petting, Zem said, "We have to go little fella." We all grinned at each other. Then I looked at Panny and held out my arm to him. I said, "Come on Panny." At about the same time, Sue held out her arm to Lika and said, "Come on Lika." Panny jumped on my arm and scampered up on my shoulders. Lika did the same with Sue. Zem gave Snappy a little shove backwards. The rest of us helped him do so. We all called out, waved and made various statements of farewell as he floated backwards a bit. I myself said, "By Snappy!" Apparently, Snappy wasn't through with us yet. Because he gave his wings a couple more strong flaps and flew back into us. We all laughed and pushed back on him to stop his momentum. We all petted him a few more times. After giving him a little more petting, Bev said, "Sorry Snappy. But we have to go." As Sue petted him, Sue said, "We like you too." Zem said, "Ok. By." Then Zem shoved him back again. Which the rest of us helped him do.

We all said more goodbys as we did so. Snappy gave out a few more calls and started heading toward us again. This time, the ship pulled away from him. We all waved some more as the ship began to gain elevation. As the ship began making its way up through the tasers, we all stood there taking in the majestic sight. Pim and Mim moved toward the front of the ship. When we cleared the flock of tasers, Zem and Bev turned to us with smiles on their faces. Zem said, "That should make for some fun memories." Sue said to Bev as she took

Lika off her shoulder and held her in her arms, "Thank you again. That was so much fun!" Bev said, "We enjoyed ourselves too." Sue stepped over to Bev and they kissed each other on the cheek and hugged a little before parting. As they did so, I picked Panny up off my shoulder and sat him down. Sue lowered Lika down. Then Lika jumped the rest of the way onto the ramp. Before standing back up, I picked up my shoes and Sue's. Bev said, "Let's get inside. It's starting to get cold." As Zem picked up Bev's shoes and his, Sue said, "It is getting colder."

Then we all walked inside and the back ramp started to raise. Panny and Lika

19

scampered over to the couch on the left and hopped up on it. Zem and Bev went over to it too and sat down. As they did so, Sue and I went over to the couch on the right and sat down. While we put our shoes back on with smiles on our faces, Sue said to Bev, "Are there any predators that can cause the tasers problems?" Bev said, "There are a couple different kinds of smaller predators that can give them problems. But not much." Having gotten our shoes on, Zem and Bev stood up. Sue and I did too. As Zem and Bev started heading toward the front of the ship hand in hand, Sue and I held hands too and went with them. As we went, I said, "How long do tasers live." Zem said, "About eighty to one hundred years." Sue said, "That's good. If you ever bring us back, Snappy will still be around." As Sue and I reached the rear front seats, Bev said, "Snappy may not be as small and cute by then. But there will probably be other baby tasers around." Zem and Bev gave each other a quick kiss and sat down in the front seats.

Sue and I kissed briefly before going to take the seats behind theirs. We probably could have sat up front again. But it didn't really matter. The trip wouldn't take long. Sue and I held onto each other's hand as long as possible. Grinning at each other until we could no longer touch. We then both sat down grinning at each other before turning our attention toward the front. The holographic sphere again appeared in front of the instrument panel. An image of what appeared to be some sort of star cluster appeared in the sphere. Then it fairly rapidly started going through other images. What I took to be clusters of stars turned out to be clusters of galaxies. The planet we were going to must have been very far away from our position. Then the images finally settled on a planet with two small moons near each other in orbit around the planet. One moon was twice as large the other. They weren't all that close to the planet. But appeared to be a little closer to it than our moon was to earth. The moons were so close to each other, I figured that the one must orbit the other while they circled the planet.

The sky outside quickly became dark and stars became increasingly visible as we left the atmosphere. Zem and Bev glanced back at us

with smiles on their faces. Bev said, "Ready or not, here we go." Sue and I grinned. Bev nodded at Zem before they both turned toward the front. The stars outside went dark. A few seconds, stars again became visible. Along with them, the planet and moons that had been represented in the holographic sphere also became visible. Our ship began heading toward it at a rather leisurely pace. The angle of the sun where we were was fairly near the planet. Giving the illuminated part of the planet a crescent shape. Just like the earth, planet Erik and planet Bev, the atmosphere was blue with cloud systems here and there. I also saw that there was plenty of ocean. The two small moons were visible on the other dark side of the planet. Both had different amounts of illuminated crescent shapes. It was an impressive sight. Though the shadow of the smaller moon on the larger one took a little chunk out of the larger moons crescent shape. I said, "I don't think I could ever get tired of sights like this."

Panny and Lika came walking up between the seats. Panny jumped up on my lap and Lika jumped up on Sue's. Sue and I both held them up in our arms for

20

them to take a look too and petted them. At the same time, Sue said, "It's beautiful. What's the name of this planet." Zem turned to look at Sue as we slowly approached the planet and said, "This is planet Til." Sue and I took on surprised looks. Which we quickly flashed at each other and then back to Zem and Bev. As Sue and I again held and petted Panny and Lika in our arms next to us, I said, "You mean as in your friends Til and Mav?" Bev said with a grin, "That's right." Sue said, "And they brought earth dinosaurs here?! You were right. That is a coincidence." I said, "The moons make for quite a sight." We all looked at the planet and moons as Bev said, "I've told Til and Mav that I thought the moons were a very nice added little touch." Zem turned to look at us with a smile and said, "Mav can be such a showoff." We all laughed a little as Zem grinned. Bev was grinning at us too at this point as she said, "They aren't really like that."

Then Bev looked at me and said, "I don't know if Zem told you. But they are our oldest and dearest friends. They were the other couple standing with us in the wedding photo you saw." A slightly surprised and delighted look briefly came over Sue and I's faces. Bev turned to Zem and said, "After Erik and Sue have gone back to earth, I can just imagine how mad Til will be when I tell her about all of the fun we've been having." Zem said, "She'll get over it. After all, we could only have Erik and Sue for such a short time for now. I'm sure they will understand if we've been a little selfish with our time with them." I looked at Bev and then to Zem with a smile on my face. I said to Zem, "I don't know if you spend too much time around Mav and Til as it is. But any friends of yours are friends of ours. We wouldn't mind if you invited them." Sue added, "We wouldn't want them to think ill of

us anyway for not asking to meet them too.” Zem seemed to consider it as Bev looked at Zem and added, “It wouldn’t make that much difference. Let’s call them and see if they would like to join us.”

Sue and I grinned as Zem looked at Bev with a smile. He said, “All right sweetheart.” Bev grinned also and said, “Oh goodie!” This made Zem grin too. Bev then got up and quickly went to set across Zem’s lap. Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Zem and Bev then turned to us with smiles on their faces. Then Zem said, “Excuse us for a moment. We have to do some communicating.” Sue said, “Ok.” I nodded in agreement. Zem and Bev looked back forward and put their heads next to each other. They then seemed to be lost in thought. I sat Panny down on the floor, got up and went over to Sue. We grinned at each other as I held out my hands to my dear sweet love. I said, “I need a kiss angel wife.” Sue sat Lika on the floor too. Panny and Lika went scampering off together toward the back. Sue took my hands and stood up. As Sue did so, Sue said, “And I need a kiss angel husband.” We smiled lovingly at each other as we held each other in a loose embrace. I said, “I love you darling.” Sue said, “I love you too darling.”

We brought our lips together as our eyes began to lightly close. Sue and I kissed each other with loving tenderness as we embraced each other more. Sue’s soft, loving lips nearly made me melt. Both of us started to kiss each other more passionately. We both gave off slight moans of pleasure as we kissed and lovingly caressed each other. After about thirty seconds, I broke off our kiss and

21

we fully embraced each other. We both had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces. I said with a voice full of loving emotion, “Oh darling. Each of your kisses is a trip to heaven.” This made Sue sigh with pleasure as Sue also caressed her cheek against mine. I quickly added, “Please don’t ever stop making me love you more.” Sue said in a voice full of emotional love as my dear sweet love moved her lips back toward mine, “Oh darling!” Fairly quickly, we were kissing each other each other passionately again. With a little uncomfortable firmness. We also held each other more firmly. Despite the firmness of our kiss, we both gave off moans of pleasure. As we kissed, we heard Zem say to Bev, “I wish you hadn’t told Mav that I said that he can be a showoff.”

Sue and I started to quickly diminish the intensity of our kiss. Zem then said to Bev, “You know what he’s likely to do now.” As Sue and I parted our kiss and looked at each other with loving smiles, Bev grinned at Zem and said, “If they decide to show off, I’m sure it will be fun.” Sue and I turned toward Zem and Bev with the sides of our heads next to each other’s. Both of us by now were grinning. Zem was grinning at Bev too as he said, “It should at least be interesting.” Sue and I briefly grinned at each other before turning our grins back to

Zem and Bev. As we did so, Zem turned to Sue and I and said, "That is if Mav decides to be showy. Which knowing him as I do, is a good possibility." Sue and I briefly turned our grins back toward each other with a little added happy expressions. Then we turned our grins back toward Zem and Bev. I said, "What you do normally is quite a lot to take. I don't know if I can handle a Reall being a showoff." Everybody chuckled a bit. Which I quickly joined in on. Then Sue smiled at me and said, "Like Bev says, I'm sure it will be fun. Whatever happens. And a good opportunity for more fun pictures."

Bev said, "You're going to have a photo album that is going to be the envy of any human for a very very long time." Sue and I turned back to Bev and grinned as she spoke. Then Sue said, "I know! And I'm so happy, I could kiss you both! In fact, I think I will!" Zem and Bev laughed as Sue and I let go of each other. Sue happily skipped over to them both. Then Sue gave Bev and Zem a kiss in their cheeks. Sue then hugged them. After a couple moments, Sue then stood up and hopped a few times over to the space between our chairs. Then Sue began jumping up and down a little. With a wide, beaming grin and a extra happy expression on her face, Sue hopped in place with her hands clasped over her chest. Turning in a circle a little with each little hop. At the same time, Sue made a happy "Eee!" sound as she did so. Panny and Lika were sitting on the left back couch. Sue's excitement caused them to act in an excited manner too as they hopped around a little on the couch.

We all laughed a little at Sue's exuberance. But I was feeling a little exuberant myself. So I took Sue's hands and we skipped to an open area behind the seats. We took each other's hands and skipped in circles around each other with big grins on our faces. At the same time, we made happy, exuberant, "Eee!" sounds. This made Zem and Bev laugh even more. Panny and Lika made excited chattering sounds as they dashed and played around our feet. After Sue and I had gone around a few times, we stopped and held each other close. Both

22

of us had our hands clasped together between us and turned our grinning faces back to Zem and Bev. Sue and I had the sides of our heads together with wide grins and extra happy expressions on our faces. Then Sue and I heard Mim say telepathically in our minds, "Look at me please." Sue and I only had to turn our eyes a little to Mim as she flashed. Zem and Bev grinned at Mim as Mim said, "No doubt such a happy photo might go in your photo album."

A bit of an appreciative look accompanied Sue and I's happy expression as we parted the sides of our heads. Sue said, "Thank you Mim! You're so thoughtful!" Zem and Bev grinned back at us. Bev said, "They certainly are that." Then Bev gestured to the seat up front where she had been setting and said, "You can sit up front if you like." I said, "We like!" My simple, happy answer made Zem, Bev and Sue

chuckle a little as Sue and I walked arm in arm to the seat Bev gestured to. Zem and Bev grinned at each other as Sue and I went to the seat. I sat down and Sue sat across my lap. Panny and Lika followed us and Lika jumped up on Sue's lap. Panny jumped up on Bev's lap. Sue and I petted Lika as Zem and Bev petted Panny. Zem looked over at us with a smile and said, "Here we go."

## Chapter Two

### Planet Til

We all looked out the front window. Our ship by this point was about half the distance from the planet as it had been. We started moving toward the lighted side of the planet at a frightening speed. The ship slowed down when we reached the atmosphere. Then the nose of the ship slightly pointed down toward the surface as we started going in at an angle. We traveled at this angle at a fairly fast speed. I don't know how fast we were going. But it must have been many thousands of miles per hour. We stayed on this course until we got to about twenty miles above the ground. Then we started moving parallel to the surface. There was ocean below us and some land off in the distance. As we got closer to the land, there were a couple of plateaus divided by a delta and a snow capped mountain range beyond. There were only a few clouds in the sky and a few smaller ones near the mountains. The land was a mixture of forest and open grassy areas. The grassy areas were of various sizes and shapes. I could make out a few rivers and a few lakes. Getting closer, we descended at an angle to about five miles above the surface and the ship began to fly level again.

The ship started heading toward the largest lake. It was near some foothills to the mountains. The lake itself was surrounded by a wide grassy area. Though the grassy area was mostly on our side of the lake with the narrower grassy area ending where a forested foothill began. The wide area of grass was about ten miles across and seven miles deep. Most of the lake had sandy beaches around its shore. The lake was larger than the grassy area with a bit of an irregular shape. On the left end, it was much narrower. As we got to about five miles from the edge of this grassy area, the ship began to descend at an angle to the

23

near edge of grassy area. I could make out small herds of animals here and there in the grassy area. The ship came to a stop at the edge of the forest about a hundred feet above the ground. The ship nosed down a little as Sue said, "Oh wow!" I said, "Amazing!" Panny and Lika also again put their front paws on the instrument panel and back paws on Bev and Sue to look out. Zem and Bev were smiling at us.

Zem said, "See anything that looks familiar?"

Below us there was a couple widely spaced groups of Brontosaurus types of creatures. There were about fifteen in the group near us. They were slightly differing sizes and feeding at the tree line. There were also a few baby ones amongst them. These animals were pretty much as scientists imagined them to be. They were mostly a grayish color. Though around the nostrils, inner area near the eyes and tops of their heads were a slightly reddish color. Their eyes were large and bird like. Around their eyes there was a band of yellow. A slight reddish band went down the sides of their necks. These widened out along their backs and then ran along the backs of their tails. Besides the brontosaurus, there were a few large Mammoths with straighter tusks than I had seen fossil pictures of. They were picking up fruit that had been shaken from the tree branches by the dinosaurs. Sue looked at Zem and Bev with an amazed look on her face and said, "Brontosaurus and Mammoths! How wonderful!" I looked over at Zem and Bev with an amazed look on my face also. Zem and Bev looked over at us with smiles on their faces.

Bev said, "Mav likes the larger creatures. What you call Mammoths are actually Mastodons. We call them Kafkins. Which is a name one of the groups of ancient humans called them. It meant "heavy tooth." And the brontosaurus are actually called Argentinosaurus. But we call them Ruka. Zem added, "Check out these other ones." The ship again became level and rapidly headed toward another group of about nine large creatures about a mile away. As we got closer, I could see that these creatures had to be twice the length of the largest ruka. I would guess somewhere near a couple hundred feet long. Their height was about sixty or feet high. These creatures had large, slightly flattened oval shaped bodies and somewhat small heads compared to the bodies. Getting closer, I could see that a very short neck connected their heads to their bodies. They had four legs with knee joints about in the middle of them. Their legs looked slightly too frail for their bodies. These creatures also had two fairly long, thin elephant like trunks that came out from the sides of their heads. From the back ends came a single tail that was a little longer and heftier than their trunks.

The way their tails moved gave the impression that they were at least somewhat prehensile near the ends. Overall, the creatures were a light grayish blue color. They were using their trunks to grasp tufts of grass much like an elephant would and pass them to their mouth, which sat between the base of the trunks. We came up to them and the nose of the ship again tilted downward a little to get a better look at them. One of them nearest to us hopped over a little almost like in slow motion. The quick arrival of our ship must have startled it a little. Sue and I looked at Zem and Bev again with an amazed look on our faces as I said, "They're incredible!" Sue said, "I take it that these creatures, like the tasers, use hydrogen to support themselves." Zem and Bev glanced over with

slight smiles on their faces and Zem said, "That's right." Bev said, "These creatures are called Forlix." Sue and I again returned our attention out the front window. Which Zem and Bev did also. The forlix that had hopped over was looking at us with fairly large eyes that sat above where the trunks came out of its head. Being satisfied that we weren't a threat, it went back to feeding.

I noticed that its feet were rather large for the size of its legs. Though its feet were a little obscured by the grass, I could still make out four somewhat long, thin toes on each. Three splayed out forward while the rear, stubbier one faced backward. There were fairly long claws on the ends of the toes and the whole foot seemed to be made for grasping things. Which along with their trunks and tails, I could see coming in handy in a strong wind. Looking at the forlix, I said, "Moving creatures like this couldn't have been easy." Zem and Bev briefly glanced over at us before returning her gaze to the forlix. Bev said, "Most weren't transported. They were made." Sue and I looked at each other with surprised looks. These we then turned to Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev looked at us with slight smiles on their faces. Then Zem said, "Mav and Til could have transported them. But they chose to make most of them. Though they just as easily could have stored them in a trans-dimensional bubble. If we wanted to, we could make those bubbles as small as a sub atomic particle."

Sue and I both took on surprised looks as Zem added, "As Bev pointed out to you both, for the Reall, there are many different ways of doing things." Then Bev said, "There was a time in our past when we Reall used to build very large spaceships which could have very easily transported them as is. But as our ability to build large ships increased, our desire to do so decreased. In fact, when it comes to getting from point A to point B, we don't really need spaceships like this at all." Despite the wonders Sue and I had already experienced, this caused surprised expressions to come over Sue and I's faces again. What Zem and Bev said brought home to me again just how small humans were compared to the Reall. Sue and I's surprised expressions made Zem and Bev's smiles widen a bit. Sue and I grinned as Bev said, "That shouldn't really surprise you. After all, we have millions of years of scientific advancement behind us." Zem added, "Add to that billions of highly advanced minds engaged in scientific inquiry. And the more we learn, the more the Mind is willing to tell us. Or that the Nal will help us with."

Then Sue said, "The realizations of how much like worms we must be to you is a little off putting." Bev said with a smile, "Try not to let it bother you. As the human saying goes, we put our pants on one leg at a time too." Bev's soothing words made Sue and I both smile appreciatively at her and Zem. I said, "With the speed at which the Nal can do things and their communications with the Mind, it's no



surprise that they are as advanced as they are. But it is kind of surprising that you aren't serving them." Zem and Bev laughed. I could also feel telepathic amusement from Pim and Mim. Pim did that thing that Zem and Bev had done to Sue and I back on the Pol-Wim. Time seemed to stop as Pim said, "It's cute how little you understand." Mim said, "The suggestion you made is unthinkable. Though the Reall are remarkably advanced, even if we wanted to be served, we would simply create our own Nal. Though by us being able serve

25

them, the Reall are in a way a service to us." Pim then added, "Besides, even we aren't all that much more advanced than the Reall. We have no wish to try to be. And as for our communion with the Mind goes, there are things that it won't tell even us. Though we can perceive its intellect to a certain degree. The Mind is the embodiment of infinity. The depth of it is something that humbles even us Nal."

Mim then said, "We hope that you don't mind us initiating a little speed thinking. But you will find exploring this planet to be a little more fun than wasting time on largely unimportant explanations." Bev said, "There you go being all considerate again." Zem, Bev, Sue and I expressed telepathic humor. We were all of course still smiling at each other. But because our thoughts were speeded up, as I said, time seemed to be slowed down. So none of us appeared to be moving. Sue said, "Besides, with time seemingly slowed down like this, it gives Erik and I more time to look at our loved ones." I said, "Though it would be nice if you two were in the picture too." Even though time seemed to be slowed way down, Pim and Mim very quickly came out of their shallow depressions in the instrument panel. They moved to in front of Zem and Bev at about chest level.

Then Mim said, "How's this." Before either Sue and I had a chance to answer, time again became normal. Zem and Bev took on sentimental expressions. As did Sue and I. Bev said to Sue and I, "You're both such dears!" Then Bev sat Panny on the floor. Lika jumped off Sue's lap and joined Panny. They then ran back to one of the couches in the back. Bev then took hold of Pim and Mim as she got up. Then Bev came over to Sue and I and gave us a hug with Pim and Mim in her hands. Bev, Sue and I lightly closed our eyes with happy, sentimental looks on our faces as we hugged Bev back. Sue said, "You only say that because you know our sincerity." Bev released us and stood erect as she took a step back. Bev released Pim and Mim. Then Bev took hold of them with her other hands. After uncrossing her arms, Bev held them up and smiled at them. Bev then said to Pim and Mim, "Time to be of service again."

Then Bev seemed to think something to them. A moment later, Pim and Mim turned in Bev's hands and Sue and I saw what was on them. Sue and I chuckled a bit as Bev and Zem grinned. Then Sue and I grinned too. Pim and Mim again had made grins appear on them. But

then their lips puckered to smooch. Bev released them. A sentimental looks overtook Sue and I's grins as Mim came over to my cheek and Pim went over to Sue's. Bev held her hands clasped over her chest with a sentimental smile on her face. Zem was looking on of course with a sentimental look still. Pim gave Sue a kiss on her cheek and Mim gave me a kiss on mine. Making smooching sounds as they did so. Then they backed away a little and grinned again. Sue said, "Thank you. But you're not getting off that easy." We all chuckled a bit. Pim and Mim gave off telepathic humor as Sue took hold of Pim. Knowing what Sue had in mind, I took hold of Mim and said, "You either." They puckered their lips again as Sue gave Pim a brief smooch on his puckered lips and I gave Mim a brief smooch on hers. After moving them away a little, Zem, Bev, Sue and I we were all wearing sentimental smiles.

Both Pim and Mim's lips turned to smiles too. Then Sue released Pim and I

26

released Mim. They started to float up as Pim spoke to Sue verbally. Though it wasn't really necessary, his lips moved as he did so. He said to Sue in an affectionate voice, "No worm could ever smooch like you." We all laughed. Pim and Mim emitted telepathic humor. Afterwards, Mim spoke the same way and said in an affectionate voice, "You're both such dears." Pim and Mim made their lips disappear and they started circling around each other at differing angles as they floated up a little further. Zem then said with a smile, "We should be getting to our destination. Mav and Til should be here soon." Bev went back to set across Zem's lap. With smiles on their faces of course, they both turned back to look out the front window. Which Sue and I did with smiles on our faces also. Pim and Mim didn't go back to the instrument panel. They just stayed up near the ceiling, slowly circling around each other. The ship became level again and we started toward the direction of the large lake we had seen at a higher altitude. Here and there below us, we saw various groups of large animals. Though none as large as the forlix. Some I recognized from drawings, toys or sculptures of prehistoric animals. Others were unfamiliar ones that didn't come from earth. Our ship quickly approached the narrower left end of the lake. As we got closer, I could make out a two storied structure on the shore of the lake. There was an area of what appeared to be well manicured lawn around it. Which probably kept these creatures from feeding around it. The second story was smaller than the lower one. Some of the roof of the lower story made a fairly wide, grass covered balcony around the upper story. This extended out over the lower structure a little. The roof of the second story was pretty much all grass. There were some small decorative plants in an area around the corners. In the center, there was a patio area with a decorative table and chairs. A set of stairs went from the ground

to a square extension of the balcony. Another set that went from the balcony to the top patio. With a small extension at the top of those stairs.

All these upper areas had guard rails around them a few feet high. The lower floor appeared to be a little larger than Zem and Bev's place on the island. Most of the walls again were mostly glass. As we approached, I could make out some patio furniture behind the house. Most of this patio was covered by a stepped, slightly slanted roof that was an extension of the balcony. Making an attractive roof over the back patio. About fifteen feet from the patio, where the sand began, a dock went out into the water about fifty feet. This led to a square platform that had another grassy roof above it. I could see that there was a table and chairs under the roof. Around the outside of it there was a railing about four foot high. This had a flat wooden top about a foot wide. I smiled at Zem and Bev and said, "This place looks a little nicer than your place on the island." Then I grinned and said, "This isn't from Mav and Til being showy is it?" Zem and Bev chuckled a little as our ship headed to a spot on the right of the house and near the beach. Our ship was apparently able to land itself as Zem and Bev both grinned at Sue and I.

Sue and I were grinning too as Zem said, "No. Our island place is just a cozy little retreat for when the weather is agreeable there. We have places on planet Bev that are equally as nice as this. Though there is no need for "Keeping up

27

with the Jones's" among our kind." Sue said, "I don't imagine there would be." Our ship came to a rest on the ground and the back ramp began to open. The front end faced the lake and the back end faced the field. The sun was just above the mountains. But the front window automatically took away much of the glare. Panny and Lika jumped from the couch they were on and scampered toward the back. Bev got up and held out her hand for Sue with a grin and said, "Shall we go?" Sue grinned too and took Bev's hand. As Sue stood up, Sue said a little excitedly, "I'm ready!" Bev and Sue started walking arm in arm toward the back. Zem and I smiled at each other and started to stand up as I heard Sue ask Bev, "Are we going to be riding any dinosaurs?" Zem and I started heading toward the back. Paying attention to our girls' conversation. Bev answered Sue and said, "Maybe. But Til and Mav have even more fun creatures here to ride."

Pim and Mim followed a little above and behind Zem and I. As the ramp lowered, I could smell pleasant, grassy air coming in from outside. When the ramp almost reached a horizontal position, Panny and Lika took off outside. They paused briefly to look around as Bev and Sue made their way onto the ramp. Then Panny and Lika excitedly started running in the general direction of the back patio. Zem and I stepped out onto the ramp too. We all looked around a little

as we came off the ramp. There were groups of animals here and there in the field that went off into the distance. As I said, some of the animals I could recognize. Others must have come from some other planet. Bev and Sue started walking in the direction of the patio. There was a group of five creatures that were fairly nearby. Overall, their bodies reminded me a little of a buffalo. They were nearly twice the size of an elephant and were covered in a short, slick looking black fur. They had legs that seemed to be a little larger diameter than you might expect for a creature of those dimensions.

The knee joints of their legs sat up a little higher than you might expect. Above which, their legs got a little wider. Their feet were proportionally large with four short, thick toes that splayed out from the front. Their heads reminded me of a cow's with ears that reminded me of a deer's. From the sides of their heads, there extended horns that were set up like a long horn steers. Except not quite as long. Also, they were more vertically flat than round. Coming from the bottom edge were a number of spikes that came down slightly and curved forward. The spikes reminded me of what you might see on a moose's antlers. Their tails were somewhat skinny and reached nearly to the ground. On the ends of them was a tuft of longer hair. By the overall look of these creatures, they were nothing to mess with. A little farther away and off to the right, there was a group of six dinosaurs of varying sizes. Two of which were babies. I had seen artists renderings of them before. But I didn't remember what they were called. They were about thirty feet long with somewhat triangular plates along their backs.

Near the ends of their tails were two fairly long spikes on each side. Their heads were fairly small for their size. Overall, their color was a dark tan color. Though there were darker bands of greenish brown color that went from the plates on their backs and ran down their sides. Speaking of the dinosaurs, I said to Zem as we caught up to the girls, "It's interesting that you and Bev as well as

28

Mav and Til seem to have an interest in earth creatures." Bev and Sue smiled at us. Zem said, "Mav found your planet by chance long ago. It was only after humans began to congregate in societies of a sort that I took an interest in the place." Sue said to Bev, "I suppose it is because of your policy of noninterference that kept your people from preventing the event that eventually drove the dinosaurs to extinction." We were heading toward the back patio. Panny and Lika had already made it to the dock. Zem and I smiled at Bev and Sue as Bev said, "Pretty much. Though you would find it difficult to imagine all of the destruction that goes on in the universe. Our kind could hardly make a dent in it even if we wanted to."

Then Zem said, "And as for humans, it's a good thing that neither we or any other beings did so. Another part of the reason nothing was

done to prevent the destruction is because nobody would want to take a chance in incurring the wrath of the Mind for so drastically altering the destiny of some basically unimportant planet.” We had reached the patio at this point. There was a low cabinet along the other side of the patio just under the roof. Just below the counter top, there was a larger than normal maketake alcove. This one was a little larger than the one on the ship and sat horizontally. The back of the house here was of course mostly glass too. There was a living area behind the glass in this part of the house and a kitchen on the grassy area side of the house. The interior wall of this living area was light blue. In the center of the house was an opaque area. On either side of this room was a hallway. On our side, it ran about thirty five feet to the kitchen on the grassy side of the house. On our side, in the hallway, there was a door near either end of the inner wall.

I took it one led to a bathroom and one to a bedroom. No doubt there was a similar setup on the other side of the opaque area. Sue said to Bev, “I would ask if any animals tried to crash your dinners. But I don’t think they would fit.” Zem and I stopped over by the table. Bev and Sue continued on to the maketake machine as Bev said, “The maketake would just create a Nal to chase away anything that Til and Mav wouldn’t want hanging around anyway.” They both turned to Zem and I with smiles on their faces when they reached the maketake. Pim and Mim floated just under the patio roof. Bev said to Zem, “What will you have sweetie.” Zem said, “A nice cold glass of Teka would be nice dear. You know how I like it.” Sue said to me, “What would you like honey.” I said, “Why don’t you pick out something for me sweetheart. Just make sure you put some extra love in it.” Zem and Bev grinned at this remark. Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other. Then Sue said, “You know I will darling.” Sue and Bev looked at each other with sentimental smiles on their faces before turning to the maketake machine.

Then I looked over at Zem and said, “I hope Mav and Til don’t take too long. I could go for a little something to snack on. Hopefully they haven’t eaten yet.” Zem said, “Even if they were full, to be polite, they would probably just make themselves un-full.” Bev and Sue came over with our drinks and set them on the table. I stepped over to Sue and said, “Thank you dearest.” Sue and I then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Zem said to Bev, “Thank you darling.” I started to pull out a seat for Sue as Bev said to Zem, “You’re welcome dearest.”

29

Sue sat down and said to me, “Thank you sweetie.” At the same time, Zem and Bev gave each other a brief but loving kiss. I leaned down and gave Sue another brief but loving kiss as Zem pulled out a chair for Bev. Then I went to take a seat as Bev sat down. As I went to set down too, Zem also leaned over to give Bev another brief but loving kiss. At the same time, Sue slid her drink over to her and slid my drink

over to me. We both smiled at each other. After Zem sat down, I smiled at him and said, "As far as making yourself un-full goes, the maketakes would be a glutton's dream."

Bev and Sue took a sip from their drinks as Zem said with a smile, "Luckily, the Reall aren't prone to such behavior." Bev and Sue sat their drinks down as Zem and I took a drink. Sue said, "I heard that in ancient Rome, the Romans used to have rooms called vomitoriums where they would disgorge to make room for more food." Zem and I had set our drinks down as Bev said, "With the amount of lead they consumed, it's a wonder any of them were able to think straight." I said with a bit of disgust on my face, "Those filthy, murderous, thieving, violent, wop homos." This caused everybody to take on a more somber expression as I added, "And as far as being homo goes, according to a program I once saw, most Muslims are apparently the same way. Just like the ancient Romans and Greeks, they have an extra passionate desire for young boys. And now, they're making it ok for Boy Scout leaders to be gay. But what father would want somebody to mentor their son who at least on the inside is probably looking at the boys and doing this."

Then I took on an expression of somebody who was looking at something with excited anticipation. At the same time, I ran my tongue around my lips. Also, sticking it in and out a little as if tasting something good and making "Mmm! Mmm!" sounds. This made Zem, Bev and Sue chuckle a bit. I just smiled a bit at their amusement. Zem said, "You make a good point." I said, "Hopefully humanity will be destroyed before it's ok for Boy Scout leaders to be card carrying members of the North American Man - Boy Love Association." Then Zem and Bev looked at each other with a little happier expressions. Which I thought was a little out of place as I said, "Despite all of the shortcomings of humanity, I hope that Mav and Til will still be glad to meet us." It was at this point we all heard what I took to be Mav's voice come into our minds. He said, "Sorry to break into your conversation." What I took to be Til's voice said, "From what Bev and Zem said, we will indeed be glad to meet you." This must have been what made Zem and Bev look at each other with a little happier expression as I spoke of unfortunate things.

They must have sensed Mav and Til making a telepathic connection. What Til said caused grins to appear on everybody's faces. Though Sue and I's were bigger. Mav said, "We'll be there soon. Would you go stand out on the lawn on the side where your craft is parked?" Zem said, "Are you up to something?" Mav said, "A showoff like me? What would make you think that." Zem, Bev, Sue and I laughed. We could feel telepathic humor from Mav and Til too. Then Til said, "We'll see you in a minute. By." Zem started to get up as he said, "This should be interesting." The rest of us got up too as Sue said to Bev with a grin, "What are they going to do." Bev said, "Knowing Mav. It could be anything."

Bev walked over to Zem as they grinned at each other and took each other's arm. Sue and I took each other's arm and we followed Zem and Bev out onto the lawn. We went a little toward the field side. As we walked, Zem and Bev started looking around with grins on their faces. Sue and I looked around too with a little excited anticipation written on our faces. I and no doubt Sue were curious to see what a Reall would do to showoff.

After a few extended moments, Zem and Bev stopped. They looked at each other and laughed a little. Afterward, Bev said with a mirth filled voice, "They brought the Tenat!" Zem and Bev laughed some more as Sue and I looked at them with slightly puzzled looks. Apparently, they were sensing something that Sue and I couldn't. Zem pointed off in front of us as he grinned at Sue and I. Bev grinned at us too as Zem said, "Look that way." We all looked in the direction Zem indicated. I watched the sky. Looking for some large spaceship to appear or swoop in from space. What I saw was something quite different. I saw a swirling pale colors appear in an ever widening arc above the horizon. Here and there, we could see bright points of light rise above the horizon. These directed their light toward a blue arc that began to rise above the horizon. Sue and I's mouths dropped open with an amazed look on our faces. We released one of each other's arms and put them around each other's backs. Not far behind the blue arc, the surface of what appeared to be a large moon began to spread out along the horizon.

On the surface were areas of vegetation and large lakes. The more it spread out, the more astonished Sue and I's expressions became. It must have been at least a four or five thousand miles across. Because it took up nearly all of the horizon in that direction. The pale colors that swirled in slow motion above the atmosphere were all the colors of the rainbow. But predominately green and yellow. As it rose above the horizon, it moved closer to the area of planet around us. Sue said with astonishment, "Is that a planet or a ship!" Zem said, "It's a ship. That is where Bev, Mav, Til and I are from. It's home." Sue and I watched in amazement at the ship flew to a position overhead and stopped abruptly. It took up most of the sky. Probably to keep things interesting, the areas of forest and lakes on the surface were irregularly shaped. The surface appeared to be fairly roughly textured. The buildings on the planet ship probably had vegetation on their roofs too. Sue said, "It's incredible!" Zem said, "Yes. It's pretty impressive. As Bev told you, at one time our kind built pretty large ships." I said, "If Mav meant to be a showoff, he succeeded!" Zem and Bev chuckled a bit. Sue and I briefly looked at each other with astonishment.

As we watched, the planet ship quickly moved away from our planet, then blinked out of existence. Almost faster than we could see, a small dot in the sky quickly flew down. Getting ever larger the closer it got. It stopped about a hundred and fifty feet above us. Zem and Bev

didn't react. But Sue and I were awestruck. It was a shiny black color, circular and must have been a mile across. I wondered how they could do such a thing without punching a blast of air toward the ground that would have doubtlessly blasted a crater into the ground. Though its appearance did cause a bit more of a commotion to the animals nearby. Causing them to call out with varying bellows. This ship of

31

course was much larger than the Pol-Wim. From the bottom on the side of the ship nearest us, a circular portion of it that was about a hundred feet across started to descend. Panny and Lika came up near to us as this was going on. As what was on it came into view, Zem and Bev laughed. Through his laughter, Zem managed to say, "Now they're really laying it on thick!"

On the platform there were who I took to be Mav and Til sitting on a wide golden ornate throne. Two golden brackets came out of the sides and bottom of the throne about three feet. These attached to a long pole on each side that went about eight feet in front of and to the rear of the throne. These poles were supported by human bearers. From each corner, three were holding a length of pole on their shoulders. Making twelve bearers in all. All of these bearers were wearing different kinds of clothing. Near each three was one of the android-robot things that Sue and I had seen back on the Pol-Wim. The robot that Bev said was basically an extension of the ship. As you may remember, they had no facial features. Only a narrow cone near where a nose would be and two more where ears would be. It also had hands that were more like mittens than hands. Though on these, the mittens were fingers. Four in all. The one we had seen on the ship was covered in a short gray velvet like fur. Though these were covered in shimmering, short silvery velvet like hair.

In the hand of each, they carried what whip that I think they called a cat of nine tails. Who I took to be Mav and Til were both grinning. They were wearing shining, silver toga like garments that covered most of their bodies. These garments had multicolored small flashes of light like glitter that flashed all over them. On their heads, each wore an ornate, glasslike, deep purple crown. These had small multicolored points of light in them that glittered as they moved around in an irregular pattern. From the top rim of the crowns rose deep purple, slightly fluorescent, ornate spikes about a foot long. These shone a bit brighter and had a bit of a "Star Wars" like light saber quality to them. These too had lights that moved around in them like the crowns themselves. Mav and Til were both wearing wide bracelets of gold with sparkling, light emitting jewels in them. Til wore a decorative and slightly elaborate gold and jewel incrustated necklace. On their hands they were also wearing rings with glowing jewels. They were both wearing footwear made out of the same material as their garments.



As the edge of the platform came to the ground about thirty feet from us, the robots all struck the first three of the humans near them. I could hear telepathically and in unison from the robots, "Move carefully dogs!" Starting from the front and going toward the back, each human received a lash. These humans had a look of sorrow on their faces to begin with. Which was briefly replaced by a look of anguish as they were struck. And judging from the sound these lashes gave off when they struck, I could see why. Zem looked at us with a hint of distaste on his face and said, "I'm sure this for your benefit. But you should hold off on any judgement until you see what's going on." Zem then turned again to watch the spectacle. As this procession approached, the robots continued to whip the humans now and then. It didn't take me too long to get what was going on. The first human on my left was someone who looked more nigger than sandnigger. He had a loose fro and was wearing a plain, off white

32

toga type of robe. Behind this person I recognized Pope John Paul the second wearing his papal dress. Though not the hat. He also appeared to be a little younger than was when he died.

The next human was some White guy wearing eighteenth century clothing. If I had to guess, I would say it was the guy who founded the Mormon church. The next guy was some Indian looking guy wearing a robe draped over one shoulder. I had heard that Buddha came from India. Maybe this was him. Behind him was a gook with a rather thin looking moustache and beard. He was wearing what looked like ancient Chinese robes. Maybe it was Confucius. I recognized the person behind him. It was David Koresh. Leading the way on the right was some sand nigger wearing a turban. If I had to guess, I would say it was Mohammed. I recognized the person behind him from stuff on TV. It was Gandhi. He was also a little younger than he probably was when he died. I also recognized the person behind him. It was the reverend Jim Jones. Behind him was another person I recognized. It was Martin Luther King. The next person was another Indian wearing clothing and jewelry that showed he was some important person. Maybe it was Krishna. The last one on that side was some sand nigger wearing simple robes. Maybe this one was Moses.

I looked at Zem and said, "Are those people who I think they are? Or are they only facsimiles." Sue also looked at Zem with interest as I asked this question. Zem and Bev looked at Sue and I with slight smiles on their faces. Then Zem said, "They are probably the actual spirits brought back into physical form." I grinned and said, "I might have to borrow somebody's whip." Zem chuckled a little as he and Bev turned back to watch Mav and Til's approach. Sue and I briefly looked at each other. I was still grinning. Sue still had a bit of a surprised look on her face. Then we looked forward again to watch the spectacle. As the procession got close, Mav called out a little and said,

"How's this for being a showoff!" Til giggled at Mav's statement. Zem and Bev laughed. Sue and I chuckled a bit. After Mav spoke, the pope and King looked up at Mav. For which they were whipped mercilessly. Panny and Lika started moving toward them. But Zem briefly glanced at them and apparently thought something to them. Because they quickly turned around and went back to where they had been.

While this was going on, I heard a telepathic command from the robots whipping the pope and King, saying, "Don't cast your filthy eyes upon your Gods!" No doubt this command was received into a language that those who couldn't speak English could understand. Those who were whipped gave out cries of pain. This caused another telepathic command from the robots saying, "Silence worms!" Which was followed by even harder whipping. Neither Mav nor Til took any notice of the whipping. But I took great satisfaction in it. Bev called out and said, "We certainly didn't expect for you to have the Tanat drop you off!" Til called out and said, "That's what comes from having friends in high places." Both Zem and Bev laughed again. Which Mav and Til quickly joined in on as Sue and I grinned. Zem said in a slightly loud voice, "Oh come on. Max and Ses would have been glad to do it just to break up the monotony." Mav and Til laughed a little more. Which made Zem and Bev chuckle.

33

Then Mav said, "Well as long as we surprised you, that's all that counts." They all laughed again. Sue and I chuckled a bit. Though I and no doubt Sue were still a little awestruck. I said to Zem and Bev, "Max and Ses, are they Nal or Reall." Bev smiled at us and said, "They're a Reall couple who's current duty is the operation of the Tenat. It's a kind of boring job. But they have plenty of things to occupy themselves with." Sue said to Bev, "Do Reall couples do everything as a couple?" Zem answered and said, "Usually." The two front robots stepped forward and held the shafts of their flails to the chests of the two front bearers in unison. I and no doubt Sue could hear a telepathic command from the robots saying, "Down carefully dog's!" The physical manifestations of human filth carrying Mav and Til's throne did as they were commanded. Kneeling down as they lowered the throne. After they sat the throne down, I could hear another telepathic command. They said, "Bow scum!" All but one of the kneeling bearers quickly put their faces to the ground. The nigger "King" gave Mav and Til an uppity look as he bowed down slower than the rest. The robot near him savagely whipped him. The front robot also moved over to him and whipped him also.

The nigger cried out grievously as Mav and Til stood up and walked over to us. Taking no notice of the expressions of agony, which soon lessened. Bev said, "I like your outfits." Mav said, "I thought you would get a kick out of it." Zem then said, "These are our two friends.

Erik and Sue.” I grinned and held out my hand as Mav did. As we shook, I said, “I’m loving all of this.” At the same time, Sue shook Til’s hand and said, “Any friends of Bev and Zem are friends of ours. For what it’s worth to you.” Til gestured her head over to the bearers and said, “Don’t let this put you off. We don’t dislike humans. But we have no pity for creatures that prey on the weaknesses of their fellow creatures.” Sue and I switched handshake partners and Sue said to Mav, “I’m very glad to meet you.” Mav said, “Same here.” I said to Til, “You’re as pretty as Bev.” This caused Til to giggle before saying, “Thank you. That’s very sweet.” Mav looked at me with a mock annoyed look and said in a kidding around manner, “Hey! No hitting on my girl!” We all laughed.

Afterward, I said, “I’m surprised how well you both speak English.” Til said, “Both Mav and Zem have a lot of interest in American culture. Which has rubbed off on me too. It is interesting in so many ways.” Til’s expression turned somber as she added, “As for the rest, I have to admit, it is a little like a human gawking at an automobile accident.” I had a bit of a somber look come over my face too as I said, “It’s too bad the American culture you find interesting isn’t going to last much longer.” A somber look came over everybody’s face as Mav said, “Yes. It is a shame.” Looking at Mav and Til, I said, “I hate to sully our meeting like this.” Then I gestured my arm over toward the bearers and said, “But would either of you mind if I vented a little anger at the main part of the cause over here.” Mav said with a grin, “That’s what they’re there for.” I quickly looked at everybody with a slight smile. Sue looked at me with a bit of a concerned look on her face and said, “Please don’t go ballistic on them sweetheart.” I said, “Don’t worry honey. They aren’t worth it.”

I then walked over to the bearers as the robots backed away a little. Mav and

34

Til turned to watch me. Pointing to the first one on the left, I said, “I take it this is Jesus.” Mav said, “Yes. But if you’re thinking of whipping him more, I’m afraid he developed a bit of a taste for it in life.” I said, “Oh. He’s one of those. That explains a lot.” I then pointed to the one on the right with the turban. I said, “I take it this is Mohammed.” Til said, “Yes it is.” I said, “I don’t expect to tell you anything that you don’t already know, but from what I have heard of Muslim history, this guy with his own hands cut between six hundred and nine hundred people’s heads off with a knife.” Pointing back to Jesus, I said, “And largely due to teachings of this piece of filth,” I then pointed back to Mohammed and said, “My country allows followers of this thing to emigrate to my country. From what I have also heard, the Muslim calender didn’t start with the year this piece of crap was born like that one. (Nodding my head over toward Jesus as I said it) Or even the year he said god contacted him.

"It started the year he first gained political power. Which shows clearly their religion to be more of a political movement. Though a Muslim would likely tell non-Muslims different. And yet my country still allows the followers of this slime into our country. Though try to do anything about it, the Jew media would scream "Racism!" Tell me. What is the afterlife like for these people." Mav said, "It's quite bleak and lonely. Even though, as they say, misery loves company." I said, "Can you control the kind of existence they endure." Mav said, "Completely." The bearers who could understand English started making various pleas for mercy. The pope adding, "How were we to know!" The pleas brought on more whipping, that I found highly satisfying to watch. I said, "It wouldn't put you out of your way at all would it?" Mav said, "Not much. And after it's done, I will never have cause to think of it again." I kicked Mohammed. Though not as hard as I would liked to have. But it still made him whimper. Looking at him, I said in a voice seething with anger, "I'm going to think of something particularly unpleasant for you."

He may not have known what I was saying, but he would find out. Zem said with a smile, "It says in the bible basically that you shouldn't judge so you won't be judged." I laughed a little and said, "If it's in the bible and supposedly wise, there's a good chance that just the opposite is true." Til then said with a slight smile, "I know Zem was speaking facetiously. But for some of these humans, maybe they actually believed the things they thought. Which puts punishing something for being the way it is on shaky ethical grounds. Especially if it is the result of what you may have learned from us." I smiled at Til and said, "You needn't worry about that. Religion disgusted me before Zem picked me up. Take for instance the churches stance against birth control or abortion when overpopulation is a clear and present danger. And about a zillion other things I won't go into." I then gestured to the human filth and said, "As for these things. I'm sure none of these scum were that ignorant." This brought on more protestations from the ones that could understand English. Which was quickly subdued by more lashing.

I then added, "Generally speaking, not even a human is stupid enough to ignorantly destroy a planet. But no matter what kind of self indulgent insanity they talked themselves into believing to gain followers, or preserve the status

35

quo, they will get what they deserve. Especially this one." I then kicked Mohammed again. Then I looked at Zem, Bev, Til and Mav and said, "All of the spirits of the people who have suffered as a result of the teachings of these scum, do you suppose they would be adverse to a little added retribution." Zem said, "Most realize their culpability in such matters. But most would also appreciate those things getting a little extra punishment above what they already receive." I then said,

"Well then, with your help, they will receive it." I then grinned at everybody and walked back to the group, saying, "That was refreshing." Smiling at Mav and Til, I said, "It's too bad that you didn't have more of these bearers." Mav said, "The numbers of these kinds of humans that deserved this treatment wouldn't have fitted on this ship." The bearers, throne and the whips the robots held quickly faded out of existence.

Mav and Til's clothing and jewelry started to fly off them like smoke. They were wearing normal clothing underneath. While this was going on, the robots reverted to the appearance of the one Sue and I had seen back on the Pol-Wim. Then they turned around and started walking back to the platform. At the same time, a ship like the one we had arrived in came out of the bottom of the ship and started coming toward the ground. Mav was wearing a short sleeve button up shirt with a small folded over collar around the neck. Though it wasn't buttoned up all the way to his neck. It was pale green in color and made out of a silk like material. His pants were a somewhat dark tan color with an average looking belt of the same color. His shoes were brown in color and made out of a sturdy looking, shiny, woven material. Til was wearing a sleeveless, light blue, slightly fuzzy pullover shirt with a V-neck that revealed a little cleavage. There were narrow frills around all of the outside edges of it.

Her pants were a little somewhat dark shade of blue. They appeared to be made out of a shiny silk like material that wasn't overly thick. These were neatly pressed with narrow cuffs along the bottom. Around the waist of her pants, she wore a thin belt that was two even thinner strips of blue looking leather. These were connected in the center with a decoratively laced gold chain. Her slippers were the same shade of blue as her pants and belt. Though they were made out of some kind of slightly thick, shiny material. What had been their outer clothing and ornamentation coalesced into two Nal. Mim and Pim greeted them by going up to them and touching them. Then two of them on the outside backed away enough for two to touch crosswise. Then those backed away a little and the two others did the same thing. After that, they backed away from each other a little. I smiled at Mav and said, "Who are your Nal." Everybody was smiling as Til gestured to one and said, "This is San." San said in an audible male Nal voice, "Hello Erik. Hello Sue." I said, "Hello." Sue said, "Nice to meet you."

Til then gestured to the other and said, "And this is Pam." Pam said in an audible female Nal voice, "Hello Erik. Hello Sue." Sue said, "Nice to meet you too." I said, "Nice to meet you. I wish I could tell if you are as pretty as Pim says Mim is." Everybody laughed. We could also feel telepathic humor from the Nal. San and Pam started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Pim and Mim did the same. The platform was rising at this point with the robots on it. The other ship came down and landed near ours. The front of it pointed in

the direction of the ramp of our ship. San said, "Pam is very beautiful. You can take my word for it." Mav looked down at Panny with a smile. He held an arm low and said, "How you doing Panny!" This was all the encouragement Panny needed to jump on his arm and climb up. Mav started petting Panny as Til glanced at Lika and held her arm low for her. Til said, "Hello Lika!" as Lika scampered over and jumped on Til's arm. Then Lika scampered up Til's arm. Til cuddled Lika in her arms and petted her.

As Til did so, she said in a bit of a high pitched, comforting voice, "I'm so glad that big meanie Zem let you come along." This caused Zem, Bev, Sue and I to chuckle. Which Mav and Til quickly joined in on. Panny and Lika were of course very happy themselves. Sue said to Til and Mav with a grin, "They are just adorable. Aren't they." Mav and Til briefly grinned at Sue. Then they turned their attention back to Panny and Lika. Mav said, "Panny is my little buddy." Til added again in a bit of a high pitched voice as she petted Lika, "And you're so soft and fuzzy!" We all chuckled and Zem said, "One is nice to have around. But getting the freedom of the wild out of Lika may take a little while." Til said to Zem, "That wouldn't bother me. If you don't want her. I will take her." Bev said, "I don't think that would make Panny very happy. But you can call for her to come over to visit any time you want too." Til said, "That would be nice." The platform had joined back up to the large ship at this point. Then the ship began to ascend rapidly into the sky. Though it didn't go up quite as fast as it came down, for Sue and I, it was still a bit of an astonishing sight.

With the shadow of it gone, we were quickly bathed in sunlight. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til briefly looked at it leave too with smiles on their faces. Then Bev smiled at Sue and I and said, "Would you excuse us for a moment. We have some thanks to deliver." Zem, Mav and Til also smiled at Sue and I. Sue and I grinned as Sue said, "Go ahead. Erik and I will make sure nothing sneaks up on you while you're distracted." Everybody laughed. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. What Sue had said was funny. Because with the Nal floating around, there was no danger. And even if one of these large creatures came to us, what could Sue and I do. Til said, "Zem and Bev were right about you two. You are fun." Both Sue and I put an arm around each other and grinned a little more widely. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all looked off in slightly different directions and seemed to become lost in thought. Sue and I took a few paces away from them. I turned to face Sue with a loving smile on my face. Sue gave me a loving smile as she put her other arm around my lower back too. I did the same with Sue. Then I said, "I love you Ms. Neilsen."

Sue's look turned to one of solemn love. As did mine. Sue then said, "I love you too Mr. Neilsen." We then tenderly kissed each other. Which soon turned more passionate as more tongue came into play. This caused us to embrace and caress each other more firmly. After

about a minute of this, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We were again smiling at each other lovingly as I said, "I'm so happy you're my chick." This caused Sue to grin. I did too. We had been through this sort of thing before. Using "guy and girl" on one occasion and "gal and fella" on another. Sue said, "And I'm so happy you're my dude." This caused me to chuckle. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Then I said, "You know,

37

I really like you." This caused us both to chuckle again. Because we both remembered when I asked Sue if she really really liked me. Which soon led to some fun tickling. Sue said, "Do you really like me?" I said, "Really really." Sue's grin became a little wider as she said, "Really really really?" I said, "Really really really really!" This caused Sue to laugh a little. Which I quickly joined in on.

Afterwards, I looked at Sue with a loving look and a slight smile as I caressed the side of her wonderful face. Sue slowly closed her eyes lightly with a loving look on her face and caressed my hand with her cheek. As Sue opened her eyes, she saw that my expression had been taken over by a more solemn look of love. Sue took on the same sort of look as I caressed my hand from Sue's cheek and down her arm. I said in a soft, tender voice, "I like you so much that I wouldn't want to live without you." Sue got an emotional, loving look on her face and threw her arms around my upper back and neck. As Sue grabbed me tightly, I also held on to Sue firmly. As we fully embraced each other, Sue said, "Oh Erik!" After a few moments, Sue said, "You know I wouldn't want to live without you either darling!" This made me hold Sue a little bit harder. I said with a voice full of loving emotion, "My darling love!" Sue and I held onto each other for a few extended moments. Lovingly nuzzling and caressing each other.

Then Til said to Sue and I, "I understand you two have had pretty much of a whirlwind romance." Sue and I parted and briefly looked at each other with loving smiles. Then we turned to face them with big grins on our faces. Though we kept an arm around each other's lower backs. Sue said as we took a few steps back near them, "Yes. I guess so. But you know how when something just feels right." I said, "Zem and Bev have been a good influence on us in that way. And then I asked Pim to let Sue and I experience each other's emotions. I never knew love could be so intense." Sue and I gave each other a little extra hug and briefly touched the sides of our heads together as we did so. Til then said, "I wish we could have been there for your wedding." Then Til said, "That reminds me." Til then put Lika down and went over to Zem. Then Til gave Zem a good slap on his arm. This caused us all to laugh as Til said, "That's for not inviting us to the wedding!" Zem playfully recoiled from the blow a little. Then Zem looked up at Pim and Mim and said, "Pim, Mim! Protect me!" This caused even more laughter. We could also feel telepathic humor from,

Pim, Mim, San and Pam.

Afterwards, Pim said with some mirth in his thought, "I'm afraid you're on your own." This caused even more laughter as Til went back over to Mav. Mav put Panny down. Then Mav and Til put an arm around each other's lower backs. Panny and Lika scampered off toward the lake. Sue said, "With our time to visit being so short, I guess Zem didn't want to make a lot of fuss. Though we would have liked it if you both could have been there also." Mav said, "Oh well. No doubt someday you will want to renew your wedding vows. We'll make sure we're there when you do." I said to Mav, "I understand that the Reall renew their wedding vows every so often." Mav said, "Til and I make it a point to do so every few hundred years or so. Though it wouldn't bother me if we did so every day." Mav looked at Til as he said this. An emotional look came over Til's face as she said, "My darling love!" Til then threw herself into Mav's arms and they kissed

38

each other passionately. Sue and I put the sides of our heads together and hugged a little tighter at the pleasant sight of Mav and Til's love.

Zem and Bev briefly smiled at each other with sentimental looks on their faces. Then they leaned the sides of their heads together and enjoyed the sight too. After Mav and Til kissed for a few moments, they then hugged each other. Mav and Til hugged for a few extended moments. Then Zem said in a kidding around manner, "Hey you two. Get a room." This caused Sue and I to briefly grin at each other widely. Because Zem had said the same thing to Sue and I before. Mav and Til parted when Zem spoke and grinned at each other. Though we were all grinning at Zem's statement. Mav and Til then turned their grins to Zem and Bev. Mav said, "We may just do that!" We all laughed a little. I said, "I hope there's rooms for everybody." This made everybody laugh a little again. Sue looked at me and said, "Just keep it in your pants for now sweetheart. We have some getting to know to do." This caused a bit of a chuckle between Zem, Bev, Mav and Til. I briefly kissed Sue and said, "Whatever you say sweetheart." Zem smiled at Bev and said, "Didn't somebody say something about something to eat?"

Bev gave Zem a mischievous grin and said, "You're a slavedriver!" This made everybody laugh. Zem smiled at Bev when he was through laughing and gave Bev a loving look. He said, "Yes I am sweetheart." Then Zem embraced Bev more as he looked at Bev in a more loving manner. Zem then said to Bev in a loving voice, "I know you remember darling. Not long after we were married, I commanded you to accept all the love I can possibly give." Bev looked at Zem with a look of solemn love. Bev gently caressed Zem's cheek and said with a loving voice, "Obeying that command has been heaven darling." A look of emotional love came over Zem's face. As it did with Bev. Zem said in a voice dripping with emotional love, "Oh darling!" Zem and



Bev then started kissing each other passionately. At this point, Pim and Mim stopped circling each other and extruded about twelve pencil wide appendages each from the sides that were in contact. They embraced each other with them. Just I had seen them do a couple of times before. Slight waves of side to side undulation slowly traveled up these appendages.

San and Pam did the same thing with each other. Mav and Til faced each other and held each other in a loose embrace. Both of them looked at each other with loving expressions. Mav said to Til in a tender, loving voice, "Remember when I gave you the same kind of command darling?" Til said in a loving, emotional voice, "I'll never forget darling!" Then Til launched herself into Mav. They started kissing each other passionately as they more fully embraced. I looked at Sue with a look of solemn love and said, "And I command you to accept all the love I can give my wife." Sue gave me a look of solemn love too as we embraced each other a little more. Then Sue said, "Oh yes husband darling!" We then kissed each other passionately too. As everybody was too caught up in their own love to be paying attention to what Sue and I were doing, I took this opportunity to run a hand down and around one of Sue's wonderfully rounded butt cheeks and give it a little squeeze. Sue did the same with me. Apparently not caring if anybody saw her do it.

39

After a few moments, we stopped caressing each other's butts and caressed each other more around our backs. After about a minute, Sue and I parted a little and we looked at each other with loving looks on our faces. Sue said, "I love you so much darling." At this point, Zem and Bev had parted their kiss and were smiling lovingly at each other. I said, "I love you so much too darling." At this point, Mav and Til parted their kiss and smiled lovingly at each other too. At the same time, I gave Sue a fairly brief but tender, loving kiss. Then Bev parted from Zem and said to Til and Sue with a grin, "Let's get our fellas something to eat." Pim and Mim as well as San and Pam slowly reabsorbed their appendages. Sliding them over each other's surfaces as they did so. Til and Sue grinned at Bev as Bev stepped over to Til and held out her hand. Then Til and Mav let go of each other. Til then took Bev's hand. Til then held out her hand to Sue. Sue and I let go of each other. Then Sue stepped over to take Til's hand. Bev gave the Nal a quick smile. Then Bev, Til and Sue linked arms and started walking toward the patio.

Who I took to be Mim and Pam went with them. Sue looked at Til as they walked and brought up Zem's role of a Reall official who wed Sue and I together. The Examiner. Til said, "How do you think Zem did as an Examiner." Sue said enthusiastically, "Zem was just wonderful!" They then continued their happy conversation. I wanted to delay our

departure to talk over a little unpleasant business. The girls were still within earshot. But they probably wouldn't take much notice of what I said. I looked at Mav and said, "I forget. What kind of dinosaurs are those." As I said this, I briefly pointed at the dinosaurs I was talking about as we all took a step closer to each other. Mav said, "We just call them spiketails. Though your paleontologists call them Stegosaurus." I said, "Oh yeah. I should have remembered." They were rather impressive looking. As Bev, Til and Sue walked farther away from us, I took on a more serious countenance and said in a low voice, "Mind if we look at the animals a little and do some speed thinking?" Mav said, "No problem." We all went back to looking at the animals.

One of the large animals with the wicked looking horns was moving its tail. All of a sudden, it slowed and stopped. I said, "I didn't want to spoil the mood of the girls by bringing up an unpleasant subject in front of them. But can we get this business of those religious parasites out of the way." Zem said, "If you wish." I said, "The guy with the eighteenth century dress. Was that the founder of the Mormon church." Mav said, "Yes. His name is Joseph Smith." I said, "What about the Indian guy with the ancient princely garb. Was that Krishna?" Zem said, "Yes it was. Not being the religious type, I'm surprised you guessed it." I said, "I picked up a couple things here and there. How about the gook with the thin beard. Was that Confucius?" Mav said, "You're right again." Then I asked, "And the other Indian guy besides Gandhi. I take it that was Buddha." Zem said, "You're right there too." I said to Mav, "And the last one on your right that looked like a Jew. I take it that was Moses." Mav said, "Yes it was." Then I said, "I have no doubt that just like the Pharaoh's thought they could do with their pyramids, some or all of these people thought they could strengthen their afterlife if they had religious, zealot followers."

40

Mav said, "That's a very accurate assumption." I said, "I think it's time they received what as a human I think they deserve." Mav said, "I can't wait to hear it." Zem said, "What do you have in mind." I said, "For Mohammed, I want him to exist forever more in a hot dry place with no testicles. I would like the place to be inhabited by many horny male pigs and dogs that like having anal intercourse with each other and with him. These animals will be too strong for him to kill. But I want Mohammed to be severely hungry. I want him to discover that his hunger can be completely satiated for a few hours by what he consumes from performing fellatio on either a pig or dog. I want him to be able to get a drug like addiction and satisfaction from whatever deposited semen he can suck out of a pig or dog's anus. Which he will no doubt eventually stumble upon himself." Zem said, "As you suggested. He will eventually learn to like such an existence. But

consider it done anyway.”

I then said, “As for Jesus, he seemed to be fond of the idea of people eating his flesh and drinking his blood. I want him to spend eternity in a hot dry place full of rocky hills and valleys. The place is to be inhabited by two types of spiders. Ones as large as cows that hunt alone. And others the size of rabbits that hunt in packs. Their bites must be extremely painful. After he has been consumed by either, he will regenerate after they have moved off. I want him to experience a constant hunger too. There should be some small animals around that consume spider crap. After he gets the idea to do the same, they can go away. He should have his hunger satiated for a few hours by eating it. And he should also get a drug like satisfaction from doing so. In the form of spider crap, he can learn to drink his own blood and eat his own flesh.” Zem and Mav emitted telepathic humor. Mav said, “You have a vicious streak in you. I think I like that.” We all emitted telepathic humor at this remark. Mav then said, “Consider it done.”

Then I said, “As for the rest, I want them to exist alone and in complete darkness. They should be constantly exposed to either the sound of fingernails being scraped across a chalkboard or the sound of styrofoam being rubbed together. Whichever they find most distressing. But it should be just loud enough to be annoying. I don’t want it to drown out their tortured thoughts. I would also like there to be small areas moving around that will make them wretch when one passes over them. Though inside these areas, they will find a brief respite from the annoying sound.” Zem said, “Consider it done. But are you sure you want them to suffer through all of eternity?” I said, “No. I guess that would be too much for even those scum. How about just until our sun expands enough to reach earth’s orbit. Also, do you have the ability to make somebody’s soul cease to exist?” Zem answered and said, “Yes we do.” I said, “Afterwards, I would prefer it if they ceased to exist.” Mav said, “It will be as you asked. Is there anything else you would like done? Don’t be afraid to ask. It’s not that much of a bother to us.”

I said, “If you don’t mind. He may not have been perfect, but I would like to have the spirits of Adolf Hitler and Eva Braun be young, beautiful and in whatever to them would seem to be paradise. They should also be able to have the souls of whoever they wish to join them there.” Mav said, “It was pleasant to learn from Zem that you appreciate Hitler.” I said, “Seeing the treacherous, anti-

41

White propaganda the Jews are subjecting the White man to, despite our helping them in WW II, how could I do otherwise.” Mav said, “On that account, I am reminded of an old human story. Basically, a scorpion asks a frog for a ride across a river. But the frog says, “If I do that, you will sting me.” But the scorpion says, “If I did that, we would both drown.” Being satisfied with this answer, the frog starts giving

the scorpion a ride across the river. But midway through the swim, the scorpion stings the frog. With the poison going to work, the frog begins to sink. But before he goes down, the frog says to the scorpion, "Why!" The scorpion says, "It's in my nature." I said, "That's a very apt story." Zem said to Mav, "Despite the Jew brainwashing Erik has been exposed to, he knows very well that the racial integration the Jew media promotes is grotesque." Then Zem said to me, "As you know, species must grow apart." Mav then added, "Though for us Reall, the need for any major genetic diversification ceased to be an issue for our kind a long time before Zem and I were born." Zem then said to me, "One need for it among humans was demonstrated on your planet during the Irish potato famine. I bet they would have loved to have had a different species of potato that were more resistant to the blight that destroyed many of their potatoes. Potatoes didn't differentiate like that through racial integration. The attempts of many brainwashed human scum to say that the only difference between humans is the color of their skin is also laughable. Unfortunately, it's easier to be a pussy than a patriot. And as I pointed out to you before, too often, more profitable."

I then said, "From what I had heard, the Irish produced four times the amount of food necessary to have kept people from starving back then. It was disgusting. But as you say, more profitable for some." I said to Mav, "Zem, Bev and I have talked about this of course. But I would like your thoughts on the matter. Why is the American culture so fucked up?" Mav said, "I don't know if there is anything substantial I could add to the topic over what Zem and Bev may have told you. But I would say the main reason is devolution. Those who live in a fantasy world are simply more likely to breed. On top of that, you have the Jew media of course. It portrays a reality that barely exists. Take the news. It is mainly brainwashing and entertainment. For example, between 1983 and 2002, there were over twenty one thousand bombings in the U.S. But they received very little coverage in the news. Or when they talk about rampage killers, they usually falsely report that there was no known motive for it. A similar thing happened during the World Trade Center bombing.

"Not wanting to upset their politically correct, status quo lives, news organizations only showed a few people falling to their deaths. They could have showed hundreds. Some of them even went in groups. Despite such things, the power of Americans to ignore reality is amazing. There has been a fearsome price to pay for the U.S.'s diseased, politically correct ideology. But in a society that can withstand over thirty thousand people dying each year in car crashes without much notice, it isn't much of a surprise. Another "for instance" is that in the U.S., there are over two million people in jail and nearly five million on probation or parole. There are around fourteen thousand murders each year. Around six thousand of which go unsolved. There are over half a million sex

offenders. Also, nearly nine million people go missing each year. Though obviously, for the most part, not on a permanent basis. They do so mainly because they are dissatisfied with their lives. Which is probably a large reason why the use of antidepressants in the U.S. has gone up by four hundred percent in the past twenty years.

"Also, about twenty eight million people are unemployed. And at least as many who are underemployed. Over a million people lose their jobs each year and over forty million people move each year. Each year, nearly one and a half million cars get repossessed. Etc. etc. etc. The lack of security for the average American is just incredible. Along with those problems, among industrialized countries, the U.S. ranks eighteenth in benefits; sixth in healthcare; apart from some pacific island nations, first in obesity; seventeenth in life expectancy; sixteenth in compensation for manufacturing; eighteenth in education and eleventh in poverty, etc. etc. etc. Also, most people know that politics is corrupt and that the wealthy can buy justice. It's no wonder that the U.S. produces twice the number of mass murders than any other country. Americans have to do some high powered lying to themselves to keep their society from falling completely apart. As far as solving humanities problems go, there is what to a human would be a god now living on your planet. Though he is just a human without any special powers, besides common sense. He wrote a book called, "Our Holy Hell: The Causes, The Solutions."

I said, "Zem mentioned that book to me." Mav said, "We don't personally go through everything humans do. But we do look for instances relating to certain topics. That book kept coming up. So I read it. It didn't tell me anything I didn't already know of course. But I found it quite interesting that a human could have such thoughts. Though the silence that book received on earth tells a lot. It's amazing that your planet hasn't gone up in a nuclear puff of smoke." I said, "Zem told me of a Russian submarine commander that refused to go along with the captain of the submarine he was on and the political officer to fire a nuclear weapon at American ships during the Cuban missile crisis." Mav said, "Considering the pressure they were under, the earth certainly dodged a bullet there. Did Zem tell you of your planet's other close call?" Zem said, "No. I didn't tell him of the other incident."

Mav said, "In nineteen eighty three, a Russian defense computer detected what it thought was a missile launch. During the event, there was an officer there who's job it was to give the go ahead for a counterattack. Their satellite detected a total of five launches. But the officer's common sense told him that if the U.S. was going to launch an attack, it would be larger than what he was looking at. So he didn't give the go ahead for a counterstrike. This made his superiors so angry that they kicked him out of the military and ruined his career." I said, "Even though he was right and his actions were the reason they

and their families were still breathing!? Wow! Sometimes the stupidity of my kind                      astonishes even me. But talking about the shortcomings of humans on earth is getting a little depressing. How about we join the ladies.” Zem said, “Sounds good to me.” The tail of the animal that had stopped its motion hadn’t moved very much in the time we were thinking to each other. Though it began moving  
43

again. We all then smiled at each other. I then grinned and said verbally, “Seeing how it’s just us guys here, how would you guys like to hear a dirty joke.”

Zem and Mav grinned too. Mav said, “Ok.” Zem said, “Sure.” As we stood there, I told Zem and Mav a joke that, for some reason, involved a guy with slurred speech due to a harelip. The joke also involved a bowl of chicken noodle soup and a whorehouse. After I told the joke, Zem and Mav started                      laughing heartily. Which I quickly joined in on. The girls were placing plates, napkins and silverware on the patio table. Apparently, they had disposed of our old drinks. A couple of our Nal were levitating a couple chairs from the patio out on the lake to the patio behind the house. The girls noticed our laughter. They paused what they were doing for a moment and grinned at us. Then they grinned at each other as Mav said, “Well let’s go join our ladies on the patio then.” As we started walking in their direction, the girls were chatting amongst themselves. Zem said to Mav and I, “I wonder what we’ll be having.” We smiled at each other as Mav said, “Something good no doubt.”

Then we returned our attention back to the girls. Bev, Til and Sue discussed something with smiles on their faces as we approached. Zem, Mav and I looked at our women with smiles on our faces. No doubt Zem and Mav were as eager to be with their girls again as I was to be with Sue again. It didn’t take long for us to get close enough for Bev to say to Zem with a grin, “What were you guys laughing about.” The rest of us were grinning too as Zem said, “Erik told us a dirty joke.” Til said, “I’d like to hear it!” This caused a little chuckling amongst us. Then Mav said to Til, “It isn’t appropriate for mixed company. Maybe I’ll tell you later.” Then Zem stepped in to change the subject as we walked up to the table. Zem said, “What are we having.” Bev said, “We’re having pizza.” Mav said, “Goodie! I like pizza.” Sue said, “I thought it would be fun.” We walked over to our girls and gave them a quick kiss. We all reverted to smiles afterwards. I said to Sue, “That was a good idea darling.” Sue said, “Everybody likes pizza.”

Zem, Mav and I rearranged the chairs a little so we could all sit next to our partners. Our girls went back over to the maketake. While this was going on, I said generally to everybody, “Pizza is one of those foods that’s so good, it’s almost poisonous.” Zem said, “Yes. Tasty food that isn’t good for people is often pushed like a drug through

some human restaurants.” I said, “That is just another example of the things people will do for money on earth. Whether or not it is good for people in general doesn’t even matter.” Sue said to me in a kidding around manner, “Now you’re starting to make me feel bad for suggesting it.” Zem, Mav and I chuckled. As Til was carrying over a platter of pizza, she smiled at Sue and said, “Don’t pay any attention to them. It was a good choice.” This caused a wide smile to appear on Sue’s face. Sue said to Til, “Thank you.” Sue grabbed another pizza out of the maketake device and brought it over. Bev took a couple small plates with small slices of pizza and small forks on them. Then Bev sat these on the counter top.

Having known that food was in the works, Panny and Lika had come over from their exploration and play. Panny and Lika jumped up onto the counter. Bev then took a couple small glasses of something pale pink in color, along with a couple small napkins, and set them by Panny and Lika. They were so cute as

44

they went at their food with their little forks. Though Panny seemed to be a little better at it than Lika. Til and Sue walked back over to the maketake. Bev looked over at Zem and said, “Would you like more teka dear?” Zem was already smiling at Bev as he said, “Yes sweetest. Please.” Bev took out a couple of glasses of it. Being largely unimportant, I didn’t mention it before. But teka looked like fizzy orange juice. The glasses also had crushed ice and a straw in it. Sue said to Bev, “I noticed before that teka looks a lot like orange soda.” Bev said, “It does have a bit of a citrus quality. But the flavor is more like cherry.” Sue said, “That sounds good. I think Erik and I will try some of that too.” Til said to Sue, “Order up a couple glasses for Mav and me too.” Sue said happily, “Ok.”

Bev came over to the table with her and Zem’s drinks. Zem said, “Thank you sweetheart.” Then they gave each other a quick kiss. Bev then sat the drinks on the table as Sue and Til took their drinks out of the maketake. Zem held Bev’s chair for her to sit down. They smiled at each other. Then Bev sat down. Zem scooped Bev’s chair in a little for her. Mav and I stood too as Sue and Til sat their drinks down on the table. Bev said to Zem, “Thank you sweetie.” As Zem took a seat, I said to Sue, “Thank you dearest.” Then we gave each other a brief kiss too. At about the same time, Mav said to Til, “Thank you angel face.” Then they gave each other a brief kiss too. Mav and I held Til’s and Sue’s chairs as we smiled at our partners. Then Til and Sue sat down. Mav and I also scooped their chairs in a little for them. Til said to Mav, “Thank you sweetness.” At the same time, Sue said to me, “Thank you honey bunch.” Then Mav and I sat down too. Zem picked up Bev’s plate as they smiled at each other. Mav and I picked up our girls’ plates too as we smiled at our partners.

Zem said, “It looks like you got one with anchovies and one without.

Which would you like dearest." Bev said, "One with honey." I said to Sue as Zem picked up a triangular shaped utensil to retrieve a slice for Bev with, "Which would you like lovie love." Sue said, "I'll have a slice without huggy bear." At the same time, "Mav said to Til, "Which would you like darling." Til said, "I'll have a slice without anchovies honey." The pizza was already pre sliced. So I just used a fork to slide a slice onto Sue's plate. While I did so, Mav got a slice for Til. At the same time, Bev said to Sue, "As far as how bad pizza may be for you, we can arrange for the meal to not have any ill effects on you." Sue grinned and said, "That would be great!" As Mav sat Til's plate and pizza in front of her, Til said to Mav, "Thank you sweetheart." At the same time, Sue then said to Bev as I sat her plate in front of her, "I don't think Erik would like me if I got fat." We all chuckled. I said to Sue with a grin, "You know I would love you no matter what darling."

Sue gave me a loving smile. Which I returned. I then said in a more loving voice, "Besides, if you ever got fat, I would just get fat with you." A bigger, loving smile came over Sue's face. Then Sue said, "You're so sweet darling." We then briefly kissed as Mav sat his plate with pizza on it in front of him. As I got a slice for myself, Zem had already gotten himself a slice. Bev was giving Zem a piece of pizza she had cut off from her slice with a fork. As Bev did so, Bev said to Zem, "My love." They smiled lovingly at each other as Zem took in the piece of

45

pizza. They gave each other a quick peck on the lips after Zem had the pizza in his mouth. Sue also gave me some of her pizza in the same manner. As Sue did so, Sue said, "My love." I too gave Sue a quick peck afterwards. At the same time, Til saw what Bev had done and was getting ready to give Mav a piece of her slice in the same way. Til said to Mav, "My love." Mav also gave Til a quick peck on the lips after he had taken the bite. All of us guys did the same thing for our girls. We all gave our partners another quick peck on the lips afterwards.

After we had given our partners a bite of food, Bev said to Til, "Sue and Erik reminded us of how much fun it is to exchange food." Sue and I looked at everybody with smiles. Sue said to Til, "I find that the extra love makes the first bite more fun." Til was smiling at Sue as she said, "And more tasty too." We all grinned or smiled at this remark as we continued with our meal. After finishing another bite of pizza, Til said to Mav, "We should have this more often." Mav smiled at Til as he was chewing a piece and nodded at her a little and made a "Mmm Mmm" sound. After we all ate some more, I smiled at Til, Bev and Sue. I then said, "It was a good idea for you guys to make one with anchovies and one without." Bev said, "Not everybody likes anchovies. That's why I made one with and one without." As Zem and Mav reached for another slice, Zem said, "I like pizza either way." Til



added with a grin, "Mav will eat anything." Mav grinned at Til and said, "Anything you make is wonderful because you're so wonderful." They looked at each other lovingly and kissed briefly. Then they parted and looking at each other with loving smiles.

Having finished my slice, I reached for another slice too. As I did so, I felt the need for a little dinner conversation. So I said to everybody, "I heard some interesting things about a couple of humans near death experiences." Zem said, "I'd like to hear them." Til said, "Me too. That sounds interesting." Til then got another slice herself. As I spoke, everybody would occasionally take a bite of food or take a drink. I said, "I was watching a program where one woman talked about being nearly killed in a car wreck." Sue and Bev reached for another slice as I added, "She said her spirit went to a place where she saw four or five advanced looking beings standing around a table. On the table, her car wreck was reenacted. These advanced beings threw a pair of dice on the table. Apparently to decide if she would live or not." Mav said, "That is pretty far out. Why would any advanced being want to waste their time on such a mundane matter. Especially when the incident would create its own outcome."

After eating another piece of pizza, I said, "I saw this other program where they talked to a physicist or someone like that who worked at MIT. He had a near death experience himself. Explaining his hallucination, he said he went to a some amazing place where he apparently met the spirit of a half sister he never met in life. In that place, he claimed they both rode on the wing of a huge butterfly. Though I would have thought that he would have known better, he claimed that it was absolutely real." Zem said, "It's interesting how such delusions can seem real to people under such circumstances." After we ate a little more, Sue said to Til with a smile, "Your place here seems very nice. And the setting is marvelous. I am a little envious that you all should exist in a

46

heaven, within a heaven, within a heaven. But thanks to Bev and Zem, (Sue briefly nodded and smiled at them before returning her smile to Mav and Til) at least I know that some portion of humanity will be able to experience the same thing someday."

Til said to Sue with a smile, "Thank you. As for being envious, I'm sure that Zem and Bev told you that your existence isn't so bad. Even if it is brief by our standards. As for what you found out Bev and Zem did for some humans, you no doubt realized how nice they could be before then." Zem and Bev looked at Til with sentimental, appreciative smiles. Sue said, "We sure did!" Zem and Bev then turned their smiles to Sue and I. Til said, "The universe can be remarkably savage and unforgiving. If the need arose, we could be the same. One time, we even witnessed a quasar form in an unlucky galaxy. It wiped out all kinds of life. I guess you could say it took quite

a bit of cruelty on our part to keep from saving most of them. But when you live in a hard place, sometimes you just have to be hard yourselves. No doubt Bev and Zem welcomed the opportunity to be nice to you two." I said, "I'm afraid that I will never be able to think of a Reall as cruel. Least of all Zem and Bev." Sue then said with a sentimental, appreciative look on her face, "Not that it matters. Despite all the ways Bev and Zem could destroy us if they wanted to, they have pretty much lost their power to cause us to do anything but love them."

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all looked at Sue with sentimental looks. Though Zem and Bev's were a little more sentimental. For my part, just the brief time that Pim let Sue and I experience each other's love telepathically was itself worth my life. I hugged Sue with one arm and nodded in agreement with a sentimental, appreciative look on my face too. In a drawn out, sentimental way, Bev said, "Oh!" Sue then said, "In fact." Then Sue took her napkin and quickly wiped off her lips and fingers. Sue then said, "Would you move your chairs back a little? It's time for another squishing!" This made everybody laugh. Sue got up and went over to their seats. I don't know if it was Zem or Bev, but somebody used their telekinesis ability to move them and their seats back from the table a little. Sue flopped herself down across their laps. Sue landed most of her weight on Zem's lap. Causing Zem to give out a bit of an "ooh!" sound. This caused everybody to briefly laugh more heartily. But we were all soon overtaken with sentimentally as Sue first gave Bev and then Zem a kiss on their cheek.

Sue then placed her head between theirs and hugged them. They all had their eyes lightly closed with sentimental smiles on their faces as they hugged each other. Sue said, "You're both so wonderful!" Bev said, "We're fond of you too." Zem said, "But I'm sure you know that." It was all so beautiful, that a bit of emotion came across my sentimental expression. After a moment, as Sue continued to hug them, Sue released them a little and extended her forearms out behind Zem and Bev with her palms up. Sue made a couple grasping motions with her hands as she said with a sentimental voice, "Where's Mim and Pim when you need them." Pim and Mim quickly went over to Sue's palms. Mim said telepathically with a sentimental thought as they went, "Oh!" San and Pam began to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Pim and Mim landed in the palms of Sue's hands. Sue then pulled them into the hug also.

47

Mim said, "You're such a dear!" Pim said, "And a sweetheart!" After a few moments of hugging, they released each other a little and smiled sentimentally at each other.

Then Sue let go of Pim and Mim. They floated upward a little, then started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles as they floated upward more. Sue then said, "Consider yourselves squished."

We all started laughing as Sue got up. After the laughter, Bev said, "Thank you. We will." Sue came back over to her chair and sat down. We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I said to Sue, "Would you like a sip of love darling?" Sue said, "Ok darling." I picked up my glass and brought the straw in it to Sue's lips. As I gave Sue a sip, I said lovingly, "My love." Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all smiled at us sentimentally. Mav said to Til, "Would you like a sip of my love darling?" Til said lovingly to Mav, "Yes please darling." Then Mav brought his glass and the straw in it to Til's lips. Zem did the same thing with Bev. Maybe he asked Bev the same thing telepathically. But he may have felt that there was no sense in asking at all. As Til took a sip and I lowered my glass, Zem said to Bev lovingly, "My love." Bev of course took a sip from the straw as she and Zem looked at each other lovingly.

Sue then went through the same process with me. As did Til with Mav and Bev with Zem. Though after I had taken a sip, I said to Sue, "One more darling." Sue then lovingly gave me another sip. After Sue sat my glass down, we looked at each other lovingly. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til were smiling at us sentimentally. As Sue and I looked at each other lovingly, I stuck the tip of my tongue out so that it was just visible through my lips. Sue took on a more loving look and said, "Oh darling!" Then Sue and I began to kiss. Which of course started out with Sue sucking my tongue in past her lips before we started french kissing. Til turned to Mav and said, "They know the tongue beckon!" Til then turned to Zem and Bev and said, "Did you teach them that?" Sue and I grinned and parted our lips. We laid the sides of our heads together as we grinned at the others. Zem said to Til, "No. They figured it out all by themselves." Til briefly grinned at Sue and I, then turned her grin to Mav. Til then made her grin go away. Then Til stuck the tip of her tongue out to where it was just visible between her lips. Loving surprise briefly flashed over Mav's face. Then Mav's expression turned to one of solemn love as he said to Til, "Oh darling!"

Mav then brought his lips to Til's. No doubt sucking in her tongue in past his lips before they began french kissing too. Zem turned to Bev as they looked at each other lovingly. Then Zem stuck the tip of his tongue out just enough to be visible between his lips. Bev said to Zem lovingly, "Oh Zem!" Then Bev brought her lips to Zem's. Doubtlessly with the same result. Sue and I smiled at each other lovingly. I think Sue was as proud as I was for what we started. Then Sue stuck the tip of her tongue out to where it was just visible between her lips. This caused a loving expression to come over my face. I said, "Oh darling!" Then I brought my lips to Sue's and sucked her tongue in past my lips. Then we again started french kissing again. As usual, Sue's lips were so soft and loving. The caress of our tongues together was again a pizza and teka flavored dream. I tried to keep our kissing and caressing from becoming too passionate. Not only

because we were with company, but I didn't want to get a raging hard erection. We all kissed our partners for about a minute. Then we began to part from our partners and look at them lovingly.

After a few moments, I looked at the others with a sentimental smile and said, "Being Reall, I have to wonder to what degree any of you have ever experienced the emotion of gratitude." Everybody was smiling sentimentally at me at this point. I looked at Sue, Bev and Til. Then I said, "Mav told me an interesting story. But I think it needs a little changing. There was this frog named Zem." Zem and Mav gave me a bit of a puzzled look. Then I added as I briefly glanced around at the girls, "This scorpion named Erik came up to him on a riverbank." Everybody was giving me a bit of a puzzled look at this point as I added, "The scorpion asked the frog if he would give him a ride on its back across the river. The frog said, 'If I did that, you might sting me.'" The scorpion said, "If I did that, we would both drown. Being satisfied with the answer, the frog gave the scorpion a ride on its back across the river. But halfway across the river, an irresistible urge to sting came over the scorpion. So it stung itself." A sentimental look came over everybody's face. Mixed with a little look of appreciation. Though Sue's look was a little more loving.

Continuing on, I added, "The frog said to the scorpion as it started to slide off its back, 'Why did you do that.'" Before it went under, the scorpion said, "Stinging is in my nature. And it was either you or me." Sue hugged me and laid her head on my shoulder as she looked at everybody. There was a look of sentimental, loving pride on Sue's face. Zem said with a sentimental tone to his voice, "I appreciate your story." Mav said, "Comparing yourself to a scorpion is going a bit far. Maybe the throne thing I came up with wasn't a good idea." I said, "Please don't think that. I quite enjoyed it. But there are humans who are even worse than them." Everybody took on more solemn looks as I added, "I have already told Zem and Bev how much some of their behavior shames me. The stories of their unsavory behavior are endless. You may have already found this out for yourselves, but get a load of this one."

Starting out by addressing Mav and Til, I said, "A very trustworthy guy I knew who I called uncle Bill told me about a program he was watching one time. It was showing a murder trial that was going on in Brazil. The guy had either murdered his wife or girlfriend. My uncle Bill didn't remember which. Apparently, in Brazil, if you kill such a woman and take off for five days, you can come back and turn yourself in. If you do so and claim that the female threatened your machismo, then you're off the hook for murder. Though for some reason, the guy on this program was put on trial. But he was acquitted. Surprisingly, the decision apparently gained applause from even some of the women attending the trial. Though I would have to doubt that they were related to or were friends with the murdered girl." I then said to Zem and Bev, "You're being so nice to Sue and I despite some of the

shortcomings of humanity is just one of the reasons we are so grateful to you both.” Sue nodded at Zem and Bev with a sentimental look on her face as I added, “Not that it would ever be as stupid as those Brazilians, if we ever do anything stupid, just remember how we feel.”

Bev said with a sentimental look on her face, “We will you dears.”

Knowing

49

that Mav and Til probably hadn’t heard the story, Sue said, “Like when Erik and I accidentally glimpsed you both naked.” Mav and Til looked at each other with open mouthed expressions of amused surprise. Zem and Bev saw their expressions and chuckled. Sue and I did too. Mav and Til looked at Zem and Bev with somewhat excited looks. Til said eagerly, “Tell us what happened!” Bev said to them, “Erik and Sue know what happened better than us.” Mav and Til turned eager grins to Sue and I for the story. Sue said, “Erik was giving me a piggy back ride. And I encouraged him to go fast. He ran in the direction of Bev and Zem’s bedroom door. It opened before we were fully stopped. Bev and Zem were in the process of starting to get dressed. We briefly saw them naked.” Mav and Til started laughing a little. Which we all joined in on. After the laughter, Mav said to Zem with an amused voice, “That must have been quite a surprise.” Zem said with an amused voice, “I certainly wasn’t expecting it.”

This caused some more chuckling. Then Til said to Bev, “Were you embarrassed?” Bev said, “Maybe a little when it happened. Sue was no bother to me of course. But Erik was a different matter. Though Sue and Erik were so adorably embarrassed later on. I’ll have to show you some time. It was so cute.” Everybody grinned at Sue and I as we gave each other slight smiles tinged with a bit of bashfulness. Mav said to me, “What did you think of nude Realls.” I said with a slight, sheepish smile, “As Sue said, we only saw them briefly before turning away and retreating. But I told Zem and Bev that if it hadn’t been for this expression on their faces,” I then briefly made an open mouthed expression of surprise mixed with a little shock. This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to laugh a little. Sue just grinned a little bashfully. After the laughter, I added, “they would have made wonderful, if a bit risqué, marble sculptures.” Zem and Bev smiled appreciatively at me. Til said to me, “You’re so sweet.” To be polite, I said to Til and Mav, “Not that I want to see either of you in the nude.” Everybody grinned as I added, “But I have no doubt that you two are just as physically perfect.”

Mav and Til smiled appreciatively at me. Zem, Bev and Sue were grinning at me. Til said, “Thank you. You’re such a dear.” I then thought of something amusing to say. I gestured to whom I assumed to be Mim. Who along with Pim, San and Pam, were floating up near the patio ceiling about six feet from us. I said, “As for Mim,” Mav and Til turned to grin at her as the rest of us were doing. Then I added, “I

would love to see her naked someday.” We all started laughing. Everybody knew of course that I was just kidding. Mim immediately shot out extra long fur to cover her surface. At the same time, Mim said verbally with an embarrassed edge to her voice, “Erik!” This really increased our laughter. We all knew that Mim wasn’t really serious either. After all, Nal didn’t need clothing. Pim started laughing verbally as San and Pam emitted telepathic humor. Mim started to retract her fur as they all fell to the ground. Mim also started to laugh verbally as they fell. Then San and Pam changed their telepathic humor over to verbal laughter themselves. They literally started rolling around on the ground laughing. The rest of us were pretty much doing the same. Just in a seated position.

Panny and Lika, who had finished their meal and were laying on the counter top, sat up and looked at us with a little excitement. What Mim did was so funny!

50

We laughed and laughed. After about a minute, Pim, Mim, San and Pam started to rise off the ground. Though they were still laughing as they all circled around each other’s surfaces at differing angles. About another minute of laughter went by before Mav said with a mirth filled voice, “I haven’t laughed so hard in centuries!” We all laughed a little more at this. Afterwards, we all started to dry our eyes. Pim, Mim, San and Pam had stopped laughing by this time. Also, Pim and Mim were circling around each other’s surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam were doing the same. Sue said to Mim in a joking around manner, “I thought you Nal were supposed to help us. Not kill us!” This started more laughter. Pim and Mim started circling around each other’s surfaces a little faster as they again laughed verbally. San and Pam were of course doing the same. After this bit of laughter, Zem grinned at Mav and Til and said, “Sue can be pretty funny too. You should have been there when she called Bev and I brainless idiots.”

Then Zem, Bev and I laughed. Mav and Til looked at Sue with surprised and amused expressions. Sue looked at Zem with a bit of a shocked look on her face and said, “You know I was only kidding!” This got Mav and Til laughing also. At the same time, Pim, Mim, San and Pam also emitted telepathic humor. Sue got a bit of an annoyed look on her face as everybody laughed. Bev said to Sue, “We know dear. Zem’s only having fun with you.” Sue’s annoyed look started to go away. Mav said to Zem, “How did that all come about.” Zem told Mav and Til about what led up to Sue’s anti-flattery statement and the statement itself. They both laughed again. Which made Sue smile sheepishly. Til looked at Sue and said, “That was a good one!” This made Sue’s sheepish look go away and made her grin. Bev said, “As I told you, Sue and Erik have been a lot of fun.” We were all grinning as Sue said, “It’s easy to do fun things in fun circumstances.” Then Sue turned her grin to Til and said, “I was wondering. Do you think you

love Mav more than he loves you?" We all laughed. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Til said with an amused voice, "We know better than to get into that argument!"

We all laughed a little more. Afterwards, Zem said, "We had been through that sort of discussion earlier. Except it was about who was happier to have met each other. Erik and Sue or Bev and I." Bev then added with a grin, "And it was a lot of fun." Mav smiled and said, "It sounds like fun." Then Mav said to Sue, "To answer your question, Til knows I love her more." Everybody except for Til laughed. Til got a surprised and slightly annoyed look on her face. Then Til leaned away from Mav a little. Mav knew what was coming and cringed a little. Til then gave Mav a bit of a swat on his shoulder with the back of her hand. Then Til said to Mav with an annoyed voice, "Stop it!" Mav grinned at Til and said, "I'm sorry my cosmic cutie." This little pet name made everybody chuckle a little. Til smiled at Mav and said, "Don't be mean." Mav leaned over and gave Til a brief but loving kiss. Which placated her quite well. We all grinned at them as they did so. Zem then got a mischievous grin on his face and said to Sue in a kidding around voice, "You don't know it, but Erik told me that he loves you more than you love him." My mouth dropped open a little as an open mouthed look of surprise and a little shock came over my face.

51

Sue briefly took on a look of surprise. Then Sue looked at me a little angrily. I may have thought that to myself, but I never told Zem that! Though I knew that Zem was just telling a fun little lie. I said, "I never said that!" Zem laughed. Bev, Mav and Til laughed also. Probably because they knew that Zem wasn't telling the truth. Sue figured as much herself, as her angry look went away. But then I fairly quickly looked away and lowered my face a little. Then I said fairly quickly in a low voice, but still loud enough for everybody to hear, "Even though it's true." Sue's mouth briefly dropped open with a surprised look on her face. Then an annoyed look came over Sue's face. Sue leaned away from me a little and swatted me on my shoulder with the back of her hand. I brought my arm up against my body, cringed a little like I was expecting another blow and leaned away from Sue a little. Sue said with an annoyed edge to her voice, "You're asking for it!" This time, everybody except for Sue laughed a little. I looked at Sue with an apologetic, loving look as I lowered my arm and uncringed.

As I did so, I said with a sincere, loving voice, "I'm sorry angel eyes. I was only kidding. Will you forgive me?" Sue gave me a bit of a smile as she said, "Well... Ok. Just watch yourself." We then kissed each other. As we did so, the other couples also gave their partners a kiss also. After the kiss was over and we were all again smiling at each other, Zem said to Sue, "Sorry about my little fib. I was just having fun." Bev said with a grin, "Making up almost makes the disagreement

worthwhile. Though it's a good thing we aren't prone to disagreements." Mav said, "Disagreements can be pretty disagreeable." As Bev reached for her glass, the rest of us did the same. We took a drink from our tasty beverages. I think we all had enough pizza. After setting our glasses down, Sue glanced around at Mav, Til, Zem and Bev with a smile and said, "Which one of you guys got married first." Zem said with a smile, "Bev and I were married first. Mav and Til were just copycats."

Zem, Bev, Sue and I laughed. Mav chuckled and Til looked at Zem with a surprised look on her face. Til then grinned and said, "You're just full of fibs today!" This caused even more laughter. Afterwards, Til looked at Sue and said, "Mav and I were dating when Bev and Zem got married." Then Til looked at Zem and said with a little more emphasis in her voice, "We would have gotten married anyway." This caused a little more laughter. Sue looked at Mav and Til and said, "How did you two meet." Mav said, "Zem and I were friends." Bev jumped in and said, "Til and I were friends too." Then Bev added with a bit of pride in her voice, "I introduced Til to Mav."

Mav looked at Bev and said, "For which I can never repay you." Til looked at Mav with a somewhat thrilled look on her face and said, "Oh sweetheart!" They both then leaned over and kissed each other. We all looked at Mav and Til with big smiles and sentimental looks on our faces. Sue and I turned our sentimental smiles to each other. Zem and Bev turned their sentimental smiles to each other too. Then we gave our partners a loving kiss for a few extended moments. After parting our kiss from our partners, we gave our life mates loving smiles. Then Mav and Til looked at us all with big smiles on their faces. We all looked at them with similar smiles.

52

### Chapter Three After Brunch

Mav said, "It looks like everybody is through eating." Zem, Bev, Sue and I each voiced an agreement with Mav's assessment. Sue rubbed her fingers together a little and said, "The napkins helped, but I think I still need to wash my hands." Pim, Mim, San and Pam swooped down from where they had been. We all grinned at them as Mim said verbally, "You know that isn't necessary with us around." Sue and I briefly flashed grins at each other. Then we grinned at the Nal as Sue said, "You guys are useful. But I know it doesn't take all of you." Pam said verbally as Sue and I held up the palms of our hands, "We already agreed. We all get a hand." This caused us all to smile sentimentally at the Nal. Sue looked around to everybody as the Nal made quick work of Sue and I's hands. Afterwards, Sue and I put an arm around



each other's back. We also held hands in front as Pim, Mim, San and Pam went over to Zem and Bev. The Nal didn't take long with Zem and Bev's hands either. Then they moved over to Mav and Til as Zem and Bev also got cuddly.

Sue said mainly to Mav and Til as they held up the palms of their hands, "I already told Bev, but Erik and I found out last night after petting some slightly musky smelling kipta that being able to clean hands were one of the Nal's many, if less impressive talents." Mav and Til lowered the palms of their hands at this point. Pim, Mim, San and Pam returned to their previous position as Sue added, "Not only did Mim remove the kipta smell from our hands, but she apparently turned some of it into perfume." Bev said, "Mim can be so sweet. Just like Pam." This statement got Pim and Mim circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam did the same. Sue said to Mav and Til, "Don't you two have a pair of planet Til Nal like Zem and Bev have Tal and Sas on planet Bev?" Til said, "We don't really need any here. The maketakes make Nal as extensions of themselves and send them out to do whatever tasks may need to be done." At the same time, Mav was looking at Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev were looking at Mav too. It seemed as if they were thinking to each other. Then they all gave each other slight nods. They all then turned to Sue and I as their smiles got a little wider.

Bev said, "I think it's time we told you something we didn't mention before." Sue and I briefly shot each other surprised, happy looks. No doubt whatever Bev was going to say, there was a good chance that it was going to be some combination of pleasing and amazing. Zem and Bev smiled at the Nal. Mav and Til turned a little in their chairs and did the same. Sue and I grinned at the Nal with a bit of a look of anticipation on our faces. Pim and Mim started circling around each other's surface at a little faster speed. San and Pam did the same. Bev said, "You guys can do the honors of telling Sue and Erik." Mim said in an audible voice that seemed tinged with pride, "Pim and I had a child." Sue and I's mouth's dropped open with delighted surprise as Mim added, "Whom you've met. Sas." Pam then added with the same prideful voice, "And San and I also had a child whom you met too. As you can guess, it is Tal." I said, "That's wonderful!" Sue said, "I'm so happy for you!" The speed at which the Nal

53

couples circled around their partner's surfaces increased a little more. Sue and I looked at Zem and Bev.

Sue said with a bit of a plaintive tone to her voice, "Why didn't you tell us!" Then I quickly added with a bit of a plaintive quality to my voice too, "I would have given them a better greeting if I would have known that!" Zem said, "That's why we didn't tell you. We knew that we were going to be bringing you to planet Bev. We also knew that if for no other reason, you at least Sue would have greeted them in a

familiar manner because of that information alone.” Sue and I took on slightly puzzled looks as Zem added, “And just as we also assumed, the more you got to know Pim and Mim before we got there, the more likely it was to happen. It is a very slight matter. But most often it is the littlest things that end up making the biggest difference. So much of the human consciousness is influenced by subconscious animalistic urges. We of course don’t encourage the attitude. But humans on planet Bev consider Sas and Tal to be gods almost as much as Bev and I. Seeing how the humans have much more contact with them, they are a little possessive of them. Any number of problems could have arisen from the humans there seeing you getting chummy with them.”

Sue and I took on more understanding expressions as Zem added, “And you know that we feel it’s better to be safe than sorry.” Bev then said, “We could have simply asked you not to get all huggy and kissy with Sas and Tal in front of the humans there. But simply withholding that information until later seemed to be a better way to go.” Sue then said to Bev, “Did Sas and Tal start out as baby Nal?” Bev said, “Yes. They were quite cute.” Sue got an excited look on her face and said to the Nal, “I have to see some pictures!” I was grinning with eager anticipation too as the Nal stopped circling each other. Pam said, “Sure thing!” Mim said, “We’d love to!” Pim, Mim, San and Pam transformed into four screens. The screens were three foot by four foot. On each, there were a number of pictures. The first ones showed Mim and Pam when they were pregnant. They were a slightly larger diameter than Pim and San. Mav and Til turned a little more in their seats, with grins still on their faces of course, to view the pictures too. A couple of the pictures showed the actual birth of Tal and Sas. In one picture, Mim was sitting on what I figured was a cloth covered gurney in the examination room. Zem and Bev’s grinning faces were nearby. Pim was next to Mim with a few loving tendrils around Mim. He and the tendrils had a soft white glow to them. Bev was holding her hand below where Sas was emerging from Mim. Sas was only about an inch and a half in diameter. There was a little clear fluid on that part of Mim and a little fluid soaking the cloth below her. In the Pam screen, there was a similar picture of Pam, Til and Mav. A baby Tal was emerging from Pam. He too was about an inch and a half in diameter. Some of the pictures were of Pim and Mim with a cute little baby Sas. Others were of San and Pam with a cute little baby Tal. Some of the other pictures either showed Zem and Bev with Pim, Mim and Sas. Others were with Mav, Til, San, Pam and Tal. Some of the pictures had Zem, Bev, Mav and Til in the pictures with the Nal families together. A few others were of Tal and Sas together. Some of these pictures were taken outdoors, a few in space, and some in what I took to be Zem and Bev’s or Mav and Til’s living quarters.

One of the pictures on the Pam screen showed a mass of what must have been a couple of hundred Nal. I would guess that Pam and Tal were somewhere in the middle of it. A similar picture showed on the Mim screen. There was one picture that was mostly Bev's grinning face with her hands cupped near her face. She held who I took to be the baby Sas in her hands. There was a similar picture with Til doing the same with who I took to be a baby Tal. One of the pictures on the Pim screen showed a picture of Panny holding the baby Sas in his hands and giving her a lick. It was so adorable. Sue had her hands clasped over her chest at this point with a happy, sentimental look on her face. Sue said, "They're just adorable!" I said, "They're so cute!" At the same time, Pim, Mim, San and Pam said, "Thank you!" We looked over the pictures for about a minute and a half. During that time, we all discussed the various pictures a little. Sue then said, "How did they come to be." Pim said to Sue, "You might say, through Nal sex. Obviously, our dear Reall wanted them to be gestated and born in a kind of similar way as they or you might."

Bev smiled at Sue and I and said, "It is a much nicer way to do it rather than simply having them create one like a maketake would." Pim, Mim, San and Pam reformed into Nal spheres. Not surprisingly, Pim and Mim started doing their Nal hug thing by circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam did the same thing. Mim said, "I told you that Bev and Zem are wonderful." San said, "As are Mav and Til." Sue said, "Now I really need to give Sas and Tal a hug and a kiss!" Zem, Bev, Mav and Til gave us sentimental smiles. Bev said, "That can be arranged." This caused Sue and I to beam wide grins. I glanced at Bev and Til. Looking back at Bev, I said, "Doesn't it bother you that they should be able to reproduce while you don't." Bev said, "Not really. Our intellectual instincts hold more sway than maternal instincts. Besides, if we feel motherly at all, we can just go into virtual reality and do the whole baby thing." Sue looked at the Nal and said, "Did the opportunity to reproduce make any of the other Nal jealous?"

Pam said, "What Nal that have done so only did so at the request of the Reall. Otherwise, it isn't something we care to do. Despite the pleasantness of it." It was at this point that Tal and Sas came swooping in. Sas went directly to Pim and Mim. Tal went directly to San and Pam. As you might expect, Pim, Mim and Sas started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. San, Pam and Tal were of course doing the same thing. We all watched them with big grins on our faces. After a few extended moments, they ended their greeting. Tal and Sas then floated over near Sue and I. Pim, Mim, San and Pam still circled around their partner's surfaces. Tal was nearest to Sue. He said verbally, "I understand that our origin surprised you." Sas then said, "And that you had something for us." Sas then extruded fur. Tal did the same. We all laughed. I then took hold of Sas in both hands and Sue took hold of Tal in both her hands. I said to Sas with a sentimental voice, "Your parents are so dear to us. That

makes you dear to us too.” Sue said to Tal, “It’s so wonderful!”

I then gave Sas a brief kiss and cuddled her against my cheek. My eyes were lightly closed with a happy look on my face. Sue also gave Tal a brief kiss and cuddled him against her cheek. As Sue did so with her eyes lightly closed

55

and a happy look on her face too, Sue said with a sentimental voice, “We haven’t known them for long, but no doubt your parents are wonderful too!” Til said with a sentimental voice, “You can take our word for it. They are.” Apparently, Pim, Mim, San and Pam couldn’t take any more. They became all furry too. San headed for Til and Pam headed for Mav. Pim headed for Bev and Mim headed for Zem. Fairly quickly, everybody was happily cuddling a Nal against their cheek. At about the same time, I said to Sas, “We saw pictures. You were so cute as a baby!” Sas said, “Thank you.” Sue said to Tal, “You were just adorable!” Tal said, “I’m sure you were adorable as a baby too.” Sue said, “Thank you.” Then Sue held Tal a little ways from her face. Sue had him cupped lovingly in the palms of her hands.

As Sue looked at Tal with a bit of an amused look on her face, Sue said, “Though I doubt if there were diapers to change with you.” Everybody held their Nal a little way from their faces as we all looked at Sue. What Sue said made everybody laugh. The Nal also emitted telepathic humor. Sue quickly joined in on the laughter. After the laughter, I said to Sas and Tal, “When Sue and I come to live on planet Bev, you’re going to have to tell us all about your childhoods.” Sas said, “I can’t wait.” I then handed Sas to Sue and Sue handed Tal to me. Sue said to Sas, “As Erik said, your parents have become so very dear to us.” Then Sue kissed Sas and cuddled Sas against her cheek. I cuddled Tal against mine. The other Nal floated up out of Zem, Bev, Mav and Til’s hands. They started to retract their fur and circle around their partner’s surface at differing angles as they floated up a little farther. Sue then said, “No doubt you will be too.” At the same time, as I held Tal against my cheek, I said, “I hope you weren’t a naughty little Nal.” Everybody chuckled. Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas emitted telepathic humor.

Panny and Lika were laying on the counter top and looking at us with interest. Tal said, “I may have been a little. But it isn’t even in a baby Nal’s nature to be very naughty.” Til said with a sentimental look on her face and tone in her voice, “He was just a little dear.” Then Til held out her hands and said, “And it’s been too long sense I’ve given the dear a hug.” I held Tal out a little further in one hand. He floated out of it and went over to Til. All of us were wearing sentimental smiles. Sue looked up at Pim and Mim and said, “Mim, Pim. There’s room for two more over here.” They floated over to Sue as Til and Mav were giving Tal a good cuddle. Zem and Bev put an arm around each other’s backs and cuddled together as they looked at Sue cuddle Pim,

Mim and Sas with sentimental smiles on their faces. Sue had Sas in one hand against her cheek and Pim in her other hand against her other cheek. Mim was cuddling herself just under Sue's chin. I of course had to get in on some of Sue's action. So I put my cheek on the other side of Sas and put an arm around Sue's back. With my other hand, I caressed Mim a little under Sue's chin.

After Til and Mav did a little more cuddling, Til held out Tal in her hands and said, "You're all such dears." I parted from Sue and Sas a little. At the same time, I stopped caressing Mim. Sue held out Pim and Sas. Tal went up to San and Pam. Mim moved near Sas and Pim. San, Pam and Tal started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. At the same time, Sue said, "I

56

can't wait until Erik and I have a family like yours." Sas said, "I would say that you are going to have a much larger family." Sue and I briefly beamed wide grins at each other before turning them back to Pim, Mim and Sas. They floated up and started circling round each other's surfaces at differing angles too. Then they started to move toward San, Pam and Tal as Sue said to them, "By the way. How old are Sas and Tal." Mim said, "They're only about sixty years old." Pam added, "They're practically still babies!" We all laughed a little as the Nal emitted telepathic humor. Then the Nal merged into a single group and started circling around each other at differing angles.

Zem said to Sue and I, "For some years after we brought humans to planet Bev, Pim and Mim simply had extensions of themselves taking care of things on planet Bev. But we knew that it would be better for the humans there to have their own Nal to look after them. So after Sas and Tal were old enough, we sent them to take over." I said to Zem, "Are Tal and Sas married?" Bev answered and said with a grin, "Of course. I'm assuming you would like to see some pictures." This caused grins to spread to everybody. Sue said excitedly, "Of course we would!" The Nal split up. Who I took to be Pim, Mim, San and Pam floated over to where they had formed into screens before. Who I took to be Tal and Sas stayed behind as they circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. The other Nal formed into screens again. A number of pictures appeared on them. The first one I was drawn to was a picture of the moment of marriage. Both Bev and Mav were dressed as Examiners and holding up both their arms at a fairly high angle. They too were on a bit of an appropriately sized platform.

Tal and Sas were floating about six feet in front of them at mid body level. Both Tal and Sas were emitting a very colorful and beautiful aura around them both. There were also sparkling lights here and there in these auras. Zem in his official Reall uniform clothing was standing off to the left and back slightly from Tal and Sas. Near Zem was who I took to be Pim and San. Til was standing off to the right and back slightly from Tal and Sas. She was wearing pretty much the same

kind of clothing I had seen a picture of her wearing at Zem and Bev's wedding. It was also the same kind of clothing Bev had worn as a Presenter at Sue and I's wedding. Near Til was who I took to be Mim and Pam. The wedding appeared to be taking place on some sort of asteroid. This seemed to be inside a colorful, slightly orange colored nebula. There were wisps of red and blue off in the distance. Though the vicinity of the wedding was free of these gasses. As we looked at these pictures, Tal and Sas stopped circling around each other. Instead, they each extruded a number of pencil thin appendages and embraced each other with them. Not surprisingly, they started glowing white as they did so. Sue saw the picture I was looking at too.

Sue said to Bev, "Why are you and Mav doing the ceremony." Bev said, "We figured that a male and female from each of us couples would perform the ceremony." Bev then smiled at Zem lovingly. Zem looked at Bev in the same way as Bev caressed Zem's cheek and said, "My darling insisted that I perform part of the ceremony." Zem and Bev then kissed each other lovingly. While they kissed, Til smiled sentimentally at Sue and I and said, "That settled the decision

57

for Mav and I. But I enjoyed being one of the brides maids." Sue and I smiled widely at Til and Mav. They kissed each other lovingly too as Sue and I went back to looking at the pictures. Just as in Zem and Bev's wedding photo, there were others seated in seats a little ways from the ceremony. Except in this photo, here and there, Nal were floating near or being held by the seated Reall. This audience too went out of frame. In another picture, more of the scene was in view. There were probably a couple hundred Reall seated in seats. Amongst the audience, there were some other alien couples here and there. A couple I recognized. Others I didn't.

A few of these too had their own Nal in attendance. Though the size and appearance of these alien Nal varied slightly. The seats the biological audience were setting in rose up slightly the farther back they went from the ceremony. Just like in a movie theater. Near the back edge of this audience, there were many more Nal. I would have to assume that the distance they were from the ceremony was practically meaningless. So they probably congregated here to give the biological audience a better view. From the distance they were, they could have probably zoomed in on Bev and Mav's chromosomes if they wanted to. Another picture showed the point where it was customary for the married couple to kiss. The beautiful aura that had been around Tal and Sas had turned into a dark force field. They were inside, embracing each other with tendrils. Despite the darkened force field around them, they glowed a brilliant white. Other pictures were the usual ones of the happy couple with various people and other Nal. Though mostly, the other people were various combinations of Zem, Bev, Mav, Til, Pim, Mim, San and Pam.

After looking the pictures over, I smiled up at Tal and Sas and said, "It looks like you had a very wonderful wedding." Tal and Sas started to reabsorb their tendrils and darken. Zem and Bev smiled up at them too. Mav and Til started to turn back as Pim, Mim, San and Pam started to turn back into normal shaped Nal. As all this was going on, Sas said, "It was wonderful." Mav and Til were smiling up at them too as Tal said, "We Nal have no such tradition for ourselves. But we could hardly do better than a Reall ceremony." Sue said, "I know exactly what you mean." I said to Tal and Sas, "I hope you two had to have a shotgun wedding." We all laughed again as Pim, Mim, San and Pam emitted telepathic humor. Tal and Sas circled around each other's surfaces a little faster as Tal said with a loving tone to his thought, "Of course." No doubt they were expressing loving emotions that we couldn't detect. Sue grinned at Zem and Bev. I did too as Sue said to them, "Speaking of shotgun weddings." Guessing what Sue was about to say, Zem and Bev's grins widened a bit as Sue said, "I think Til and Mav should see a picture of what you did the next morning after Erik and I spent the night together."

Zem and Bev laughed a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. Mav and Til looked both excited and curious. Til said to Bev and Zem with a grin, "What did you guys do!" Zem said in a kidding around manner, "We had to make sure Erik did the honorable thing." This of course caused Sue and I to laugh a little more. Zem and Bev chuckled a little more too. After the laughter, Bev looked at Pim and Mim and said, "Mim, Pim. You guys know what picture to show them."

58

Pim and Mim each formed into one seamless screen about seven foot high and nine foot wide. They formed about seven feet behind Mav and Til. At the same time, San, Pam, Tal and Sas came over above Sue and I. Mav and Til turned around a bit with big grins on their faces to look at the screen. A life sized picture came up of Zem and Bev standing in the livingroom. As you remember if you read the first book, Panny was on Bev's shoulder. All of them of course dressed as hillbillies. Zem had a shotgun and was wearing a wide brimmed straw hat. Panny had a little shotgun and appropriately sized, wide brimmed straw hat. Zem and Bev of course had a couple blacked out teeth. Mav and Til busted up laughing. The rest of us laughed too. The Nal also emitted telepathic humor.

After a little laughter, Til and then Mav turned to Zem and Bev. Til managed to get out between laughs, "It's so adorable!" Mav managed to get out, "Seeing that, I'd get hitched too!" Mav and Til briefly looked at Sue and I. We were of course laughing too. After a bit more laughter, Sue looked at Zem and Bev and said, "Can we show them the rest of it?" Bev said with a little chuckle, "Sure." As Mav and Til went back to looking at the screen, the picture turned into a playback. (It was so wonderful, I figure it is a story worth telling twice) Zem and

Bev appeared to be having a little trouble keeping from busting out laughing themselves. Then they did their best to take on a more serious expressions. Bev said in a hillbilly accent, "Look Paw! I told you that feller done deflowered our little Suzie May!" Zem said, "Yer right Maw." Zem then held the barrel of his shotgun in his other hand and said, "Our little Suzie May might be over the hill. But yous two er a gettin hitched!" The playback then froze. Mav and Till busted up laughing again. Our Nal also emitted more telepathic humor. Mav and Til turned back to the rest of us and we all shared in each other's laughter. The sight of each other's joviality only added to the laughter.

Pim and Mim turned back into their normal shape and rose up into the air farther. San, Pam, Tal and Sas floated over to them. They all started to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles as a group. After about thirty seconds, the laughter started to diminish. Til said with a mirth filled voice, "That was so cute!" Mav added, "I wish we had been there!" We all laughed a little more. Then Mav said, "How did you guys come up with that idea!" Zem said, "It was just something that came to me. Though of course, I wasn't actually going to make them get married." Til said, "It sure looks like you had a fun time." Bev said, "We sure did." Sue said, "Bev was apparently visiting you guys when Zem and Erik found me in the examination room. Ever sense I went with them to meet Bev, things have been so unbelievably wonderful." Til said, "Bev told me you were a pleasant surprise when she got back to her place. I so love surprises." Mav said to Sue and I, "Instead of sitting here and going over everybody's wedding photos and things, how would you like to feed some of our animals?" We were all still grinning as Sue said excitedly, "That would be fun!" Excited myself, I added, "We will be the first humans to ever feed a dinosaur!" Mav said, "Among other creatures." Bev's grin turned to a smile as she said, "I have to get something first." As Bev got up and went over to the maketake machine, Zem grinned at Sue and I before turning his attention to Bev. Bev

59

picked up a couple small objects from the maketake machine and brought them over to Sue and I. Bev held out her hand to Sue and I. In the palm of Bev's hand were a couple black capsules. They were a little smaller than capsules of medicine humans usually take were. Bev said with a smile, "I guess this would be as good a time as any to give you these." Sue smiled at Bev and picked up the capsules. Sue said to Bev, "What are these for." Bev grinned and said, "A lot of things. There are a few microorganisms on this planet that could possibly cause a bit of an allergic reaction should you be exposed. These will also help us keep track of you when you're back on earth. And as Erik pointed out, pizza isn't very healthy, even though it tastes good. This will even help with that." Sue handed me one of the capsules. We smiled at Bev as I said, "You're the boss. That is, after



Sue.” Sue grinned at me and we briefly kissed each other as Bev, Zem, Mav and Til chuckled at my remark.

Then Sue and I took our capsules and washed them down with our tasty drinks. Bev went back to stand near Zem with a hand on his far shoulder. Sue and I smiled at each other as we sat our glasses down. Both of us knowing that anything Bev gave us had to indeed be good for us. Mav said with a smile, “Let me get things set up.” Mav looked at the maketake machine and apparently thought something to it. Because about twelve Nal appeared in it. They levitated out of the maketake machine. All but one levitated a little farther up near the ceiling. Zem stood up. He and Bev put an arm around each other’s lower back. Mav and Til also stood up as a rectangular basket of what appeared to be various fruits and vegetables appeared in the maketake. Sue and I stood up also as one of the maketake Nal removed a basket. When it did that, another basket appeared. Which it levitated out also. While this was going on, Sue smiled at Mav and Til and said, “Your animals are pretty big. I hope they don’t get too eager.” Til said to Sue, “You will be in no danger. And if any get too naughty, we’ll just move them away.”

This caused Sue and I to briefly look at each other with slightly surprised, happy expressions. Sue was probably thinking the same thing I was. Which was that moving such large creatures off must be quite a feat. Though Sue and I had long past gotten over being too surprised by anything the Reall or Nal could do. One of the Nal levitating a couple baskets was already moving around the side of the house as another Nal was removing a second basket from the maketake. Mav then added, “I think they will behave themselves.” Zem said to Bev as they started walking toward the front of the house, “The forlix are a lot of fun.” Sue and I held hands as we stepped back from the table and waited for Zem and Bev to walk up near us. I said to Mav, “I take it you have some predators around here too.” Sue and I started walking between Mav and Til and Zem and Bev. Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas followed us. Til answered and said, “Unfortunately it is a necessity.” Mav then said, “You may recognize one of the types if you see one. The Tyrannosaurus Rex. But if any of them are around and approach, one of the Nal will chase it off so it doesn’t spook any of the plant eaters.”

We had walked around the back corner of the house by now. I saw the Nal levitating baskets of food up to the upper balcony. One of the big creatures with

60

the wicked looking horns saw them also. It started moving toward the house.

Mav saw this also as he appeared to think something. An arc of a wall about six feet tall appeared. This didn’t seem to be tall enough to me. It didn’t appear to be any thicker than the glass of their houses. This

wall was about twenty-five feet from the front of the house. It was about seventy-five or eighty feet long in front. Though the ends arched back toward the lake about fifteen feet at the ends. Sue said to Mav and Til, "Did you forgo transplanting insects like Zem and Bev did on planet Bev?" Til looked over at Sue and said with a slight smile, "We don't like those things either." I looked at them and said, "Sue and I saw a couple insects like beings on the Pol-Wim who Zem said were called Trelin. Their appearance doesn't put you off at all does it?" Mav said, "Not much. But we're use to them. And they are very nice beings. Despite their appearance. Though there is a human saying that would apply to any other being. Even if they were possibly more advanced than us in some way. If I had a sister, I wouldn't want her marrying one."

This made everybody laugh. As Zem and Bev reached the bottom of the stairs on the side of the house, Zem and Bev paused and turned toward us. Zem said, "Interestingly enough, even the Trelin don't like those small creeping, flying and biting things either." Til added, "As you can imagine, their home world had no shortage of insects." Zem and Bev started up the steps. Sue and I let Mav and Til go next. As Sue and I did so, Bev turned a little to look at Sue and I and said, "They make worlds for themselves like we do. Even they forgo the insect based ecosystems." As Mav and Til started up the steps too, Bev grinned at Zem and said, "Race ya!" Bev then ran up the remaining steps. We all briefly laughed as Zem took off after her. Mav and Til briefly glanced at each other with big grins and did the same. Sue and I quickly glanced at each other with big grins before doing the same. Bev reached the top first. As she ran up onto the grass covered landing at the top of the steps, she turned to Zem with her arms raised above her head and said, "I win!" Then Zem grabbed Bev around the middle of her body and picked her up as Mav and Til reached the platform at the top of the stairs. Zem turned Bev in the air as she laughed. Zem said to Bev, "You didn't give me enough warning!"

While this went on, Mav held up his arms and said, "I win!" Sue and I reached the top of the stairs as Til hugged Mav. They both laughed. Then Mav hugged Til and lifted her off her feet. Seeing how I wasn't all that serious about beating Sue, she beat me to the platform by half a step and threw her arms up in the air too. Sue said, "I win!" Zem sat Bev on her feet. They continued to laugh as they watched us. I grabbed Sue and picked her up and swung her around also as we laughed. Mav sat Til on her feet and they laughed at Sue and I. Then I set Sue down. Panny and Lika had heard the commotion and had run from the back patio. They scampered up the stairs as the Nal were levitating baskets of goodies for the animals up toward the side of the balcony facing the field. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til were grinning at us as I said to Sue, "That's not fair! I have a lot more upper body muscle mass!" Zem, Bev, Mav, Til and Sue chuckled at my feeble excuse. Then Sue pushed herself away from me a little and grinned as she pointed at her breasts. Sticking out her quite ample bosom a little, Sue

said,  
61

"What about these!" Zem, Bev, Mav and Til laughed a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. Then Sue and I embraced each other.

As Panny grabbed onto my lower leg and Lika grabbed onto Sue's, Mav said, "I think Sue has a point." Mav turned his grin to Til and said, "I'm surprised you can move so fast too with your handicap sweetest." Til said, "Thank you honey." They then kissed. Sue and I kissed each other also. At the same time, Zem said to Bev, "We can discuss your handicap later dearest." Bev said, "I can't wait darling." Then they kissed too. Sue and I were the first to part our kiss. We smiled at each other lovingly. Then we released each other. Sue and I picked up Panny and Lika. They apparently hadn't wiped their paws off very well after eating pizza. Just like the rest of us had done, they had forgone using forks when the pizza got cool enough to hold. Sue looked at Lika and said in a slightly high pitched, plaintive manner, "Lika! Your hands are dirty!" I looked at Panny's paws and saw that they were dirty too. Some of the maketake Nal were heading back to the back patio as one of our Nal came down and started cleaning Lika and Sue. Sue smiled at the Nal as another headed my way. Sue said, "Is that you Mim?" The Nal said verbally, "No. It's me, Sas."

I looked at the Nal cleaning Panny and me and said, "Tal?" He said, "That's right." As Sas started cleaning Sue's pant leg where Lika had grabbed onto it, I said to Tal, "I wish Sue and I had the ability to more than just guess who was who." Zem and Bev were standing nearby with an arm around each other's backs and smiling at us. Mav and Til were doing the same. As Sas rose up from cleaning Sue, Sas said telepathically, "I have an idea." Tal started to rise up from my pant leg too as Sas turned to a deep purple color. We all smiled at our Nal as Sas said, "I'll be purple." Tal turned to a green color and said, "I'll be green." Pim turned to an orange color and said, "I'll be orange." Mim turned to a yellow color and said, "I'll be yellow." San turned to a red color and said, "I'll be red." Pam turned to a blue color and said, "I'll be blue." We were all smiling at our Nal as Sue said, "Thank you. You're all so sweet." Pim said, "You're welcome." Mim said, "Our pleasure." San said, "No problem." Pam said, "That's ok. I like blue." Tal said, "We're happy to serve." Sas said, "Purple is fun anyway."

Mav said to Sue and I in an inviting voice, "Follow us." Then Mav, Til, Zem and Bev started walking toward where the other Nal had deposited their baskets of food on the field side of the balcony. Both couples with an arm around their partner's lower backs. I held Panny in both arms and petted him. Sue held Lika in both arms and petted her. The Nal that I had seen going back toward the back patio were returning with more baskets of food. And judging from the size of these animals, it was no wonder why. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all

walked slowly until Sue and I caught up to walk between them. Behind the glass of the upper floor here there was a spacious and nicely decorated bedroom. Among other things, there was a comfortable looking couch at the end of the bed that faced the field. Past an opaque area, there was a viewing lounge on the lake and mountain side. Sue noticed this too and said to Til, "I imagine you get some good sunsets to look at from the bed. But don't you also like to look at the lake and mountains from bed too?" Til smiled at Sue and said, "Not only could we

62

turn the upper floor, we could fly it anyplace like a spaceship. We could even put the bed on the upper patio."

Sue got a bit of a thrilled look on her face and said, "How wonderful!" The rest of us grinned. Then I said to Mav, "The race Zem, Bev, Sue and I had on the back of a taser was fun. Maybe we can have a race later." We were rounding the edge of the upper floor at this point. There was a tubular bell hanging from a decorative bracket on the field side of the railing. It was shaped like a cut off oxygen tank. Though it was made of a polished reddish brass kind of metal and ornately carved. The Nal had deposited their baskets of food in a couple rows about four feet from the railing. As we approached this area, Mav said, "Maybe. To make it interesting, we could have some ruka between a couple forlix. The ruka could have its head on the side of one forlix and its tail on the side of another. Starting out on a forlix, we could run down the neck of a ruka, across its back and up the tail to the other forlix." As we all stopped near the bell, Mav added, "The Nal would catch us if anybody lost their footing on the neck or tail of a ruka." Zem said to Mav, "Maybe. But Sue requested a dinosaur ride earlier." Sue then added quickly as she glanced from Zem to Mav, "Though it doesn't really matter what we go for a ride on."

Mav then said, "Luckily for you, we have a far more interesting creature to ride on than a dinosaur." Sue said excitedly, "What kind of creature is that!" We had all reached the area where the bell was at this point and stopped. Bev grinned at Sue and said, "It wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." This caused everybody to laugh. Sue then said with a mock angry look on her face, "Oh you!" Then Sue put Lika down and hurried over behind Bev. We all laughed as Sue grabbed Bev around the shoulders from behind. Sue said to Bev, "You're so mean!" Zem moved his arm from behind Bev to let Sue happily assault her a tiny bit. Sue made a bit of a grunting sound each time she gave Bev's shoulders a little extra squeeze. At the same time, Sue slightly rocked and turned Bev a little. This of course caused Bev to laugh a little more heartily. While this was going on, Lika went over to the railing and stood up at it holding a couple of the railings in her little paws. She was looking at the approaching animals with interest. Panny seemed anxious to join her. So I lowered him and let

him jump from my arms. After Sue squeezed and rocked Bev's shoulders about four times, Sue released Bev so they could look at each other and share in each other's laughter.

After a little laughter, Bev said, "See. I told you it wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." This caused a little more laughter as they happily placed the sides of their heads back together and gave each other a little extra hug. Zem gave Sue's shoulder an appreciative caress. There were still some Nal dropping off more baskets of food as all this was going on. Some of the other Nal turned into rectangular bars about ten feet long and about a foot wide. These hovered a few feet above the wall. Mav smiled at our Nal and said, "Who wants to ring the bell." Bev and Sue released each other with big grins on their faces. Sas started to move toward it and said in a playful manner, "Me me me!" We all chuckled and our Nal emitted telepathic humor. Sue came back over to me as Sas ran into the bell like a hammer. It was so interesting that the Nal could be soft and

63

squishy when they wanted to be. And yet probably be harder than a ball of diamond if they wanted to be. Though the sound the bell made was as if Sas was made of a semi hard wood. Just the perfect hardness of course for ringing a bell. The bell gave off a pure, clean tone. Sas did it a few other times as Zem and Bev put an arm around each other's lower back again. Sue and I did the same. We all looked out over the field.

Panny and Lika were standing on their feet at the railing and looking excitedly out over the field as they each held onto a bar of the railing with each paw. Though Lika seemed a little more excited. Probably because this was her first time here. On that account, I and no doubt Sue could understand how she felt. We could see various groups of creatures starting to make their way toward us as they heard the bell. The creatures with the spiked horns were the closest. They made sounds that sounded like short bursts of sound that were a cross between a loud cow's "moo" and a quieter, higher pitched foghorn. The spiketails (Stegosaurus) were the next closest. They made a raspy, lower octave sound like a pirate saying "Arr." Farther away there were ruka (Argentinosaurus) heading our way. As were some forlix. There were also some kafkins (Mastodons) heading our way. Sue said to Mav, "What are those creatures with the spiked horns called." Mav smiled at Sue and I and said, "They're called Kopoz." There was a group of about eight fairly large creatures about a mile and a half away. They were too far away to make out very well. All I could tell is that they were quadruped and a little oddly shaped. When they heard the bell, they all started running off to the right a little.

The reason for their slightly odd shape soon became clear. Wings spread out from their bodies and started flapping as they all took to the air. They all started rising higher in the air. Mav turned to retrieve

a basket of various fruits and plants. Zem and I did the same as Sue said to Til with a grin, "You sure have some amazing animals here." At the same time, Mav said to Zem and I, "We better spread out a little." We both gave Mav a smile and nod in agreement. Til said with a grin, "Yes, we have many different kinds all over the planet." As Mav brought back a basket of food, Til added, "In time, you will probably see more." Mav sat his basket a little farther off to our left. Zem brought his a little farther off to our right. As we were in the process of doing so, Sue said to Til, "What other kinds do you have." Til said as I set a basket down next to Sue, "It wouldn't be as much fun if I just told you." This made everybody laugh. After the laughter, Til went over about fifteen feet to join Mav. Bev went over about fifteen feet in the other direction to join Zem. Sue and I grinned at each other and gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

After we parted, we looked back over the field. The creatures that I had seen take off were now flying in our direction. Til pulled something out of her basket that looked like a slightly long bunch of celery. Except they looked a little more like rhubarb with a number of berries among fairly small leaves. Til smiled at Sue and I and said, "The kopoz really like these." The kopoz were just reaching the wall. It was slightly alarming as the head of the largest one stopped about fifteen feet away from Mav and Til. It looked at us with some interest with eyes about eight or nine inches across. The pupils of which were dark brown with the

64

outer parts being a lighter shade of brown. Til tossed her treat to the nearest kopoz. Which opened its mouth to grab it. Inside its mouth I could see teeth and molars that were appropriate for a plant eater. I looked over at Til and said, "That was a good throw." Til giggled a little and looked at me with a grin. Til said, "They're pretty hard to miss." She had a point there. Zem, Bev, Sue and I picked up treats too.

Sue threw hers to one of the spiketails which had reached the wall. It grabbed it out of the air also. I threw mine to one of the other kopoz. Zem and Bev were throwing other things to the spiketails. Sue and I threw some other things to the animals with much enthusiasm. Even Panny and Lika got into the act. Tossing what they grabbed as far as they could through the ornate bars that supported the railing. Which the kopoz had no problem reaching and eating from off the ground. These creatures were amazing! I could hear some short high pitched, soprano like calls coming from the flying creatures that were quickly approaching. There were ruka, forlix and kafkins approaching from different directions. It looked like things might get a little crowded. To the right side of the house, I could see a group of about ten big Armadillo like creatures coming our way. There were four small ones amongst them that looked pretty cute in comparison. Sue saw them too and pointed at them as she said to Til, "I recognize those

things. But I don't remember what they were called." Everybody briefly glanced over at them before turning to look back at Sue.

Mav said, "Ancient humans called them Mluk. Which we call them too. But your scientists call them Glyptodons." Sue grinned at Mav and said, "Oh." Sue and the rest of us then went back to feeding the other creatures. As we all stood at the railing, I then said to Mav, "What are those flying creatures called." Everybody smiled at me. Mav answered and said, "They are called Houk. (This was pronounced the same way as "gook." But with an H instead of a G) I told you that we had a more fun creature to ride than a dinosaur." Sue and I looked at Mav and Til with open mouthed expressions of happy surprise. This caused Mav and Til to chuckle as Sue and I turned these expressions to Zem and Bev. They chuckled too. Then Bev said, "There. That was worth waiting for." Sue and I both laughed a little. Then we beamed wide grins. Sue then made a happy "Eee!" sound. Which made Zem, Bev, Til and Mav chuckle a little more. We went back to feeding the animals. Giving the approaching houks a glance, I turned back to Sue with a loving smile, "Being an angel already sweetie, you should take to flying pretty easily."

Sue was smiling at me lovingly as she said, "Thank you darling." Then Sue and I gave each other a loving kiss. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til looked at us with sentimental smiles. Then Zem and Bev turned these smiles to each other. As did Mav and Til. They all then gave their partners a loving kiss too. Sue and I parted and looked at each other lovingly as one of the kopoz gave out a call. Probably because it wanted more food. Sue tossed it a treat. The rest of us started tossing out treats again too. Then Sue looked over at Mav and Til and said with a smile, "Did all of these creatures get chosen to come here because they were facing extinction?" Til said with a slight smile, "Most of them." I said, with a smile, "That was very nice of you." Mav, Til, Zem and Bev all smiled at

65

Sue and I. Mav said, "Well you know how we are." Sue said, "I know. Wonderful!" Mav, Til, Zem and Bev all grinned at us before returning their attention to the animals. Til lingered with her grin long enough to say, "Thank you. But we don't do that much." Sue said, "I would say you do quite a lot." Mav glanced over and said, "Well it's something at any rate."

The houks flew in about thirty five feet above our heads. Sue and I both looked at them and said, "Wow!" Zem, Bev, Mav and Till looked at us with grins. They were probably enjoying our astonishment. These houks were massive. Their bodies were about twelve feet across at their widest and four feet thick. Each wing was about four and a half feet wide and about fifteen feet long. In appearance, they were a combination of being bird like and bat like. These houks were about forty feet long from nose to tail. The tails were thin and fairly

wide. They forked out about four feet from their bodies with a membrane covered in short fur that stretched between them. Their legs were fairly short, wide set and bird like. Though they were covered in a short greenish brown fur on the lower sections. Which was a little longer on their upper legs and bodies. Their heads were slightly on the small side for their size. Though they were longer than they were wide. The heads of the houks were also a little flat. Except for where the eyes and small craniums were. Their ears sat farther back on their heads and looked something like bear ears. Though they faced sideways rather than forward. Their wings were covered in a short fur like their lower legs.

As the first one flew over, it turned its slightly flattened head a little vertically and looked at us. I turned to Mav and Til and said, "Do these houks eat grass?" Mav said, "Mainly, yes." I said, "It's incredible that these creatures can fly like a bird and eat like a cow." Til looked at us long enough to say, "Their means of digestion is pretty efficient. Though it varies a little by season, the grass is also a little more nutritious than grasses found on earth." Then Til threw another piece of food. I nodded slightly at them and reached down to get another food item. Then I picked up two and handed one to Sue. With a grin, I said, "Here ya go honey." Sue was grinning too as she took it and said, "Thank you sweetheart." We then briefly kissed each other before returning our attention to these magnificent animals. The forlix, ruka and kafkins were also starting to get close. Also, the houks had flown over and were circling around as they got lower. Apparently getting ready to land. A couple of the kopoz were getting a little frisky. A couple of them started bumping horns a little. Though the sound of the horns crashing together was a little alarmingly loud. They each gave out a seemingly plaintive bellow.

One of the Nal that had turned itself into a long rectangle flew up next to the one that seemed to be causing the trouble and rammed into it lengthwise. Pushing it and a couple other kopoz on the other side of it over about twenty five feet. The kopoz let out more of their calls, but didn't put up any more fuss. Sue and I both threw them treats to help calm them down. There was a group of forlix that were getting close as the group of houks came in for a landing in the same direction as they had taken off. The maketake Nal were bringing more baskets of food and setting them down on top of the others. After the houks had

66

landed, they started running up to the wall. One apparently came too close to a spiketail. Because it started to whip its spiked tail toward it. But about a quarter of one of the Nal that had transformed itself into a long rectangle disappeared and instantly appeared above the tail. This piece of Nal stopped the tail cold. This Nal section also apparently gave the creature a shock. Because it gave out what seemed to be a



call of pain and backed off a little.

The piece of the rectangular Nal then flew over to near where it had come from. But it didn't reattach itself. I would have to guess it was so it could again go into action again if necessary. We all threw more food. Which the animals seemed to enjoy. The forlix walked up among these other animals. Though they didn't come quite as close. Even standing where we were, we still had to look up to them. They made low rumbling "moo" like calls and started reaching their trunks down for food. Apparently they weren't part nose like elephant trunks were. Though I could see nostrils below where they merged into their heads. The ends had a flat, slightly oval section with six flexible fingers that splayed out from the sides. The whole thing was about ten inches across. Sue laughed as she handed a goodie to one of the creatures trunks and felt the end of the other. As the creature passed its one trunk up to bring the food to its mouth, the creature seemed to be as interested in exploring Sue's fingers with the appendages at the end of its other trunk as Sue was interested in exploring its appendages.

While the others passed a treat to one of the other forlix's trunks, Sue put her hand sideways in the flat end of the trunk she was checking out. Sue intertwined her fingers with the fingers on that side of the trunk. When Sue did this, Sue wiggled her fingers. The forlix wiggled the appendages on that side back. This made Sue giggle. Sue grinned up at the forlix and called out a little, "Aren't you adorable!" Bev grinned at Sue and said, "They are quite friendly." I handed Sue another goodie and said, "Here ya go sweetie." Sue took it and said, "Thank you darling." Then Sue placed it into the other forlix's trunk. The forlix took hold of it and started to bring it up to its mouth. At the same time, some of the other maketake Nal came over each of us couples. Then Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas started helping out. Pim, San and Tal each picked up a basket of treats. Then they spread out and levitated them over to the animals. Mim went with Pim, Pam went with San and Sas went with Tal. When they got to the animals, the girls levitated a treat out of the baskets the guys were levitating. The girls then levitated a treat over to an animal.

It was clear that we were going to need the help. Because after the houks had come up to the wall, some ruka and kafkins also came up amongst the group of animals. There was a little pushing and shoving going on. It was interesting how much like elephants the kafkins sounded. Being so large, all of this hardly fazed the forlix. The back of the largest ruka only reached to the mid body of a forlix. This maneuvering for position for caused some of the animals to give out varying calls. But smaller sections of the rectangular Nal kept things under control. The group of mluks (Glyptodons) that had been far off to the right were also getting closer. The ruka had a surprisingly high pitched call for their size. Though it was still pretty loud. One brought its head down to Sue and I. Its muzzle was a little longer than I had seen paleontological artist rendering of. It stuck out a

prehensile tongue something like a giraffes. Sue gave out a little high pitched exclamation as it wrapped its tongue around the food item. As it did this, Sue rubbed her other hand on its nose.

With some amusement, I remembered Sue telling me how as a child, she fed a buffalo some french fries through a partially opened car window. It was funny when Sue told me how its tongue scared her. I grinned at Sue and said, "It's a little scarier than a buffalo tongue honey. Isn't it." As the tongue brought the food item into its mouth, Sue said happily but with an edge of fright, "A little!" The creature took in a breath of air as Sue said this. Which was interesting in itself. Its nostrils were kind of large and sat on the top of its muzzle, a little farther down from its eyes. As its nostrils flared, I could see a number of short hairs inside its nose. For a reptile, its lips were surprisingly flexible. As it raised its head, I could see it grasp the food with its lips. Then it appeared to mash up the food with its front teeth. Something like we might mash up some food with our incisors if we chose to. While the ruka did this, everybody shot Sue a grin at my comment about the buffalo tongue. Bev said to Sue, with a grin of course, "Did you have an unpleasant encounter with a buffalo tongue?" As we continued to feed or toss food to the animals, Sue explained her story to everybody.

When Sue was through, Til said, "That must have been so cute." Bev grinned at Sue and said, "I should send a Nal back to record the event." Both Sue and I looked at Bev with some surprise. But not for long. Because there were forlix and ruka eager for treats. As we fed them, Sue said, "From what you said Zem, I kind of got the impression that time travel was too difficult." Bev said, "Time travel into the past is easy as pie. Difficulties only arise if the past is altered. But the Nal can make themselves present without your knowing. They wouldn't even effect air flow. So there would be no alteration of the past time line." I looked over at Mav, Til, Zem and Bev and said, "A paleontologist on earth would die to see these things." Sue gave me a quick smile and turned it to them also. Sue said, "Anybody on earth would." Being preoccupied, they only gave a brief smile in our direction. I threw a piece of food over to one of the kafkins. It reached over the wall with its trunk to retrieve it. I briefly glanced around to Mav, Til, Zem and Bev and said, "This might be more fun than riding tasers." They all again briefly glanced over at me with big smiles before returning to what they were doing.

I reached down for another treat. One of the forlix put the end of its trunk on the top of my head. It felt around the top of my head a little with its trunk fingers as I stood up with another bit of food. I took hold of the trunk from just behind its grasping part and removed it from my head. Then I put the food item on the end of its trunk. Which it grasped. Zem added to my last comment in a kidding around voice

and said, "I told you Mav was a showoff." We chuckled a little. All of us looked at the others a little to share in each other's mirth. The rest of us knew that Zem was only kidding. I held onto the end of the other forlix's trunk and lightly slapped the flat of it with the palm of my other hand a few times and then rubbed it. The appendages explored my hand as I did so. Sue looked at me briefly and giggled as another ruka head came in. I went back and picked up another basket of food. Then I placed it inside the now empty basket that was

68

between Sue and I. The ruka head that was now in front of Sue didn't reach out its tongue to take the food Sue was offering it. Instead it opened its mouth a little and curled back its lips. Making a somewhat distressed sound as it did so. Sue turned a bit of a concerned look to Mav and said, "Mav. I think this one has a bad tooth." I looked over and saw that one of its teeth in the lower front was somewhat blackened and bleeding a little at the gums. Mav walked over to take a look at it as Sue caressed around the end of its muzzle. We all watched as Mav looked at it and said, "That does look pretty bad." One of the Nal flew to above the ruka's head and it froze in place. Mav put the palm of his hand on the front of the tooth and gum below it. A slight look of concentration came over Mav's face for a couple moments. Then he removed his hand. The tooth looked fine. Mav said, "All better now." As the Nal moved off, Sue and I looked at Mav with amazed looks. Sue said to Mav as the ruka raised its head a little and made what was probably a happy sound in dinosaur language, "You guys are just full of surprises." Zem and Bev briefly grinned at Sue and I as we grinned at Mav. Mav grinned back at us as he made his way back to his spot. Mav said, "It was nothing. Especially when you have a Nal assisting you." Then Mav stepped back over to where he was. Zem and Bev were happily tossing or handing out food.

Til was smiling at Mav as she handed him one of the two food items she had picked up. The ruka with the fixed tooth again lowered its head and opened its mouth. Sue just tossed the cantaloupe sized food item into its mouth. The ruka started to mash it up with its peg like teeth. Interestingly enough, I had also seen them apparently mashing up food with their back jaws. Even though they didn't have any teeth back there. Though the skin back there did appear to be pretty tough. Sue rubbed its nose area with both hands. It shoved Sue back a little. Causing Sue to giggle. After it did so, it raised its head. I started picking up food items two at a time and either throwing them or handing them to one of the forlix or ruka. Out of the corner of my eye I spotted some more Nal flying over. Each was levitating six baskets of food around it and heading out over the field. Off in the distance, I could see other groups of animals heading our way. Apparently somebody had thought something to the maketake machine to send more Nal and baskets of food out to head them off. Which of course

was a good idea. Because things would have gotten too crowded if they showed up.

The creatures off in the distance were the same as we had near us. Except for one group. They were too far away to make out clearly. But a group of about fifteen were moving quickly. They were hopping in a way that looked like they had four Kangaroo like legs. The mluks had reached the end of the wall by this time. Zem tossed a food item in their direction. Though Mim was also levitating a treat toward one of them. Sue handed a forlix a food item to one of its trunks. As it raised that trunk up, it grabbed onto one of Sue's breasts with the other. Kneading it with its appendages. Sue gave out a little high pitched exclamation as one of the Nal moved closer. We all quickly looked at what was happening. Sue grabbed the trunk and pulled it away from her breast. We all laughed as Sue slapped the palm of the forlix trunk a few times. As it slightly and fairly slowly wiggled its appendages a little, Sue looked up at the forlix and yelled out a

69

little, "Bad forlix!" After a little laughter, Zem said with a grin, "They can get a little overly friendly." As Sue handed the forlix trunk a treat it could actually use, Sue looked up at the forlix and said in a louder than normal voice, "I think I'm going to name you "Grabby!"

This made everybody laugh a little. I added with a grin, "I can't say I blame him." We all laugh again. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Even though Sue was a little embarrassed. Mav held onto his forearm with his other hand as if to hold it back. He started moving his hand toward Til's breasts and wiggling his fingers. As he did so, he said, "I think my arm has gone all Forlix! I don't think I can stop it!" We all laughed. Til shoved his hand away and said with a bit of a plaintive edge to her laughing voice, "Stop it!" Mav laughed too as he put his arm down. A ruka head came down and nudged him. Apparently wanting more food. Mav reached down and picked up a food item. When Mav stood erect again, he slapped the ruka on the nose quickly a few times and it opened its mouth. Mav tossed the food in and said, "Don't be greedy!" Sue and I quickly grinned at Mav, then each other. This was all so much fun! I said to Mav, "These ruka's are surprisingly friendly." Mav smiled at me and said, "Even so. It wouldn't be a good idea for a human to try this without a Nal around. Just in case they get a little feisty."

Sue looked at Mav and said, "Can you handle them without the Nal?" Mav tossed a food item at a spiketail and smiled at Sue. He said, "We have means of dissuading aggressive behavior. But not as effectively as the Nal." I looked over at some food Bev had thrown over the wall to the mluks. It was interesting watching an adult and a baby one sharing a food item that was on the ground. The way the houks ate was interesting too. When they opened their mouths, I could see that they had a fairly straight row of incisors across the front. No doubt it

made eating grass more efficient. As we fed the creatures more, I looked over at Mav and Til and said, "I don't suppose I would be going out on a limb to guess that you get a lot of visitors here." Til said, "Yes. Quite a few." Bev then smiled at Sue and I and added, "This planet has made Til and Mav pretty popular." Zem then grinned at Mav and Til and added, "Just remember. We were friends first." We all laughed. The idea that Mav and Til would think that Zem and Bev only liked them for their planet was just silly.

After the laughter, Sue grinned at Mav and Til and said, "I know that Zem was just making a joke. But how much older is your friendship than this planet." As we all grinned at Sue. Til answered and said, "About a couple hundred million years." Sue said, "Wow." I chuckled and said, "I would say that was a pretty firm foundation for a friendship." Mav tossed a treat to a karkin and said to Sue and I, "As you know, we don't have siblings. But Zem has been like a brother sense we were youngsters." Zem and Bev smiled sentimentally at Mav and Til as Til added, "It's the same way with Bev and I." Mav, Til, Zem and Bev then smiled sentimentally at each other. Sue and I smiled sentimentally at them all too. I said, "I wish I had a brother." Sue said, "I'm so happy for you all." But the animals weren't much interested in our sentimentality. We all had combinations of ruka and forlix seeking more treats. Along with the other animals that were anxious to have food tossed to them. I handed a treat to a ruka's tongue. It

70

wrapped its tongue around it and started to pull it in as Sue handed a treat to a forlix trunk.

While we fed the animals more, I said, "Your talk about brothers and sisters does bring up a question. Which is why you don't have actual brothers and sisters. After all, to maintain a twenty billion population level, wouldn't both of your parents needed to have had two children?" Everybody smiled at me. Bev said, "That's the way it was with our grandparents and preceding generations." As we continued to hand or toss food to the animals, Bev added, "What Zem told you before about the immortal not being allowed to have children wasn't the complete picture. We Reall decided to sort of wean ourselves into childlessness. Half of our parents were chosen by lot to raise two children. Half only had one. By chance, Zem, Til, Mav and I came from parents that only had one child. Of the immortal children that were born, about half were chosen to have a child. About half of those again were allowed to have a child. Reaching our twenty billion population limit. Or there about. The Mind didn't mind us going a little over our population limit."

After tossing another treat, Bev continued on, saying, "Obviously, neither Zem and I, or Til and Mav, were among those couples who got a chance to raise a child. But it doesn't really matter. Besides, both Zem and I as well as Til and Mav had the opportunity to play the role of

aunt and uncle. For the very brief amount of time we had to do so, it was quite enjoyable. Also, as I said earlier, we can experience much of the state of parenthood in virtual reality anyway. But we can't take it much past the baby stage. After that, too much sentience on the part of the child program would be difficult for it and us to bear." At this point, there was a ruka head near Sue and I wanting food. Another of the forlix was touching Zem on the shoulder. It was obviously interested in more food too. Sue picked up another food item and fed the ruka near us. While Sue did this, I picked up a food item and tossed it to a kopoz. Zem went back to grab another basket of food as Bev took out the last two food items in her basket. At the same time, Mav and Til had another ruka head and forlix trunk coming near them. They both reached down for more food.

Though Panny and Lika were already grabbing treats from the baskets from time to time to hand or toss to an animal, I grabbed a couple food items and handed them to Panny and Lika. As I did so, I said, "Here Panny. Here Lika." They took them happily with both hands and tossed them out between the bars of the railing. Where they landed, a kopoz got one and a kafkin got the other. Sue picked up a couple more food items to give to the animals. I then picked up another food item as Sue tossed one of hers to a kafkin and another to a spiketail. Then I handed my food item to a forlix trunk as a ruka tried to bring its head over the railing to grab a food item for itself from our basket. Its head started to force Sue and I apart. But one of the Nal moved next to the ruka's head and lifted it back up. We all chuckled a little as the ruka made what was probably a plaintive sound in dinosaur. Mav went back for another basket of food as Sue picked up a food item. Then Sue handed it to the ruka as she said to it, "Don't be greedy!" We all grinned as the ruka wrapped its tongue around the food item Sue handed it. As it raised its head, another ruka brought its head

71

down. I could see it looking at the basket as it did so. I picked up another food item and said to it, "Don't even think about it!" Its eye looked at me and blinked.

I knew of course that it couldn't understand me. But maybe it could pick up something from my manner that would keep it from possibly misbehaving. I slapped the ruka on its nose a few times as it opened its mouth. Then I tossed the treat in as I rubbed the area I slapped. The ruka made some rather happy sounding sounds as it raised its head and chewed its food. I then went back and retrieved another basket of food. Sue looked around at Mav, Til, Zem and Bev with a smile to pose a question. Probably feeling as I did. Which is that it didn't really matter who answered. Sue said, "I have seen programs that showed some birds on earth can be surprisingly intelligent despite the lack of brain size. Are the dinosaurs the same way?" As I sat

another basket down, we all smiled at Sue. It made me proud that Sue asked such an intelligent and interesting question. Til answered and said, "Basically, yes. Despite their small brain size." As I picked up another food item, I said, "Have you ever tried training any of these creatures?" Then I tossed a treat over to a houk.

Til again responded and said, "There's no need. If we really wanted to, either we or one of our Nal could get into their minds and make them do whatever action we wanted them to." I then said, "Of course. That was a dumb question." Zem smiled at me and said, "I don't think you really know enough about us yet to ask a dumb question. Besides, a dumb question isn't nearly as bad as a dumb answer." Zem's statement made me grin. Sue also looked at me with a pleasant smile. I said to Sue, "Your question was way better darling." This caused Sue to grin. Sue said, "Thank you sweetheart." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. What Sue and I did must have seemed to be a good idea to the others. Because Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Zem and Bev also did the same. After Sue and I parted our kiss, we gave each other pleased smiles. Then we returned our attention to the animals. A ruka head came down in front of me and opened its mouth. It also stuck its tongue out a little. Out of curiosity, I ran my finger down its tongue to see what it felt like. It had a rough texture like a cat's tongue. Though the tongue wrapped itself around my hand. I pulled my hand out of the tongue's grasp. Getting a moist hand for my curiosity.

The ruka turned its head a little to look at me better as everybody had seen what happened and laughed. I put a food item into the ruka's mouth as Zem said, "It's a good thing they don't eat meat." Sue looked over at Zem and Bev and said, "I wonder. If you had a tug of war with a ruka tongue, if you could call it a tongue of war." The concept of a tongue of war made everybody laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Sue and I both alternated looks at the others a couple of times for us all to share in each other's laughter. After a few moments, Til said with a little laugh still coming out of her, "I think the ruka would win any tongue of war." I grinned at Sue and said, "I'm glad I have such a witty wife." Sue gave me a wide grin and said, "Thank you darling." We then leaned over a little, because of the basket of various food items between us, and kissed. As we did so, one of the forlix started touching around us with its trunks. Which made Sue and I part with a bit of laughter. We both held onto a trunk and

72

reached down to picked up the same kind of treat. It was one of cantaloupe like fruits. Then we both placed them into the grasp of the appendages at the ends of the trunks. Which then retreated to deliver them into its mouth.

As it did this, another forlix, you could say, released a prodigious amount of ballast from the other end. I said with a smile, "I think

somebody is going to need a pooper scooper.” This made everybody laugh. We all shared in each other’s laughter. Then Mav said to me with a grin, “The fertilizer is good for the grass.” I said, “I can see why it seems to grow so well.” This made us guys chuckle and the girls giggle. We all fed the animals some more. Having depleted our basket, I went back to grab another basket of food. Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas returned to their positions near us. Though Pim, San and Tal dropped off their empty baskets nearby first. The animals were acting a little less anxious for food by this time and were behaving well. Also, the amount of the various calls they gave out also decreased quite a bit. Given the size of these creatures, I was surprised that the rectangular Nal bars down near them didn’t have to do more to keep order. Though I supposed that these creatures were use to this sort of thing. A couple of the rukas brought their heads down near each other to Sue and I. I gave one some food to its tongue to grab. Sue just tossed her food item into the other’s mouth.

I said to Sue, “Wouldn’t you have liked to have had one of these for a pet?” Sue grinned at me and said, “I don’t know how well our mailman would have liked it.” Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all got the reference too. We all laughed. Which Sue quickly joined in on. I could just imagine a mailman having to deal with a dinosaur! As we fed the animals, Sue looked over to Mav and Til and asked, “Have either of you named any of these animals?” Mav and Til smiled at Sue. Til said, “We used to now and then. But we gave up on doing so.” Sue said, “When we were riding tasers, I named a cute, friendly baby taser that landed near us “Snappy.” Mav and Til chuckled. Zem and Bev just grinned at Sue. Mav said, “I could just imagine how he got that name.” Til said, “Did you try petting it on the lips?” Sue said, “Erik did. Then I did too.” Zem and Bev chuckled a little. Then Zem said with an amused voice, “Snappy got a two for one snap there.” This caused us all to laugh. Afterwards, Bev said with an amused voice, “Later, he got Sue and I.” Til said, “Tasers are a lot of fun.” We all then went back to concentrating on feeding the animals.

Sue picked up a food item. I turned my smile to Sue and said, “Do you think you could reach one of the mluks from here sweetie?” The mluks were on the right end of the group of animals. Everybody smiled at Sue as she grinned and said, “No problem.” The thing Sue was holding was also cantaloupe sized, but a little oval in shape. It kind of resembled something between an apple and a watermelon. Sue stepped back a little and said, “Mim, Pim. Look out.” Pim and Mim moved out of the way. Then Sue gave the food item a sideways fling well over and a little behind Bev and Zem’s heads in the direction of the mluks. It made an appreciable arc through the air and hit near the upper part of a mluk’s back. The treat split open when it hit. Being armor plated, having been hit didn’t bother the mluk at all. As the mluk that got hit and another one next to it went for the pieces, Zem said, “Good throw!” Sue grinned and said, “Thank you. But I



wasn't trying to hit one." Mav and Til were smiling at Sue also of course. Til said, "Don't let it bother you. It would take far more than that to bother one of them."

I grinned at Sue and said, "At least you got the distance right sweetness. Is there anything you're not good at." Sue grinned at me and said, "I do ok for a human honey." I said, "You certainly do my love." We then kissed each other. Mav, Til, Zem and Bev all briefly smiled at each other before returning their attention to the animals. We all happily fed directly or tossed treats to the animals a little more. After handing out a few more treats, Mav said to the rest of us, "I think the forlix and ruka have had enough fun. And I wouldn't want the other animals to get jealous. Let's go down and feed them directly." Sue and I grinned at Mav and Til. Then Sue and I grinned at each other as Zem said to Mav, "Sounds good to me." Sue and I briefly turned our grins to Zem and Bev. Then Sue grinned back at Mav and Til. Sue said, "I certainly wouldn't want any of them getting jealous." Mav smiled up at Tal and Sas and said, "Would you guys give Erik and Sue a hand with a couple forlix?" Tal said verbally, "Of course." As Mav and Til raised their arms, Zem said to Bev with a grin, "Let's take a ruka darling. Bev said, "Ok dearest."

At this point a couple forlix were moving their trunks toward Mav and Til. Sue and I looked at each other with surprised, excited looks on our faces. A couple forlix took hold of each of Mav and Til's arms. They wrapped around their forearms a little and grasped their upper arms with the finger like appendages coming off the ends of their trunks. A couple of the other forlix were moving their trunks toward Sue and I. Sue held down her arms and said, "Come on Lika!" I held my arms down to Panny and said, "Come on Panny." They jumped into our arms and climbed up to our shoulders. At the same time, a ruka was also bringing its head down to Zem and Bev. Sue and I raised our arms for the forlix to take hold of them. At the same time, Mav and Til were lifted up and over the railing. Zem and Bev were getting ready to take hold of a ruka's lips as the other forlix took hold of Sue and I's arms. Zem and Bev's ruka was probably clamping down on their hands enough with its lips to keep them from slipping.

Sue and I were lifted up. As we went, Sue said "Weeee!" Panny and Lika also chattered excitedly. Mav and Til were beginning to be lowered to the ground as Zem and Bev were also being lifted up. No doubt, Mav and Til were controlling their forlix's minds. Zem was probably controlling the mind of their ruka and Tal and Sas were probably both controlling the minds of the forlix that had taken hold of Sue and I. Sue and I grinned at each other and at the others. Mav and Til were being sat down on the ground in front of the house. While this was going on, Pim and San, along with some of the other Nal, were levitating baskets of food over the railing. I could also see other food items from the baskets that remained behind being levitated toward

the other ruka and forlix. The forlix that had a hold of Mav and Til released them. As Sue and I were being sat down, Sue looked at them and said excitedly, "This is fun!" They both chuckled. Til then said, "It is." Our forlix released Sue and I when we were on the ground. Zem and Bev were grinning at each other as their ruka lowered them to the ground. Mav, Til, Sue and I grinned at them as they were sat on the ground too.

74

## Chapter Four

### Feeding the smaller animals

When Zem and Bev's ruka started raising its head after releasing them. Mav gestured to the left end of the wall and said to the rest of us, "Let's start over there." I said, "Sounds good to me." We all started walking toward the far left end of the wall. San brought a couple baskets of food over near Mav and Til. One of which he handed off to Pam. Pim went over by Zem and Bev. He handed off one of his baskets to Mim. A couple of the other Nal handed off a couple baskets of food to Tal and Sas. After they had done so, these maketake Nal just retreated a little ways away. A few of the other Nal went to some of the other animals with baskets of treats. Sue said to Zem and Bev as we walked, "I hope he didn't bite." They both chuckled. Then Zem said, "I wouldn't let him do that." The treats that the other Nal on the deck were levitating to the larger animals were keeping them well placated. The other Nal that had come down with baskets were no doubt going to hand out a little food to the ones we weren't tending to. I said to Mav and Til, "Zem and Bev say they are making another planet. Do you ever plan to do the same?" Mav and Til smiled at me as I spoke. Til said, "We probably will someday. But this planet is good enough for now."

Having gotten near the end of the animals, Mav said to Sue and I, "Just pick a critter and start feeding." Sue and I grinned. These grins spread to everybody else. Mav and Til headed over to the kopoz on the end. San and Pam, followed Mav and Til. Each levitating a basket of food near them. Sue and I headed to the kopoz next to the one they intended to feed. Tal and Sas came with us. They each levitated a basket of food near Sue and I. Zem and Bev headed to a kafkin that was standing amongst the kopoz. Pim and Mim followed them with baskets of food too. Sue and I didn't have to walk far. These kopoz were certainly amazing. Their horns had to be about fourteen feet from one end to the other. But Sue and I knew that we were in no danger. Mav and Til gave a couple of treats to the kopoz they went to. At the same time, the kopoz Sue and I were going to feed lowered its head to us. Sue and I reached for treats as Mav and Til started scratching around the muzzle of their kopoz while it chewed. It made a

seemingly happy low rumbling vocalization as it did so. This caused some of the other smaller animals to start to shift on our direction. But the rectangular Nal pushed them back.

Sue and I stuck our treats into the open mouth of our kopoz. After it took them in and started chewing, Sue and I started scratching around its muzzle. Which it seemed to enjoy too. As we did so, Panny and Lika let go of Sue and I and scampered down our arms. They jumped onto the muzzle of our kopoz and scampered up its head. Which didn't seem to bother it. While this was going on, Zem and Bev walked right up in between the tusks of the kafkin. Bev petted around the end of its trunk as Zem reached up with a treat and shoved it into its open mouth. Panny and Lika scampered along the right horn of our kopoz. All of the creatures we fed and petted gave off seemingly appreciative vocalizations. Bev grabbed a treat and let the kafkin trunk take hold of it. As Sue petted our kopoz, Sue said in a friendly, slightly higher pitched voice, "You're a nice big

75

kopoz. Aren't you." Air rushed out of its nostrils and then back in as it seemed to give an appreciative snort. After it did so, I said to it in a friendly tone, "Just be careful. We don't need any kopoz boogers."

Having overheard me, Zem, Bev, Mav and Til laughed. As did Sue. I quickly joined in and we all shared in each other's laughter. Then Mav said in a slightly louder than normal voice, "That can be a problem. But Tal and Sas can eliminate anything unpleasant heading your way." As Mav and Til reached for a couple more treats, Sue grinned at them and said, "That's good." While all of this was going on, Panny and Lika had jumped from the kopoz's horn to the kafkin Zem and Bev were feeding. At this point, Zem was petting a kafkin trunk as Bev handed its trunk another treat. Remarking about what Mav said, Sue said to Sas as she went for another treat, "You guys are useful in so many ways." As I reached for a treat too, Sas answered Sue verbally and said, "We try to be." Sue and I then fed our kopoz a couple more treats. The Nal up on the balcony were still feeding the ruka and forlix. Keeping them occupied as we took care of these smaller creatures. As the kopoz Sue and I fed chewed, Sue and I scratched around its muzzle with both hands. The kopoz lowered its muzzle to the ground and inward toward itself a little. As it did so, it also moved its head toward Sue and I a little. Pushing both Sue and I back a little.

Apparently it wanted to be scratched a little higher up and a little more firmly. Sue and I tried to do so. But we were so small compared to the kopoz. I turned my grin to Tal and Sas and said, "Could you guys help Sue and I scratch these things?" Tal said, "Sure." Tal and Sas both turned into conical shaped bunches of bristles. Though Tal remained a green color and Sas remained a deep purple color. They were about a foot long and the wide end was about a foot wide. It was made up of a number of sturdy looking bristles. As

a couple maketake Nal came in to levitate their baskets, Sas went to an ear and Tal went to the back of its neck. Tal and Sas both started scratching back and forth with what appeared to be some appreciable pressure. Our kopoz raised its head up and bellowed with pleasure. I and no doubt Sue could feel the sound waves vibrating us a little. Sue and I laughed and turned our laughter to each other. Everybody grinned at us. Mav said in a joking around manner, "What are you trying to do. Spoil my critters?" Zem, Bev and Til joined in on Sue and I's laughter. Which Mav quickly did too. After the laughter, Sue said to Mav, "Sorry. But it's in our nature."

This reference to the story I told about the frog and the scorpion caused a little more laughter. Then Mav said as he and Til petted their kopoz, "I was only kidding. The Nal often help us pet our animals." Then Mav grinned at San and said, "You guys are falling down on the job by not doing it yourselves." A funny response on San and Pam's part quickly flashed into my mind as everybody except me began to chuckle at what Mav said. I quickly directed my thoughts to San and Pam and said quickly, "San, Pam. Let's have a private speed thought. Quick." Everything slowed down to a stop. San said, "What is it." I said, "Apparently Mav is playing around and trying to get a rise out of you. I thought of a funny response for you." Pam said, "Please tell us." I said, "I know that you Nal can simulate Reall mouths on your surfaces. Are you familiar with the

76

human custom of sticking your tongue out at somebody in a playful manner of contempt and making this sound." Then I thought to them the sound people make when they stick their tongue out at somebody. I could feel telepathic humor from San and Pam. Pam said, "Oh yes. Humans didn't invent it. And they won't be expecting it."

I said, "Great. Just make sure that you both move to where everybody can see you." San said, "It will kill them. Figuratively speaking of course. Thanks for the suggestion." Time again resumed at a normal pace. Everybody except me resumed their chuckling. San and Pam moved to where Mav, Til and the rest of us could see them. Though they still levitated the baskets of food where they had been. San and Pam both formed mouths on their surfaces. Pam's lips were more feminine of course. Then they both stuck out normal colored tongues at Mav in a playful, contemptible sort of way. They did it just the way a human might. Bringing in their lips around their tongues. At the same time, they both made that noise that people make when they do it. Mav, Til, Zem, Bev and Sue erupted in laughter. I could also sense additional telepathic amusement from Pim, Mim, Tal and Sas. My laughter wasn't as intense. Because I knew what was going on. We all held onto our partners for support as we laughed. But Mav and Til fell to the ground laughing.

Apparently this reaction from San and Pam had really caught them off

guard. Mav and Til's reaction only made the rest of us laugh all the harder. I was so glad I thought of it. San and Pam became fuzzy. Though San remained red in color and Pam remained blue color. San went to Mav and Pam went to Til. They laughed verbally as they rolled around slightly between Mav and Til's upper shoulders and the base of their necks. Their kopoz sniffed them a little out of curiosity. Even though they were preoccupied with mirth, San and Pam were apparently able to levitate a couple treats out of their baskets to give to the kopoz. Mav and Til soon started caressing San and Pam as they laughed. After at least a minute of laughter, Mav said to San in a mirth filled voice, "You guys kill me!" Til managed to get out to Pam, "That was so funny!" After a little more laughter, San spoke telepathically. Though we could all hear it. He said, "I wish Pam and I could take the credit. But it was Erik's idea." Still laughing a little, Mav and Til sat up. They both grinned over at Sue and I as they released San and Pam. At the same time, Sue gave me a bit of an extra hug with her cheek on my shoulder.

While Sue did so, Sue said, "You're so funny darling!" I grinned briefly but happily at Sue. Then I turned my attention back to Mav and Til. Mav said, "You kill me too!" After a little more laughter, Til said to Zem and Bev, "Shame on you for keeping them all to yourself!" This caused a little more laughter as I gave Sue a little extra hug. Then Sue and I looked at each other with a little chuckle again coming out of us. As Mav and Til started to stand up, Sue said to me, "You make me so proud darling." This caused a more loving look to come over my face. Sue also looked at me in a more loving manner. I said to Sue with a tender, highly loving voice, "It wouldn't be possible for any human to not be proud of you darling." Sue said, "Oh darling!" We started kissing each other passionately. Sue and I embraced each other and caressed each other lovingly.

77

I didn't know it at the time. But apparently Sue and I's kissing seemed like a good idea to Zem, Bev, Mav and Til. Because those couples also kissed each other. But only lovingly and only for a few extended moments.

As usual, I was overcome with how wonderful it felt to be kissing Sue's soft, loving lips. Also as usual, it was beyond description to say how wonderful it felt to be holding the warm, sweetly perfumed, loving body of Sue in my arms. The whole thing made me moan with pleasure as we kissed. My dear sweet love moaned with pleasure too. Our kopoz tried to nudge Sue and I a little. No doubt for more food. But I think one of the Nal kept it from nudging us too hard. Waves of love were washing through my body. And judging from the moans of pleasure here and there from Sue, my sweet darling love was feeling the same way. I heard the other animals making pleased sounds. Another thing I didn't know at this moment was that some of the other

Nal had transformed into brushes and were brushing them. But I hardly noticed. I could also hear our kopoz chewing something. Apparently, somebody had considerably caused a treat to be levitated to it. Allowing Sue and I to enjoy each other's love. After about a minute of Sue and I's kissing, Mav's thoughts came into our minds.

He said, "I hate to interrupt. But we have some hungry critters here." Sue and I parted our kiss and grinned at each other. Then Sue and I grinned over at Mav and Til. By this point, Zem and Bev had moved over to the kopoz on the other side of the kafkin they had been feeding. Mav and Til had gone over to the kopoz next to it. Panny and Lika were scampering around on it. Their animals were chewing food. Another Nal with a basket of food was near the kopoz Mav and Til had been feeding. Apparently, it had just given it a treat. I could see some of the other Nal scratching around some of the animals. There were a few doing the same with each forlix and ruka. Sue and I put a couple more treats into our kopoz's mouth. Then we took each other's hand and grinned widely at each other. No doubt Sue was feeling as full of joy as I was. We happily scampered over to Zem and Bev. When we got to them, I embraced Zem from the side a little. Bev seen what was happening and turned to Sue. They briefly embraced each other from the front. Both Zem and Bev chuckled a little. Bev said, "What's this for." As we parted, Sue said, "Just because!"

They chuckled a little more. Then Bev said, "That's probably the best reason for a hug there is." This statement made Sue and I beam grins. Zem said to me, "Thank you." Then Sue and I took each other's hand again and happily scampered over to Mav and Til. Our baskets of food and the Nal that carried them came with us. Having seen what happened, they both turned to us with big grins on their faces. I briefly gave Mav a hug and Sue briefly gave Til a hug. While we did so, Til said to Sue, "What's this for." Zem and Bev were grinning at us. We all parted and Sue joyfully said to Til, "We just want to show our gratitude to our Reall critters!" This caused everybody to laugh. Even though Tal and Sas had gone to brushing the animals, they heard what Sue said and emitted telepathic humor along with our other Nal. To call Reall critters! Sue was so witty.

After the laughter, in a reference to the funny thing I had suggested that San and Pam do, Mav said to Sue with a little laugh still coming out of him, "I can see

78

we're going to have to keep an eye on you too!" This caused us all to laugh a little more. After the laughter died down, I said, "Your animals are so much fun!" Til said, "Just wait until the fun really begins." Sue and I beamed wide grins at them. Then Sue and I turned our grins to each other and made a happy "Eee!" sound. Sue and I then took each other's hand again and happily scampered over to the other kopoz. Panny and Lika scampered over the horn of the kopoz Mav and Til were

feeding and over onto the horn of the kopoz Sue and I were about to feed. They followed Sue and I and stopped on the head of Sue and I's kopoz. Both Sue and I happily reached for a treat to give to it. After Sue and I put the treats into its mouth, we both petted its muzzle. The kafkin that was next in line reached its trunk in our direction. Our kopoz didn't seem to mind the bodily contact it made with it. This kafkin was smaller than the others. It kind of made elephant like pleading sounds as Sue petted the tip of its trunk. Sue said, "Oh. You poor thing. We'll get to you in a bit." Though to keep it happy, Sue grabbed a treat and tossed it over to it. The kafkin pulled back its trunk to retrieve the treat.

I looked at Mav and Til and said with a little more somber expression, "There has been debate about it on earth. But what actually drove the kafkins to extinction." As Mav and Til petted their kopoz, they turned slight smiles to Sue and I. Mav said, "Just what your scientists theorize. A combination of climate change and human hunting." I said with a bit of contempt toward humanity on my face, "Another black mark for humanity." Everybody else took on more solemn expressions. Mav said, "Humans can't really be held all that responsible. The climate change simply made them the most efficient target. But for modern human morality, the prognosis is much more bleak. One of the reasons is that in any such discussion, race needs to enter into the equation. But in that sort of discussion, it's as if the air stops transmitting sound waves. And rather than go against their diseased brainwashing, people's minds retreat into nonsense." Sue and I nodded solemnly in agreement. I then said, "Back in the days when humans and kafkins coexisted, you would think that they would have known they were becoming harder to find and stop hunting them."

Mav said, "You would also think that humans on earth would know that they are becoming too numerous and that CO2 emissions are getting too high. But you shouldn't feel too bad. Most other beings at your level of development have made the same sorts of mistakes. Which most often ends in tragedy. But for the enjoyment of the animals, maybe we should leave this gloomy discussion for now." Both Sue and I smiled at them. These smiles spread to everybody else. Sue said, "You're right of course." Maybe it was to change the subject. But Til said, "In more northern climates here, we also have Woolly Mammoths. This made Sue and I grin. Mav and Til also grinned. As Sue handed a treat to our kopoz, Sue said to Til, "What do you call them." Til said, "We call them what one of the ancient human groups called them. Ontaka." At this point, a forlix brought its trunk down toward my basket. Apparently the treats the other Nal were giving it weren't enough.

As I took hold of its trunk, Sue said to Mav and Til, "It was wonderful for you to save them too." I grabbed a treat and handed it to the forlix trunk. The kopoz

we were near started bringing its muzzle toward Sue and I as the forlix raised its trunk. We reached for treats as Mav said, "If we were going to save one kind, (Sue and I fed our treats to the kopoz as Mav added) there was no reason not to save the other." Sue and I started to scratch an area of the kopoz nose with both hands as Sue said, "It was still wonderful." Til said, "Thank you." Zem and Bev started moving to the kafkin next to our kopoz. The friendly actions of the kopoz Sue and I were petting caused Sue and I to grin at each other. I said, "Something tells me the spiketails aren't going to be as interested in being petted. Mav and Til overheard us as they reached for food to give their kopoz. They both grinned over at Sue and I. Til said, "The mluks are going to be a little more problematic." Sue and I grinned over at them as Til added, "But being mammals, they will appreciate a little more anyplace you can find to pet them that isn't armor plated." Sue said, "I hope so. But the Nal appear to be doing a pretty good job." Bev said to Sue and I as she and Zem started reaching for treats to give to their kafkin, "These animals are always eager for extra attention."

Mav and Til moved away from their kopoz and started heading to the kafkin next to the one Zem and Bev were feeding. Sue and I moved away from the kopoz we were feeding and joined Mav and Til. Sue said to Mav and Til, "The kopoz are surprisingly gentle for being so big. But I don't think I would want to get so close to them without the Nal around." As we continued heading down the line of animals, Til said, "For a human, it probably wouldn't be a good idea. Anything might possibly cause them to swipe with their horns. Even though they may not want to do any real damage, being so big, they probably would." We started heading to a couple of kafkins next to the one Zem and Bev were attending to. Another Nal with a basket of treats was still levitating food items to the animals we had already fed. Panny and Lika were now on the kafkin that Zem and Bev were feeding. Bev was fending off a little the trunk of the kafkin next to the one they were feeding. I grabbed a treat from the basket near me and held it up over my head. Then I waved it back and forth a little.

The trunk of the next kafkin over that Bev was handling left her. It started reaching its trunk toward my treat. Bev smiled at me and said, "Thanks." Zem also smiled at us as he was petting the trunk of their kafkin. I said, "You're welcome." Sue reached for a treat too as Mav and Til moved to the next kafkin over from the one I was handing a treat to. I brought my treat up to the kafkin trunk. It smelled the treat as I brought it closer. When it was close enough, it grasped it with its trunk. As it brought the food to its mouth, Sue said to Til, "They may be big. But they seem friendly enough." Our kafkin had quickly passed its treat to its mouth. It then held its trunk up for Sue's treat. But Sue pushed the trunk away from her, walked up and held her treat up under the base of the kafkin's trunk. It brought its mouth down to



take it. Sue shoved it in as I held and petted the kafkin trunk. After it took the food, Sue backed up a little and helped me pet the trunk. Sue then turned to Mav and Til and asked, "How many places like this do you have on this planet."

Til smiled at Sue and said, "We have about a couple hundred like it scattered around the planet. Like Bev said, this is a fairly popular planet." Turning my

80

head to also ask a question of Mav and Til, I said, "Coming in, I saw that you have a good amount of ocean on this planet. Did you populate it with mega creatures also." Mav grinned and said, "Of course." Sue smiled at Mav and said, "I would image that could make swimming in the ocean quite an adventure." Til said, "It is interesting. But with San and Pam around especially, danger isn't something I even really consider." I said to Til, "Being immortal, I don't imagine you could be killed anyway." Til said, "That's not completely true. If something caught us unaware and if our mental powers were somehow being blocked, our physical bodies could be killed. But what you would call our soul would live on. Our souls would simply reconstruct physical bodies." Sue said, "Bev and Zem explained a little about such things. Though it still seems incredible."

Then Sue and I reached for more treats for our kafkin. Mav and Til were doing the same as Til said to Sue, "There is much about us that you would find incredible." As Mav gave his treat to their kafkin trunk and I gave mine to ours, Til added in a kidding around manner, "But you are Bev and Zem's humans." The thought of Sue and I belonging to Zem and Bev filled me and no doubt Sue with joy. We both beamed wide grins to Til as she then said, "It is up to them as to what they want you to learn or when." As our kafkin reached its trunk back out for another treat Sue grabbed, I said to Til in a kidding around manner too, "Can we be your humans a little bit too?" This made Zem, Bev, Mav and Til laugh a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. Til said with a big grin, "I was only speaking figuratively. But if Bev and Zem don't mind, you can be ours a little bit too." This made Zem and Bev laugh. Which the rest of us quickly joined in on. Zem and Bev started heading toward the kafkin next to Mav and Til's. Bev said in a kidding around manner, "As long as it's only a little." We all laughed again.

Sue then happily scampered over to Bev. They hugged from the sides as they all continued to walk over to the next kafkin. Sue had the side of her head laying on Bev's shoulder as she said, "No matter what, you'll always be my favorite Reall." Bev said, "Thank you. You're so sweet." All of us smiled sentimentally at this touching sight. I handed our kafkin a treat and started heading in that direction too. Mav and Til started to move away from their kafkin. They held hands as they did so. I ran up behind Mav and Til and put my arms around their shoulders. I leaned my head forward in between them. We all

grinned at each other as I said, "I hope you guys don't mind coming in second place to Zem and Bev." They both laughed a little. Which I quickly joined in on. They let go of each other's hands. Til put an arm around my back and Mav put a hand on my opposite shoulder. At this point, Zem, Bev and Sue were walking together. Bev and Sue were holding each other's arms. They all turned to grin at Mav, Til and I. Til said to me, "There isn't any better Reall couple to come into second place to."

Bev said to Til with a sentimental smile on her face, "Thank you dear. You know we feel the same about you." Zem nodded his head a little in agreement with Bev as he smiled at us. This made Mav and Til smile sentimentally at Zem and Bev too. I let go of Mav and Til. Sue was starting to give a treat to a houk that was next in line. Mav and Til moved down a little farther to let Sue and I feed a houk next to each other. These other creatures weren't so large as to

81

require two people to feed them. Mav said to Til, "I'll take the spiketail dearest. You can have the houk." Til said, "Thank you sweetie." They then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, Til went to the houk next to mine and Mav went to the spiketail next to it. Tal and Sas turned back into normal Nal. Though they remained the colors they had chosen for themselves. Then they came back over near Sue and I. The other Nal that had been feeding treats to the animals we left behind started to lure them away with them. Sue had pulled in half one of the treats that were celery-rhubarb like bunches with berries on them. The other treats were slightly too big for these animals. The ones we had thrown to them earlier, they just bit large chunks out of as they laid on the ground.

The houk Sue fed lowered its head more to her level. As Sue petted it, it made a kind of high pitched (For its size) purring sound. Til and I took similar treats and pulled them in half before feeding them to our houks. As Til and I fed our houks too, we petted them too and got the same friendly reception Sue had. At the same time, somebody lowered the wall to only three feet. Mav had grabbed a treat and was holding it up a little high for his spiketail. The spiketail grabbed it with its beak. As it lowered its head, Mav scratched around its head a little as it ate. Sue said in a higher pitched friendly voice to her houk, "I think you're my favorite animal here." Panny and Lika had made their way onto the kafkin Zem and Bev were feeding. I said to Sue in a kidding around voice as Zem, Bev, Til and Mav grinned at Sue, "Don't let Panny and Lika hear you say that." We all chuckled a bit as some other Nal with of baskets of slightly smaller treats arrived. Which was a good thing. Because our baskets were just about empty.

The baskets that were levitating with us were taken away by the other Nal. They started flying out toward the field with the few treats that remained in them. Sue said to me, "Well Panny and Lika go

without saying." Til said to Sue, "The houks are wonderful. In a while, you are probably going to like them even more." Sue and I grinned at Til and Mav. Then we grinned at each other with slightly more excited looks. No doubt, riding these animals was going to be a blast. Having given their kafkin one last treat, Zem and Bev started moving down the line to a couple more houks. Their depleted baskets stayed behind. Pim and Mim changed places with the two other Nal that delivered their two new baskets of smaller treats. One of the depleted baskets with its Nal rose up and started heading toward the other animals that were being led away. No doubt the basket that remained behind would use its remaining treats to lead the last kafkin away. Sue turned her smile to Zem and Bev as they made their way and said, "Do you ride these creatures very often?" Bev said, "Usually every time we visit." I turned my smile to Mav and said, "I suppose you do too when you come to visit your wonderful planet here." Mav said, "Just about every time." I said, "Do you have one you usually ride?" Mav said, "I most often have ridden the one Bev is feeding. But it doesn't really matter. Besides, they move around so much, you never know which ones will be in the area." Zem and Bev started feeding a couple houks down the line. The houk on the other side of Mav's spiketail apparently got a little too close to it. Mav's spiketail took a swipe at it with its tail. This was the same one that had its tail swipe stopped earlier by a

82

rectangular Nal section. It was stopped again. Though this time, another Nal section appeared above its back. The Nal sections lifted it up and fairly quickly flew it out toward the field. I smiled at Mav and said, "I suppose that's what he gets for being naughty." Mav smiled back at me and said, "Some of them are a little short on sociability. Though I doubt if he really meant to hurt the houk." Sue said to Mav as she fed her houk another treat, "With those spikes, it would be pretty hard not to."

With the spiketail now gone, Mav skipped over a houk and went to the spiketail next to it. Apparently Mav was saving the houk for Til. Bev said to Sue as Bev fed her houk, "The spiketail's tails are of course made to inflict damage. It is interesting to see them in a group if they're being attacked by something. They form a circle with their tails facing outward. As you can imagine, it makes any successful attack nearly impossible." I had fed my houk another treat as Bev spoke. Til was on her way to the houk Mav saved for her to feed. After I gave my houk one last treat and a pet of its muzzle, I stepped back from it and smiled at Sue. Sue smiled back at me as I held out my hand for Sue to take. As Sue came over to me, Sue replied to Bev and said, "I know I wouldn't want to be around the business end of their tail." Having taken hold of each other's hand, we made our way down the line of animals. As we did so, Til said to Sue, "When they're by themselves and not competing with other animals for treats like they

are here, they would be very unlikely to bother taking a swipe at any creatures like us. Like the babies of various creatures, in a physical sense, we simply aren't big enough to pose a threat to them."

Sue and I went up to the next two houks in line. We then started feeding these animals treats. Panny and Lika made their way onto the back of Sue's houk. Both of these houks appreciated the treats and attention like the others. As Sue petted hers, Sue said in a higher pitched, friendly voice, "You're a friendly thing too. Aren't you." Having given their houks one last treat and pet, Zem and Bev started moving to the next two spiketails in line. As they did so, I said to Mav, "This houk seems a little fat." Til answered and said, "That one's pregnant." Sue made a happy, open mouthed smile to Til and said, "Oh! How wonderful!" Then Sue grinned at me and said, "Switch places with me honey!" I stepped back from my houk and said, "Sure sweetie." Sue went up to the pregnant houk and wrapped her arms around its muzzle. As Sue hugged it, Sue also rubbed her hands on it and said in a higher pitched friendly voice, "You sweet thing!" I petted the houk she had been attending to. The houk Sue was now showing some love to purred and rubbed its head gently against Sue in appreciation. Zem and Bev were giving their spiketails treats.

We all smiled at Sue and the pregnant houk. Mav and Til started moving toward a spiketail and mluk that were next in line. Sue let go of her houk's head and reached for another treat. As Sue did so, she said to Mav and Til with a big smile, "Which ones do the houks like best." As Mav and Til smiled back at Sue, Til said, "They like them all. But try a yellow one." Sue said, "Thanks." Then Sue retrieved one of the treats Til suggested. Sue fed it to her houk and petted more around its muzzle. As Sue did so, Sue said in the same higher pitched, friendly voice, "I have to keep you well fed for your baby." This caused Zem and

83

Bev to briefly smile at each other. As did Mav and Til. Then they all briefly smiled again at Sue. I smiled at Zem and Bev and said, "I wonder if this one's the daddy." Seeing how it was next to the pregnant houk, I figured there was a good possibility it was. Bev said, "Yes it is." This made my smile widen a bit and I turned back to my houk. I gave him some extra pets and said in a slightly higher pitched, friendly voice, "I hope your going to be a good daddy."

My houk bobbed its head up and down a little as it rubbed its muzzle into my midsection. I gave it a few more pets and reached for another treat to give it. Zem and Bev made their way to the mluks. Panny and Lika headed over Mav's spiketail to Til's mluk. While this was going on, I gave my houk another treat. After giving it a couple more pets, I said to Mav and Til, "Are any of these things good for people to eat?" Mav was holding one of the yellow ones. He held it up a little and said, "Like Til said. These ones are pretty good." He then

gingerly handed it to his spiketail. Being careful of its eager beak. I went over to Sue and grabbed one of them out of her basket. I said to Sue with a loving smile, "I have to keep you well fed too honey. Just in case." Sue was smiling at me lovingly too. But what I said caused a more solemn look of love to come over Sue's face. I took on a similar look as Sue said, "Oh darling!" We then embraced and kissed each other passionately. Of course, lovingly caressing each other as we did so. Though I had to do so with the wrist of the hand I held the fruit in.

Having overheard me, Mav and Til briefly gave Sue and I sentimental smiles. As did Zem and Bev. Then they all turned their sentimental smiles to their partners. Zem and Bev then stepped over to each other and kissed each other lovingly. At the same time, Mav went over to Til. Then they kissed each other lovingly too when they came together. By this time, Zem and Bev had started kissing each other more passionately. My houk and Sue's started rubbing the sides of their heads together and making more of those purring like sounds. Mav and Til's kissing also became more passionate. After about a minute, Sue and I broke off our kiss and fully embraced. Both of us lovingly caressed the sides of our heads together with our eyes lightly closed and loving looks on our faces. As we did so, Sue said in a loving voice, "I love you so much darling." I said in a loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." We hugged each other for a few extended moments. As we did so, having parted from their kiss, Mav and Til started going over to a couple mluks.

As they went, they had an arm around each other's lower backs and leaned the sides of their heads together. Both of them with contented, loving smiles on their faces. Zem and Bev at this point had already parted their kiss too and went back to feeding the mluks. Sue and I parted our hug a little and looked at each other lovingly. Then I brought the treat around that I had been holding behind Sue's back. I smiled as I held it up between us for Sue to look at. Sue grinned. Which I did too. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "I'll go first my love." Then I took a bite out of the fruit. The shape of it was something like a more rounded bell pepper. It had a slightly crunchy texture to it. The flesh of it was a little lighter in color than the skin. It was sweet and had a taste that was a little like orange and lime, with a hint of vanilla. I hummed "Mmm" and held it up for Sue to take a

84

bite. Sue took a bite and chewed. Then Sue hummed "Mmm" too. We continued to smile at each other loving as we chewed it. After swallowing, Sue said, "That was good honey. But we already ate. Give the rest to the mommy to be here."

I handed it to Sue for her to take and said, "You can do it sweetness. I'll give daddy one last treat." Sue took it and said, "Ok sugar bear." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we parted and Sue gave her treat to her houk. Not surprisingly, it didn't mind at all it

having a couple small bites taken out of it. Then I reached for another treat and handed it to my houk. We both fed them and gave them a few more pets on their muzzles. Then Sue and I stepped over to each other and put an arm around each other's lower backs. We then went over to the mluks. An adult and a couple of the little ones were on our side of the wall a little at the end. Til was feeding one of the small ones next to Bev's mluk. They made sounds something like pigs grunting. As Sue and I approached, the wall went away completely. Apparently it was no longer necessary. When we got up to them, Sue petted a baby one next to Mav's on its head. Then Sue handed it some food. Though Sue just held the treat for the baby mluk to take bites out of. I was feeding a large adult next to it.

As I did so, I heard some footsteps from the direction of the animals we had been feeding. So I looked in that direction. The Nal that had been long rectangular bars had transformed themselves back into normal Nal. Another two baskets of food had shown up with Nal levitating them. They had probably come from the balcony. These baskets and some other Nal were levitating treats and leading the spiketails away. Though the houks stayed behind as they continued to get treats from the other Nal and basket. Sue smiled at me. Referring to the mluk I fed, Sue said, "Could you imagine a car accident with that." I smiled at Sue and said, "They would sure make a wreck out of any car." Mav smiled at Sue and I and said, "Having these creatures around on earth would give humans more reason to drive safely." I chuckled and grinned at Mav. Then I said, "I don't think anything could make humans on earth drive more safely." Sue briefly smiled at me before returning her attention back to her baby mluk. As I fed my mluk a treat, Mav said, "Not without their feeling that their freedom was being assailed." I nodded at Mav in agreement and went back to petting my mluk.

The baby mluk Sue fed licked her fingers. Which made Sue giggle. Everybody grinned at Sue. Sue grinned at Mav, Til, Bev and Zem and said, "These baby ones are just adorable!" Everybody chuckled. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Then Bev said, "They are cute. Aren't they." As Sue reached for another treat, Til said, "They're pretty cute. But cuddling one would be a little like cuddling a rock with claws." Sue chuckled and said, "I see what you mean. But they're so friendly. It's a shame that they went extinct on earth." Til said to Sue, "Well at least they're ok here." This caused Sue's grin to widen a bit. Then we went back to feeding the mluks. Holding hands, Zem and Bev headed to the last three mluks in line. By that time, Panny and Lika had been sitting on Bev's mluk. They slid off the back of Bev's mluk a little and jumped to the ground. Then they playfully scampered along with Zem and Bev as they headed for an adult mluk with two babies. Pim and Mim with their baskets of food followed Zem and Bev

of course. After handing my mluk another treat, I went over to the side of it. I slapped my hands good and hard in an alternating fashion five times on the top of its shell.

This caused my mluk to shift its body a little toward me. It seemed as if it enjoyed the contact. Everybody smiled at me. I said to Mav and Til with a grin, "These things are pretty solid." Mav and Til also grinned back at me. Then Mav said, "That's one of the things I like about them." I headed back to my mluk's front to give it another treat. At this point, Zem and Bev were feeding treats to give the last three mluks. Panny and Lika were playing around with one of the babies. It seemed as interested in them as they were in it. I grabbed another treat for my mluk and fed it to him. As I did so, I petted him around the head and neck. Everyplace that wasn't armor plated. As usual, my mluk seemed to enjoy it. It bobbed its head up and down a little. I could almost see happiness in its brown eyes as it looked at me. Sue smiled at Mav and Til and said, "They sure seem to enjoy these treats." As Mav and Til tended to their mluks, they both smiled back at Sue.

Til said, "Some of them can be hard for them to come by at times. But they sure are happy when they do." We then turned our attention back to our mluks. After a few moments, we heard Bev giggle. We all looked as Bev said to Lika, "Are you comfortable?" Lika was laying on the back of one of the baby mluks with her arms and legs splayed out down along either side of its shell. She also had her chin resting on the front of the shell. Lika took up much of its back. The rest of us laughed a little. Sue said, "That's so cute!" Bev briefly grinned at us, then petted Lika a little. We then went back to feeding our mluks. After Mav and Til fed their mluks another treat, Mav tossed some other treats on the ground. Til then did so too. Sue and I smiled at them. Mav looked at Sue and I and said, "You guys ready to go for a ride?" This caused Sue and I to grin. Which Mav and Til did too. At the same time Bev and Zem also looked over and grinned. Sue stood erect and said excitedly, "Sure!" I said excitedly too, "Me too!" This made Mav and Til's grins widen a bit. Bev stood erect too.

At this point, some other Nal flew in. Our Nal handed some baskets of food off to them. Three of these Nal then levitated treats out of them. They used the treats and baskets to lure the mluks away. We all put an arm around our partner's lower backs and smiled at Zem and Bev as they walked over to us. Panny and Lika followed along with them. With the spiketails gone, the houks had moved closer to each other. Sue said excitedly to Zem and Bev as we headed toward the houks, "This is going to be so much fun!" Our Nal couples each levitated a basket of food and followed us. Mav and Til started walking with us as Til said to Sue, "I'm sure you will get some enjoyment out of it." Something told me as Sue and I grinned at Til and Mav that Til was purposefully understating it by a lot. As we neared the houks, Zem said to Sue, "I know you like the pregnant one. But I'm afraid you won't be able to ride her." Sue said, "I hope the dear thing won't mind my not riding her." Til said, "She probably will a little. But we have to treat

her gently." Sue was already smiling at Til as she said, "I quite agree."  
Then Sue said, "I wish I could have seen a baby one." Mav replied  
and said,  
86

"They are pretty cute." The houks became a little more excited at our approach. Zem pointed to one and said, "I'll take that one again." Bev pointed to one next to it and said, "And I'll take that one again." Mav smiled at Sue and I and said, "Just pick a pair for yourselves." Sue and I grinned at Mav, and then at each other. As Zem and Bev went up to the houks they chose and started petting them around their heads, I said to Sue, "Which one do you want honey." Sue pointed to one and said, "I'll take that one." I said, "I'll take the one next to it." We went to the houks we had chosen and started petting them too. Mav and Til did the same with the houks they intended to ride. As we all petted our houks, they made more of those purring like sounds and eyed us with what seemed to be eager, expectant glances. Now and then, one of them would twist their heads from side to side a little. We also handed out more treats. Pim and Mim levitated treats over to the ones we wouldn't be riding.

Like before, the houks we petted seemed to really be enjoying the up close attention. Panny and Lika were climbing on them. Jumping from one to another. Which like before, the houks hardly took notice of. The houks seemed to especially like being scratched around their short little bear like ears. They would move their heads a little in the directions of our hands as we did so. Probably because they wanted to be scratched harder. We obliged them. Though we had to step a little off to the sides of their mouths to get the leverage to do so. Which made them make their purr like sounds louder. Zem looked at Mav and said with a slight smile, "Do you think we should water them before we go." Mav gave Zem a slight smile too and said, "It couldn't hurt." Zem then smiled at Sue and I and said, "Let's go to the lake." Sue and I grinned at Zem. I said, "Even that sounds like fun." This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to chuckle a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. Then Sue and I grinned at each other. We stepped over to each other and briefly kissed. Mav then said to Sue and I, "Just gesture for them to follow."

A few Nal came over and took the baskets that our Nal had. They then flew out toward the other animals with them. Mav walked away from his houk and gestured for it to follow him. The rest of us did the same. Mav headed toward the side of the house opposite from where we had our spacecraft parked. Mav and Til's houks followed them. Mav and Til were on the right. Zem and Bev were next to them. Sue and I were on the left. At first, the pregnant female and her mate hung back. Then they followed too. Mav and Til walked next to each other and put an arm around each other's lower backs. Zem and Bev did the same. Sue and I did too. As we made our way in the direction



of the lake, Zem said to Mav, "I take it everything is well with the Multa." Mav and Til gave Zem and Bev a smile. Mav said, "They're just fine." Til said, "They're just eager for treats, as usual." Sue and I were smiling at Mav and Til too as Sue said, "What are Multa." Til said, "They're our lake creatures." Sue and I looked at each other with happy, surprised expressions. Which we quickly turned back to Mav and Til.

Til then said, "They are something like what you would refer to as Plesiosaur. They too breathe air. Though they are more Mammalian than Reptilian. They are also more herbivore than carnivore." I said, "They sound pretty interesting."

87

Mav said with a grin, "They are." As we cleared the side of the house, I again took a look at the lake. From what I had seen of it from the air, it was certainly large enough to provide a home for such creatures. As we walked toward the lake, one of the houks following just behind us put its muzzle on Mav's shoulder. Mav chuckled a little and said something to it in Reall language as he petted its muzzle a little. We all looked at this happening. Sue said to Mav, "I think he likes you." Mav looked back at Sue with a grin and said, "We're old buddies." The petting seemed to satisfy the houk as it removed its muzzle and continued just walking behind Mav. I grinned at Sue and said, "Did you ever think you would have a honeymoon like this darling." Sue chuckled a little and looked at me with a big grin. Sue said, "I never thought I would ever have an anything like this!"

We were all grinning as Zem, Bev, Mav and Til looked at us. My grin to Sue then turned to a loving look. Sue looked lovingly at me too. I then said, "Nothing I've experienced yet has been as wonderful as you darling." Sue held me a little tighter with her arm. We also took hold of each other's arms in front as Sue said, "I love you so much darling." I said, "I love you so much too dearest love." We briefly but lovingly kissed each other as we walked. After we parted our kiss, Sue and I again looked at each other lovingly. Then we leaned the sides of our heads together and nuzzled them together a little as we contentedly walked toward the lake. Sue and I's little display of affection also caused some love between Zem and Bev. As well as Mav and Til. Because after I had told Sue how wonderful I thought she was, Zem said to Bev with a loving look, "A black hole couldn't contain the love I have for you sweetheart." Mav also said to Til, "My love for you my darling could power this universe." At the same time, Bev said as she looked at Zem lovingly, "I'll love you forever my darling." After which she and Zem kissed each other briefly but lovingly. At the same time, Til said to Mav with a loving look on her face, "Oh Mav!"

Til then launched a loving kiss to Mav as they walked. Mav also kissed Til back with much enthusiasm. Afterwards, they continued walking as Sue and I and now Zem and Bev were doing. Sue and I

heard more purring like noises from the two houks behind us. Both Sue and I turned to look at them nuzzling their heads together. Apparently they were mates too and the affection that we were showing to our partners was causing them to be affectionate too. Panny and Lika were riding one of the houks together. Even they seemed to be enjoying each other's company. Sue and I smiled at each other. Then Sue said to me, "It looks like we're having a good influence on them." Mav, Til, Zem and Bev also turned with smiles on their faces to see what Sue and I saw. We reached the lake at this point. The houks lowered their heads to take a drink. The pregnant female and her mate were to the left of Sue and I's houks. Sue then said to the others, "I'm surprised they're intelligent enough to display affection the way they do." Mav Said to Sue, "Most animals are capable of emotion. Though the houks are fairly intelligent for wild animals."

Sue then said, "Do they mate for life like some animals on earth do?" Til answered this time and said to Sue, "Yes they do." Til's expression then took on a more somber countenance as she added, "It's very sad to see how sad they

88

get when they lose a mate." Everybody else's expressions took on a somber countenance because of the sad reality of what Til said. Sue looked at the hok next to her and petted it as it continued to drink. At the same time, Sue said with compassion in her voice, "Poor things." Sue then looked at me with a compassionate look still on her face. A more loving, emotional look came over my face as I said to Sue, "You know I would want to die if I ever lost you darling." An emotional look came over Sue's face and tears began welling up in her eyes. Sue said, "Oh darling!" and grabbed me tightly as we embraced. Mav and Til looked at each other with loving, compassionate expressions. Zem and Bev looked at each other in the same way. They were touched by my expression of love to Sue. There was no doubt that they felt the same way about their partners.

Even Tal and Sas were circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles and a little faster than normal speed. Pim was doing the same with Mim and San was doing the same with Pam. As Sue and I embraced, Sue said, "I feel the same way my love." Then Sue buried her face into my shoulder and added with more emotion in her voice, "I wouldn't want to live without you either!" I rubbed my hands a little around Sue's back and nuzzled my cheek on the side of her head. Tears were also starting to well up in my eyes also as I said in a soft, yet emotional voice, "My darling love!" It just wasn't possible to express how wonderful it was to be holding my very life in my arms. I said to Sue almost in a whisper with a lot of emotion in my voice, "I love you so much it hurts." This caused Sue to grab me a little tighter. Sue was clearly sobbing at this point. I also had tears running down

my cheeks. There may be people out there who would think that this wasn't very manly. But to hell with them. They have no idea how much I loved Sue.

After about thirty seconds, the houks started to finish drinking and raised their heads as they did so. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til each petted a houk after they raised their heads. Then Zem thought to Sue and I in a kind thought and said, "I hate to break this up. But we have some flying to do." Sue and I parted a little and briefly smiled at each other. We then smiled at Zem and Bev. As we did so, referring to Sue and I's emotional display of love, Til said to Mav, "Clearly a sign of appreciable intelligence." Sue and I grinned appreciatively at Mav and Til. Sue said to Til, "Thank you!" Mav and Til turned their smiles to Sue and I as Sue added, "You're such a sweetheart!" Til, Mav, Zem and Bev grinned as Sue added, "But we're still dummies compared to you guys." I said to them, "Sorry. We didn't mean to hold things up." Bev said, "That's all right. There's always time to spare for love." Til then added with a sweet grin, "For the Reall, it is almost an unwritten law." Sue and I turned our grins to each other. I used the backs of my fingers to wipe away the remnants of my dear sweet love's tears. Sue did the same with me. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Mav then said, "Are you ready for your flying lesson." We turned our grins back to Mav and Til. Sue said, "We sure are!" Zem then said, "All you basically have to do is hang on." Mav then said, "They will usually respond to directions you give from the direction you tug on their hair. But Tal and Sas will pass on telepathic commands to them." I said, "Why can't we just make a direct

89

telepathic link with them." Zem said, "Mainly, you don't speak houk and they don't speak English. Also, there are times when it's best to let them do what they want. For the time being, I think it's best for Tal and Sas to do it." Sue said, "You know best." Mav's houk backed up a little and lowered itself to the ground. The rest of ours did the same. Mav and Til held hands and started walking back between the houks they intended to ride. Zem and Bev did so too. Sue and I did the same. As we went, Bev said to Sue and I, "They're easy enough to get on and off of." When Mav and Til reached near the back ends of their houks, Mav gave Til a brief but loving kiss. Then Mav said, "Have fun darling." Til said, "You too my love." Then they gave each other another brief but loving kiss.

As they parted, Zem said to Bev, "See you in the air my sweet." Bev said, "You can take this with you my treat." Then Zem and Bev lovingly kissed each other. Mav and Til at this point had stepped onto the back ends of their houks. Their houks bodies tapered down some toward their tails. So they were easy enough to get on. As Mav started to walk up its back, his houk parted the upper portions of its wings from off its back a little. Til's houk of course did the same as she

made her way up the back of her houk. Til's houk also flapped its unextended wings a little. San went with Mav and Pam went with Til. As Zem and Bev kissed, I said to Sue, "Be careful darling." Tal and Sas were nearby. Sas said, "Sue will be safe with me around." We both smiled up at Tal and Sas. I said, "I'm sure she will be. Thank you." Sue then turned to me and said, "I'll miss you dearest." As Zem and Bev parted their kiss, I said to Sue, "I'll miss you too darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we parted and stepped up onto our houks. Sas accompanied Sue and Tal accompanied me.

Mav was sitting cross legged between the wings of his houk and petting it. San was about six feet above him. Til was setting back on her calves and petting her houk. Pam was about six feet above her. Panny and Lika had both been on Zem's houk. But as Zem and Bev began to set down, Bev apparently thought to Lika to join her. Because Lika scampered over and jumped onto Bev's houk. As Sue and I walked forward on our houks, our houks gave out few calls and parted the upper portion of their wings a little. Zem sat down cross legged. Then both he and Panny petted their houk. With Pim close by of course. Bev sat down on the backs of her calves. With Mim close by of course. Lika jumped onto Bev's lap. Both Sue and I sat cross legged between the wings of our houks and petted them. As we did so, Mav's houk stood up on all fours. The rest of the houks did the same. It was a remarkably smooth transition. All of the houks began to turn around. The unattended male and pregnant female did too. Being part of the group, I figured that they would probably be accompanying the flock.

Sue and I beamed grins at each other as our houks turned. As Sue and I's houks turned facing each other, I said with a slightly louder voice, "Yours looks like a good flier honey." Sue petted her houk with both hands and said, "I'm sure she is dearest." I petted my houk some more too. Rubbing my hands back and forth in its fur with a little extra pressure on my fingertips as I did so. At the same time, I said in a slightly high pitched, friendly voice, "I'm sure you are too fella." My houk gave out a few calls. Seemingly in a happy response. Once turned around, the houks started walking out toward the field. There were still groups

90

of animals here and there. But most had been led far enough away that we wouldn't have any trouble finding a takeoff spot. There was a slight breeze coming in from our right. No doubt we would be taking off in that direction when we got to a good takeoff spot. As we went, Bev smiled over at us and said in a slightly louder than normal voice, "We will be laying on our stomachs when we're ready to take off. You should be able to judge where a good center of balance will be."

Zem then said, "Just grab a couple tufts of hair and hang on. Also, it's best to keep your feet slightly spread apart to keep yourselves from

rolling.” Mav said to Sue and I in a slightly louder than normal voice, “Just watch what we do and you’ll be fine.” Then Mav added telepathically, “Once we start flying, with the wind rushing by and all, it will obviously be easier for us to think to each other.” Til then thought to Sue and I and said, “I don’t want you to think I am slighting you. But it’s too bad you aren’t more advanced. You would find it useful to have telepathic abilities of your own.” Sue thought back to Til and said, “It would be difficult for you to slight us. We can barely guess how primitive we are compared to you. That you would have anything to do with us, along with what we have learned from Bev and Zem, I would find it hard to believe you Reall are even capable of being unkind.” Bev said, “Thank you Sue. You’re such a dear.” Mav said, “This looks like a good spot. Everybody line up to my left.” Then Mav’s houk ran forward a little and stopped.

As our houks lined up, Mav said, “We like to be kind where we can be. But we have the same saying that humans do. Which says that it can sometimes be cruel to be kind.” I said, “In that respect, feel free to be as cruel to us as you wish.” Everybody laughed verbally. Afterward, Til said, “We’ll see what we can do.” We were of course all grinning. From right to left, we lined up. The order after Mav was Til, Zem, Bev, myself and Sue. On the other side of Sue was another houk and the pregnant female. Zem then said, “Ok. Assume the position.” This caused us to chuckle verbally. Which Zem quickly joined in on. Everybody started laying down on their houks. We all leaned up on our forearms in a laying position and grabbed tufts of hair. Panny laid forward under Zem’s upper body and chin. Lika did the same with Bev. Panny and Lika also grabbed tufts of hair with their hands and feet-hands. Then Mav’s houk started to run forward. It unfolded its wings and started flapping. A moment later, Til’s houk took off. Then Zem, Bev, myself and Sue did the same. The other two houks did likewise.

Sue thought with an excited thought and said, “It’s like riding a big horse!” I looked back at Sue with a big grin and said, “Something tells me that it is going to get a lot more different in a bit.” This caused Sue’s grin to widen a bit. As our houks began taking ever lengthening strides, I could hear Sue think, “Wee!” Sue’s enthusiasm caused everybody to emit telepathic humor. I thought to Sue, “We aren’t even in the air yet.” Though our houks were taking much longer strides by now. Sue thought back and said, “It’s still fun!” I briefly turned to Sue and grinned at her. Though Sue was too intent on what was going on at the moment to notice. Seeing Sue enjoy herself like that was as gratifying as if she had grinned at me anyway. If not more so. After a few more ever lengthening

91

strides, the houks started flying. Each pulled its legs up like a bird as it took to the air.

## Chapter Five

### Flying The Houks

Every now and then, one of our houks would call out. It was exhilarating to feel the powerful muscles of the houk I was riding moving under me as we rose ever higher into the air. Looking around, I could see the house down behind us. Most of the animals we had been feeding were moving back out into the large grassy area. Though some of the others were moving down the lake shore. Getting farther away from the house. We were heading toward the edge of the forest when Mav's houk started banking toward the lake. With the forested hills on the other side and the mountains beyond those. The rest of our houks banked to follow Mav's. Getting a better look at the ground as we turned, Sue of course thought and said, "This is kind of scary, but fun." Bev then said, "You'll get used to it." I said, "What a wonderful thing to become used to!" Our houks started flying in the direction of the lake and straightened out. Though they were still gaining altitude. Just not quite so fast. Zem said, "You know how we are. Fun is practically our middle name."

I said, "Zem Fun Reall. I like the sound of it." I could barely hear it. But everybody laughed verbally. Sue's thoughts came through as she said, "My brain has been so full of other things, I never asked. Do you even have last names?" Bev answered and said, "Far in our ancient past, we Reall used to. Now we just use numbers." Sue then said, "I don't think I would care to try remembering sets of numbers." Zem then said, "They are only used for more specific identification if necessary. Usually, referring to the person's spouse is good enough. Though there are a couple other couples named Zem and Bev. But none from the Tenat. So mentioning that as our origin is good enough." Sue thought back and said, "I see." After about a minute, Mav said, "There are a group of multa below us just below the surface. When I turn to the right, the other houks will follow. Then you will be able to see them better." Mav's houk started making a wide bank to the right. As Mav said, one by one, our houks started to bank to the right to follow.

I looked down to the water, which was about three hundred feet below us. Just as Mav said, there was a group of six creatures swimming abreast of each other just under the surface. They were heading out into the larger area of the lake. From their outline and with the water being so clean, it was easy to see that they were indeed shaped like Plesiosaurs. Their necks were longer than their tails. They were a bluish grey in color and two of the largest appeared to be slightly longer than fifty feet from head to tail. Two were slightly smaller. There was another smaller yet that appeared to be a juvenile and an even smaller one that appeared to be a baby. Every now and then, one would raise the top of its head out of the water and breathe pretty much like a dolphin. As our houks flew in a wide circle, I said,

"They look very interesting. Is there any chance of seeing

92

them up close?" Til said, "We can feed some later." Sue said, "That would be interesting. The fun never ends with you guys!" Everybody emitted telepathic humor. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Having made almost a complete circle, our houks at the moment were heading in the direction of a river valley on the left end of the lake.

From what I could see, there were tall trees along the sides of the river valley and some cliffs here and there. Along the bottom, there were gravelly and sandy areas with a river running through it. I could see some rapids through one break in the trees. Our houks gained a little altitude as they continued to slowly turn in the direction of the large, forested hill that was across the lake from the house. Zem turned his head to look a little behind him and grin at Sue. Responding to Sue's last statement, Zem said, "I take it you're enjoying yourself." Sue grinned back at Zem as our houks began to catch up to Mav's. Sue said, "Enjoying myself! I think I'm going to end up kissing somebody when we get down!" I grinned at Sue. Mav said, "Me first!" This made everybody laugh. Though we also emitted telepathic humor. We all glanced at each other to share in each other's laughter. I could barely hear Bev and Sue laugh. Til then looked over at Mav and I could hear her think, "Flirting with me right next to you!?" This caused everybody to laugh again.

Afterwards, Mav said, "You know you're the only girl for me." Til said, "I better be!" This made us all laugh some more. Because we all knew that they were just playing around. I looked at Til and said, "You don't need to worry. I plan to keep Sue on a short leash." This made me grin and everybody except Sue laugh. Our houks were flying abreast of each other. We were still gaining altitude as we headed toward the large forested hill across the lake from the house. Responding to what I said, Sue said, "Oh you!" I grinned over at Sue, who was looking at me with a mock, slightly angry face as she continued saying, "You're lucky I'm not over there!" This made everybody except Sue laugh again. I said, "You know I'm only kidding sweetheart." Sue's mock, slightly angry expression turned to a slight smile as she said, "Well, ok. Just watch yourself." Bev then said, "Given the way some humans treat their women, (I then looked over at Bev) especially the Moslems, that isn't really the wisest thing to kid about." I said, "Sue knows that she will never have to worry about anything like that."

Then I looked at Sue with a loving expression. Sue looked at me with a loving expression too as I said, "They don't make a leash short enough for me to wish you would keep me on darling." Sue said with a slightly emotional, loving look on her face, "Oh darling!" After a brief pause to look at each other lovingly, Sue said, "Let's keep each other on short leashes." I said, "I have something for you darling." Everybody was smiling at us as I kissed the tips of my fingers and blew

Sue a kiss. Sue grinned and pretended to grab it out of the air and held it to her heart. Which made everybody else grin also. Sue then said, "I have something for you too sweetheart." Sue then blew me a kiss. Which I also pretended to grab out of the air and held it to my heart. Til said, "You newlyweds are so adorable. Apart from Tal and Sas, it's been forever sense I've been around any." Sue and I both grinned at Til. Bev said, "They have been a joy to be

93

around." Sue and I turned our grins to Bev. Sue said, "Thank you. You already know how we feel." Mav said, "Til darling. I have something for you."

Apparently what Sue and I had done seemed like a good idea to him. He kissed his fingertips too and blew Til a kiss. As Til went to pretend grab it out of the air, Zem smiled lovingly at Bev and said, "I have one for you too darling." Zem then kissed his fingertips and blew Bev a kiss as Til held the kiss she caught to her chest. Til said to Mav with a loving look on her face, "Thank you darling." Bev was holding the kiss she caught to her chest, which was between her and Lika, as she said to Zem with a loving look on her face too, "Thank you darling." Til said to Mav, "Here's one for you darling! Don't drop it!" Then Til kissed her fingertips and blew Mav a kiss. As Mav made a determined effort to catch Til's kiss, Bev said to Zem, "Don't miss it darling!" Bev kissed her fingertips and blew Zem a kiss too. Sue and I were of course smiling at them with sentimental looks on our faces. Mav was holding Til's kiss to his chest as Bev blew Zem a kiss. Zem also made a determined effort to catch it. Holding it to his chest, just above Panny, after he did so.

Til said to Mav, "Sue and Erik are so cute. Maybe we should get ourselves a couple of humans and see if they will fall in love too." Sue and I both grinned widely at them as Mav said, "You know there would be many things to discuss before we did such a thing. Maybe we can talk about it later." Til smiled and gave Mav a nod. By this time, we had gained more altitude. I could see the other side of the hill that was across the lake from the lake house. There was a small lake beyond. Off to the left of it I could see a gap in the trees where the river I noticed earlier had come from. It went for a little ways and turned in the opposite direction we were going. Flowing in that direction for a ways, I could also see a bit of a waterfall at the head of a valley. I looked over to Mav and said with a smile, "You must be pleased with the way the landscape had developed." Mav smiled back at me and said, "Yes. It has come along well." Then Mav then went back to flying and looking at the wonderful scenery. I did too as Mav added, "Though even without a moon to cause as much tectonic activity, you've probably noticed that there are many wonderful places on planet Bev too."

Zem then said to Mav, "I'm afraid they hadn't seen very much of it."



Bev then added, "But they will get a chance to in the future." This statement caused Sue and I to happily grin at each other." Sue then added, "And we can't wait!" Which caused Zem, Bev, Til and Mav to shoot Sue a grin before turning back to their flying. As we all looked around, as usual we would now and then catch another's eye and grin at each other. As we flew on, Sue smiled at Sas and said, "I don't want you to feel neglected Sas. But I have a question for your dear mommy." Everybody smiled at Sue with sentimental looks on their faces. Sas said with a sentimental tone to her thought, "I don't mind." Sue smiled over at Mim as Mim said in an affectionate thought, "What would you like to know Sue dear." We all continued to smile at Sue as she said, "Do you Nal make planets of your own too?" Mim said, "No Nal has ever had a wish to. Besides. There are many more planets that are inhospitable to biological creatures than there are those that are hospitable. Though many of the inhospitable ones can be quite beautiful. We would be as comfortable there as we are here."

94

Sue said, "I figured that it was a silly question. But I just thought I would ask." Til said, "It's a good thing that we all love our Nal so much. Or they might just leave." Pam said, "And we love you too." It was at this point that Pam went over and hovered just in front of Mav's face. At the same time, San went over and did the same with Til; Mim did the same with Zem; Pim did the same with Bev; Sas did the same with me and Tal did the same with Sue. This caused surprise to briefly flash across everybody's faces. Then all the Nal made mouths appear on their surfaces. Quickly, they all puckered their lips. Then they made smooching motions and sounds with their lips. We all busted up laughing. It was so cute! The Nal changed their smoochie lips to expressions of laughter and laughed verbally. Our houks started doing a wide circle in the air as we laughed. All of the houks seemed to react to our amusement. They gave off various calls that seemed to reflect enjoyment. After about a minute of laughter, Zem thought to Mim with a little verbal laugh still coming out of him, "Erik or Sue didn't put you guys up to that did they?"

Mim said, "No. It was my idea. But when Bev had Pim and I give Sue and Erik a smooch earlier, it was so much fun that I thought it would be funny to do something similar again." Til said to San, "You're so adorable!" I said to Sas, "I know we just met. But." I then puckered my lips and made smoochie motions and sounds with my lips to Sas. Everybody did the same with their Nal. Then we all gave our Nal a quick smooch. Afterward, we all took a Nal and cuddled them against our cheeks as we laughed some more. After a little laughter, I said to Sas in a kidding around manner, "I don't know if it is a Nal version of genetics, but you smooch as well as your mom." This caused more laughter. Then Tal said in a kidding around manner, "Don't forget

whose girl she is!" This caused even more laughter. The thought of a human and a Nal having a relationship was just silly. After some laughter, Sue held Tal out a little in her hand. The Nal had made their mouths disappear at this point. Sue said with a mischievous grin, "Let's make Sas jealous." Then Sue started peppering Tal around his surface with quick kisses.

As the rest of us held our Nal a little ways from our faces and looked at this, we all laughed. Except for Sue and Sas. Sas darted away from me and shot over to Tal. Then Sas extruded a number of tendrils and took hold of Tal. Sas then plucked Tal from Sue's hand and pulled him away. As she did so, Sas said in a kidding around thought, "Don't forget who's guy he is!" This made us all laugh even harder. Sas was emitting telepathic humor too as she reabsorbed her tendrils. Tal and Sas circled around each other's surface at differing angles. Everybody let their Nal go too. They all came together as a group and joyfully circled around each other's surfaces. The rest of us grinned at each other widely. Our houks were at this point flying again toward the mountain. We were flying level at about two thousand feet. The temperature up here was slightly cooler than it was at ground level. But even with the wind rushing by, it was still quite comfortable. After a few moments, Mav said to Sue and I, "Get ready. I'm taking us down a little." The Nal separated and headed toward the being they were taking care of. We were just over the crest of the hill at this point. Mav nosed his hok down and started heading toward the back slope of the hill.

95

The rest of our houks followed Mav's in a stepped back formation. The wind started rushing by faster as our houks bent the tips of their wings back a little. We flew just above the trees on the other side of the hill. Sue exclaimed, "Weee!" Our houks also gave out excited calls. This sure was a rush. Soon, our houks leveled out and headed for the small lake. I said, "That was fun!" Sue said, "Really fun!" Bev said, "The fun has hardly begun yet." Zem said to Mav, "I take it we're going to the mountain." As we started to pass over the shore of the smaller lake, Mav said, "Of course." Til then added as she smiled over at Zem, "You know how much fun it is." Bev looked over at Til with a smile and said, "Oh, we know." Til nodded at Bev with a smile. Sue said to Bev, "Do you have any houks on planet Bev?" Bev said, "I'm afraid we don't. But we do have other creatures there which can be flown." I said, "I'm surprised you didn't mention those." Zem then added, "There are a lot of things that we didn't mention. You seemed to be a little preoccupied at the time with other matters anyway." Sue and I grinned at each other.

Then Sue smiled over at Zem and said, "What are they like." Bev answered and said, "They are more bird like and require a saddle to

ride. They aren't quite as smart as the houks. If they don't know you well, they could give you a nasty peck if you're not careful. Though they aren't malicious at all. They're smart enough to not peck you in the face. Even when fighting amongst themselves, they will avoid each other's eyes. You would no doubt enjoy them." I said, "What are they called." Bev said, "They're called Etat." Sue said, "I can't wait to see one." Zem chuckled and grinned over at Sue. He said, "There's a lot you can't wait to do." Sue giggled a bit and said with a wide grin, "I know. Sometimes I feel like I'm going to explode!" This caused us all to laugh and grin briefly at a very happy looking Sue. It made me deliriously happy to see my sweet, wonderful, darling Sue so happy. An emotional look came over my face. Seeing the expression on my face, Sue's face changed to an emotional loving look as she said, "I love you so much darling."

I found that I couldn't answer. I'm not really sure what happened to me. But everything seemed to catch up to me. As you know if you read the first book, a little over two days ago, I was a homeless guy. When Zem found me, I was sleeping under an overpass in a train yard. So much of a person's sense of self worth depends on having meaningful work. But I didn't have any kind of work. Except for the odd job here and there. Any sense of hope was close to completely disappearing from my life. It fucked with me bad. Then I met Sue. Who came from a completely different world than me economically. Living a life that I would have been unlikely to provide for her. But other than that, we were a perfect match. It was so wonderful that Zem and Bev made it possible for us to be together. Just a little over a couple days ago, I was in hell. And now this! A look of intense anguished emotion came over my face. I firmly grabbed two handfuls of hok hair and buried my face into my wrists as I started crying uncontrollably. Sue saw what was happening and an anguished look came over her face as she started crying herself. As Sue did so, Sue called out in an anguished, verbal voice, "Oh Erik!"

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til looked over at me and Sue with concerned looks. Even

96

Panny and Lika seemed to look at me with concerned looks. A couple moments later, Bev said to Sue with compassion in her thought, "Erik needs you!" Sue and Sas fairly quickly faded out of existence. Sue's hok made a couple rather plaintive calls at losing its rider. As Sue and Sas did so, they faded into existence with Sue next to me. Sue took hold of me and said with an anguished, sobbing, audible voice, "Erik darling! Erik my love!" Sas flew over to Tal about six feet above us. They both just flew next to each other. I buried my face into between Sue's shoulder and neck as I took hold of Sue in a tight embrace with my free arm. Sue laid the side of her head on top of mine and embraced me too. To have so much good fortune after such

misfortune! And seeing my dear sweet love being so much more happy than I could have ever made her on my own back on earth. I couldn't stop crying. Though I managed to get out between sobs, "Oh darling!... I love you so much!" Tal and Sas started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Though they did so a little more quickly than normal. What I said caused Sue to embrace me a little more firmly and cry a little more heavily as Sue sobbed, "Oh darling!"

I knew that it was causing Sue pain to see me like this. But I couldn't help myself. After a few extended moments of crying, I managed to get out, "You've saved me darling!" Sue said tearfully, "You saved me too darling!" While all this was going on, just after Bev sent Sue to me, Zem and Bev started to look at each other with emotional looks. As Mav and Til did also. At this point, as they say, there wasn't a dry eye in the house. Bev and Lika levitated along with Mim over to Zem. Bev's houk also gave out a rather plaintive call at losing its rider. Zem held out an arm to receive Bev. No doubt they were exchanging private, loving thoughts all the while. When Bev reached Zem, they embraced each other enthusiastically and emotionally. Panny and Lika happily embraced each other. Pim and Mim also flew along with each other about six feet above them. They circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. At the same time as Bev and Lika levitated over to Zem and Panny, Til and Pam also levitated over to Mav and San. When Til reached Mav, Til and Mav enthusiastically embraced each other with tearful emotion. San and Pam also flew above them doing the same thing Pim and Mim were doing.

After a couple minutes of this, I had regained some control. Sue said tearfully, "Are you alright darling?" I parted from Sue enough for us to look into each other's emotion wracked faces. The wind was blowing the tears away that fell from our cheeks. I said with emotional love, "Oh darling. I'm not really sure what happened. Seeing you so happy. And thinking of the kind of life you deserved on earth that I may not have been able to provide. And all this could so easily have not happened at all." Sue said with emotional love, "As long as we have each other now darling." We then kissed each other with enough loving tenderness as to make the gods weep. After a few extended moments of this, we parted our kiss and embraced again. Sue said in a tender, loving voice, "Your love will always be safe with me darling." I said, "Oh darling!" We then kissed with a slightly uncomfortable firmness. But it was still so wonderful, it was beyond description.

About thirty seconds later, we fully embraced again. I then said emotionally into

97

Sue's ear, "All that matters is that we're safe and I'll love you forever!" Sue squeezed me so hard that her strength astonished me. I squeezed

Sue so hard I was afraid I might break something. As I did so, I said, "My darling love!" After another few extended moments, I relaxed my grip on Sue. Sue also held onto me less tightly. Then I said, "Tell me again you're really my wife darling." Sue said, "I'll be your wife forever and ever my darling!" Sue gave me about five kisses around the side of my head before fully embracing me again. We continued to lovingly embrace each other and nuzzle the sides of our heads together as the hawks continued to fly toward the mountain. After a few more minutes had passed, Sue and I again kissed. Afterwards, we just looked at each other with tearful, loving, emotional looks. There was no need to say anything else. The love in our eyes spoke volumes. And seeing such love on Sue's astonishingly beautiful face was more magnificent than the incredible scenery around us. Zem and Bev and Til and Mav had already come out of their emotional state. Though they were still looking at their partners with loving looks. My little breakdown had apparently caused much love to pass between them also. Which no doubt pleased them greatly. We flew along for a number of minutes as we all took great pleasure in caressing and looking at our partners with loving looks. Occasionally exchanging loving, tender kisses. Zem was the first to speak. He grinned at Bev and turned his grin over to Sue and I. I heard his thoughts again, saying, "You see what you've done. Now Bev is going to demand that I pleasure her when we get back." This caused us all to laugh heartily. Except for Bev. Bev got a shocked look on her face and said plaintively, "Zem!" Then Bev slapped Zem on his shoulder. Mav said, "I think we're both goners now!" Sue and I briefly buried our faces into each other's shoulders and laughed. Til said plaintively to Mav, "Mav!" Zem said to Bev, "Sorry darling. You know I'm only kidding. Will you forgive me?" Bev's slightly miffed expression lessened as she said, "Just watch yourself." Zem then gave Bev a loving kiss. Referring to any possible molestation Til might do, Til looked at Mav and said, "You know you love it."

Mav gave Til a tender, loving smile and said with a thought just dripping with loving sincerity, "You know I do my love." This caused Til to grin widely and look at Mav with happiness splashed across her face. Mav looked at Til in the same way. Then Mav and Til kissed each other. Sue and I grinned at each other with happiness written across our faces. Then Sue and I kissed each other too. After about a minute, we began to part our kisses from our partners. We all continued to lovingly look at and caress our partners after parting. I thought to everybody, saying, "I'm sorry about what happened. I don't really know what came over me." Zem answered and said with a lot of kindness in his thought, "Things have been moving pretty fast for you two. Even though you hadn't experienced anything traumatic like real battle back on earth, I would say part of it was a sort of post traumatic stress thing. But it isn't anything to be ashamed of or even worry about over analyzing. Believe me, you're just fine." Sue smiled lovingly at me and said telepathically, "You sure are darling." I smiled

lovingly at Sue and said in the same manner, "I love you so much my wife."

This caused Sue and I to embrace again. Sue said, "I love you so much too my

98

darling husband." This caused me again to tightly embrace Sue. Though not as tightly as before. Sue also tightly embraced me back. Again, the feeling of this loving, wonderful being that I held in my arms was almost too much to bear. I said verbally into Sue's ear, "I still have trouble believing that I deserve somebody as wonderful as you." Sue said lovingly and verbally into my ear, "I'm the lucky one my love." I nuzzled my cheek against Sue's. Which Sue did likewise with me. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. After a few moments of this, I pulled back a little to look into Sue's sweet, loving face. I gave Sue a serious yet loving look and said, "I pledge my life to making your existence as wonderful as possible my love." Sue's face took on an emotional look and she said, "Oh darling!" We then kissed each other passionately. After a few minutes of this, we again tightly embraced each other.

As we embraced, I said into Sue's ear, "Someday you're going to catch a cold or something. And I can't wait." Sue giggled a little and we parted enough to look each other's amused, loving faces. As we both grinned at each other, Sue said, "Why would you want me to get sick." I said, "So I can baby, pamper and comfort the hell out of you until you get better." Sue expression again turned to an emotional, loving one and she hugged me tightly. Then Sue said in an emotional voice, "If you're a dream my love, I never want to wake up." As I hugged Sue back, I said, "I'll never let you wake up darling. Never." As Sue and I embraced, Mav's thoughts came through and said, "I hate to break things up, but we're going to turn again. We had better get back to flying." Sue and I parted and smiled lovingly at each other. We briefly but passionately kissed each other before again looking into each other's blissful faces. Then we laid next to each other and positioned ourselves evenly on the back of our houk. Sue and I were laying on our houk basically the same way that the other's were. Both Sue and I had our shoulders leaning against each other's with those arms around each other's backs. With our other arms, we propped ourselves up on an elbow and held a handful of fur. We had our outer legs slightly off to the side for balance. I had my ankle slightly over Sue's lower calf. Zem and Bev were of course laying on their houk the same way. Panny and Lika were laying next to each other just under the propped up upper portions of Zem and Bev's upper bodies. Both Panny and Lika held handfuls of fur as they happily looked around. As we had been flying, our houks continued to gain elevation. We were only about two hundred feet from the mountain at this elevation. As Mav's houk started to turn to the right, I thought to

Mav, saying, "The houks aren't going to have any trouble with two of us on them are they." The houk Til had been riding was turning at this point to follow theirs. No doubt the rest of our houks would follow. Mav answered and said, "Not really. They're strong flyers. Besides, we're catching some good updrafts now." Our houks were indeed gaining some more altitude as they turned. The tree line must have been about seven hundred feet below us. The mountain was rocky here. Above us a few thousand feet or so, it was icy and snowy.

Mav's houk, followed by the others, continued to turn to the right. Sue and I briefly but happily grinned at each other before returning our gaze back to the

99

amazing scenery. I thought to Sue, "Are you cold sweetheart." Sue smiled at me and said, "A little honey. But I'm ok." Bev said, "I'm a little chilly too." Bev had good reason to be chilly. Because some of Bev's top was a latticework of strips of fabric with open squares as wide as the strips of fabric. Bev then said, "But we can fix that." Our Nal separated and formed a smaller spheres next to them. These smaller spheres came down to us and formed jackets on us. The jackets remained the same colors as the Nal had been. Bev wore a yellow Mim jacket. Zem wore a orange Pim jacket. Mav wore a red San jacket. Til wore a blue Pam jacket. Sue wore a deep purple Sas jacket and I wore a green Tal jacket. Bev said, "There. How's that." Sue said, "Just great. Thank you." Then Sue smiled at the slightly smaller Sas sphere and caressed her jacket. Sue then said, "And thank you Sas." Sas said, "Happy to be of service." Tal added, "As always."

I smiled at Tal and said, "You guys are just great." Tal said, "Thank you." Sue and I then smiled briefly at each other. Then we went back to enjoying our flight. As our houks continued to circle and gain altitude, the view was just beautiful. We of course were all wearing smiles. As we made a couple more circles. Our houks didn't need to flap their wings much. Though the ones carrying two people did a bit more frequently. Mav then said, "We'll be landing soon." I said, "Where are we going to land." Mav said, "Do you see that ledge up there?" We all looked about a hundred feet up the mountain. There was a precarious looking long narrow ledge. I said, "There doesn't seem to be much room." Mav said, "There's enough." Sue and I looked at each other a little nervously. But Mav had to know what he was doing. Our houks made a couple more turns and started heading toward the cliff face. Mav said, "Everybody hang on."

Our houks went toward the cliff face and started flapping their wings a little more as we slowed. It appeared that the houks weren't going to land on the ledge, but on the wall of rock that rose up from it. The houks started landing on the cliff face. Expertly digging claws onto various cracks and small ragged ledges of rock. They all were making various calls after they landed. Sue said in an audible voice loud

enough for everybody to hear, "That was fun." Zem, Bev, Mav and Til started to slide themselves off of their houks. No doubt they could have just levitated down. But this was probably more fun to them. Sue and I did as they did. We simply grabbed handfuls of fur kind of like we might grab rungs of a ladder and lowered ourselves to the ledge. Panny and Lika headed in the other direction. Apparently they wanted to climb around on the cliff face as well. We all came to stand on the ledge that was, on average, fifteen feet wide. It seemed a lot safer looking from this vantage point. Sue and I briefly looked at each other with wide, happy grins. At the same time, our houks moved on the cliff face closer to each other.

Sue and I looked at them do so for a moment. It was interesting how easily they did it. Then Sue and I turned our grins to Zem and Bev as we put an arm around each other's lower backs. Sue and I walked hurriedly toward them. Zem and Bev grinned at Sue and I. Mav and Til also walked toward Zem and Bev with grins on their faces. Sue and I went up to Zem and Bev and we both gave them a bit of a hug. Though Sue gave Bev a kiss on her cheek first. After

100

parting, Sue said with a joyful voice, "Oh Bev! It's so wonderful!" I then said to Zem, "You're wonderful too!" Bev said as Zem patted me on the shoulder, "I guess we just can't help it. But I'm glad you're enjoying it." We all continued to grin as Mav said, "Don't forget who's houks they are." This made us all laugh a little. Sue and I quickly stepped over to them. Sue and I then gave them a bit of a hug too. But again, Sue gave Til a kiss on her cheek first. As we hugged, Sue said to Til, "You're both wonderful too!" I said, "Really wonderful!" Til said, "Thank you. You're so sweet." We parted and grinned at each other.

Mav patted me on the shoulder and said, "We like you too." Sue said to Mav, "You wanted a kiss first. Sorry." We all laughed a little as Sue leaned over a little to give Mav a kiss. Mav leaned over a little too and turned his cheek a little toward Sue for her to kiss. At the same time, Mav said, "That's ok." Sue then gave Mav a kiss on his cheek too. As they began to part, Mav added, "As long as I came in there somewhere." This caused us all to chuckle a little more. Then Mav put his hand on my shoulder again and said with a bit more somber look on his face, "What happened to you out there may have been unfortunate." This caused a bit of solemnity to come over Sue and I's expressions as Mav added, "But it caused my sweet Til and I to exchange feelings we haven't exchanged in years." Sue and I took on sentimental looks with smiles on our faces as Mav added, "It was all we could do to keep from disappearing to someplace more private." Zem said, "Believe me. They're real good at that." We all grinned at Zem and Bev as Mav removed his hand from my shoulder.

Til said, "I can see again what Bev meant when she said you two have



been a joy to be around.” Sue and I turned our grins back to Til as she spoke. Then Til added, “Thank you.” Sue and I again smiled sentimentally at them. Sue said, “If we have brought happiness to you, it makes us even more happy.” Til and Sue then hugged again. I said to Mav with a sentimental and appreciative look on my face, “Compared to what you and Til have done for Sue and I, it seems like we cheated you.” Til and Sue parted their hug and briefly looked at each other with sentimental smiles. Then they smiled at Mav and I. Mav then said to me, “If you knew the incredible heaven that passed between Til and I, you wouldn’t say that.” Zem and Bev were watching all this as they held onto each other from the side with sentimental smiles on their faces too. The Nal couples were also circling around each other’s surfaces at differing angles. Til and Sue let go of each other as Til looked at Mav with a loving look. Then Til went to embrace Mav as she said, “My darling love!”

Mav and Til enthusiastically embraced each other and kissed each other passionately. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. Then Sue and I kissed each other too. Though Zem and Bev didn’t need a reason to do so, seeing what was going on, they kissed each other too. After about a minute, Mav and Til broke off their kiss and fully embraced each other. Soon, Zem and Bev and Sue and I were doing the same. After a few extended moments, Mav and Til held each other in a loose embrace and smiled at Sue and I. Til said, “Zem was right.” Sue and I parted our hug enough to look at Til and Mav with smiles on our faces as Til added, “You two are good at causing love.” Zem and Bev also held each other in a loose embrace and smiled at the rest of us as Sue and I flashed

101

happy grins at Mav. Bev then said to Til and Mav, “They make us so proud.” Sue and I looked at each other with expressions of emotional surprise. Then we turned these expressions to Bev and Zem. Sue said with emotional enthusiasm, “Do we really!”

Zem and Bev briefly smiled at each other. Then they looked at Sue and I with extra happy smiles on their faces. They both had their lips pursed together. Both of them gave a few short, sharp nods of their heads in the affirmative. At the same time, they both hummed enthusiastically in the affirmative, “Um hum!” It was the same thing that Sue and I had done to them when Zem asked Sue and I if we were ready to go for a little ride back on planet Bev! It was so adorable that Mav and Til busted up laughing. Sue and I didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. Both Sue and I’s biggest wish was to be helpful to Zem and Bev for all they’ve done for us. And for mere humans to receive such a compliment from a couple of gods! Sue and I quickly went to Zem and Bev with looks of tearful joy on our faces and embraced them. Mav and Til turned their laughs to each other then grinned widely at each other. Then they turned their grins back to us as Sue

said to Bev, "You make us so happy!" I said, "You're both so wonderful!" Because of Sue and I's emotional state, Zem and Bev gave us some comforting pats and caresses.

Mav and Til's expressions turned to sentimental smiles. After a few extended moments, Sue and I parted a bit from Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev looked at us with sentimental smiles. Sue and I smiled at them a little. Though our moist eyed expressions showed mostly appreciative sentimentality. It was at this point that we heard Mav say to Til, "Shall we take in some scenery darling?" We all turned to them with smiles on our faces. Til was looking at Mav with her lips pursed together in a smile and an extra happy expression on her face. Then Til did the same thing Zem and Bev did. As Zem, Bev, Sue and I released each other, Til shortly and sharply nodded her head a few times in the affirmative and hummed in the affirmative, "Um hum!" We all laughed. Which Til quickly joined in on as she and Mav turned toward us to share in our laughter. After a couple moments, they turned their laughter back to each other. Mav then embraced Til a bit. After the laughter died down, Mav said to Til, "You're so adorable!" Til said, "Thank you darling."

Then they began to lovingly kiss each other. Of course, embracing each other more fully and caressing each other as they did so. Sue and I beamed wide grins at each other. Surely, such a gesture wasn't foreign to the Reall. But ultimately, it was Sue and I who were responsible for Mav and Til's current state of loving. And that made Sue and I very happy. Zem said to Sue and I, "Let's go take in the view." Then Zem and Bev walked over to the edge of the cliff. Sue and I went too. Zem stood behind Bev and wrapped his arms around her. I did the same with Sue. Bev caressed Zem's arms in front and Sue did the same with me. Both Bev and Sue enjoyed the loving embrace of their fellas and the wonderful view. After a few extended moments, Mav and Til parted their kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then they put an arm around each other's backs and went over to the cliff face themselves. Mav stood behind Til and embraced her like Zem and I were doing with our cuddly girls. The mountains

102

ran off both to the left and right. Along with foothills of various sizes that were on average about five miles from their bases. Ahead of us, I could see the small lake on this side of the hill there.

Here and there, I could see small bits of small streams that fed that lake. Then there was the much larger lake on the other side. Along the far shore and off to our right a little, near that side of the lake, I could make out the speck of the house that we had flown from. Far off to the left on the other side of the large lake, I could see a river that meandered off into the distance. At some points, that river bordered the large grassy area. Though at other points it ran through the forest on that side of the large grassy area. Farther off, toward the horizon, I

could make out a little bit of the ocean that laid beyond. The sun was shining brightly with hardly a cloud in the sky. The warmth of it, along with our Nal jackets, made the cool temperature up here quite comfortable. Sue said, "This a wonderful view. I just wish the sun wasn't at quite such a bothersome angle." The sun was at a little past noon position and shining slightly toward the front of us.

San said, "I can fix that." San went up and transformed himself into a long, rectangular, shaded yet transparent panel. Tal said telepathically with a bit of a plaintive edge to his voice, "Dad! Don't hog them!" We all grinned at them as our other Nal transformed themselves into square panels of the same material. San shrank down to the same size and each Nal shaded one of us. Til said to them, "Thank you. You're all so sweet." They all answered in unison and said, "You're welcome." As we took in the scenery, all of us had loving, contented looks on our faces. Accompanied with slight, pleased smiles. Cuddling my dear sweet love in my arms felt so wonderful. No doubt Zem and Mav were feeling the same way with their girls. About five minutes of this passed by when a thought came into my head. I looked over at Mav and said, "You know what would be a good idea." Everybody smiled at me. Though I had to released my hold of Sue a little so she could turn a bit and smile at me too. I nodded back at the cliff face. Taking a brief look at it and the houk that were perched next to each other on it, I added, "Hollowing out a nook into the cliff face here and putting in a viewing lounge."

Mav said, "I have a couple of those already in other places. Though there are actual living quarters behind them. Even though we don't really need it, you're right. This would be a good spot for another." Til then said, "I don't know if it is something Zem and Bev told you about, but we Reall have an embarrassment of riches when it comes to places to live. For instance, you remember the large ship we arrived on." Sue and I both nodded. Sue said, "Bev called it the Tanat." Til then said, "You only seen the outer shell. With it on average only being about ten miles thick, as you can imagine, the inner surface is quite spacious too. There used to be many of us that lived on the Tanat. But not so many do now. In your entire lifetimes, you could spend each night in a different unused practical palace and not be able to get to use them all." An astonished look came over Sue and I's faces. Zem then added, "But we don't go in for such splendor these days." I said, "How many people live on the Tanat."

Bev said, "On a regular basis, only about five hundred million of us. And we

103

Reall have nineteen other ships like it." Sue and I looked at each other with surprised looks. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til seemed to be slightly amused at Sue and I's surprise. Sue looked at them and said, "When you can have your own planet on top of all that, I see what you mean

about an abundance of places to live.” Bev smiled at Sue and said, “We mainly use our planets as vacation spots where we can indulge in setting up many different sorts of ecological systems. Though wherever we stay, commuting isn’t a problem.” I smiled and said, “I don’t imagine it would be.” Everybody smiled at me before returning to take in the wonderful scenery. As we did so, Zem said telepathically, “You can go on taking in the view. I just thought I would add that strangely enough, we still like to congregate in certain areas.” I said, “Like the lounge area of the Pol-Wim?” Bev said, “That’s right. At times, it can get pretty crowded in there. Even though everybody knows everybody, it can get a little uncomfortable at such times.” Sue said, “As you no doubt know, humans are kind of the same way. We like our space, but we also gather in malls and things.”

I said, “I’m afraid I can only take other people in small doses. As you guys are well aware of, pandering to peoples base desires has produced some pretty screw up philosophies among most humans when it comes to social interaction.” Mav said, “Yes. The whole gladiator or slavery thing has never really gone away. And for the upper crust, they definitely wouldn’t want the lower classes to behave in an actual civilized manner. Because their supposed superiority and exploitation of the lower classes would be harder to justify.” Sue said, “Bev and Zem have been telling us some amazing things about the nature of the universe. Could you tell us some interesting scientific things too?” Mav said to Zem and Bev, “Do you guys mind?” Zem said, “It’s ok. If you tell them something they shouldn’t know yet, we can always make them forget it.” Sue and I grinned at Zem and Bev. Which made them grin at Sue and I too. Then we grinned at Mav and Til. Who were grinning at us also. I looked back forward and thought, “This ought to be good.” The others looked back forward too to take in the view.

Mav said, “I don’t know all what Zem and Bev discussed with you. But let’s take human math. To some extent, it is a load of crap. Especially in quantum mathematics. It may make for some good mental exercise, but there is only so much useful information that can be gained from a form of mathematics that has its basis in uncertainty. Though it gets even worse where mathematics delves into philosophy. Also, in mathematical models for expected particles in a particle accelerator, it is the expectation itself that can often cause the particles to appear.” This caused Sue and I to look at each other with astonished looks as Mav added, “This was something that caused our scientists much difficulty for the first nearly quarter million years of our civilization. But if you don’t mind, I would prefer that you not tell your fellow humans on planet Bev any of this. It would be better for them to discover such things on their own.” Bev said, “I think we can trust them.” Both Sue and I grinned at Bev and Zem. Who grinned back at us. Sue said, “Our lips are sealed.” I then gave Sue a little extra hug and said, “Mine too!” Which made Bev and Zem smile at us a little like they were looking at something adorable.

Til then said, "Did Bev and Zem tell you about the nature of quasars?" Sue and

104

I smiled at Til and Mav. I said, "Some." Til said, "The jets of energy they sometimes produce are usually at a ninety degree angle to the plane of the galaxy. This is because they produce enough gravitational and antigravitational forces to move the galaxy into its axial orientation. Though at the same time, a dimensional harmonic caused by the gravitational forces of the galaxy itself imprints itself on the formation of the quasar. Making it stable. Supermassive black holes behave in the same way. That is part of the reason why you don't usually see the very long jets that both things can give off curving with the rotation of the galaxy. But another reason is that those jets do in fact travel at over the speed of light. Though this causes their reach to stop at a certain point. Just like a huge cosmic light saber." I said, "I take it that you have seen those "Star Wars" films." Til said, "Yes. We have seen many human si-fi shows. Even though they can range from silly to disgusting. But what humans imagine the future to be like gives a good insight into the human psyche."

I said in a half kidding around manner, "Let me take this opportunity to apologize for that." This caused Til, Mav, Zem and Bev to laugh a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Mav said, "Don't worry about it. Nobody's perfect." Sue was still grinning at Mav and Til as she said, "I think somebody deserves a hug!" Sue started to move toward Mav and Til. I released Sue to do so. As Sue put her arms out, I had a funny idea pop into my head. I grabbed Sue again and said with a big grin as I held her back, "I think you're turning Sue into a hug monster! I have to protect you!" This caused everybody to laugh. Amidst the laughter, Mav and Til turned more in our direction. Though they still kept an arm around each other. I could also sense telepathic humor from our Nal. Sue grabbed my arms as she laughed. But Sue quickly joined in on my plan.

Sue put her arms out again and started reaching out to Mav and Til like she was an actual hug monster. At the same time, Sue's face took on a mock wild look. Accompanying this, Sue also grinned and had an overly eager expression on her face. Also at the same time, Sue would alternately reach out and make grasping motions with her hands or move her arms in a hugging motion. While Sue did these things, Sue also made little grunting and growling sounds. This increased Mav and Til's laughter. I turned Sue toward Zem and Bev. It also increased their laughter as Sue did her thing to them too. Then I turned Sue back toward Mav and Til. I held Sue back some more like I was really having a lot of difficulty with it. At the same time, I said, "I don't know how much longer I can hold her!" This caused even more laughter. Til said, "That's ok." Then Til raised her free hand a little and said in a mirth filled voice like she was giving a command to a gatekeeper or

beleaguered animal trainer, "Release the hugger!"

This caused even more laughter as I let go of Sue. Sue quickly scampered over to Mav and Til with her arms out and still in her hug monster persona. Til and Mav held out their free arms to receive Sue into.

Mav and Til laughed a little more heartily than the rest of us as Sue hugged them. Sue continued with the hug monster thing for a couple of moments. Then Sue joined in on the laughter as they all joyfully hugged. It was so much fun. The fun even brought Panny and Lika from off the cliff face. They happily

105

scampered over to Mav, Til and Sue. Chattering happily as they did so. After a little laughter, I went over near them and held my arms down for Panny and Lika. They scampered over and jumped onto my arms. As I stood erect with them cuddled into my arms, they continued to chatter happily. Mav, Til and Sue parted enough to look at each other and share in each other's laughter. After a few moments, Til said with an amused voice, "That was so cute!" I said to Til and Mav as I held up Panny and Lika a little, "These are the real hug monsters!" This caused some more chuckling as Mav, Til and Sue released each other. Til reached out for Lika and said, "Here Lika!" Lika let go of my forearm and scampered over to Til's hands. Til cuddled Lika as Sue petted Panny in my arms. Zem and Bev of course were grinning at us all.

Then Sue got a surprised look on her face. Sue said, "Oh no! I think it's happening again!" We all broke up laughing again. Our Nal also again emitted telepathic humor as Sue turned to Zem and Bev with a big grin on her face and a wild look in her eyes. At the same time, Sue held out her arms to Zem and Bev and made hugging motions with them. Then Sue happily scampered over to them in her hug monster persona. Which only increased Zem and Bev's laughter. Bev and Zem turned a little more in Sue's direction and held out a free arm to her. Sue hugged them a tiny bit roughly as she continued to make hug monster sounds. This of course caused Zem and Bev to continue their laughter. Mav, Til and I continued laughing as we watched. Sue dropped her hug monster persona after a couple more moments and laughed along with Zem and Bev as she hugged them normally. After a couple more moments, Zem, Bev and Sue parted enough to look at each other and share in each other's laughter. As our laughter began to fade, Zem said to Sue, "Thank you hug monster." This caused us all to chuckle some more. Then Bev said, "You make such a good hug monster!" This caused a little more chuckling.

Sue said to Zem and Bev as they released each other, "Just be careful. I don't know when the hug monster will emerge again." This caused a bit more laughter. Afterward, Mav said, "Is everybody ready for the flight back?" We all grinned at Mav. Zem said, "Any time you

are.” Sue and I stepped back over to each other and we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue petted Panny a little and put an arm around me. I brought Panny up toward my shoulder. He scampered the rest of the way up onto it. I then put an arm around Sue also. Sue said to Til and Mav, “I take it the ride back is going to be a little more adventurous.” Mav and Til’s grins widened slightly. Til said, “With it being all down hill, you can probably imagine.” Mav then added, “We’re going to all have to take our own houk. But be ready, it’s going to get quite windy.” Sue and I turned our grins toward each other. I said, “You ready for it sweetheart?” Sue said, “You know me. I can’t wait!” This caused Zem, Bev, Mav, Til and I to chuckle a bit. Which Sue quickly joined in on.

Afterwards, Mav said to Til, “Ready darling?” Til said to Mav, “Anytime you are my love.” Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, Mav smiled at Sue and I and said, “Just do what we do.” Sue said with a big grin, “Ok.” Mav headed toward his houk. Our Nal resumed their normal shape. San followed Mav. The other Nal moved a little closer to the biological beings they

106

tended to. All the houks were perched next to each other on the cliff face. Til sat Lika on the ground. Giving her one last pet before standing upright again. I put Panny down and gave him a parting pet too. Panny and Lika came together and played around a little with each other. When Mav got to his houk, he grabbed part of its tail. Then Mav started pulling on its tail as he made gentle, coaxing statements in Reall. The houk gave off a couple calls. Which spread to the rest of the houks.

Mav’s houk started backing down off the cliff face onto the ledge. Mav looked behind himself as he directed it back along the ledge. His houk would occasionally turn its head to look back too. Giving out a little call here and there as it did so. Til went over to her houk and Pam went with her. Then Til grabbed part of her houk’s tail and pulled on it. With gentle, coaxing, Reall words, Til started directing her houk off from the cliff face. It too started to back onto the ledge. Zem said to Bev, “See you in the air sweetheart.” Bev said, “Ok dearest.” They gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Til continued to back her houk along the ledge. After parting, Zem and Bev smiled lovingly at each other. Then Zem went to his houk that was next in line after Til’s. Bev went to hers that was next in line. Pim and Mim accompanied them. Sue and I smiled at each other as we released each other. Then we took each other’s hand and went over to our houks. Tal and Sas came with us. As we went, Sue said, “This is so much fun!” I said, “It sure is!”

When we got near them, Sue and I gave each other a quick kiss and parted. I went to my houk and pulled on its tail. Mav and Til had stopped coaxing their houks back. Zem and Bev continued to back

theirs on the ledge. I said with a gentle coaxing voice, "Come on boy! Come on!" My houk also backed down off from the cliff face. As I backed my houk a little along the ledge, Sue coaxed her houk off from the ledge. Sue said in a friendly, coaxing manner, "Come on Flappy!" We all overheard Sue and grinned at her. Zem had stopped coaxing his houk back. Bev was still doing so as she thought and said, "Flappy. That's a pretty cute name." As Sue continued to guide her houk onto the ledge, Sue grinned back at Bev and thought, "I felt like calling her something. And "Flappy" seemed to be an appropriate name." As Bev stopped guiding her houk back along the ledge, Til said to Sue, "I'm sure she will enjoy it." We all grinned at Til. Though Sue's grin was extra happy. Mav thought to Sue and said, "That's good Sue. The others can just take off from the cliff face."

Sue said to Mav with a grin, "Ok" We all started making our way up onto our houks. Lika again accompanied Bev and Panny again accompanied Zem. Of course, the houks again parted the upper portions of their wings to make room for us. The other male houk and the pregnant female looked at us as they remained perched on the cliff face. Then I turned to Sue and said with a smile, "Are you nervous sweetness?" Sue turned to me and thought with a smile, "I'll be just fine honey." As we all laid down on our houks, I said, "See you in the air then my love." Mav said, "Ok. Get ready for takeoff." We all took a good hold of the fur we were holding. At the same time, we spread our feet slightly apart. Our Nal came back to a few feet above our feet. I could feel Tal somehow holding my feet to the back of my houk. With the same thing happening to Sue,

107

Sue looked back at the others and said with a bit of nervousness to her thought, "Are things really going to that hairy." Til said, "You will experience a couple negative G forces here and there. Even without footwear, holding fur with our feet would be a little difficult. So the Nal will help us. But don't worry. Things won't get that bad."

Mav said, "Just like before. It's pretty much just follow the leader. Hold on!" Mav's houk turned and jumped off the ledge. First its front legs launched it sideways and then shoved off again on the cliff ledge. Then its back feet gave an extra push as its wings spread out. Mav's houk nosed down and started flying down the front of the cliff. It gave off a rather happy sounding call as it did so. Til's houk went next. Til called out "Weee!" as her houk started following Mav's. This caused us all to laugh as Til's houk also gave out a rather happy sounding call. Zem's houk went next. Zem called out, "Woo hoo!" as his houk also gave off a rather happy sounding call. His houk followed the others. Bev went next. I held on tightly and waited for mine to go. Bev's houk nosed downward and she called out "Weee!" Bev's houk also called out. My houk then turned leapt off the ledge like the others. I could feel its powerful body flexing under me as its wings



came out. Nosing down, I understood what Til meant about the negative G's. I was glad to have Tal holding my feet down. The thrill of it made me call out, "Yahooooo!" as my houk started following the others. Before I finished this exclamation, my houk also called out.

Soon after me, I heard Sue call out behind me, "We Heee!" Of course, Flappy also called out. For some reason, Sue's exclamation made me laugh. I heard Sue's thought in my mind. Apparently Sue heard me laughing. Sue said, "I can't help it! It's fun!" The other two houks leapt from the cliff face and followed Sue's houk, Flappy. We were quickly picking up speed and the wind really started rushing by. Our houks started to bring the tips of their wings in as we flew almost vertically down. Then Mav's houk went left a bit and turned sideways to the mountain. One after the other, our houks did the same. The sight of the mountainside rushing past us was pretty amazing. Only a base jumper jumping off a cliff could probably see something similar. But with the houks alone, what we were doing was much safer. After a few moments, Mav's houk started to fly along the cliff face at a less steep angle. One after the other, our houks did so to.

The wing of Mav's houk was only a couple feet from the cliff. Mav thought and said, "Are you two ok back there?!" No doubt referring to Sue and I. I said, "I'm ok!" Glancing back at Sue, as we grinned at each other, Sue said, "I'm ok too!" I turned back forward as Mav said, "I intend to take it easy on you guys. But you let me know if either of you start feeling queasy." I said, "Believe me. The last thing I would want is for any barf to be heading back toward Sue." I could barely hear Bev and Sue laughing. Though I could also sense telepathic amusement from the others. Til said with an amused thought, "That's very considerate of you." Which caused us all to laugh again. Because it would obviously be more than just considerate to keep from barfing on your partner. Mav again made a flight adjustment. His houk flew at an even less steep angle. The rest of our houks did the same. But the side of the mountain rushing by us was still

108

impressive to see. Mav said, "I'm going to do a bit of a tricky maneuver. Hold on."

Mav's houk peeled away from the face of the cliff, turned to the side and started banking away from the mountain. Fully extending its wings as it did so. Til's houk followed behind Mav's. The rest of the houks did the same when they were in position. After Mav had been into his turn a bit, Mav's houk turned completely upside down and started to bank toward the ground again. I thought it was a rush to see the base of the mountain and the forest below and off to my side. But when my houk got to the spot where it too turned upside down, it was even more of a rush. The G forces held me onto the back of my houk. When Sue's houk went upside down, Sue gave out a high pitched yell like she was on a roller coaster. Though I couldn't blame

Sue. This was much more thrilling than any roller coaster. Sue hok, Flappy, also called out in what seemed to be an excited call along with Sue. Seemingly in response, the other hoks gave out calls too. Then Mav's hok banked again and headed off to what had been our right.

After the rest of ours did the same, we were then flying about thirty feet above the tops of the trees. Though at this point, the terrain still sloped downward at about a fifty five degree angle. Bev said to Sue, "Did you enjoy that Sue?" Sue responded excitedly to Bev, "That was fun! But a little scary!" I said, "That was great! But I thought you were going to take it easy on us!" Mav grinned back at us and said with a kidding around thought, "I lied." This made everybody crack up laughing. After we were through laughing, Til said to Sue and I, "That wasn't really all that bad. Zem and Bev know that these hoks can be quite acrobatic." At this point, Mav's hok turned to the left. The rest of our hoks followed. Apparently the acrobatics were over with. Because our Nal released our feet and again flew above us. When they did so, San said, "I don't think you'll be needing us to keep you warm anymore." Our Nal jackets came off of us and formed into smaller Nal spheres. These then merged with the Nal they had come from. Til said, "Thank you guys." All of the Nal said in unison, "You're welcome."

Speaking of the acrobatics of the hoks, Zem said, "Bev is quite the hok pilot. You don't want to try following if she and Mav decide to get into a competition." I said, "Do the hoks mind when you do things like that?" Mav started petting his hok as he said, "No. They enjoy themselves too." I petted my hok too. Sue said, "I don't mind if you get a little adventurous." Mav said, "That's ok. Besides, we have a pregnant female with us." Sue turned and smiled at the pregnant female hok bringing up the rear. Which it seemed to notice as it called out. This made Sue grin. Then Sue looked back forward and said as she also petted her hok, "I wouldn't want to cause any problems for the dear thing." Bev said, "They are wonderful. Aren't they." Sue said, "They sure are!" Sue's enthusiastic response made us all turn and grin at Sue. Which we could do easily enough at this point. Because our hoks were flying in a slightly stepped back formation. We were also flying at a less steep angle. Sue grinned back at us with a slightly more happy expression on her face. It made me feel so wonderful seeing my dear sweet love enjoying herself so.

109

I said, "I love you sweetheart." Sue said, "I love you too darling." Til said to Mav, "Do you still love me too Mav darling?" Sue and I turned our grins in their direction. Mav turned and smiled at Til with a loving expression on his face. Then Mav said, "It's not fair asking me that question up here dearest. But you know I do my love." This made Til grin happily. Til's expression also caused Mav's expression to turn to a

happy one. Zem grinned at Bev and said, "Do you still love me too Bev darling." Bev looked at Zem and a grin came across her face too. Then Bev said, "First Til asks a silly question. And then you." This caused Zem's grin to widen a bit. As it did with Bev also. We had reached the point where the forest began to become more level. Mav turned his houk off toward the right a little. Instead of playing follow the leader, all of our houks banked off to the right a bit. We were now heading into the valley that held the small lake. But at an angle off to the left. Our houks flew about twenty feet above the trees here. Til's houk caught up and started flying again next to Mav's. Zem made his houk catch up to theirs.

Bev looked back at Sue and I and said, "Just tell your houk to catch up. As I said, Sas and Tal will relay your command." Bev's houk caught up and started flying parallel with the others. I thought to my houk, "Catch up next to the others." It responded to my request. Sue also thought, "Catch up next to the others." Hers did the same thing. The other two houks behind her remained in their stepped back formation. As we started to catch up, I said, "Why don't we just give our commands to Tal and Sas." Zem said, "Tal and Sas can make it seem to them that the telepathic commands are coming from you. Which they are. Just a step removed. Seeing how you are the ones riding them, they will appreciate it more." When Sue caught up, she looked over toward Bev, Zem, Til and Mav with a smile and said, "I take it that if you wanted to, you could train the houks to understand commands in your own language instead of using telepathic commands." We all smiled at Sue. Til said, "Quite easily. If we took the time to do so." Mav then said, "The houks love whatever attention we pay to them. But with a whole universe of things to divide our attention, I'm afraid that finding the time to do such things is difficult to come by."

I said, "I could only imagine. And even that is probably woefully insufficient." Zem then said, "As time goes by, after you have visited with us more often, you will probably get a better idea of what it all entails." Sue grinned and said, "I can't wait." This made us all laugh. Sue was so adorable when she was being witty. But then again, Sue was always adorable. Bev said to Sue, "I know what you said is just an expression. But it's still cute. I can wait to hear you say it again." This made us all laugh again. Sue said, "Something tells me you'll be hearing it often enough." This caused us all to chuckle. Zem said, "When it comes to learning about us, we could just give your minds implants with all of the knowledge of the Reall. But that would be a bad idea for many reasons. One of which is that discovering things in their own time is half the fun. Besides, when you finally settle on planet Bev, as we spoke about, there are many things that I would prefer humans there find out on their own too. Not that I think you two would be blabber mouths."

Answering Zem, I said, "I don't think our human brains could process such

information anyway.” Bev said, “It would take some further adjustments to enable them to do so. But we like you the way you are. And seeing you discover new things is too much fun to spoil.” Sue said, “It’s too bad we can’t be as interesting as you guys are.” Til said, “You shouldn’t sell yourselves short. You are interesting too. But try not to be interesting. Just be yourselves.” Sue said, “Thank you. We’ll try.” I said, “When it comes to learning things, there is a question I have for you Bev.” Everybody smiled at me as Bev said, “What’s that.” I said, “When Zem collected me on earth, why didn’t you go with him.” Bev said as the others faced forward again, “That was more of a thing Zem was into doing. As you know, we don’t always do everything together. Besides, we already live and work together. Sometimes it’s good to give each other a little alone time. Even if we may not want to.” Sue said, “I would imagine that over so many millions of years, you have done many different jobs.”

Zem said, “We have done every job there is for our kind to do many times. Among the Reall, we do different jobs on a rotation determined by our government. Unless we are involved in some area of research and feel we may be on to something. Then we can ask for an extension in that occupation. Though even if we are given a boring or unflattering task, it is little more than a slight inconvenience.” As our houks again started to catch up to fly parallel to each other, Zem added, “At other times, driving ourselves too hard can be a problem.” Til said, “We find that job rotations also sometimes help give us fresh perspectives on many things.” I said, “Whatever you do for work, you certainly know how to enjoy yourselves when you’re not working.” Then Mav said, “Our eugenics program has lessened the need for us to seek cheap thrills. Which is a cause of much human misery. But where boredom does arise among our kind, we certainly know how to combat it.” Then Mav said, “Hold on a second as we make a flight adjustment.” The pregnant female houk started to turn off to the right. The rest of our houks followed. It appeared that we were going to be heading in the direction of the small lake.

As we turned, Mav said, “Speaking of boredom, that reminds me of a silly human science fiction show I once saw. At some point in the future, certain human communities became what they considered to be technically advanced and immortal. These humans lived in areas sealed off from the rest of the planet and lived a largely agrarian lifestyle. Some became insane with boredom and others sought ways to die. It was pretty goofy.” We were flying toward the small lake. Our houks began to catch up to fly parallel to each other, Zem said, “Most of your science fiction shows promote in some way what the Jews or corporations want promoted.” I said, “People are so brainwashed, it is often the kind of crap that they’ve been conditioned to want to hear.” Zem said, “Yes. Most Americans have been trained

to actually look at such lashing as the way things should be.” I said, “No doubt. One of the earliest major movies done was a silent movie that showed the Ku Klux Klan as the good guys. Winning the lottery would be a quadrillion times more likely to happen than the chances would be of the Jew controlled media allowing a movie to be made that showed the Nazis to be the good guys.”

Zem said, “As you know, they will reap the fruits of their folly. Unfortunately,

111

just because somebody can be taken advantage of doesn't necessarily mean they deserve to be taken advantage of.” I said, “Yeah. But it's pretty bad when humans have so often been fooled into actually wanting to be taken advantage of.” Zem said, “Yes. It is a pity.” Sue said, “Zem, I know that you find this kind of talk interesting. But I'm having so much fun and this talk is bringing me down. Can we talk about this stuff later?” Zem smiled over at Sue and said, “You see what Til meant when she said that you shouldn't sell yourselves short. Here I am the highly advanced being, and yet you're right.” Sue grinned at Zem and said, “Now I think you're just flattering me. But I don't mind.” This caused everybody to chuckle. Afterwards, Sue said, “Mav, you mentioned a human science fiction movie where humans were immortal. Erik and I already know roughly how old you are. I was just wondering, how long did the Reall species exist before your kind felt that you had advanced enough to take on immortality.” Mav smiled at Sue and said, “The Reall civilization existed for about nine and a half million years before our kind decided to take on immortality.” I said, “You know more about our history than I do. Given the short amount of time humans have been involved in true science, I doubt if I can even imagine the advancements highly intelligent beings like yourselves have made in your lifetimes. As it is, there are things about human science that seems incredible to me. For instance, there is a company that makes quite interesting bullets. Apparently, just from the materials and process from which they're made, if they hit something solid like a metal plate, they will punch their way through. But if they hit something soft like flesh, they will break apart and rip the flesh to pieces. Also, I would have never thought it would be possible to inject diesel fuel into the high pressure environment of diesel piston cylinder at the top of its compression stroke. Yet they do it with a two stage fuel compression system. There are also many things invented by our scientists that came about serendipitously. Even for advanced beings like yourselves, I would imagine that at times, things have come up in your highly advanced fields of research that you weren't expecting. Things so utterly amazing that it's a little scary for me to even think about.”

Til said, “Such things do still happen from time to time. But only very rarely.” Sue then said, “I'm not too sure who said it. But a science

fiction author once said that any alien technology advanced enough would seem indistinguishable from magic to humans. Though what you can do with just your minds is magic as far as I am concerned." Everybody smiled at Sue. Sas said to Sue, "Just so you know Sue. His name was Arthur C. Clarke." Sue smiled up at Sas and said, "Thank you Sas." Then Sue turned her smile to Mav as he said, "I'm sure Zem and Bev have told you, someday, humans on planet Bev will learn the same types of things and evolve to do the things we can do. To them at least, the things we do will seem much less miraculous." Bev said, "We have at times played virtual reality games in which we made ourselves as uninformed as you are about things. The wonder of the things we were subjected to was interesting. We get to feel a little the way you must. Though regaining our knowledge when we come out of it is a little shocking to experience." Til said, "Though you aren't learning as much, you are going through that process much more slowly. It must be such fun."

112

Sue said, "Oh, it is! And you know how I feel about the things Erik and I will be learning?" Sue then grinned at Bev and said, "Are you ready Bev?" We all grinned at Sue. Because we could guess what was coming. As Sue grinned, she raised her eyebrows and made an extra happy face as she said, "I can't wait!" Zem, Bev, Til, Mav and I all laughed. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Again, Sue was so adorable the way she said it that I just wanted to squeeze her to death. No doubt everybody else thought that Sue was adorable too. We all got an extra good laugh out of it. At this point, we were near the small lake. As we cleared the trees at its shore, the houks started calling out in what appeared to be a slightly agitated manner. Mav said, "There are some tyrannosaurs feeding below us. I'll bring us around so you can get a better look." We all glanced over to the right and below us a ways. Just ahead of the wing of my hok, off to the right about a hundred yards, I could see a group of six tyrannosaurs. They were sitting near the partially consumed carcass of a kfakin (Mastodon) on the lake shore. I guessed that the kafkin tried to escape to the water, but didn't make it.

As Sue looked at the kafkin's remains with a somber look to her face, Sue said, "Poor thing!" Two of the tyrannosaurs were adults and four were small young ones. The young ones were only a few feet tall in their sitting position. Mav started turning his hok in a wide arc off to the left over the small lake. As the others began following behind his again, I said, "What is your word for tyrannosaurs." Til said, "We call them Pat-Meem. Which translated means "big bite." Sue said, "That seems appropriate." Mav's hok flew down to a lower altitude to just about twenty feet above the water. We were also about fifty feet from the tree line. As we approached the pat-meem, they looked over at us.

They were apparently too well fed and unconcerned about us to bother getting up. As we flew past them, they looked very much like scientists had envisioned them. Only in a sitting position. The houks made more alarmed calls as we flew by. The pat-meem's skin was mostly the color of an elephants. Though they had reddish patches around their eyes which tapered down to where their necks met their skulls. The adults had a slightly greenish stripe that was narrow down the sides of their necks. It widened out a little along their sides.

The young were covered in a dark gray down on their bodies which stopped at the bases of their skulls. Most of their upper legs were covered in down too. On all of them, not much of their teeth showed out of their mouths. As Sue passed them, she said in a sad, compassionate thought, "Poor kafkin." Til said, "At least it wasn't a young one. That would have been even sadder." I said, "It's a shame that animals need predators to keep the numbers of both in balance." Mav's houk started making a slow, wide turn and flapped some as it started to gain a little altitude. Our houks followed. As we did so, Zem said, "Sometimes even predators don't help. No doubt you have seen pictures of mouse or rabbit plagues that sometimes erupt in various places on earth." I said, "Yes I have." Sue said, "It's a shame that some animals behave like that. And as we talked about earlier, humans aren't much better." Bev then said, "But at least humans have the ability to learn a better way. Otherwise, we would have never brought them to planet Bev." I said, "Thanks to you and Zem, along with the help of Tal

113

and Sas, we have the best teachers we could ever hope for. As for myself and no doubt Sue, along probably with the rest of the humans on planet Bev, we would rather die than squander the gifts you have given us."

Sue said, "No doubt." I then said, "But I'm going to quit talking about it before I get all mushy." Zem said jokingly, "A little mushy is ok." We all laughed. Afterward, Sue said, "Now you've done it. Something tells me that when we get back, the hug monster is going to reemerge!" This made everybody laugh a bit more. Afterwards, Bev said, "I can't wait." Using what seemed to have become Sue's catch phrase made us all laugh a little. Having completed another circle, Mav's houk started heading toward the river at the far end of this smaller lake. Our houks started to catch up off to the left of Mav's houk. The water we were flying over was remarkably clean. When we flew over it earlier, there was only one small area near the middle that I couldn't see the bottom of. From this altitude, it looked even more inviting. Here and there, below the surface, I could see small shoals of various kinds of fish. No doubt there were larger ones here and there that were more solitary, but better camouflaged from above. I thought about the planktonic creatures the smaller fish here must feed on. As

well as the ones Sue and I saw on planet Bev.

I said, "Mav. I know that you didn't bring insects here. Just as Zem and Bev didn't bring any to planet Bev. But aren't some of the planktonic creatures that you brought here and the ones Zem and Bev brought to planet Bev insect like?" Mav said, "Some are. But we, just like Zem and Bev, avoided crustaceans or anything really insect like. Even so, no doubt one day insect like creatures will evolve from the various small creatures we have brought here and the ones Zem and Bev brought to planet Bev." We were approaching the river mouth at the far end of the small lake. Mav's houk started to circle to the right as Sue said, "I hope no nasty insects evolve here or planet Bev." Mav said, "They probably will. But that's life for you." As we continued to turn, Til looked back at Sue and I and said, "We don't usually bother with what may evolve. But if anything nasty begins to appear here, we can put an end to it." Bev looked back at Sue and I too and said, "By the time any nasty bugs begin to develop on planet Bev, humans there will be able to deal with them quite effectively too." Mav's houk finished its turn and headed up the river. The rest of our houks followed in roughly single file.

There were high trees on either side that towered above our altitude. Our houks all followed in single file. Mav said, "This part is going to get a little interesting." The gap in the forest caused by the river was on average a little over a hundred feet wide. Here and there, the river seemed to flow a little more rapidly and more rocks showed along the river bank. There were also some sand banks here and there. Sue said, "It looks beautiful." Til said, "Thank you. But a lot has been determined by mother nature." Looking at some of the trees, it impressed me how large some were. Though most appeared to be deciduous, the largest ones had to be half again as large as a Sequoia. Though they had large canopies. Here and there, the leaves of the trees had more fall like colors. But that was probably because of the alien planet that they originated from. The lower branches and leaves of most were within range of the ruka to feed on.

114

Looking in between the trees, I spotted a group of kaffins amongst patches of low brush. In other places on the forest floor, there were patches of lush green grass. It looked very pleasant.

In a couple spots, I saw small streams feeding into the river. If not for roving pat-meem, I saw many spots that would have been wonderful spots for a picnic. Even though I didn't see any actual pine trees, there seemed to be a hint of pine amongst the pleasant forest smells. Looking forward at Bev, I could see Lika sticking her head up and looking around at the trees. Looking on to Zem, Panny was doing the same thing. No doubt they were thinking of how much fun it would be to be climbing around in the trees. Sue must have seen them too. Because Sue said, "It looks like Panny and Lika find the trees



interesting.” Zem petted Panny and Bev petted Lika. Zem said, “You know how they are.” Bev added, “They just love trees.” Sue said, “From what I have seen, they seem to love everything. But I’m sure Panny must love you guys most of all. Seeing how long you have had him.” Zem gave Panny a little extra pet and said, “I’m sure he does.” Then Sue said, “You know how Erik and I feel. But Til and Mav, I’m afraid that you guys have become victims of our affection also.”

Til said with a sentimental tone to her thought, “Thank you. We like you too.” Following the course of the river, our houks started banking a little over to the left a little as Mav added, “We don’t mind being victimized in that manner.” Which caused us all to laugh a little. I said, “Zem and Bev, I hope that doesn’t make you jealous. Because for more reasons than I care to list right now, you two will always be extra special to Sue and I.” Sue added, “After all you’ve done for us, we couldn’t feel any differently.” Zem said, “Stop it. You’re going to make Bev and I blush.” We all chuckled a bit again.

## Chapter Six Over The Falls And Beyond

After about a minute of enjoying our amazing flight more, Mav said, “We’re coming up to some falls. Make sure you hold on tight when we go over.” Looking ahead about a couple hundred yards, I could see where the water disappeared over a ledge. There were cliffs beyond. Though the elevation of the terrain also looked lower past the falls. The houks also saw what was coming up and seemed to call out in a slightly excited manner. Mav had said that things were going to get a little interesting. Something told me that the ride was about to become especially interesting again. Which was confirmed by our Nal again levitating above our feet and holding them down to the backs of our houks. As we approached the falls, Sue said, “Something tells me this is going to be scary.” Mav said, “The drop off is going to be the worst of it. But it won’t be too bad.” I said, “You’re not telling a little lie again are you.” Because he was just about at the edge of the falls, Mav said quickly, “You’ll find out in a second.” His houk then plunged forward down over the waterfall.

Mav yelled out a verbal exclamation in what I took to be Reall language. He said, “Wahaaa!” Mav’s houk also gave out a call. Til went over next and yelled

115

out “leeyaaa!” Seemingly in response, Til’s houk also gave out a call. Zem soon followed and yelled out “Weheeee!” Zem’s houk also called out. Bev went over next and called out, “Yooo hooo!” Her houk called out too. I went over next. As my houk started nosing downward, I called out, “Woohaaa!” I could feel my mid section rising from the

negative G's caused by my houks abrupt downward plunge. Tal kept my feet kept my feet from rising off my houk's back. My houk also gave out a call. I could hear Sue yell out, "Aaaaa!" as her houk made the same maneuver. Sue's houk also gave out a call. The sight of everybody plunging down in front of me was amazing. The falls were about five hundred feet high. About fifty feet of which was a cloud of mist from where the waterfall hit a pool below. From which flowed the river. About three quarters of a mile down the gorge caused by the river, it widened and the river seemed to flow more slowly.

Almost like a cliché, just before the point where the river widened and slowed, there was a large tree and a couple other smaller ones that had somehow fallen over the gorge there. No doubt, we would be flying under them. But there would be no difficulty doing so because they were about three hundred feet above the water. Sue called out again, "Weee!" Then Sue said, "This is amazing!" Til said, "I knew you'd like it!" As Mav's houk started to turn out of its dive, Bev added, "It's fun every time!" Mav's houk started flying out above the river at a high rate of speed, Til's houk soon made the same maneuver. I could barely hear Til call out, "Wahaaa!" as it did so. The view was incredible to see the houks flying out in a different direction from my horizontal perspective. Zem was the next to make the turn. He called out, "Woo Hoo!" as he did so. At about the same time, Mav nosed his houk upwards a bit. I suppose it was to slow down. Bev was the next to make the turn. She called out, "Wee hee!" as she did so. A moment after Bev called out, Til's houk also nosed up like Mav's had. Though now Mav was again heading down toward the river at a shallow angle. My houk was next to make the turn. I called out, "Yah hoo!" as the G forces pressed me into the back of my houk. It was also a thrill to hear the wind ripping past the wings of my houk along with the splashing of the waterfall. I quickly glanced back and up at Sue. The two other houks were following hers downward above the fall of water. Sue had an expression on her face that anybody who had seen a rider on a roller coaster would recognize as she knew that she too was about to make the same turn. Even the two other houks following behind Sue's seemed to be enjoying themselves. Looking back forward, Zem's houk was starting to make its upward flight adjustment. As it did so, I could see Panny excitedly nestling below Zem's upper body and head. Panny was holding onto fur with her little hands. No doubt with his little feet also. It looked very cute. As I flew out over the river, I could hear Sue yell out, "Ahhh!" in an excited manner. This was all so much fun! It was doubtless going to be one of the many topics Sue and I would happily talk about with each other from time to time for the rest of our lives. A story that surely will never get old. Bev's houk started to make its upward turn as Zem's flew down a little toward the river again. His houk took about the same path as Mav and Til's had. Mav's houk started to level out again above the river. He was just about to the point

where the fallen trees were laying over the gorge. Apparently there were to be no more acrobatics. Because I could see San move from above Mav's feet to above his head. Bev's houk flew upward the same way the other's had. I glanced back at Sue with a big grin on my face. Sue was grinning from ear to ear. Sue said, "This is so much fun!" I said, "I know! I hope we get to do it again sometime!" My houk started upwards. The G forces again pressed me down into my houk's back. Though not as firmly as the turn out from the plunge had. While this was going on, answering the statement I made to Sue, Zem said, "I think that can be arranged." Sue said, "Oh goodie!"

The exuberance of Sue's statement made everybody chuckle. My houk reached the top of its turn. It started to turn downward a bit. I could feel the negative G's wanting to lift my body off my houk's back. I was again glad that Tal was holding my feet down. While this was going on, Til said, "It's always fun to have a first timer around." As Sue's houk started to make its upwards flight adjustment, Sue said, "I could probably do this a million times and feel about the same way!" While all this was happening, Bev said to Sue, "I know what you mean. I always do." Looking forward, Til and her houk were passing under the area of the fallen trees about thirty feet above the river. Pam had also risen from above Til's feet and resumed her normal position above her. As the rest of ours would no doubt do. The valley and river were going slightly off to the right. About a half mile past the fallen trees, it made a shallow turn back off to the left. Where it turned, the bank was mostly cliff on the right side. My houk was still making a shallow descent toward the river too. Following behind the others.

Of course, it wasn't long before Sue also reached the top of her upward turn. Sue said, "Oh boy!" as she too experienced the negative G's. Zem said to Sue, "You doing ok back there?" Sue said, "Just wonderful!" Bev said, "They are a bit more thrilling than the tasers, aren't they." Sue said, "The flight is definitely more fun. But the tasers were marvelous too." I said, "It's also a wonderful day for flying." Zem said, "That's why we chose to come to this particular location." I said, "I'm guessing you have the ability to alter the weather anyway. Why don't you just do that." Zem said, "Why bother with the weather when you can just change location. Besides, as you remember, it rained some on planet Bev. I'm sure you enjoyed it as much as Bev and I." I said, "With Mim and Pim to keep the rain off of us, it was nice." Sue said, "The plants could have probably used the rain anyway." I turned back at Sue with a big grin on my face. Sue's houk was starting to fly level above the river as Sue grinned back at me. I said, "The rain would have been better for them than lava."

Remembering what I had said about lava before, Zem, Bev and Sue chuckled. Which I quickly joined in on. Til said, "What was that all about." Bev said, "Zem brought up the weather to Sue and Erik back on planet Bev. Erik said he could have been walking through lava and

think he was in heaven.” Mav said, “It sounds like you were enjoying yourselves.” Sue said, “Oh, we were!” I looked back at Sue with a big grin on my face. Sue was beaming a big grin back at me. I said, “I love you darling.” Sue said, “I love you too darling.” Then I turned back forward. Following the river, Mav’s houk started making a slow turn off to the left up ahead. As more of the area beyond came into his view, Mav said, “We have

117

some Bartok up ahead.” Bev said, “Far out.” This caused us all to chuckle a bit. It was funny hearing Bev use such common term. Even if it was used a little less commonly on earth these days. Til’s houk was into its turn as Mav said, “It appears that they want us to land.” Sue said, “What are bartok.” Zem said, “On earth, they are known as Gigantopithecus. Or what you would call Bigfoot.”

I turned to look at Sue for a moment. We both had open mouthed, surprised and delighted looks on our faces. Then I looked back forward as Sue and I beamed grins. Zem’s houk started making the turn, Sue said, “I can’t wait to see them! But as far as bigfoots go, I never really thought they existed.” Bev’s houk started to make the turn as Zem said, “You learn something new every day.” Sue said, “With you guys, that’s an understatement!” This caused us all to laugh a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on. My houk started to make the turn as Bev said, “I suppose it’s like UFO’s. It’s hard to believe unless you see one for yourselves.” Sue said, “Oh, I believe in UFO’s!” This made everybody laugh. I turned back to Sue for a moment so we could share each other’s laughter. Sue was so funny at times. I turned back around as my houk continued making a turn off toward the left. As it did so, more of the river valley beyond came into view. About five miles farther down, I could see a little hint of the large lake. About a half mile up, I could see a group of eight creatures kneeling down on a gravelly riverbank off to the right side of the river. All had their heads lowered to the ground. About fifty feet nearer us on the left side of the river there was a wider portion of riverbank where there was more sand. At the farthest end of this wider area there stood a Bartok-bigfoot. Which I took to be their leader. It appeared to be a male, had to be at least ten foot tall and appeared to be massively muscled. The hair on its head was kind of long. It had shorter hair on the rest of its body. Though there was less on its face and chest. The creature had both arms raised above its head and it was holding a long wooden shaft of a weapon. It was about twelve foot long and on one end there was a shiny metal spear point like stainless steel. The spear point was about a foot long. On the other end, a sharp sword like point came out at a right angle that was about two foot long. It reminded me a little of the weapon my Pentas creature used back on the Pol-Wim. Except this was proportionally longer. And on the other side of the blade was attached a fairly broad ax head. It only came out about

five inches. Probably so it wouldn't get in the way if the creature decided to throw this weapon with the blade end up.

I doubted very much if these creatures made such a weapon. It was probably something Mav and Til gave them for protection. As this scene came into Sue's view also, Sue said, "Oh wow!" Mav said, "They won't do anything. But at first, out of politeness, you shouldn't grin at them. It doesn't mean the same thing to their kind." All of our houks started to fly in that direction. Soon, Mav's houk started to go in for a landing. As it did so, the bartok with the weapon dropped down to its knees. Throwing its weapon to the ground in front of it, it also lowered its face to the ground. No doubt these creatures considered the Reall to be gods. Which for all practical purposes, they were as far as I was concerned. Mav's houk started flapping its wings a little and effortlessly landed. First landing a bit more on its hind legs before bringing its front legs down too. It came to a

118

stop about ten feet from the bartok. Mav sat up on his knees and sat back on his calves. He then smiled back at Til's as her houk landed also. I thought about asking somebody something about these bartok. But right now, getting ready to land with my houk held more of my interest. Til sat up on her knees like Mav and smiled at him. Then Til looked over at the bartok across the river for a few moments as Zem's houk landed.

Bev's houk started to go in for a landing next. Zem sat up on his knees like the others. He briefly smiled at Til and Mav. Panny also sat up on his haunches and looked around. Though the bartok were holding most of his interest. Then Zem turned to watch Bev land with a smile on his face. Til and Mav did the same as Bev's houk landed. Bev also sat up and petted Lika as she turned to smile at me as I landed. This process basically repeated itself when Sue landed. Being an interesting sight, we all watched the other two houks land also. The pregnant female didn't appear to have any problems doing so. Mav's houk lowered its body to the ground. The rest of ours did too. Even though there was nobody riding them, the other male and pregnant female did too. As we all stood up, Sue said verbally in a slightly louder than normal voice, "What do they want." Sue's question caused a murmur of reverence to come from the bartok leader. I could also hear similar murmurings coming from the other bartok across the river. As Mav walked to the back of his houk, with San following, he answered Sue verbally and said with the same kind of smile we were all wearing, "I would prefer to let the leader tell us."

Til, Zem and Bev also started walking to the backs of their houks. Panny accompanied Zem and Lika accompanied Bev. As Sue and I walked to the backs of our houks, I turned a little and said verbally to Bev, "I'm surprised to see that Mav and Til brought these kinds of creatures here. Why didn't you bring them to planet Bev." Mav

jumped off the back of his houk and started walking back toward Til. Bev said, "Actually, we brought them from planet Bev." Til jumped off the back of her houk and headed toward Mav. As Til did so, Bev said, "But when we decided to bring humans there, Mav and Til let us transplant them here." Zem was walking toward Bev at this point. Panny and Lika scampered ahead and greeted each other with a little excitement. At the same time, Bev headed toward Zem. I jumped a little off the back side of my houk as Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss. As I walked toward Sue, Zem and Bev gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue also hopped a little off the back of her houk and walked toward me.

Mav and Til stood facing us with an arm around each other's lower backs. Zem and Bev did the same. When Sue and I came together, we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed toward the others. Mav and Til took each other's hand and headed toward the bartok leader. Zem and Bev followed them. Sue and I followed Zem and Bev. Mav and Til released each other when they got to the front of Mav's houk. Til petted Mav's houk's head as Mav continued up to the bartok leader. The bartok leader briefly looked at Mav and quickly lowered its face to the ground again. Then bartok spoke to Mav in his bent over position. He said in a deep, baritone voice, "Gutta Mav! Deg Reall gutta!" Hearing this, Sue and I

119

looked at each other with surprised looks as we walked. Mav stopped about six feet from the leader. The leader then raised its upper body and head as he put the palm of his hand to its chest and said in a deep voice, "Laga." Mav gave him a nod. Then the bartok said something else in what I took to be their language. It briefly looked at us as Zem and Bev stopped next to Til.

Bev put her hand on Til's shoulder. They briefly smiled at each other before returning their attention back to the bartok leader. Panny and Lika went a little closer to the leader and sat next to each other. The bartok leader then looked at the other group of bartok and pointed at them. Then the bartok said a few more words in what seemed to be a very basic language. He stopped pointing over at the other bartok and lowered its head again. Though not as low as before. Sue and I walked up to the others and briefly smiled at each other. Mav said something to the bartok in its own language. The bartok lifted up its upper body and turned toward the other bartok. Then the bartok called out in a big, deep voice some sort of command. The bartok across the river started to stand up as Sue said to Zem, "What do they want." Zem said, "Apparently, one of them has a broken arm. They humbly request that Mav fix it." Some of the other houks got up and started heading toward the river. Probably to get another drink. Til took her hand off Mav's houk's head to allow it to join the others as.

Mav said something to the bartok and looked over to the group of bartok.

The other bartok were making their way across the river with their faces lowered in what must have been a show of reverence. The male near us raised its upper body and head again and said something else in its language. Along with the words, "Gutta Mav," I took the rest to be an expression of thanks. Then it lowered its upper body and face a little. Looking at the group of bartok wading across the river, there were two other large males and one smaller one only about eight feet tall. Which was the height of the three adult females. There was a smaller female about five foot tall that was holding one arm with the other. One of the other females was holding a toddler in one arm. The two large males and one of the females were carrying weapons similar to the one the male near us had. The smaller male and the other two females carried similar weapons that were crudely fashioned. They used stone attached with leather strips. As they crossed the river, Sue said to Til, "That they exist is one thing. That they have a language is incredible." Til gave Sue a slight smile and said, "Their language isn't very sophisticated. But it gets the job done."

Mav had also turned to look at Sue with a slight smile on his face. As the bartok continued wading across the river, I took on a more somber look and said to Mav, "I hear these beings originated from Asia. Did tigers ever try to kill them?" Given the unpleasant nature of the question, everybody else took on more somber expressions. Mav said, "Young or injured ones sometimes. But these are powerful creatures. Even though they are naturally peaceful, they were more likely to attack and kill a tiger if they came across one. It isn't like a Puma attacking a human. These creatures would most likely win even a bare handed a fight with a tiger. Unless they were successfully ambushed. Even then, they might rip a tigers jaw off or something before they died. Neither are they like a wild boar. These creatures hands are powerful weapons. So tigers

120

avoided these creatures." Sue said, "It's interesting to see another bipedal humanoid species." Mav turned his smile to Sue as she spoke.

Then Mav said, "Interestingly enough, being bipedal and gaining the ability to throw overhand like a pitcher helped humans survive and evolve the way they did. Which these creatures can do also. Though they still evolved differently. But could you imagine a tiger or about anything else surviving having a soccer ball sized rock whipped at them? Or being whacked with a hefty club that was about eight inches in diameter?" I looked briefly at the big bartok male near us. Then I looked over at the bartok nearing us. Taking in the sight of their massive muscular arms and the equally muscular bodies they were attached to. I have heard how strong a Chimpanzee can be. The size of a chimps arms in comparison to its body was nothing like these

bartok. I could only imagine how strong they must be. There was no doubt in my mind that, in a bare handed fight, one of these big bartok males could have easily defeated even the impressive tavor creature Panny played in the virtual reality game.

I looked at Mav and said, "I see what you mean." Zem looked over at me and said, "It was humans ability to out think them along with your species aggressive nature that caused these creatures real problems." Sue and I looked at each other with slightly shamed, saddened expressions. We both then lowered our faces a little in shame. The bartok started getting into shallower water on our side of the river and were nearing us. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all noticed how Sue and I were feeling. A look of compassion came over all their faces as Zem put a hand on my shoulder. Sue and then I looked over at Zem with shame written on our faces. Zem said, "All creatures do what they feel they must to survive. You shouldn't be bothered by how your species evolved. All you need to be concerned with is how it progresses." This made Sue and I feel a little better as slight smiles came over our faces. Though there was still a little guilt written there. The group of bartok began to emerge from the river. The houks standing at the river bank were unconcerned. Probably because the bartok never bothered them.

They came over to about ten feet behind their leader, tossed their weapons to the ground and quickly lowered themselves to the ground. I couldn't help but notice that a couple of the females had very nice breasts. For Sasquatch. Mav briefly looked at the leader and said, "Hof Laga." Then Mav looked at the other bartok and said, "Hof bartok." The leader raised its upper body and looked at Mav with an expression of reverence on its face. The other bartok also raised their faces to look as Mav turned to us and pointed at Zem and said, "Zem." Then he quickly pointed at Bev and added, "Bev." Even though these bartok weren't quite human, the look of surprise and awe on their faces was clear enough to see. They all threw themselves flat on the ground. Except for the injured small female. Who only bent over more. The leader, along with the other bartok, all began voicing various exclaimed words of reverence. These words consisted mainly of "Deg gutta Zem. Deg gutta Bev!" Sue and I smiled at Bev and Zem as Mav turned back to the bartok. Sue said, "They appear to have heard of you." Bev and Zem and Til smiled at Sue. Bev said, "No doubt their elders passed on stories of us."

121

Mav bent over a little and firmly patted the bartok leader on the back of his shoulder. As he did so, he said, "Otal Laga." Mav then looked at the others and said, "Otal. Otal." All of the bartok again sat up on their knees. Though they remained bent over slightly. Mav looked at Bev and said with a smile, "Would you care to do the honors?" Bev's



smile widened a bit as she looked over at Til. Bev said, "They're your bartok now. Why don't you do the honors." Smiling too, Til said to Bev, "Sure." Til walked over to the small female who was holding her arm. Pam went with her, but didn't follow too closely. Then Til knelt in front of the young, injured female bartok. Til took her by the shoulders and raised her upper body up. The young female looked at Til's smiling face briefly as Til caressed her cheek. Though the young female seemed to be in a little pain, she smiled back at Til.

These creatures had faces that were something of a cross between Gorilla and a human. They had slightly dark brown pupils and noses that somewhat resembled a nigger's. Their lips were also more human like than gorilla. Though not nearly as ridiculously massive as some nigger lips are in proportion to their faces. As Til caressed her cheek, the small bartok female closed her eyes and seemed to go into a trance. One or another of the bartok would glance over at Til with reverence before lowering their faces again. Til moved the young female's hand from her injured arm and examined the injury. I could tell that her forearm was swollen. Til began to rub her hand over it. The swelling started to go down and her forearm appeared to straighten out a little. Seeing this brought a smile to Sue's face and mine. I glanced over at Bev and Zem. They were smiling too. Til caressed the young female's cheek again and her eyes opened. The young female felt her arm and a smile came across her face. She started making subdued but happy sounds. The other bartok looked over and alternated between looking at them and bowing. As they did so, they voiced what I took to be thanks. I could recognize the words, "Til" and "Mav" when they came up.

Then I had an idea come to mind. I looked over to Panny and Lika and said, "Panny, Lika." They both happily looked at me. I then pointed over to the now healed young female Til was attending to and pointed to her. I said "Go." Bev, Zem, Mav and Sue all gave me big smiles as Panny and Lika, understanding what I was getting at, scampered over to her. Til gave me a brief smile too before returning her attention to the young female and the other bartok. The young female looked at Panny and Lika approach as happiness came across her face. Bev said, "That was sweet." Panny and Lika jumped on the young female. The young female sort of giggled and started petting them as Zem said to me with a smile, "I think you're about to make some new friends." What Zem said made Sue and I grin. But Sue and I remembered that we shouldn't grin. Sue and I looked at each other with slightly surprised looks as we covered our mouths with one of our hands. We then lowered our hands with wide smiles on our faces and hugged each other. Being careful not to show excitement, in case the bartok got excited too. Neither Sue nor I would want to give our Reall or Nal friends reason to subdue any excitement such large and powerful creatures displayed.

While all this was going on, the young toddler that was with the one female

wiggled itself free from its mother's grasp. The mother said some words to it, but let it scamper off to join the young female, Panny and Lika. At the same time, some of the other bartok were shooting appreciative glances at us all. Til petted the toddler. It briefly shot Til a happy look before going back to enjoy Panny and Lika. While Sue and I hugged, Til stood up and went over to Mav. Til went up to Mav and put a hand on his far shoulder. While Til did this, Sue said in a subdued voice, "This is all so wonderful!" I said in the same way, "And incredible!" Bev said to Sue, "Let's go check out the others." Mav and Til smiled at us. Sue seemed to be trying to suppress a grin as she looked at Bev with a happy face and nodded her head quickly. As Sue did so, Sue said with her lips pursed together, "Um hum!" This made Bev, Zem, Mav and Til laugh a little. Sue and I suppressed our urge to join in on the laughter. Til said as she walked over to us, "It's ok. They understand laughter." Bev, Til and Sue made their way over to the others. Mim, Pam and Sas went with them.

Bev said to Til and Sue as they headed toward the others, "I suppose we should make sure their teeth and everything else are ok." Mav said, "I'll help." Then Mav smiled at Zem and said, "Would you and Erik take care of Laga?" Zem said, "Sure." Mav headed for the other bartok as Zem and I, along with Pim and Tal, went over to Laga. Zem said, "Otal Laga" and gestured for the leader to stand up. Which it did. Mav gestured to the other bartok and said, "Otal bartok. Otal." They stood up also. Sue held onto Til's arm. Probably for reassurance. The size of these creatures was quite intimidating. As the others checked out the bartok, Til and Sue exchanged some comments about how impressive the bartok were. Zem said something to the leader. He lowered his face and opened his mouth. Then Zem looked around a bit as I looked at its teeth too. Laga didn't have very large canines. But I sure wouldn't want to be bitten by him. Zem slapped the leader firmly on the shoulder a few times and said, "Ub Laga." The leader stood erect.

Then Zem stepped forward, reached up and forcefully slapped the leader a few times on one of his its pectoral muscles. Zem then said in a raised, deeper voice, "Laga guah!" Laga stood even more erect and looked forward as he puffed himself up a little. Which showed off more of its powerful muscle structure. As Zem stepped back and smiled, I could see pride beaming from Laga's face as he half growled in a deep booming voice, "Ak gutta Zem!" Being impressed by this mass of solid muscle, I said to Zem, "How much does he weigh." Zem smiled at me and said, "In your weight measurements, probably close to eighteen hundred pounds." While all this was going on, Mav, Til, Bev and Sue continued checking over the other bartok. Apparently, they did find a few bad teeth among the bartok. Which Mav and Bev fixed after placing a finger on the bad tooth for a few moments. At about the

same time, they also either talked to each other or spoke simple words to the bartok. Responding to what Zem said, I said with a surprised look on my face, "Wow!" The young female and the younger one ran up to the leader. Making happy sounds as they did so. The leader looked at the young female with a happy face and examined her arm. She was petting Panny with her other arm as Panny had taken a position on her shoulder. Lika was around the toddler's neck. It petted Lika with one

123

hand and held on to the young female with its free arm. They all seemed to be very happy. The leader said something to the toddler, I suppose as gently as it could. Then the young one let go of the young female and petted Lika gently with both hands. It made a word and nodded as the young female also gave the youngster a quick glance. The leader petted Lika a little. Then the two youngsters ran back over to the others. The adults they ran too also greeted them excitedly. They examined both the young female's arm and Panny and Lika. Who seemed to enjoy the attention. Sue was examining one of the adult male's hands with wonder. The male seemed to show a little pride by the attention. As this was going on, Zem said something to the leader and pointed at the crude weapons that were laying on the ground. The leader turned to look at them also.

Zem then said some more words and pointed to a spot on the ground near us. The leader went and picked up the weapons and laid them on the ground where Zem indicated. The others looked at Zem and the leader. Mav, Til, Bev and Sue smiled at them. Zem gestured for the leader to come back over to him. The leader went to stand where it had been. Zem looked at Pim and apparently thought something to him. Pim came down and started to pass about a foot above the crude weapons. Underneath Pim, the weapons transformed into wooden and metal weapons like the others. Except these were newer and shinier. As Pim did so, the adult bartok all stepped back from us a little and threw themselves flat on the ground. Though the children did so while they gently held Panny and Lika. The adults all spoke words of reverence and worship like they had before. I looked at Zem and said, "I figured that you probably made these weapons for them."

As Bev, Til and then Sue stepped over to raise the bartok out of their state of worship with gentle reassurance, Zem said, "We couldn't leave them to deal predators undefended. With these weapons, even the pat-meem don't mess with the bartok." I smiled at Zem and went over to pick one of the weapons up. The shafts were about five inches in diameter. These weapons were also quite heavy. They must have weighed about thirty five to forty pounds. I brought the one I was holding over to Zem in a vertical position. Zem and I smiled at each other as I handed it to him. Zem stood it on its end and said, "Thanks." Then Zem looked at the leader and said, "Laga. Otal."

Then Zem gestured for the leader to stand up. Mav started heading for the weapons as Zem handed his to the leader. Zem said, "Em Laga." The leader took it very humbly as he said with bartok reverence, "Ak gutta Zem! Ak gutta Zem!" At the same time, Laga bent over a little a few times. Even this slight movement showed off more of his muscles.

Mav picked up one of the other weapons and brought it over to who seemed to be the next senior male bartok. Getting the same kind of response that Zem got when he gave it to him. Figuring that the older Reall weapons were going to be "hand me downs," I went to pick up the leader's old weapon as Til went to the other new weapon. Then Til picked it up and went over to the other adult male as I headed toward Sue. Sue and I smiled at each other as I approached. Til handed her weapon to an adult male. Getting the same kind of response as

124

Zem and Mav got too. I walked over to Sue with the leaders old weapon. Bev stepped over toward Til. Sue and I both smiled at each other as I approached her. Bev said to Til, "He really likes his gift." At the same time I said to Sue, "Dearest sweet love." While I said this, Til said to Bev, "They always do." At the same time, Mav watched a couple of the bartok admire the new weapon he had handed to one. Sue gave me a loving smile. I looked at Sue in the same way. I said to Sue, "Let's give this to the lead female together." Sue said, "Sure darling."

Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. We then stepped over near the lead female. I stood the weapon on end as both Sue and I held onto the shaft of the spear. The female smiled at Sue and I like we were smiling at her. I put my hand on my chest and said, "Erik." Sue turned her smile to me as I did this, then smiled back at the female. Then Sue took her hand off the spear and placed it on her chest. Sue then said, "Sue." Everybody was smiling at Sue and I at this point. Even the bartok leader turned to watch. Sue raised her hand off her chest and placed it on my shoulder. Then Sue said, "Erik." Sue then placed that hand on the female's chest and waited for a response. Which wasn't long in coming. The female said, "Weem." Apparently she got the message and that was her name. Sue and I quickly smiled at each other and then turned our smile back to the female. Then Sue put her hand back on the weapon. Remembering what Zem said to the leader when he handed the lead female her weapon, Sue said, "Em Weem."

Both Sue and I raised the weapon toward the bartok female a little. The bartok female took it with reverence and said, "Ak gutta Sue. Ak gutta Erik. Ak gutta Sue. Ak gutta Erik." The female bent forward a little each time she spoke. Sue and I smiled at her and caressed each of her arms a little with one of our hands. As Sue and I caressed Weem's arms, Mav instructed the other bartok without weapons to pick up what were the hand me down, Reall made weapons. Then Mav

started to go over to Zem and the leader. Referring to the thanks Sue and I received from Weem, Sue smiled at Til and Bev and said, "I hate to take credit for something I had nothing to do with." I smiled at them too. Bev and Til smiled back at Sue and I as Bev said, "That's ok." Sue said, "I have an idea for something Sas could make that could be in part from me." Bev said, "What's that." Sue said, "A comb." Til said, "I can help." Til held out the palm of her hand and looked at it with a bit of concentration on her face. A fairly large comb materialized in her hand. It had more coarse teeth on one side and finer teeth on the other.

The bartok who saw this dropped to their knees. Then the other's followed. Except for the toddler and leader. The leader bowed toward Til. Mav said to Zem as he patted the leader on the arm, "It's such a temptation to spoil them." Zem said, "I know. It makes it all the harder to let bad things happen to them." While all of this was going on, all of the bartok again stated words of reverence. Then Til handed the comb to Sue and said, "Here ya go." Sue took it and said, "Thank you." A couple more combs materialized below Sas. As Sas came down to Til and Bev with the combs, Sue called over the little girl. I smiled at Sue and said, "I'm going to go talk to Zem and Mav." As the little bartok female

125

approached Sue, Sue said to me, "Ok sweetie." We gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Then I went over to Zem, Mav and the leader. While I did so, the little female had come up to Sue with Panny in her arms. Sue ran the comb through her own hair to show what it was for as the little female and the others nearby observed.

I walked up to Zem, Mav and the leader. As I got close to them, I said to Zem, "Why didn't you just leave these bartok on planet Bev." Sue at this point was combing the little bartok female's hair.

Demonstrating how to start from the bottom. Bev and Til were doing the same with a couple of the other females. Though the females had to bend over a little to let Bev and Til do so. As all this was going on, I continued saying to Zem, "The people there would have left them alone if you told them to." Zem said, "Despite such a request, that might not have always been the case. Especially if the bartok initiated the contact. Also, you are probably well aware of the envy niggers have for white people. Just on the basis of looks alone, look at how many nigger females straighten out their hair. Along with the other things they and other non-whites do to look White. There was even that famous nigger entertainer who had himself surgically altered to look White. Even though they are less closely related than niggers are to Whites, I wanted to remove them from any such envy."

While all this was going on, when I first went over to Zem, Mav and the leader. Sue said to Bev and Til, "Their hair isn't too bad." Bev said, "You would think that it would be a lot more coarse for how large

they are.” Sue then said, “I have heard people describe the smell of these beings as being pretty bad. They don’t smell great. But I don’t think they smell that bad.” Til said, “Part of that depended on where they lived on earth or planet Bev. Also, the feeling of these creatures used to be that the worse their body odor, the more impressive they were. But seeing how it’s best for them to live in groups here, we instructed them on the importance of bathing.” Sue said to Bev and Til, “Erik and I discussed a famous letter that was sent by Napoleon to Josephine.” Both Bev and Til grinned. They probably already knew what Sue was going to say. Continuing on, Sue said, “He apparently told Josephine that he was going to return in a couple weeks and that he didn’t want Josephine to bathe.” Bev and Til giggled. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Til said, “I usually like it when Mav’s exercise makes him a little gamy.” They all giggled again.

As this part of the girls’ conversation was going on, Mav stepped over to me as Zem finished speaking to me. Then Mav put a hand on my shoulder and said with a slight smile, “I don’t want you to take this the wrong way. But even though humans on planet Bev are vastly more moral than humans out in the wilderness of what they call civilization back on earth, throughout the centuries, these creatures have suffered enough by having humans around.” I smiled at Mav and said, “And yet you like us.” Mav grinned at me and said, “There are much less honorable beings in the universe. Your people’s main problem is that they have allowed themselves to become enslaved by those seeking to maintain the status quo. And the kind of politically correct filth promoted by the Jew media. Which could happen to any beings at your level of development.” I smiled at Mav with an appreciative look. Then I said, “I don’t want you to think I’m going all “funny.”

126

But prepare to be hugged!” With Bev, Til and Sue having overheard this, they all laughed as I gave Mav a heartfelt hug.

Mav cut his laughter short and patted me on the back. Sue turned back to Til and Bev. As Sue put the comb in the hand of the small female, Sue said, “That reminds me. I better give you guys hugs before the hug monster returns.” We all chuckled as Mav and I let go of each other. We all joyfully observed as Sue gave Bev a big kiss on the cheek and a hug. And like Sue promised earlier, others were to receive the same. Sue then did the same to Til. The bartok must have been becoming accustomed to seeing us grin. Because the bartok looked at each other as they saw what was happening. They all started bearing their teeth at each other. Seeing that for us, it was a good thing. It may only have been because they were copying us, but some of the other bartok also hugged each other. Some of the ones who did so also kissed each other on the cheek. Sue then scampered a little over to Mav and did the same with him. After they hugged for a couple moments, I said to Mav in a kidding around voice,

"Just remember whose girl she is." Which caused us all to laugh. Then Mav and Sue parted enough to share in the laughter.

The bartok, even though they probably didn't really understand the cause of our levity, laughed themselves. Though it wasn't quite like human and Reall laughter. (As I mentioned in the first book, Reall laughter wasn't much different from human laughter. The difference is so slight, it is barely worth mentioning) Responding to what I said, Sue smiled at me and said, "Don't be silly." Sue then gave me a quick peck on the lips. Sue then looked at Zem and said, "You're next!" This caused Zem's grin to widen a bit. Sue then quickly stepped over to him and gave him a kiss on the cheek and a hug. Bev said in a kidding around voice, "Don't forget whose fella he is." This caused even more laughter. (None of us of course were really jealous when any of us said this. It had just become something fun to say) Our laughter also caused the bartok to laugh more. They also exchanged words in their language that was no doubt appropriate to the situation. Both the children were near Bev and Til at this point. Bev and Til petted Panny, Lika and the children who held them as they smiled at us. Sue came over to me and we put an arm around each other's lower backs and gave each other a happy hug from the side.

Bev and Til went back to instructing the females on the use of a comb. Sue smiled at Mav and said, "Instructing these beings to bathe is one thing. But how did you get them to live in groups and act cooperatively." Mav said, "Without humans around, there is no danger in them living in groups. But as you say, they did seem to adapt a preference for being solitary." Bev and Til started to come over to us. The female bartok were happily involved in the act of combing hair and making happy bartok conversation. Some also showed fixed teeth to those they hadn't already done so to. Zem said, "But they're smart enough to make that easy enough to fix. Especially here." Bev reached Zem and Til reached Mav. They all put an arm around their partner's lower backs. Having all of us near him caused the leader to drop to his knees, lay his weapon aside and bow. The other bartok did the same. Except for the toddler. Though he fairly quickly joined the others as he continued to pet Lika. Being reunited with our

127

partners, we were all smiling of course as Zem said to Mav, "Do you think these bartok could use a refresher course?" Mav said, "It couldn't hurt to remind them."

Then Mav looked at the leader and thought to him. The leader bowed more deeply. Then he raised up a little and turned to give some commands to the others. I understood "Gutta Mav" in what he said. Then the leader raised himself up on his knees to look at Mav. The other bartok did the same. Mav then apparently thought to San. San transformed himself into a screen about five feet high and seven feet

long. Then Mav looked at the bartok and said verbally, "Bartok. Fi." Then Mav pointed at the San screen. All of the bartok looked at it. The rest of us did too. Mav lowered his hand as a video started to show on the screen. It showed a group of bartok chasing a pat-meem with their weapons at the ready. It was clear that the pat-meem was doing all it could to get away. Some of the weapons were Reall made and some not. The sound San created was very lifelike. After a few moments, Mav then waved his hand at the screen. Probably to help the bartok understand his involvement in what was being showed. The screen then showed two bartok males having a vicious bare handed fight.

After a few more moments, Mav waved his hand again and it showed a group of bartok walking away from each other in different directions. Some in pairs. They too carried a combination of Reall made weapons and ones the bartok tried to replicate with stone. A few moments later, Mav waved his hand again. The video showed a bartok being chomped in the jaws of a pat-meem. There was a Reall made spear imbedded at an angle in the pat-meem's lower jaw. But that didn't appear to slow it down much. There was another bartok writhing in agony under one of the pat-meem's feet. It gave out blood curdling screams as it did so. A few moments later, Mav waved his hand again and the picture went black. San turned back into his normal shape and red color. Then Mav and Til released each other. Mav turned to the bartok as we all looked at them with solemn looks. Mav said, "Bartok." Then Mav brought his hands up and hooked his fingers together. As Mav pulled on them a little to demonstrate that they were hooked, Mav added, "Seech, guah. Fucose?" The bartok all quickly threw themselves flat to the ground. At the same time, they all made varied utterances of reverence.

A few moments later, Mav looked at the leader and said, "Laga. Otal." Lega started to get up. He picked up his weapon and stood it on its end. Then Lega stood up too. Mav looked at the others and said, "Otal. Otal" as he gestured for them to stand. The others started to get up too. They picked up their weapons and stood them on their ends. Then they stood too. Mav let go of Til and held out his hands like he was holding a couple vertical rods. Then Mav briefly took on a look of concentration. A couple smaller weapons materialized in his hands. One was only six feet long and the other was about four feet long. The longer one looked real. But the smaller one didn't look quite real. Mav looked at the small female and said, "Kubt. Em heep." I took it Kubt was the small female's name. Kubt came over to Mav excitedly. The toddler came with her. Mav handed Kubt the small but real weapon. She looked excited as she sat Panny

128

down. Then she made happy sounds as she took it and examined it. Mav then held up the tip of the smaller weapon to the leader and bent



over the spear point with his finger. Obviously it was made out of some sort of rubber with a chrome looking surface. Mav said to Lega as the rest of us smiled, "Hult."

Lega and the other adult bartok nodded understandingly. Then Mav handed the toy to the toddler. The toddler let Lika jump from its arms. He had such an excited look on his face as he took it. Then he raised it above his head in both hands and started running around. Making happy yells as he did so. All of us, even the bartok, grinned at the toddler as he did so. Then the leader turned back to us and bowed. The leader said, "Ak gutta Mav." As Lega did so, Pam moved a little ways away. Pam then turned into the same sort of screen as San had. Then Til said to the leader, "Lega." Til then pointed at the Pam screen and said, "Fi." Lega and the other bartok looked at the Pam screen. A picture appeared on the screen that showed a number of camouflage patterned blankets around a campfire. It was near the shore of the large lake. There was a basket with a number of food items in it. Over the fire, there was a primitive spit with the gutted and skinned carcass of some sort of creature cooking on it. The carcass was about five feet long and two and a half feet wide. It was a pretty good hunk of meat. There was a Nal near it slowly turning the meat. Three or four hundred yards away in the distance was the lake house we came from.

It was probably only about six miles from our position. Not far for these bartok to go. Til then pointed down the river in that direction and said, "Kata." I took it this was the bartok word for food. The leader again fell to his knees and bowed. Though he continued to keep his weapon standing upright on its end. The others did the same. Even the little girl and toddler. Then the leader said, "Ak gutta Til. Ak gutta Til." He bowed up and down a little as he said it. The other bartok voiced similar thanks. Pam turned back into her normal shape and blue color. We all smiled at Til. Though there was a bit more pride in Mav's face as he said, "You're going to spoil them my love." Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Til said, "Maybe a little dearest. But you know they were going there anyway. And after the trouble we caused them, I thought it would be a nice thing to do also. Though we won't have anything to worry about until they start treating our places like holy places. Or trying more frequently to get us to intercede on their behalf in some matter or another." Mav said to Til, "You're still a softie." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Afterwards, Sue said to Til and Mav, "What trouble did you cause them." Til said, "It was our fault that the young female broke her arm. I saw it in her mind when I was healing her. She fell out of a tree when the Tenat showed up. They had never seen it before." I said in a joking around manner, "I nearly fell over myself." This made everybody laugh. As we did so, the bartok lean up a little and smiled at us. Afterwards, Til said, "Having seen the smaller ship that delivered us, they knew that we would be at the house and could heal her." I said, "It certainly is nice having Reall around." Zem, Bev, Mav

and Til smiled sentimentally at me as Sue nodded a few times in agreement. Sue then said, "Though we can't leave the Nal out of this." We all smiled up at them. They came together as couples and started circling around each other's surfaces at

129

differing angles. They all spoke telepathically. Mim said, "Thank you. You're so sweet." Sas said, "Thank you dear." Pim said, "Thank you." Tal said, "Thank you" too. San said, "You're such a dear." Pam said, "You're nice to have around too."

Then Mav looked at Laga and said, "Laga." As Laga and the others looked up at us, Mav said, "Si fon." The leader bowed again and said with the usual reverence in his voice, "Ak gutta Mav. Ak gutta Til. Ak gutta Zem. Ak gutta Bev. Ak gutta Erik. Ak gutta Sue. Ak gutta Reall. Ak gutta Nal." While the leader was saying this, the other bartok also reverently said the same sorts of things. Sue looked at Bev with a happy face. Knowing that in part it was probably Sue and I who the bartok were referring to as Reall. Sue said, "Being referred to as Reall is almost as good of a compliment as your saying that you were proud of us." Everybody grinned as Bev said, "Being with us, as far as they're concerned, I guess you're a Reall too." I said, "If only it were true." Til said, "It has its up and downs." Sue said, "I'm sure you're right. Everything probably does." Zem said, "Well, let's finish our flight." I said, "How do you say goodbye in bartok." Til said, "Just do what we do." Then Til looked at the leader and said, "Ubly Lega." Til then looked at the other bartok and said, "Ubly bartok." The rest of the bartok began to make various statements of goodbye and thanks in their language. They bowed a little with every name they spoke.

Then Zem and Bev turned and started heading for what would be our take off spot. The rest of us went with them as Panny and Lika excitedly scampered about near Zem and Bev. Our houks were standing around, enjoying each other's company. They started moving back toward their takeoff spots. Sue said, "That was quite an interesting little diversion." We all smiled at Sue. Til said, "I suppose it's a good thing that the young female broke her arm. Or you might not have seen them at all." Sue giggled a little and said, "I wouldn't call it a good thing. But I'm glad things worked out the way they did." Til said, "You know what I meant!" We all laughed a bit. Obviously, we all knew what Til meant. The bartok at this point had gotten up and spoke excitedly to each other as they stood in a group. Mav and Til stopped and kissed briefly as the rest of us continued to our takeoff spots. After parting, Mav said with a loving smile, "See you in the air sweetheart." Til smiled back and said, "You too darling." Til walked on a little as Mav's houk came up to him.

The houks seemed to know whose was whose. Mav patted his about the head. Which made it make its purring like sound. Til's houk came up to her. Til petted it about its head too. Sue said to Zem and Bev as

we walked on, "They seem to know who their riders are." Zem, Bev and I smiled at Sue as Bev said, "When you ride one, they become your friends." Sue grinned and said, "That's wonderful! Flappy is such a dear." We all chuckled. The name Sue had given hers was so cute. Zem and Bev stopped as Mav started walking toward the back of his houk. It lowered itself to the ground as he did so. San accompanied Mav of course. Sue and I continued walking. Zem petted his houk's muzzle as Til walked to the back of her now laying houk. Mav was walking up the back of his. As usual, it parted the upper portions of its wings a little. Then Zem said to Bev, "Happy landings sweetness." Bev was smiling too as she said, "It will be with

130

you there darling." Zem and Bev then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue and I smiled at each other as we continued toward our houks.

Til started walking up the back of her houk. Zem and Bev parted and Bev walked on with Lika near her. Panny stayed with Zem. Zem petted his houk about its head a little more. Then Zem's houk laid down also. Bev soon reached her houk and petted it about its head too. As Zem headed to the back of his houk, Mav and Til were sitting on theirs. When I reached my houk, Sue said with a grin, "Have fun hubby." I was grinning too as I said, "I will wifey." Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, we continued to grin as Sue walked on to Flappy and I petted my houk about its head. Sue looked up at Sas and said, "Flying is second nature to you. It sure makes me feel better having you along." Sas said verbally, "Flappy wouldn't let you fall anyway if she could help it. Though her claws could cause some injury if they grabbed you wrong." Sue started petting Flappy about her head. I knew what Sas meant. These houks had some pretty large, bird like claws. No doubt they could catch something with their feet. But if they weren't careful, they could easily shish kabob somebody.

After petting my houk, I started toward the back of it as it laid down. A few moments later, Sue started toward the back of hers as I was getting ready to step up onto mine. Bev and Lika were sitting on their houk and petting it. Zem and Panny were sitting on their houk. At this moment, Zem was petting Panny. Mav was looking at the bartok with a slight smile on his face. The bartok were beginning to make their way back across the river. Til was smiling at Sue and I. I stepped up onto the back of my houk. Smiling at Til, I thought, "I don't imagine the houk will have much trouble taking off from such a short runway." Everybody was smiling at me as Til said, "Not much. Just get ready for some acceleration." Sue and I both grinned at everybody as I sat down. Then we looked back over at the bartok crossing the river. The toddler was riding on its mother's shoulders and making stabbing motions in the air with its toy spear. As I sat down and petted my

houk, it flapped its unextended wings a little.

Then I turned to see how Sue was doing. Sue was just sitting down on hers. We grinned at each other as she did so. When Sue was seated, she looked at Flappy and petted her. I looked over to the others. Zem and Til were petting their houks. Bev was petting Lika and looking at the bartok crossing the river. Mav was looking back toward Sue and I with a smile. Mav said telepathically, "As Til said, it's going to be a fast take off. So be ready." Til, Zem and Bev smiled back at us too as Sue said telepathically with a grin on her face, "Ok." I said, "Ready when you are." All of the houks again stood on all fours. Mav laid down with his upper body propped up on his elbows and took hold of some fur. The rest of us did the same as our houks turned the rest of the way into the direction we would be taking off.

Panny and Lika again laid under the upper portion of Zem and Bev's upper bodies. Being in position, Mav said, "Here we go!" Mav's houk bolted off forward. Running and flapping its wings as it did so. The bartok stopped in the middle of the river and turned to watch as Mav's houk took off. The bartok waved as Mav's houk took to the air. Mav gave them a brief wave. Zem, Bev,

131

Sue and I waved at them also as Til's houk took off. Til gave them a bit of a wave as her houk became airborne. The rest of our houks took off in turn. When Flappy took off, Sue said "Weee!" Which made us all chuckle. As we all got into the air, our houks headed down the river as they gained altitude.

I said, "Til. I saw that you had a campfire made for them. Do the bartok normally use fire?" Til said, "They didn't on earth. Unless they found fire to use somewhere. But Bev and Zem showed them how to make it back on planet Bev. It was only a matter of time before they learned to make it for themselves." Sue said, "Do they hunt?" Til said, "They do sometimes. But don't normally." At this point, our houks had risen to just above the height of the tallest trees. I could see more of the large lake and the lake house off in the distance. It wouldn't be too long before we were back at the house. Til continued on, saying, "They usually confine themselves to catching fish in the river or eating various plants. They may also steal meat from some predator." Mav said, "Just like on planet Bev, every plant you see either grows food of some sort or is itself edible. The bartok don't lack for food."

Sue said, "Besides the pat-meem, what other kinds of predators do you have on this planet." As we leveled out about fifty feet above the trees, Mav said, "The other main predator we have here on land is called a Zutak. It's a very efficient killer. They weigh about three tons, are shaped something like a cave bear and have retractable claws like a cat. Though their heads are a little more wolf like with larger fangs. It is definitely too difficult of a meal for a pat-meem to go for. Even though the pat-meem would almost certainly win in a fight." Our

houks were flying more in the direction of the large open field as I said, "I'm glad that the bartok have the weapons they have." Mav said, "As I'm sure you noticed, so are they." Sue said, "I'm glad that you and Zem rescued them Bev." Bev said, "We were glad to do it." I said, "I feel sorry for the ones on earth that have to hide and move around at night. But I suppose they've had good reason to do everything possible to try to avoid detection by humans." Zem said, "As I said, humans had the edge when it came to conflict."

I said, "Part of that was probably humans knowing what they themselves were capable of. They had even more reason to fear if they thought the bartok were capable of the same sorts of things." Bev said, "But the bartok were in fact much more peaceful. They didn't evolve as hunters like humans did. Which as you can guess, contributed to their peaceful natures. But it also gave them less reason to evolve the kind of intelligence it takes to successfully organize and communicate successful hunting strategies." I said, "It's strange how minds can develop. I watched a show once where they trained a Chimpanzee to recognize the order of about ten numbers. They would briefly flash the numbers scrambled up on a screen and then make the numbers disappear. The chimps could press on the blanks where the numbers were in the correct order with no problem at all. Humans could only barely do it. If they could do it at all. Which most of the time they couldn't." The house was easy to see on the lakeshore. A little nearer to us, I could also see the campsite that Til had made for the bartok. The various groups of animals were also easy to see. Especially the forlix.

Mav said, "In gaining other abilities, the ability for humans to do what the

132

chimps do simply atrophied. Though I would guess that you would rather be what you are with a lesser ability in that regard than to be living like a chimp with that ability." Sue and I both chuckled. Then Sue said, "I much prefer us the way we are. But I think it would be even nicer to be the way you are. I am very happy that someday humans will evolve to be more like you are." Zem said, "It's going to be a long hard road though. But as you have seen some of, the rewards will be worth it." Our houks were at this point flying abreast of each other. I said, "It looks like we're heading out toward the field." Mav said, "I thought we would have some refreshments on a forlix and ride it back to the house." Sue said, "That sound's like fun!" Til said, "It should be quite pleasant." I said, "Just out of curiosity, when did you learn to speak bartok." Zem said, "I learned some of it a long time ago. But their language sense then has evolved somewhat. We send out Nal from time to time to look into their minds and keep us up to date on that and other things. We can learn any language almost immediately. No biological mind can store the

amount of information we know of. That's why we had to enhance our memories artificially. Otherwise, it could take hours to become good at it." Sue said, "It must be nice." Bev said, "It does have its advantages." By now, we were flying over the large grassy area. The forlix we had been feeding earlier had been led a considerable distance out into the field. Which given their size, it was no surprise that they could cover so much ground. Mav said, "I think we'll go to Grabby. At least he seemed to get to know Sue quite well." Remembering when the end of Grabby's trunk took hold of one of Sue's breasts, Zem, Bev, Til, Mav and I laughed. We all looked over at Sue.

Sue was smiling a little but blushing a lot. This caused Sue to lower her face to avert our gazes. As Sue did this, Sue said plaintively, "You guys!" It was so cute. But we couldn't help laughing a little more as we turned back forward. Even the Nal emitted some telepathic humor. Bev then said, "We're sorry for laughing dear. But it was a little funny." Til said, "Better you than me." This caused a little more laughter. Zem said to Sue, "Don't worry about it. Sometimes embarrassing things happen to good people." Being comforted, Sue smiled sweetly at Zem and said, "Thank you Zem. You're such a dear." Bev and Zem then smiled lovingly at each other. Bev said, "You certainly are darling." Zem said, "With no bartok around to corrupt, you just wait until we land." This caused everybody to grin. Then I said, "What about us." Everybody grinned at me. Zem said with a kidding around voice, "I'm afraid you're already corrupted." This made everybody laugh. All of us knowing of course what a totally wonderful "corruption" we shared with our spouses.

At this point, we had just about reached the group of forlix we were heading toward. About sixteen more Nal had arrived near the forlix. Each levitated a basket of food below them. Four of these Nal were giving our forlix treats. Which stopped their progress. The others had spread out and were giving out treats to the other groups of animals near them. One group were ruka and another group were kafkins. About a quarter mile away, one of the groups of animals receiving treats were those creatures that I had only seen from far away earlier. They were the ones that moved like they had four kangaroo legs.

133

Which, seeing them closer, they did have. These creatures bodies were about twenty five feet long and about twelve feet high. Their bodies had a fairly slim build. As for their fur, it was kind of long and a dark reddish brown color. The fur was shorter around their heads, lower legs and undersides. Unlike a kangaroo, these creatures only had thin tails. Their heads were shaped kind of like a tapir's. Except they had longer, prehensile snouts. Though they weren't nearly as long as a kafkin's. They also had some impressive upward curving tusks. Like a boar.

Sue looked at them too. Then Sue smiled at the others and said,

"Those creatures are interesting. What are they called." We all smiled at Sue. Til said, "They're called Balin." Mav then added, "They bounce too much to make them very much fun to ride. But they're exceptionally friendly creatures. We'll be landing in a minute. So get ready." Then Mav's hok made a banking turn near and around Grabby. The rest of our hoks followed. As we did so, Sue said, "I hope Grabby can take the weight of all of us." Mav said, "No need to worry. He can." Then Mav's hok flew in to land on the back of Grabby. The rest of ours followed his. Mav's hok landed on Grabby's back nearer to the front. Flapping its wings more before it touched down. After it did so, it didn't seem to even faze Grabby. Mav sat up as his hok turned sideways. He watched as the rest of us landed with a smile on his face. Each hok turned sideways after they landed. We all sat up as they did so. There was easily enough room on Grabby's back for all the hoks to land. After they did so, Grabby gave out a call. Probably from all of the added weight on it. But the treats it received from one of the Nal seemed to keep it well placated.

The hoks lowered themselves as Zem said, "Well that was a smooth landing." We all smiled at each other as we all stood up. Then we all walked to the backs of our hoks. San and Pam came together in between and above Mav and Til's hoks. They started circling around each other's surfaces at different angles. Pim and Mim did the same. As did Tal and Sas. While we walked to the backs of our hoks, I said to Bev verbally, "That was fun." Sue said in a slightly louder than normal voice, "Almost too much fun." Panny and Lika went ahead of Zem and Bev. Bev said, "I know. I could spend all day flying hoks." Til said, "At times, we have. Stopping here and there for breaks of course." As we stepped onto the back of the forlix, Panny and Lika playfully scampered off toward Grabby's head. When Mav and Til stepped off the backs of their hoks next to each other, Mav said to Til as they held each other in a loose embrace, "How was your flight honey." Til said with a loving look on her face, "You already make my heart soar darling." Mav got a loving look on his face as he said, "Oh my love!" Then Mav and Til started kissing each other passionately.

At the same time, Zem and Bev also stepped off the backs of their hoks next to each other. As they came together, Bev said with a loving smile on her face, "We've landed darling." Zem said lovingly with a loving smile on his face, "And I have something for you my love." Then Zem and Bev started kissing each other passionately too. I wasn't paying any attention at the time. But Zem also caressed and squeezed one of Bev's nicely rounded butt cheeks. At the same time as all this was going on, Sue and I stepped onto Grabby's back also. I

134

noticed that its body was surprisingly firm. As Sue and I came together, I said, "You know what I like about being apart from you

darling?" We were embracing at this point and smiling lovingly at each other. Sue said with a loving voice, "Coming back together darling?" I looked at Sue with a look of more solemn love. Sue looked at me in the same way as I said lovingly, "You know it my love." Then Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately too. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's.

Figuring that everybody else was probably similarly occupied, I took this opportunity to slide my hand down around one of Sue's wonderfully rounded butt cheeks. I caressed it with a little squeezing thrown in. Our kissing became more a little more passionate as Sue also brought a hand down over the quite ample curvature of one of my butt cheeks also. Though Sue only gave it a couple caresses and a slight squeeze before moving her hand again. I moved my hand also as we went to lovingly caressing each other. As usual, Sue's wonderful, soft loving lips were a dream. And holding my dear sweet love's body in my arms was as heavenly as ever. All of what Sue and I did caused me to become aroused. After about a minute, Sue parted her lips from mine and brought her head next to mine. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces. At the same time, we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together. As we did so, Sue said softly with passion in her voice, "Oh darling, we shouldn't start something we can't finish." I said softly with an emotional voice, "I love you so much my darling!"

Sue hugged me even harder. I also hugged Sue more firmly. Sue sounded like she was almost ready to cry as she said in a soft, emotional voice, "Tell me you'll be with me forever darling!" I released my grip from Sue a bit. Sue also released me a little. We parted enough to look into each other's faces. Both of which were wracked with loving emotion. I said, "Forever my dream." Tears started to roll down Sue's cheeks as I added, "You're my life darling." Sue threw herself into my arms as she said, "Oh Erik! My love!" Sue had her face buried between my neck and shoulder. My dear sweet love was crying again. The thought of my little breakdown, among other things, caused tears to start running again down my cheeks also. I said in an emotional voice, "How can I love you as much as you deserve darling!" All Sue could manage was, "Oh darling!" Sensing our emotional state, Flappy and the male I was riding started rubbing the tips of their muzzles together. They were making more purring like sounds. Sue and I continued embracing and caressing each other for about another minute.

Then Sue and I parted enough to look into each other's loving, tear moistened faces. But the purring and nuzzling going on between Flappy and the male hok I had been riding caused Sue and I to turn to them. After looking at them for a couple moments, Sue and I again turned to each other with loving happiness splashed across our faces. I said with a loving voice as I wiped away the remnants of Sue's tears. When I was through with Sue, Sue did the same with me. Then I said lovingly, "Let's join the others my life. But first I think we should go



thank Flappy and my hok for the ride." Sue said with a loving voice, "Alright my heart." Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After we parted our

135

kiss, we took each other's hand and went forward. I led the way. Because it was a bit of a tight squeeze between our hoks. Mav and Til at this point were up at the front of their hoks and petting their heads. Zem and Bev were in a loving, caress filled embrace. When we neared the heads of Flappy and my hok, they parted. Sue and I released each other's hand when we got to the heads of our hoks.

As I petted mine, I said in a higher pitched, friendly voice, "Thanks for the ride fella!" This caused my hok to make more purring like sounds. At about the same time, Sue said to Flappy as she took hold of her head and rubbed it with her arms, "We have some love for you too." Which caused more purring like sounds on Flappy's part. Zem and Bev were near the fronts of their hoks also at this point. I also rubbed my hok a bit around the end of its muzzle with a grin on my face as I said, "You're such a good little hok." Having overheard me, Bev and Zem smiled over at us. Bev said, "They're all good little hoks." As Bev and Zem started petting their hoks about their heads, Bev added, "Even if they aren't so little." We were all grinning at Bev. Mav said, "There's just more of them to love." This caused our grins to widen a bit. I turned my grin to Sue and said in a kidding around voice, "Don't love her too much darling. You'll spoil her." Sue giggled a bit and said, "I don't care." This caused us all to chuckle a little as we continued to pet our hoks. Sue gave Flappy's head one last quick embrace before letting go and backing off. Rubbing her hands on Flappy's head as she did so. I stopped petting my hok too.

Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and smiled at the others. Flappy and my hok started to rub their muzzles on us a little. We petted them a little with our other hands. Panny and Lika were laying on Grabby's head next to each other and enjoying the view. After a few moments, everybody else quit petting their hoks too. Mav looked at the rest of us and said, "Let's all stand up here and let them take off." Mav and Til took each other's hand and walked up closer to the front of Grabby. Zem and Bev took each other's hand too and went up toward the front of Grabby. Sue and I took each other's hand and followed Zem and Bev. As Zem and Bev got near to Mav and Til, Bev said to them, "Having seen us do this, it's too bad the bartok can't get on these forlix very easily." Til said, "But they enjoy themselves when they do so." As Sue and I approached them, I said, "I didn't want to say anything earlier. And I hope I'm not being too crude in saying so." As Sue and I stopped by the other's, I added, "But the feet weren't the only thing that was big on those bartok males."

Everybody knew exactly what body part I was referring to. Bev, Til

and Sue giggled. Zem and Mav laughed a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Bev said to Til, "I bet you're relieved that Mav doesn't have a thing as big as those bartok males." This caused a little more laughter. Afterwards, Til said, "That would be too much." Then Til and Mav grinned at each other. Til said, "You're just perfect darling." Mav said, "So are you my love." Then they started kissing each other lovingly. All of us took on sentimental smiles. Then Sue and I turned these to Zem and Bev. They smiled sentimentally at us too. Sue embraced me a little more from the side and said to Bev, "I think we're all lucky

136

on that account." Bev gave Zem a little more of a hug and said, "I have no doubt." Mav and Til parted their kiss and smiled at us all. I grinned at Sue and said, "What would you have done sweetie if you had seen that I had a thing as large as the bartok males." Sue said, "Probably run away in terror." This caused everybody to crack up laughing. Even our Nal emitted telepathic humor. For me, the mental image of Sue naked and running away in terror at the sight of such a large penis was really funny.

After a few extended moments, Bev said with some laugh coming out of her, "I wouldn't blame you!" This prolonged the laughter. As the laughter subsided, Mav said with a big grin on his face, "Let's make some room here." Mav gestured to the houk he was riding with his arm and pointed out over to the lake house in the distance. No doubt there would be more treats for them there. The houk called out and stood up on all fours. The others did also. Taking a few long strides, it put out its wings and jumped off Grabby's back. After flapping its wings a couple times, Til's houk took off in the same way. One after the other, the other ones we had been riding did the same thing. The un-ridden male and the pregnant female were the last to go. By the time they did so, Mav's houk had banked off toward the house. We all stood there and watched them take off with smiles on our faces. The Nal that were carrying a basket of food near the front of Grabby started to swing around. Grabby turned to follow it. The other Nal that were carrying other baskets of food also started to turn the other forlix. I suppose if Grabby was going back toward the house, it would be best if Grabby had his friends along.

Zem said, "Let's find a place closer toward the middle." We all started walking toward the middle of Grabby's back. As we went, I said to the others, "How long do forlix live." We were all smiling of course as Til said, "About two hundred years." Panny and Lika decided to get up and follow us at this point. Mav's look became a little more somber as he said, "I hate it when I see the remnants of a dead one floating around. We send a Nal to destroy them if we see one." Sue and I got slightly surprised looks on our faces. Then Sue said to Mav with the same more somber look we were all now wearing, "How do

parts of a dead one end up floating.” Mav said, “The tissues that hold hydrogen are less nutritious to the creatures that may scavenge them. So usually, the remains just float away.” Sue said, “That’s so sad!” Til said, “It is an unpleasant sight.” I said, “I hope Grabby has plenty of time left. Even if he is a little naughty.” This brought smiles to everybody’s faces. Til said, “You needn’t worry. Grabby has a ways to go yet.” Sue and I’s expressions got a tiny bit happier at the news. As we neared the middle of Grabby’s back, Til said, “What would everybody like to drink.

I said to Til, “I would like a big glass of water with crushed ice.” Sue said, “I’ll have the same.” Bev said, “Me too.” We stopped in the middle of Grabby’s back. Zem said, “I think I’ll have some simi.” Til smiled at Mav as he said, “I’ll have some simi too.” I said to Til, “Are you going to order up some blankets?” Til smiled at me and said, “Of course.” Sue said, “Why don’t you have Bev or Zem order them up.” Zem and Bev’s smiles increased as Sue added, “They know what kind we like.” This brought a grin to everybody’s faces. Bev said, “Ok. But I think I can make a bit of an improvement.” Then Bev seemed to think

137

something. Til did too. Then Til said to Bev, “I can’t wait to see what you ordered.” Grabby and the other forlix were turned around by this time. Then Sue looked up at Sas and said, “Sas sweetie, would you clean me?” Sas started to come down to Sue and said, “Sure.” A couple other Nal quickly approached us from the direction of the house. One levitated a folded blanket below it. The other levitated a covered tray below it. Our other Nal didn’t wait to be asked. They all came down to the being they were taking care of. We all held up the palms of our hands for the Nal to clean first.

Sue said, “The houks are wonderful.” At this point, the Nal carrying the blanket and the covered tray arrived. The one with the tray stopped about eight feet away. The one with the blanket stopped a few feet from Bev as Sue added, “But I’m afraid I smell a little like one now.” The Nal finished with our hands at this point. We all put our arms down, but held them a little ways from our bodies. As the Nal continued to clean us, Bev said, “And they’ve gotten some hair all over us.” I said, “Being as wonderful as they are, that’s a pretty small price to pay.” Everybody grinned at this comment. A few moments later, Tal and Sas finished with Sue and I. As they started to rise up, Sas said, “All done.” I said, “Thank you Tal.” He said, “You’re welcome.” Sue said, “Thank you Sas. You dears sure could spoil me.” As Tal and Sas flew up a little ways, they started circling around each other’s surfaces at differing angles. The other Nal finished with the others. Til said to Pam, “Thank you Pam.” Mav said to San, “Thank you San.” They both said at the same time, “You’re welcome.” Zem said to Pim, “Thank you Pim.” Pim said, “You’re welcome.” Bev said to Mim,

"Thank you Mim." Mim said, "You're welcome too."

At this point, San and Pam were up in the air too and circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Pim and Mim went toward Panny and Lika. As they did so, replying to Sue, Sas said, "We'll try to be careful and not spoil you too much." While this was going on, Panny and Lika stood on their back legs and let Pim and Mim make a cleaning pass over their fronts. Panny and Like were just adorable as they did so. We all smiled at them. Pim and Mim went back up into the air a ways after they had made their pass over Panny and Lika. Both of them circled each other as they did so. Panny and Lika again stood on all fours as Bev took a half step over to the Nal with the blanket and took it. That Nal then rose up a little and moved toward the front of Grabby a bit. Bev smiled at Sue as she stepped over to her. Then Sue grinned and said, "It looks like a big blanket." Bev grinned too as she said, "I got one big enough for all of us." Sue started to help Bev unfold it. As they did so, Bev looked around at the rest of us and said, "Everybody take a side."

We all helped Bev and Sue unfold the blanket. Though it was far from necessary for all of them to do so, Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas came down and grabbed the fourth side with their usual sort of invisible force field. As soon as we could see what was on the blanket, we all grinned. Which made Bev grin too. Apparently, Til and Mav were both familiar with the human symbolism of the heart shapes. Til said, "How adorable!" This made Bev, Sue and my grins widen a bit. We unfolded it some more. Til then said, "It's so sweet!" Zem quickly added, "That's my girl." Bev's face was just beaming at this point.

The  
138

blanket was about ten feet square. There were three evenly spaced red hearts on it. The hearts were large enough for a couple to comfortably sit in. The pointed ends of the hearts pointed toward the center. Between the upper parts of the hearts, there were three smaller red hearts big enough to comfortably set a Nal couple. We all set the blanket out. Our Nal released their sides of the blanket. Then they floated up in pairs and circled around the surfaces of their partners at differing angles.

## Chapter Seven A Forlix Ride

We all stepped onto the blanket and sat down next to our partners in the middle of one of the large red hearts. Pim and Mim went over and settled onto the smaller red heart between Zem and Bev and Sue and I. Tal and Sas settled into the smaller heart between Mav and Til and Zem and Bev. San and Pam took the smaller heart between Mav and

Til and Sue and I. At the same time as we all put an arm around our partners, Panny went to set nearer the center of the blanket. Lika followed him. No doubt Panny had seen the other Nal levitating a covered tray below it and figured that there would be something tasty for them on it too. Sue said, "I don't think that I've ever sat on a more comfortable forlix." This made us all laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Of course, Sue had never sat on a forlix before. After the laughter, the Nal with the covered tray below it came down near Mav and Til. At the same time, Til said, "Mav didn't choose to bring them here because they were comfortable to sit on." As Til spoke, the cover over the tray disappeared fairly quickly. There were glasses of beverage for everybody on it. Even two small ones for Panny and Lika. Their small glasses were filled with a light green, fizzy liquid.

As Mav and Til took their drinks, Mav added, "That was just a pleasant coincidence." We all laughed some more as the Nal levitated the tray over to Zem and Bev. All of us of course knew that there was nothing out of the ordinary in the way of comfort in setting on a forlix. Zem and Bev took their drinks and the tray levitated over to Sue and I. Sue and I took our drinks too. The Nal then sat the tray in the center of the blanket near Panny and Lika. They grabbed their drinks with both hands. Panny and Lika didn't waste any time taking a drink. At the same time as the tray sat down, Mav smiled lovingly at Til. This made Til smile lovingly at Mav also. Mav said, "Would you like a sip of my love darling?" Zem, Bev, Sue and I smiled sentimentally at them as Til said, "Of course my love." While this was going on, the Nal that sat the tray down rose up and moved toward the front of Grabby. As Mav went to give Til a sip of his drink, Zem lovingly said to Bev, "Would you like a sip of my love darling?" They looked at each other lovingly as Bev said, "The more, the merrier darling." At the same time as Zem asked his question, Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. I said, "Would you like a sip of my love honey bunch?" Sue said, "Of course darling."

After us guys had given our loving partners a drink, we all gave our partners a brief but loving kiss. Then our girls gave their guys a sip of their love. After

139

doing so, as we still held our glasses, us couples began to kiss our partners lovingly. As always, kissing Sue was heavenly. No doubt Mav and Til were enjoying each other's kiss just as much. As no doubt Zem and Bev probably were. Though with the mental connection the Reall were capable of, they may have been enjoying the kiss of their partners even more. After about a minute, when we had all decided that our partners had been well kissed, we began to part and look at our partners lovingly. Sue and I were the first to turn to the others. We smiled at them with sentimental, contented looks on our faces. Mav and Til were the next to turn and smile at the rest of us in the

same way. Then Zem and Bev turned to smile at everybody in the same way. I glanced at our Nal with a smile. As I looked at each Nal couple, I said, "It's too bad you guys couldn't join us for a toast."

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til and Sue grinned. Which I did also. Pim said, "You should know by now that there's hardly anything we can't do." A glass shaped a little more like a bowl materialized in the air about a foot above the tray. It appeared to be filled with simi drink and ice. Our Nal friends rose up and went over to a few inches above the levitating glass. I directed my glass a little toward Mav and Til, then to the Nal. I said, "To our new friends." Sue directed her glass a little toward Mav and Til too. Then to the Nal. Then Mav and Til gestured their glasses toward Sue and I and said, "To our new friends." Then Mav and Til gestured them to Zem and Bev. They then gestured them to the Nal. Til then said, "And to our old ones." Zem and Bev gestured their glasses to Sue and I. Bev said, "To our new friends." Then they gestured their glasses to Mav and Til. Then to the Nal as Zem said, "And to our old ones." We all had big, appreciative smiles on our faces as we brought our glasses forward and clinked them against the rim of the Nal's glass.

As we brought our glasses back, each of the Nal extruded a straw about a foot long. It came out at about a thirty degree angle from just below their horizontal center. The last four inches of which angled down more sharply to dip into the glass. We all then took a drink. I could see the drink in the Nal's glass lower a bit. After we lowered our glasses, Mav smiled lovingly at Til and said, "It doesn't taste as good without your love darling." Til looked at Mav with an even more loving look and said, "Oh darling!" While this was going on, our Nal retracted their straws. Their glass also fairly quickly faded out of existence. As couples, our Nal circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles as they headed back over to their spots. After Til said what she did, she and Mav started kissing again. This also brought about more kissing between Zem and Bev. As it did between Sue and I. Our Nal didn't land when they got back to their heart patterns on the blanket. They continued to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles about a foot above them. We kissed our partners for about a minute.

After Sue and I parted our kiss, we smiled at each other lovingly. Then we turned to the others. Zem and Bev were smiling at each other lovingly. Mav and Til were still kissing. This made Sue and I smile a bit more widely. Sue and I smiled at each other again as Zem lovingly said to Bev, "I'm not wearing your lips out, am I darling?" This caused Bev, Sue and I to laugh a little. Zem just grinned

140

at Bev. Having heard what Zem said, Mav and Til also parted their kiss. As they turned their grins toward Zem and Bev, Bev said, "You could never do that darling." Then they gave each other a brief but

loving kiss. After they parted, Sue said to Zem, "I would think that if that were possible, it would have happened millions of years ago." Everybody was smiling at Sue by the time she finished speaking. Zem said, "It isn't really possible to do." We all turned our smiles to Zem as he spoke. Zem continued on, saying, "At least for any lasting duration. But it's fun to try." We all chuckled a little. Which Zem quickly joined in on. Then I turned my grin to Sue and said in a half kidding around manner, "After that last kiss, I think my lips need a little cooling off." We all took a drink from our drinks.

When we were through taking a drink, we all gave our partners a brief but loving kiss. Then we all turned to smile at each other. Sue briefly looked around with a big smile on her face. Then Sue turned her smile to Zem and Bev. I smiled at them too as Sue said with a more sentimental look to her face, "Being with you guys has been beyond a real life dream." This made sentimental smiles come over Zem and Bev's faces as they leaned the sides of their heads together. Sue then looked at Mav and Til and said, "And now you two wonderful people." This caused grins to come over Mav and Til's faces as they also leaned the sides of their heads together. Then Sue smiled at Pim and Mim and said, "And that goes for both of you of course." Then Sue smiled at San and Pam and said, "And that goes for you two also." Sue then smiled at Tal and Sas and added, "As well as you two of course." What Sue said caused our Nal to circle around their partner's surfaces a little more quickly. Then Sue smiled again at Mav and Til and said, "Your planet and hospitality have been so wonderful. Just as with Bev and Zem, I know there is nothing we can do to repay you. I hope our thanks is enough."

Mav and Til's grins turned to appreciative, sentimental smiles as Mav said, "Of course it is. We can so rarely interfere with the lives of less evolved, though still quite intelligent beings such as yourselves. It makes us happy that you're happy." We all exchanged smiles for a couple moments. Though Sue and I's were a bit more appreciative. Then I said, "Everybody take a good drink. Because I have something to say that is probably going to make you want to dispense with your drinks." Everybody grinned. Zem said, "This should be good." We all took a drink. After we lowered our glasses, I looked at Tal and said, "Would you dispose of these please." Sue and I's glasses disappeared like in a take alcove. I said to Tal, "Thank you." Sue and I took hold of each other's forearms and briefly smiled lovingly at each other. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til made their glasses disappear too. They all then took hold of their partner's forearms and briefly smiled at each other with a hint of anticipation on their faces. Then they turned their smiles to Sue and I. I then smiled at Mav and said, "I have a question to ask." Sue smiled at me too as I added, "But I'm afraid it is going to have an adverse yet wonderful effect on you and Zem. And if I know them, Pim, San and Tal too."

I smiled around at everybody as Mav said with a kind, appreciative tone to his voice, "I can't wait to hear it." Then I said, "Sue is so very

beautiful." Sue let go

141

of my forearm at this point and held me in both arms as she looked at me with a look of solemn love. I continued on and said, "From minute to minute, it's hard for me to believe that my dearest is real." Sue's look became more emotional as she laid her head on my shoulder and said, "Oh darling!" Tears started to well up in my eyes. Which caused everybody to look at me with highly sentimental looks. Then I continued on, saying, "It may just be a trait of your species, but Bev," I smiled at Bev as I said her name. Then I smiled at Til and said, "and Til. You're both so very sweet and beautiful too." Both Bev and Til had a bit of appreciative emotion come over their faces as Bev said, "Thank you!" Til quickly added, "You're so sweet!" I glanced at them briefly. Then at Zem and Mav. Who were smiling at me with highly appreciative, sentimental looks on their faces. A more serious, slightly questioning look came over my face as I said, "As guys like me, (I briefly glanced at our Nal, Zem, and then back to Mav as I added) do you think we deserve to have the love of such wonderful beings?"

Everybody had emotional looks come over their faces. All of our Nal couples quickly extruded a number of tendrils over their partner's surfaces and began to glow with their chosen color. They also quickly began to take off in pairs. Each heading in a different direction as the intensity of their glowing increased. Sue buried her face between my shoulder and the base of my neck as her tears started to flow. Mav said with an emotional voice, "I could never deserve my darling Til!" Then Mav turned his emotional, loving expression to Til. Til tearfully embraced Mav and said, "That's not true darling!" Mav also tearfully embraced Til back. At the same time, Zem and Bev looked at each other with tearful, emotional love. Zem said to Bev, "You know I could never feel good enough for you my life!" Bev embraced Zem firmly and said, "Dearest love! My dearest love! I don't deserve you!" Also at the same time, Sue tearfully said to me, "What can I do to convince you darling! You're my soul!" While we tightly embraced our partners, we all made a couple more fairly brief, but highly emotional exchanges with our partners as to the love we felt.

If Zem and Mav were feeling as I did, which I had no doubt they were, the loving emotion we were feeling toward their partners had to be almost terrible in its ferocity too. Knowing the telepathic emotional connection the Reall were capable of, it was a wonder that they could take it. Their mental toughness had to be astonishing. Mav said telepathically, with an emotion filled thought, "I'm sorry! But we'll see you back at the house!" He and Til then fairly quickly faded out of existence. Sue and I still held each other in an emotion filled, tearful embrace. Zem said with a little urgency to his emotional thought, "We have to go too!" Sue and I parted enough to look over in their direction. We did so just in time to see them quickly fade away in a



tearful embrace. A Nal that was in front of Grabby quickly moved toward us. A thought came from Bev. It was at a slightly faster than normal pace. Probably because she was about to become wonderfully preoccupied. Bev said, "The Nal will give you some privacy." It formed into a black opaque screen about ten feet high and fifteen feet long. This screen blocked the line of sight between us and the house. Though the house was still quite a distance away.

Bev then quickly added at a bit more normal pace, "That is as long as you don't

142

mind the various creatures seeing you discuss things. See ya later." Apparently, Panny and Lika weren't amongst the creatures that might observe Sue and I "discussing" things. Because they too disappeared. I assumed it was Bev's doing. Sue and I lovingly looked at each other's tear moistened faces. Then we began to kiss each other passionately. With a little uncomfortable firmness. Both of us gave off moans of love as we caressed each other fervently. After about thirty seconds or so, our passionate kiss became more comfortable. Our tongues also caressed each other's more. I began to caress and knead one of Sue's breasts. Sue began to caress and knead my genitals through my pants. Though I was fully aroused by this time. All this caused us to give off moans of passion. Sue stopped caressing me and began to unbutton my shirt. This caused us to give off little extra moans of passion while we kissed. At the same time, I caressed my hands off of Sue and unbuttoned my cuffs. Sue then started to pull my shirttail out of my pants. Then Sue slid my shirt off me. I parted my kiss from Sue.

We looked at each other with loving, emotional passion as I pulled up on Sue's top. Sue raised her arms and I pulled her top off. Letting it fall to the side, we kissed passionately again as I undid the clasp on Sue's bra. At the same time, Sue undid my pants. Here and there, we both continued to give off slight moans of passion while we kissed. I started to take off Sue's bra. Sue stopped undoing my pants as I did so. After getting it off, I fully caressed Sue's magnificent breasts. After caressing Sue's breasts a little, I started to undue Sue's pants too. Once I had them undone, we parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Sue said with loving passion in her voice, "I love you so much husband darling." I said with an equally loving, passionate voice, "I love you so much too wife darling." We kissed each other passionately again as I laid Sue down. After a couple moments, I parted my kiss from Sue and sat up. Both of us had loving passion splashed across our faces as I took off Sue's slippers and socks. Then I pulled down Sue's pants and panties. Sue raised up her hips as I pulled them over her wonderfully rounded bottom.

As I did so, I said with a passion filled voice as Sue's wonderful muff became visible, "Oh darling!" A bit more of a look of ecstasy accompanied my passionate expression. Sue said with a passion filled

voice, "Oh my love!" Once I had Sue's pants off, Sue sat up and we again kissed each other passionately. As I caressed one of Sue's breasts, Sue laid me on my back. After a couple moments, we parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Sue then sat up fairly quickly and took off my shoes and socks. Then Sue began to pull down my pants and underwear. I also raised my hips a little to help Sue do so. A bit of ecstasy accompanied Sue's passionate look when, being released from being hung up on my underwear, my firm appendage flung out of my underwear like a switchblade. After setting my pants and underwear off to the side, Sue knelt between my legs. I parted my legs a little as Sue did so. Sue caressed her hands up my legs. Then Sue began to gently caress my genitals. No doubt in reference to what I asked Zem and Mav about deserving our girls, Sue said with a passion filled face and voice, "You certainly deserve this darling."

Sue then began to fellate me. A look of ecstasy came over my face as I gave

143

off a moan of ecstasy. Sue also gave off an encumbered moan of ecstasy. After my moan, I said, "Oh darling!" As usual, Sue started off this action slowly and with much relish. I was in seventh heaven. After all the practice Sue and I had, Sue's caresses of my genitals with the skill of an expert. This of course added to my pleasure. Even after Sue began to speed up her actions, Sue's caresses of my testicles were extra gentle and loving. Through the whole process, every now and then, I would make various impassioned comments of love or endearment. Along with the usual moans of ecstasy every now and then. Sue would often give off little encumbered moans of ecstasy in response. I knew that my dear sweet love was really enjoying herself. Which pleased me to no end. Though it was difficult to judge time, after about three minutes, I could tell that Sue wouldn't be waiting too much longer to bring me to the climax that I knew she enjoyed so much. Sue began to slow down her actions and moan a lot more. The signs were unmistakable. Sue was cuming.

It filled me with such love to know what Sue was doing and my loving responses had that kind of effect on my dear sweet love. It was better that this happened to Sue rather than it happening to me when I orally pleased Sue. At least Sue was capable of multiple orgasms. It also pleased me that Sue's muff would be nice and moist when it came time for me to orally pleasure Sue. Another effect Sue's ecstasy had on me was that it speeded up the countdown to my orgasm. As we had decided to do when we gave each other oral pleasure, to enhance each other's enjoyment, we would tell each other when we were about to climax. Which I did this time too. Again, it was information that I could tell Sue enjoyed knowing. A couple moments later, I exploded with pleasure. I gave off some much heightened moans of ecstasy as my loins pulsed with ecstasy. Sue also gave off

little, encumbered moans of pleasure. I knew that this was a part that Sue particularly enjoyed. In my throws of ecstasy, I said fairly quickly, "Oh my darling! Oh my love!" Then I moaned with ecstasy some more. Sue did too in an encumbered fashion as she began to slow down her actions.

Sue continued to enjoy herself for a couple of minutes. Then Sue swallowed me down for a third time as far as she could. Though after this last time, Sue slowly slid her lips off me. Sue's lips again made that cute little vibrating sound when the air pressure equalized past her lips. Then Sue began to kiss her way up my body. I lovingly caressed more of Sue as she came within reach more. As Sue made her way up to me on her hands and knees, I said with a passion filled voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue gave me a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue said with a passion filled voice, "I'm not through with you yet darling." Sue moved a little farther up. I began to caress Sue's breasts. Sue said, "Love my titties darling." My dear sweet love knew how much I enjoyed her breasts. I said with a voice just dripping with loving, passionate adoration, "Oh darling! You make me so happy!" I began to suck on one of Sue's wonderful nipples and caress her amazingly large, firm breasts. There just wasn't anything about Sue that wasn't pure heaven. Sue had a pleased, loving look on her face as I thoroughly enjoyed my dear sweet love's breasts.

I caressed them against the sides of my face and kissed them here and there.

144

After a couple minutes of this, I stopped most of what I was doing. As I just caressed Sue's breasts, I said with an emotion filled voice, "Darling." Sue backed off a little and saw my emotional state with tears welling up in my eyes. Sue also took on an emotional look as I placed a hand on Sue's chest. The other day, I had kissed the palm of Sue's hand and closed her fingers over it. What Sue had in her hand represented my love. I asked Sue to promise me that it would always be safe with her. Which Sue assured me it would be. After some love, Sue placed her fist on her chest and opened her fingers. Pressing the love I had placed into the palm Sue's hand into her chest. This is where I now had my hand. Tears started to well up in Sue's eyes. I said, "Are you keeping my love safe my wife?" An even more tearful look of emotion came over Sue's face. Sue shoved her hands between my back and the blanket. We embraced each other fully and firmly as Sue said tearfully, "Oh yes my husband!... It will always be safe with me!" I said tearfully, "Oh my life!"

Sue and I fully embraced each other as we cried tears of joy. After a couple minutes of this, I took one of the hands I had been caressing Sue with and gently caressed the hair on one side of Sue's head back a little. Then I started giving Sue's ear some loving kisses. Though Sue's earring was a bit of a bother. I said, "Darling. Could you take

your earring out for me?" Sue sat up as we looked at each other with glazed over looks of love. Sue said, "Sure darling." Then Sue took her earrings out. After setting them aside, I caressed Sue's hair back on one side of her head and said with a highly loving voice, "Give me some ear darling." Still with a glazed over look of love in my eyes, I so enjoyed seeing Sue's adorable ear coming toward me. Then I lightly closed my eyes as I went to town on it. Licking it and kneading it with my lips. As I did so, Sue gave off a moan of pleasure and squirmed a little with pleasure on me. Sue of course had her eyes lightly closed with loving, pleased look on her face too. Sue said with a soft, pleased, highly loving voice, "Oh darling."

After about a minute, I rolled Sue onto her back as Sue started giving me a loving kiss around my ear. This caused my pleased expression to become a little more so. As Sue ran her tongue around the inner part of my ear, I said with a highly loving voice, "You're such a dream darling." I let Sue enjoy my ear for a little longer. Then I started kissing around Sue's ear again. As I did so, Sue said in a highly loving voice, "You're such a dream too darling." I kissed Sue's ear a little more. Then I started kissing my way down Sue's neck. We both of course still had our eyes lightly closed with loving, pleased looks on our faces. As I worked my way farther down, we both opened our eyes a little with passionate looks on our faces. I looked with pleasure at the topography of Sue's wonderful body as I kissed my way farther down. Knowing where I was headed, Sue said with a soft, passionate voice, "Oh my love!" When I got to Sue's mons pubis, I nuzzled the side of my nose and cheek into it. Unfortunately, Sue's pubic hair wasn't as moist as I would have liked it to have been. But oh how I loved the feel of it.

Soon after, a moan of ecstasy came from Sue as I started to perform cunnilingus on her. As usual, it was wonderful beyond description. Though Sue and I had discussed before certain aspects of how to make the oral pleasure we

145

gave to each other more pleasurable for each other, I never did tell Sue exactly what my special technique was. Though I decided to make it something really special this time. The way that Sue would squirm at certain points also filled me with indescribable love. As did Sue's varied moans of ecstasy. Every now and then, Sue would make a brief but impassioned statement of love or endearment. Which of course only added to my enjoyment. Needless to say, there were a couple times that Sue told me I was about to receive what I considered to be a wonderful orgasmic, liquid treat. Sue cried out in ecstasy as I enthusiastically consumed what Sue had to give me. This caused a brief but highly enjoyable disruption to the technique I was doing. About two minutes after the last one, I received another highly enjoyable orgasmic treat.

After things settled down from this one, I decided to end this oral lovemaking session. I nuzzled my cheek into Sue's wonderful mons pubis. Sue caressed her fingers through my hair and said with a breathy, loving, passionate voice, "Oh my darling love!" I said with a passionate voice, "My darling!" I rubbed the side of my nose a little into Sue's pubic hair and breathed deeply. But Sue was simply too clean and scented for me to catch any hint of her natural bodily scent. After a few moments, I started to kiss my way back up toward Sue. As usual, the more of me that became available, the more of me Sue would caress. Along the way, I paused briefly to give Sue's breasts more love. When I got back up to Sue, we kissed each other passionately. Lovingly caressing each other as we did so. After about forty seconds of so, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We slowly opened our eyes and took in the sight of each other's loving expressions. I gently caressed Sue's cheek. Sue slowly and lightly closed her eyes and lovingly caressed the palm of my hand back with her cheek.

A few moments later, Sue slowly turned her face back to me and slowly opened her beautiful, loving eyes. Sue then gently caressed my cheek. I caressed my hand from Sue's cheek and slowly closed my eyes. Then I caressed the palm of Sue's hand back with my cheek. After a few moments, I slowly turned my face back toward Sue and slowly opened my loving eyes. As we looked deeply into each others loving eyes, Sue caressed me more around my head. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "How did I do darling." Sue smiled at me lovingly. I smiled lovingly back at Sue as she said, "You were just wonderful darling." We again embraced each other and kissed each other with all of the loving tenderness we could muster. After about a minute, I again slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked again into each other's loving eyes. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "I've been keeping a secret from you darling." Sue gave me a loving smile. Which I returned. Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "What's that darling." I said, "I know we talked about it. But I never told you exactly what I was doing when I lick you."

Loving curiosity came over Sue's face as she said, "What do you do darling." I said, "With a few interruptions here and there, I basically use my tongue to write in big capital letters. And I write things to you." A look of loving surprise came over Sue's face. Then a look of eagerness came over Sue's face. This caused a bigger loving smile to come over my face. Sue said, "Tell me the things you wrote darling!" I said, "In the past, it was nothing of any consequence. And later

146

on here, it was more of the same. But I wrote you a love letter this time that I think you'll like." A look of eager happiness came over Sue's face as she said, "Tell me what you wrote darling!" A look of solemn love came over my face. Which caused Sue's expression to

turn again to one of solemn love. I said, "I wrote: My darling love. Your love is my life." At this point, Sue's eyes glazed over with love. I continued, saying, "I want your eyes to be my destiny." At this point Sue's eyes started to well up with tears. I continued on, saying, "I want to spend the rest of my life filling your life with joy." Tears started to flow down the sides of Sue's wonderful face. The sight caused tears to start welling up in my eyes also.

I continued, saying, "Because your happiness is like a bright flame in the darkness. My soul is merged with yours." That pained look that comes with crying came over Sue's face. I didn't like seeing Sue in such a state. Though I knew that Sue wanted me to continue. But Sue's pained look brought a similar look to my face also. Tears started falling from my cheeks as well. I continued, saying, "The sound of your heartbeat is the sound of my life." Sue fully embraced me at this point with her arms and legs. My dear, sweet love was openly crying. I was all choked up myself. As Sue cried, she managed to get out, "Tell me the rest darling!" It was becoming quite difficult for me to continue. But I worked my way through it. I continued, saying, "When I see you tired, I love you more.... When I see you asleep, I love you more.... When I see you awake, I love you more... My very being... will always be your home! If you ever tire of me," Sue grabbed me more firmly at this point and said in between sobs, "That will never happen!" I continued, saying, "just let me slip away and be forever grateful for any moment with you. The end."

Sue said with a tearful voice, "Oh darling!" and started peppering me around the side of my head with quick, loving kisses. Then Sue took hold of my head and started peppering me around my face with quick, loving kisses. Sue then moved on to the other side of my head and did the same. I of course had my eyes lightly closed with an emotional look of love on my face. When Sue was through with these kisses, Sue gently moved me onto my side and embraced me firmly. I embraced Sue firmly too as we wrapped our legs around each other's. Sue said in a tender, yet emotional voice as we hugged each other, "Tell me that this isn't a wonderful dream darling!" We lovingly caressed the sides of our heads together as I said with a voice dripping with love, "If it is a dream darling, I'll never let you awake!" Sue said, "Oh dearest love!" We slid our cheeks together as we moved our lips toward each other's. Quickly, we were kissing each other passionately. Both of us lovingly caressing each other's tongues together. After about thirty seconds, I lessened the firmness of my hold and caresses. Sue also lessened the firmness of her hold and caresses.

Both of us more lovingly embraced and caressed each other. Every now and then, we would also squirm our bodies with pleasure into each other's. After about another minute and a half, we slowly parted our kiss and looked with blissful love into each other's eyes. Our faces were still slightly moist from the tears we shed. I smiled a little. Which caused Sue to smile a little at me too. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Darling. Are you sure that you don't love me

just because I can show you a good time among aliens?" I then grinned. Which caused Sue to grin also. Sue lovingly caressed the side of my face and said lovingly, "Don't be silly darling!" I said, "Does that mean that you think you will love me as a normal human on earth?" Sue's grin was replaced with a solemn, loving expression. Which was all the answer I needed. It made me take on a solemn, loving expression too as Sue said, "I know I will dearest love." We then enthusiastically and firmly hugged each other again. I said, "Oh my darling!" Sue said, "Oh my love!" Both of us squirmed a little with pleasure against each other's nude bodies. We also rubbed our legs and feet together a little. Sue and I also lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together.

We enjoyed each other's embrace and caresses for a few minutes. Then Sue backed away a little and looked at me with the sweetest loving smile on her wonderful face. I smiled lovingly at Sue also. Then Sue said, "Your love letter was so wonderful darling. Would you write it down for me?" I gave Sue a brief but loving kiss. Then I said, "Sure darling." Sue said, "I wonder if the maketake can hear my thoughts from here." I said, "If not, I'm sure the Nal screen will be able to pass it on." Sue then thought to the maketake. After a few moments, Sue said, "It heard me." I said, "Should I write it in cursive or print." Sue said, "I think I would prefer print darling. I want it to be easy to read." At this point, a Nal swooped in levitating a pad of paper and a pen below it. We both grinned at it. Sue and I released each other. Then Sue sat up and took the pad of paper and pen from the Nal. I sat up a little too. Sue said, "Thank you." It answered verbally in a maketake type of voice and said, "You're welcome." Then it started to levitate away. Going back around the Nal wall and, I would assume, back toward the house.

Sue handed me the pad and pen as we smiled lovingly at each other. I took them as Sue said, "Here ya go licky bear." Sue's new term of endearment made me laugh a bit. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Afterwards, I said, "Thank you kissy bear." We then gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we parted and smiled at each other lovingly. Sue said, "Your letter is too beautiful for the medium you wrote it on darling." I said, "Your entire body is as good as a tablet of gold to me sweetheart. But how it was originally penned can remain our wonderfully naughty little secret." This made Sue grin. Which made me grin too. Sue said, "Ok darling." We then gave each other a loving, tender kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other again. Then Sue said, "Now roll over darling and get ready to write." I said, "Yes dear." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I laid down on my stomach and propped myself up on my elbows. I laid the pad on the blanket and held the pen with my right fingers. The pad of paper

Sue got was of a very good quality. It had a little decorative scroll work around the corners.

Then Sue laid on top of me. As Sue did so, Sue laid her legs on the outsides of mine with the tops of her feet up near the backs of my ankles. Sue also caressed my upper arms as she laid the side of her face next to the side of my head to watch me write. Both of us had loving smiles on our faces. It felt so wonderful to have Sue holding me like this. I said with a loving voice, "I'll make

148

the dedication in cursive darling." Then I wrote, "To my loving wife," Then I started printing out what I had written with my tongue. Though I didn't use all capital letters. As I wrote, Sue started kissing me around the ear. I paused my writing and lightly closed my eyes with a pleased look on my face. Then I said, "You're not making this very easy for me my love." Sue stopped kissing me and lovingly caressed the side of my head with her cheek. Then Sue said in a soft, loving voice, "I'm sorry my darling." Sue then just laid her cheek against the side of my head to watch me write again. Even without Sue's kissing, it was hard to concentrate on my penmanship with Sue's wonderful, nude body on top of mine. Sue gently caressed my upper arms as I continued to write. After I was through, I wrote in cursive, "Your loving husband."

Apparently, reading what I wrote had gotten Sue all worked up again. Sue started to lick and kiss my ear. At the same time, Sue caressed her hands up under my propped up elbows and caressed my chest. My dearest love also squirmed a little with pleasure into my body. This caused me to start to become aroused again. As I laid there with my eyes lightly closed and a pleased look on my face, I said in a kidding around manner, "You're a foul temptress." Sue laughed as she slid her wonderful, nude body off mine. I turned to face Sue. We shared in each other's laughter. Afterwards, we grinned at each other as we caressed each other. Sue said, "Don't you like me as a foul temptress honey?" I said, "You know I do my love. Just look at what you've done to me." Then I leaned back a little and gestured with my head a little down toward my genitals. A passionate look came over Sue's face. This caused a passionate look came over my face too as Sue reached for my ever stiffening appendage. Sue took hold of it and looked passionately at me. Sue said with a voice dripping with passion, "Oh darling!"

Then I started to lay Sue onto her back. We looked at each other passionately as I started to move on top of Sue. I said with a passionate voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue said with passion on her face and in her voice, "I love you so much too darling." Then Sue guided my appendage to where it needed to go. A look of ecstasy came over both our faces as I entered into Sue. Both of also gave off moans of ecstasy. As usual, I'll leave most of the heavenly ecstasy



that followed to your imagination. Throughout our lovemaking, there were the wonderfully usual moans of ecstasy here and there. It was also interspersed here and there with impassioned, brief statements of love or endearment. There was also the brief but passionate kisses here and there. As well as loving caresses that, depending on the situation at various points, would increase or decrease. Sue had indeed been all worked up. Because it only took me about twenty seconds to bring Sue to her first orgasm. Sue's cries of ecstasy filled me with such passion that it was more difficult than usual to keep myself from orgasming too.

About a minute and a half went by before I brought Sue to another climax. This of course caused Sue to give off more cries of ecstasy. Within the space of about seven minutes after Sue's last orgasm, I was able to bring my dearest sweet love to a climax a couple more times. As usual, I so loved seeing the look of orgasmic ecstasy on Sue's amazingly beautiful face when she did so. After

149

about another minute and a half after Sue's last orgasm, I could tell that Sue was beginning to build up to another. So I really started to go to town. (Though I wasn't quite as energetic as I was when Sue and I engaged in a quickie in the shower earlier) Sue gave off cries of ecstasy as I did so. Soon, Sue started to give out even louder calls of ecstasy as she climaxed. I climaxed also and gave out my own calls of ecstasy. Our bodies quivered with orgasmic impulses as I slowed down my actions. Both of our moans of ecstasy were nearly constant at this point as I made long, slow thrusts in and mostly out of Sue. Then I entered as far into Sue as I could before I stopped and we embraced each other fully. Both of us were breathing a little heavily from our exertion.

After a few extended moments, we began to caress each other more and caress the sides of our heads together. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving, pleased looks on our faces. A couple moments later, Sue said gently with a voice full of spent ecstasy, "Oh my darling husband." As I began to slide my lips toward Sue's, I said fairly quickly, "My darling wife." Our lips came together and we began kissing each other with such tender, loving passion that it was indescribable. It was almost as if we were kissing each other's souls. We could only sustain this for a few extended moments. Then Sue broke off her kiss from me and we again fully embraced. Sue and I lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together. As we did so, Sue said with a gentle voice just dripping with love, "I love you so much my darling husband!" I lovingly caressed my cheek against the side of Sue's head and said with an equally loving voice, "I hope you feel nice, safe and at home in my love my darling wife." Sue caressed her hands up toward my head as she said, "Oh I do husband darling!" Then Sue took hold of my head and gently pulled my head back enough for us to

look into each other's loving eyes.

As Sue gently caressed me a little around my cheeks and the side of my head, Sue said with the sincerest look of love on her face, "Tell me again you'll always be mine my darling husband." I wore an expression of emotional, emphatic love. My eyes also glazed over with love. Sue's did too. I slightly shook my head from side to side a few to express my conviction as I said, "Forever and ever my darling wife." As Sue slightly pulled on my head to bring my lips to hers, Sue said fairly quickly, "Oh darling!" We then began kissing each other passionately. Our tongues also caressed each other's passionately. We both gave off little moans of pleasure here and there while we kissed. Sue again took full advantage of my being on top to lovingly caress me just about everywhere she could reach. I caressed Sue as well as I could with me being on top of her. After about a minute, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We parted enough to clearly look into each other's loving eyes. I said, "I'm going to ask the maketake for something darling." Sue smiled lovingly at me. I smiled lovingly back at Sue as Sue said, "Are you going to ask for a telepathic connection again darling?" I said, "You'll see darling."

Then I thought to the maketake and said, "Maketake." A telepathic maketake voice answered and said, "Yes." I said, "I know that you can make a telepathic connection between Sue and I. But if I asked, would you be able to speed up our thoughts also so that time would seem to slow down." The maketake said,

150

"You are in a marginal position. But yes, I can do it. As long as you hold perfectly still when it is initiated. Also, just so you know, I couldn't fulfill such a request if you were in the middle of an orgasm. Being human, it could cause some harm to your minds that would need to be repaired." I said, "Thank you for the information. When I think "Ok," begin my request." The maketake said, "It will be so." I looked into Sue's beautiful, loving eyes and took on a look of solemn love. Sue looked at me in the same way as I said, "Look deep into my eyes darling." Sue did as I asked as I thought, "Ok."

Everything seemed to stop as Sue and I looked deep into each other's loving eyes. I said with a highly loving thought, "I thought some speed thought would be nice darling. With any luck, the lengthened time will help me burn the image of your beautiful eyes into my mind even more." As Sue of course was looking deeply into my eyes, Sue thought, "What a wonderful idea darling!" I said, "Someday, it would be nice to see how long I could remain inside you. But this is the next best thing." Sue said, "I wish you could remain inside me always darling." I said with a kidding around thought, "It would be nice my heart. But right now you're squishing me." Sue and I both emitted telepathic humor. I must say, it was a little unusual when we were looking into each other's eyes with looks of solemn love on our faces.

Afterwards, Sue said with a tinge of loving concern in her thought, "I'm not really, am I darling?" I said with loving reassurance, "No. I'm only kidding sweetest. But do you feel ok?" Sue said, "Having you inside me feels just wonderful darling."

I said, "They may not be moving fairly quickly right now darling. But when we do this, my little spermies have no place to go but deeper inside you." Sue said with a little more loving thought, "The deeper the better darling. I love you so much." I said, "I love you so much too darling. Maybe that's why I came so much this time. Which after having cum earlier, is kind of surprising." Sue said, "The way you were going at it at the end darling, I'm not surprised. Are you trying to make be walk bow legged?" Both Sue and I again emitted telepathic humor again. After the humor, I said, "Did you enjoy it darling?" Sue said lovingly, "You know I did darling. And I'm enjoying this too." I said, "I wish I had more than one place to take in your cum darling." Sue said, "I am pretty lucky there darling." I said, "I wonder if my nose or ears would count as a different spot." This made Sue emit telepathic humor. Which I quickly joined in on. After the humor, Sue said with an amused thought, "You're so silly darling." I said, "I just love making you happy darling." Sue said, "Oh, you do dearest love."

After a couple moments in our time frame of enjoying each other's loving looks, I said, "You know darling, your eyes are incredible." Sue said, "Thank you darling. Yours are incredible too." I said, "I just love the patterns of the wonderful blue connective tissue in your iris'." Sue said, "Yours are wonderful too darling." I said, "It's no wonder that I fell in love with you when I first looked into them." Sue said with a tender, highly loving thought, "Oh darling!" I said, "Only twice in my life have I ever seen pictures of women with eyes nearly as beautiful as yours. But neither of those women were as beautiful as you. I don't know how I could have gotten so lucky." Sue said, "Oh darling. I think I'm the lucky one. And you have the most beautiful eyes I have ever seen on a man." I

151

said, "Thank you my love. But you don't think it makes me look a little like a girly man do you?" Sue said, "Oh no darling! You have quite masculine features too. Along with your wonderful muscles and big wiener, I don't know how I could have been so lucky either." I said, "Would you still think that if we had ended up living in a trailer park around a bunch of stupid, brainwashed lowlifes who only knew enough to take out their frustrations out on themselves and others?"

Sue said with some loving emphasis to her thought, "I wouldn't care where I ended up darling. As long as it was with you." I said, "Oh darling. I love you so much." Sue said, "I love you so much too darling." After a few moments in our time frame of absorbing each other's love through our eyes, I said, "You know darling, I think I understand a little better how you managed to stay single. It would be

difficult for any guy to look at you and think that they could stand a shot at somebody so beautiful. Or maybe they thought that such a beautiful girl would be too spoiled." Then Sue said, "Those things may have had something to do with it." I said, "I don't know about the beauty intimidation. But I'm glad I was the one to find out how truly wonderful your personality is." Sue said, "Thank you honey dearest. And as I told you before, I don't know how you managed to stay single." I said, "It doesn't make me comfortable tooting my own horn. But I wonder if that is part of the reason why Zem and Bev are proud of us. Like we might be proud of having a couple attractive, thoroughbred dogs." Sue said, "I know what you mean. They are so highly advanced. Even though they don't seem to view us as pets, I don't know how they couldn't."

I said, "Looking at things through human eyes, there's no doubt a lot we don't understand." Sue said, "No doubt. And as to how proud they may be of us, you know that there are people as attractive as we are on planet Bev." I said, "If there were any girls there as beautiful as you, I didn't see them." Sue said with a more loving, appreciative thought, "Oh, thank you darling!" Then Sue added in her normal, loving thought, "But maybe your love for me makes you see things a little differently." I said, "I think I am being very objective. But I suppose that even if I did somehow manage to see a girl prettier than you, I would still think you were more beautiful." Sue said, "I feel the same way about you my darling."

I said, "Thank you dearest heart." Then I said, "You know, for whatever reason Zem and Bev may be proud of us, for their own sakes, I hope they don't become too attached to us. You know that I have had trouble thinking that I deserve you. But as a human, I have even more trouble believing that I am worthy of them. I really wouldn't want to be the cause of any distress on their part."

Sue said, "I know. I love them both so much too. But given what they said about the evolution of their kind, they no doubt have a superior ability to behave in a pragmatic manner if necessary." I said, "The thought of that doesn't bother me at all. They could cause me to evaporate right now and I would love them forever for what I have already received." Sue said with a highly loving thought, "Oh darling! As long as they evaporate me with you!" I said with a highly loving thought, "I love you so much darling!" Sue said, "I love you so much too darling!" After a few moments of our time frame of absorbing each other's love through our eyes, I said with a normal, loving thought, "I still find it hard to believe the wonderful things Zem and Bev have done for us." Sue said, "Well you know that

152

what seems really nice to us is just commonplace to them. And Bev said that she didn't know what we would do if they decided to do something really nice for us. Though I can't imagine them being any

nicer. Though Zem did say that they have had Panny for thousands of years. But he is so cute and un-advanced. And he actually lives with them. I couldn't imagine them doing the same for us. Apart from seeing our children grow old and die, I don't even want to think of all the other difficulties such a thing could bring about."

I said, "At least I know that our afterlives together will be wonderful darling." Then I said with a more loving tone to my thought, "Just think of it my dearest love. Together forever." Sue said with an equally loving thought, "I know my dearest soul. It almost makes me wish we were dead right now." I said, "I don't know if I would go that far my heartbeat. I will need the rest of my life to try to give you every nice thing in this physical existence that I think you deserve." Sue said with a tender, loving thought, "I hope you don't put me on too high of a pedestal darling." I said, "You're just going to have to live with it my life. Because they don't make a pedestal high enough for me to put you on." Sue said with a highly loving thought, "Oh darling! I have to kiss you!" Then Sue thought to the maketake, "Maketake. End the connection please." Time resumed back to normal. I quickly stuck the tip of my tongue out just enough for it to be visible between my lips. This caused Sue to briefly take on a slight look of loving surprise. Then Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as Sue said verbally, with a highly loving voice, "Oh my love!" Sue launched her lips toward mine. When our lips connected, Sue sucked my tongue in past her lips. Then we started passionately french kissing each other.

Just as it has been the other times we did this, it was wonderful beyond description. But somehow, this time it seemed even better. (Even if we were doing it with a little more firmness than usual) Maybe it was because of all of the loving thoughts we thought while we lovingly looked deep into each other's eyes. Or maybe it was because on top of all that, I still had my penis deep inside Sue's vagina. Whatever the reason, we both moaned with pleasure while we kissed. At the same time, we caressed each other as much as we could. Sue and I also squirmed our bodies together to get them to caress also. Which, with me still inside Sue, made it even more pleasurable. After about thirty seconds or so, our kissing diminished to a more comfortable, passionate kiss. Our tongues also started to caress each other's more slowly, gently and lovingly. Sue and I's caresses also became more tender and loving. The occasional squirming of our bodies together also diminished. We kissed like this for about another minute.

Then I slowly withdrew myself from Sue. This made us both give off slight sighs of pleasure while we kissed.

Then I rolled over to bring Sue on top of me. Being able to now caress Sue more fully made me moan with pleasure again. As did Sue. After a couple minutes, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Sue said, "My darling husband." I said, "My darling wife." We both smiled lovingly at each other. I said, "I take it that you like me darling." This made Sue and then myself laugh. I knew very

well that Sue loved me. After our laughter, we both grinned at each other. Sue said, "I really really like you darling." I said, "Would you be  
153

willing to pinky swear on it again my love?" A more loving look came over Sue's face. Which caused a similar look to come over my face. Sue and I released each other. Then Sue propped herself up on one elbow. Sue and I both brought up our ring hands. Then we grasped each other's pinky fingers. A heightened look of solemn love came over both Sue and I's faces. Sue said, "I pinky swear that I really really really like you my love." I said, "And I pinky swear I'll really really really really like you forever."

We then kissed each other tenderly, yet passionately as we held onto each other's pinky fingers. Our tongues lovingly and tenderly caressed each other's while we kissed. After a bit of this, I noticed that Grabby had stopped moving. I stopped kissing Sue and Sue parted her kiss from mine. Sue backed away enough for us to clearly look into each other's loving faces. I smiled lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. I said, "I think we're back darling." Sue looked off to my left. I did too. Sue saw the same thing I did. Between us and the forlix on that side, I could see a bit of the lawn and field on that side of the house. We could also see a bit of the lakeshore where we watered our houks before we went for our ride on them. I could see a couple of our houks over in the field. The forlix next to ours there was being given treats from a Nal levitating near it with a basket of treats. No doubt the same was being done with Grabby and the other forlix. The Nal wall still blocked the line of sight between us and the house. Sue said, "I suppose we should get dressed darling."

I said, "I suppose so darling." Then I said, "Seeing how the last time you tricked me, you let go of my pinky this time." I then brought up our hands for me to kiss Sue's engagement and wedding ring. As I did so, Sue said with a loving voice, "Ok darling." I kissed Sue's rings. We continued to look at each other lovingly as Sue brought our hands up to her lips. Sue then kissed my wedding ring. As we lowered our hands, we then kissed each other with loving tenderness. I felt Sue released the grip of her pinky finger from mine. So I released Sue's pinky too. When our hands were free, we both again lovingly caressed each other with those hands too. After a few extended moments, Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine and we looked at each other lovingly. Sue then sat up. I briefly looked over Sue's body as I sat up. My dearest sweet love was so beautiful. After setting up, I spread my thighs and Sue went to set between my legs. Though Sue moved my penis out of the way first. Then Sue wrapped her legs around my hips. As Sue and I caressed each other, we looked lovingly into each other's eyes. Sue's eyes were so mesmerizingly beautiful.

My expression then took on more of a look of loving conviction. I said with a tone of loving conviction in my voice, "I love you so much

darling." Sue was looking at me in the same way. As Sue and I more fully embraced each other, Sue also said with a gentle voice full of loving conviction, "I love you so much too darling." We then kissed each other. Our kiss started off with loving tenderness as we lovingly caressed each other. Then our kiss began to turn a little more passionate. After about a minute, I broke off my kiss from Sue and we fully embraced. As we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, I said with a loving voice, "We'll never get dressed at this rate darling." After a couple moments, we parted a little and looked at each other with loving smiles. Sue

154

said, "You're right darling. We have to be strong." We released each other as I said, "Hold on darling." I leaned back and picked up Sue's earrings. Then I sat back up and said as we smiled lovingly at each other, "I'll do these darling." Sue moved the hair back on one side of her head and turned it toward me. I then put that earring in. I gave Sue's earlobe a light kiss afterwards.

We then grinned lovingly at each other. Sue moved her hair back on the other side and turned that side of her head toward me. I then put that earring in and gave that earlobe a light kiss. Sue and I then grinned lovingly at each other again. Then Sue said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, we smiled at each other as we released each other. Sue scooted herself back and put her feet under her. We held each other's hands as Sue stood up. Afterwards, I said, "Help me up darling." This made Sue grin. Which I did too. I put my feet on the blanket as Sue pulled up on my hands. I gave Sue as much help as I figured she needed to lift me. Even then, Sue gave off a cute little grunt of effort. When I stood up, I looked at Sue with an impressed look. Which made Sue's grin widen a bit. I said, "You're strong!" This made Sue beam a grin. I said with a bit of eagerness to my voice, "Show me your muscles darling." Sue lifted her arms up and made muscles. I said with a bit of pride in my voice, "What a girl!" Sue's muscles weren't that impressive. But it was so cute. And it made Sue's breasts look even more unbelievable.

I kissed first one of Sue's biceps, and then the other. Afterwards, Sue lowered her arms and said, "Thank you darling." Then Sue said, "Now show me your muscles again darling." We were both still grinning as I raised up my arms and made muscles. I put it on even more than I did when we were in the underwater observation room. Unlike Sue of course, my muscles were impressive. Even if I do say so myself. They may not have been steroid pumped professional bodybuilder big. But I was better than average. Sue took on an impressed look as she looked me up and down. Then Sue caressed my biceps and triceps. I could detect a bit of pride in Sue's impressed voice as she said, "What a guy!" I let Sue enjoy herself a little. Sue also kissed both of my

biceps. Then I lowered my arms and put them around Sue's lower back. Sue also embraced me the same way as I said with a loving voice, "Do I please you darling?" Then Sue looked at me lovingly as she caressed her hands up and down my back and buttocks. Sue said with a loving voice, "If I answer that darling, we'll never get dressed."

With loving looks on both of our faces, we brought our lips together and kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. We also caressed each other lovingly as we did so. About thirty seconds later or so, we fully embraced. While we gently caressed each other and lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, I said, "Lo." Then Sue backed away from me enough for us to look into each other's faces. Sue had a loving but puzzled look on her face. I smiled lovingly at Sue. Then Sue said, "What does "Lo" mean honey." I said, "It's a minimalist way of saying that I love you more than I can say sweetness." Sue took on a loving expression and fully embraced me again. As we caressed each other, Sue said, "L." (Making the sound. Not pronouncing the letter) While we lovingly caressed the sides of our heads together, I said

155

lovingly, "What does "L" mean dearest." Sue said, "It means that I love you so much darling." This made Sue and I briefly hug and nuzzle each other a little more lovingly. Then I stopped my hand on Sue's back. I raised my index finger and slapped it back down on Sue's back.

Sue stopped her hands. Then Sue said, "Does (then Sue raised her index finger and slapped it down on my back too. Sue then added) mean something darling?" I said, "Yes darling. It means that I love every dimension in which you exist." Sue said in a highly loving voice, "Oh darling." Sue then did a sort of drum roll with her fingers of both hands (except for her thumbs) on my back. This caused me to chuckle. Which Sue quickly joined in on. We parted enough to look into each other's faces and joyfully share in each other's laughter. Afterwards, both of us wore an expression of utter happiness. I did a drum roll with my fingers of each hand on Sue's back too. After I did so, I said, "Goes for me too darling. But remember, we have to be strong and get dressed." We were both still grinning as Sue said, "Ok darling." Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, I took a look around. Sue did too. Over the back of the forlix next to us, we both spotted the bartok sitting near their fire and eating food about three or four hundred yards away. None of them were paying any attention to us. Sue said, "It looks like the bartok made it." I said, "I hope they didn't mind seeing us naked."

This made Sue chuckle a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Sue said, "I don't think they can see much detail at that distance. But being naked themselves, I doubt if they gave it much thought." I said, "Would you go take a quick peak around the wall and see if anybody is about?" Sue said, "Ok sweetie." We gave each other a quick peck on



the lips. After parting, we both still grinned. Then Sue happily scampered over to the left edge of the Nal wall. I watched Sue as I picked up her pants to straighten out a little. So it would be easier for her to put them back on. Then Sue put her hands on the edge of it and leaned over to look around the corner. From any angle, Sue was so beautiful. It thrilled me to see Sue do this. After Sue looked around the corner for a moment, I heard Pim's thoughts. Apparently answering a telepathic question of Sue's, he said, "Just hanging around." I dropped Sue's pants and happily scampered over to Sue as Sas said, "It's as good a place as any." Then I put my hands on Sue's shoulders and leaned over with a big grin on my face to look around the side of the Nal wall too.

Pim, Mim, San and Pam were floating in pairs up about thirty feet in front of Grabby. Tal and Sas were a little closer. They apparently had taken over levitating treats to Grabby from the maketake Nal. Though the other Nal that had been doing so were still nearby. From where we were, I could see the gazebo over the house. But I didn't see any sign of Zem, Bev, Mav or Til. I knew that one of the bedrooms was behind the glass of the upper story. But the glass had become reflective. Probably like a two way mirror. Making it impossible to see through it. If I had to guess, I would say that Mav and Til were probably in the bedroom. They may have even noticed our arrival. Looking back at our Nal friends, I said, "How long have you guys been there." Pam said, "Not long. But don't worry. We weren't spying." Then Pim added in a kidding around

156

thought, "Much." This made Sue and I laugh. We could also feel telepathic humor from our Nal friends. Knowing what we knew of the Nal, they wouldn't really have much need to spy. But even if they did, being far beyond human, it probably wouldn't mean too much to them. Besides, if it was really their intention to spy, they would no doubt have been considerate enough to be less obvious about it. Sue said happily, "Well be dressed in a minute!"

Sue and I ducked back around the back of the Nal wall and grinned happily at each other. Then Sue and I took hold of each other's hand as Sue said, "Come on darling!" We then happily scampered back over to our clothing. When we reached them, we both started to pick up articles of clothing and put them back on. After we both got our underwear and pants on. Sue started to put on her bra as I started to put on my shirt. Then Sue turned her smile to me and said, "Do me up sweetheart." As usual, Sue looked so alarmingly wonderful when she held her breasts in the cups of her bra. I was of course smiling myself as I stepped over behind Sue. At the same time, Sue turned her back to me. I made sure my dear sweet love's bra straps were straight on her shoulders. Then I fastened the clasp on the back of Sue's bra. After I did so, I gave Sue a quick kiss on her left shoulder. Then I

embraced Sue from behind. We both lightly closed our eyes with pleased, loving smiles on our faces as I slid my hands around Sue front. With one arm going around Sue's breasts and the other going across Sue's stomach. Sue caressed my arms as I did so. I also caressed my cheek on the side of Sue's head too. Sue brought up a hand to caress the other side of my face as we lovingly and gently caressed our cheeks together.

After a few moments of this, Sue said with a soft, tender voice that was just dripping with love, "We better get through dressing darling." I slowly opened my eyes and said with a soft loving voice, "Whatever you say my love." Then I gave Sue a kiss on her cheek. I then slowly withdrew my arms from around Sue. We briefly gave each other loving smiles as Sue turned around. Then Sue bent down to pick up her top. Sue slipped on her top as I finished buttoning up my shirt. I didn't finish buttoning it up when I said, "Let me help you with your socks and slippers darling." I knelt down and picked up Sue's socks and slippers. Sue steadied herself with a hand on my shoulder as I first put a sock and slipper on Sue's one foot. Then I did the same with Sue's other foot. When I was through, I stood up. As we smiled at each other, Sue said, "Thank you darling." Sue and I then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue said, "Let me get yours darling." Sue knelt down and started putting on my socks and shoes. When Sue was through with my socks and shoes, I took Sue's hands and helped her stand again. As we stood and held hands, I said, "Thank you darling." Sue said, "You're welcome dearest."

We gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Then we parted with a smile. I finished doing up my shirt. Sue went over and picked up the pad of paper and pen. Then Sue sat the pad of paper off to the side of the blanket. The pen, Sue just tossed over near the tray. Then Sue started folding the blanket. As I tucked in my shirt tail, I said, "Hold on a second honey, I'll help you." I stepped over to the other edge of the blanket as I finished doing up my pants. Sue and I picked up the edge of the blanket and brought it forward. Then we went to the other

157

end. Afterwards, we went back to the ends of the blanket and folded that over too. Sue and I then went to the opposite sides of the blanket and folded them over to make a neat stack of the blanket. Though it still held the tray, the pen and Panny and Lika's empty little glasses inside. Then Sue went over and picked up our pad of paper. Sue then came back over to me as we smiled at each other. Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. We then put an arm around each other's lower backs and walked over to the Nal wall. Then Sue looked at the Nal wall and said, "We won't be needing you anymore." The Nal wall turned back into a normal Nal. It then started moving toward the back of the house. I still didn't see Zem,

Bev, Mav or Til anywhere. Sue looked at our Nal friends and thought to them. This time, I could hear Sue's thoughts. Sue gestured to the blanket with a hand and said, "Could one of you guys dispose of that please." Pim, Mim, San and Pam quickly came in our direction. Tal and Sas stopped what they were doing and came with them. The other maketake Nal nearby took over their basket of treats for them. Tal and Sas kept going to the blanket. They said telepathically in unison as they made the blanket disappear, "We'd be happy to." It only took them a moment. As they raised back up and headed toward the others, Sue said, "Thank you." As Sue and I smiled at our Nal, Sue said verbally, "Have you guys ever been so happy you feel like you could explode?" All the Nal couples began to circle around the surfaces of their partners at differing angles. Mim said with a sweet, verbal voice, "That's a silly question." We all chuckled verbally a bit. Then Sue said to them, "I'm so happy, I could hug and kiss you all. But I'm afraid that Erik and I aren't as clean as you deserve right now."

San said, "You don't need to worry about us. We can clean ourselves easier than we can levitate. And it takes no effort at all to levitate." Pim then said, "It's not as though you were Firume or something anyway." Sas said, "We would be happy to clean you if you would like." Pam said, "It would make us feel useful." Sue said, "You sweet dears are more than just useful. You can give us a little light cleaning if you like." Our Nal friends separated and came toward Sue and I. Pim, San and Tal came over to me. Mim, Pam and Sas went over to Sue. They stopped at about a foot from us and moved around our heads and shoulders a bit. As they did so, I could feel that slight tingling on the skin of most of my upper body. Just like when we had a maketake clean us. After a couple moments, they retreated some from us and floated as couples nearby. I said, "You guys give us even more reason to envy the Reall." Responding to what I said, San said, "For us guys, thank you." Mim said, "For us girls, thank you. You're so sweet." Sue smiled at me and handed me the pad of paper. Sue said, "Would you hold this for a moment darling?" I took it and said, "Sure my sweet."

Sue then turned back to our Nal friends and said, "Now that we're clean enough, please turn into fuzzy hearts and give me a hug." Then Sue held her arms out and apart a bit to them. Keeping their chosen colors, they all turned into fuzzy heart shapes. Then they swooped in and landed on Sue. Pim and Mim were between Sue's cheeks and neck. Tal and Sas were just below Sue's chin. Pam was next to Tal on Sue's shoulder and San was next to Sas on Sue's other shoulder. Sue lightly closed her eyes with the happiest look on her face

158

and caressed around all of them. I took in this heartwarming sight for a few moments with a sentimental smile on my face. Then I said, with a sentimental voice, "I would love to have a picture of this." Pim

said with a sentimental thought, "Don't worry. We can create one."

Then Sue opened her eyes and smiled sweetly at me. I moved to stand in front of Sue facing her. As I did so, I said, "Don't hog them all dearest." Then I embraced Sue and our Nal friends. Though I held the pad of paper and pen in one hand. I sat the side of my head so Mim would be between Sue and I's heads. Sue and I had our eyes lightly closed with happy, sentimental smiles on our faces. After a moment, I said verbally, "Who would like to levitate us to the ground." All of our Nal friends answered telepathically and in perfect unison. They said, "We would." I couldn't sense any sensation of movement. Out of curiosity, while we hugged, both Sue and I opened our eyes a little as the Nal levitated us off the back of Grabby. They brought us down just in front of and between the heads of Grabby and the other forlix that was to the left of it. We were being brought down where the shorter grass began.

## Chapter Eight Post Forlix Ride

As we were being brought down, I could see through the glass on the lower floor. I still didn't see Zem, Bev Mav or Til anywhere. As our feet touched the ground, Grabby and the forlix to his right of touched us with the ends of a trunk. Of course, they also kneaded us a little with the short appendages at the ends of their trunks. Sue and I both parted with big smiles on our faces. I took a couple steps back from Sue as the forlix stopped touching. They moved their trunks to other treats that the Nal feeding them levitated near them. Sue took hold of Mim and Pim and said, "Thank you guys." Our other Nal friends stayed attached to Sue as Sue gave both Pim and Mim a quick kiss. Then Sue held them out from her. Sue held them next to each other with her arms slightly raised and released them. I said to them, "Would you hold this for me please." Pim said, "Sure" as Sue reached for Tal and Sas. Pim and Mim floated up a little with the pad levitating about six inches below them. As they went, they retracted their fur, but kept their heart shapes. Just as they had done on planet Bev, they rotated in a stationary, horizontal position as they touched. They were closer together when their slightly rounded fronts or backs were in contact. Or they would be like two hearts side by side when their sides were touching. Sue started to cuddle Tal and Sas against her cheeks.

As Sue did so, Sue said to Tal and Sas as she cuddled them, "I'm so glad we'll be able to spend more time together on planet Bev." As I went to take San and Pam off of Sue, Mim said, "Your letter is beautiful." I smiled up at them briefly and said, "Thank you." Sas said to Sue as I brought San and Pam to my cheeks, "I'm sure we'll have many pleasant times together." As I cuddled San and Pam against my cheeks, I said, "Pam, you're so soft." I was only being polite. Because Pam wasn't really any softer than any of the other Nal. Pam

said, "Thank you. You're such a sweetie." At the same time, Tal said to Sue, "We'll have to be careful though. We wouldn't want to make the humans there jealous." As Tal spoke, I said to San, "You're a lucky guy San." Sue gave Tal and Sas a quick peck of a kiss and held them out a little. Sue said, "Whatever you say." As they floated up out of Sue's hands, San said to me, "Pam is such a dream." As Tal and Sas rose up, they retracted their fur and rotated next to each other just like Pim and Mim were doing.

I gave Pam a quick kiss. Then I handed them to Sue. As I did so I said, "You can give San a kiss." As Sue went to take them, I added, "I wouldn't want him to think I'm gay." Sue and the rest of our Nal laughed verbally. Which I quickly joined in on. After a few moments of laughter, Sue gave Pam and San a quick kiss. Then Sue held them out. Pam started to float upward. But San quickly retracted his fur and made a grinning mouth appear on his surface that faced Sue. It made Sue grin too. Then San turned and made his grin turn to smoochie lips. San quickly came over to my cheek and gave me a fairly loud smooch on my cheek. I got a surprised look on my face as he levitated away. At the same time, he said in the gayest gay voice, "Don't be silly Erik!" I got a disgusted look on my face as I wiped away San's kiss. As everybody started laughing, I said, "Ew! Yuk!" This caused the laughter to increase. I then joined in on their laughter. Sue and I put an arm around each other and looked up at the Nal as we laughed. San and Pam were at this point rotating next to each other. All the Nal were doing so a little more quickly than normal.

After the laughter, Sue said to our Nal with a mirth filled voice, "You guys can be so funny!" San said with an amused voice, "We have our moments." The Nal resumed their normal shape. But as couples, they circled around the surface of their partners at differing angles. Tal, Sas, San and Pam apparently read what I had written on the pad of paper too. Sas said with a sentimental voice, "Your letter is beautiful indeed." Sue and I grinned at each other briefly as we gave each other a little extra firm embrace with the arm we had around each other. Then we returned our attention back to the Nal. I said to Sas, "Thank you." Tal said, "I wish I had written it." San said to Pam with a loving voice, "I want your multidimensional field patterns to be my destiny too darling." Pam said with a verbal voice of love, "Oh darling!" Then Pam extruded a number of tendrils over San's surface. San did the same thing to Pam as they began to glow. (As was apparently usual with the Nal, these tendrils slightly moved from side to side. Sending waves of the undulations up the length of the tendrils) Then they began to orbit next to each other as they moved off.

Sue and I briefly smiled sentimentally at each other. Then we turned our sentimental smiles back to them as we leaned the sides of our heads together. Sue and I were glad that my letter brought them

some joy. After a few moments, I lifted my head from Sue's and looked over to the left. Sue did too. We could see the rest of the houks now as they grazed in the field. The pregnant female and her mate were being affectionate to each other. We could also see the bartok farther away. The young female and the toddler were running around just outside the group. They were brandishing their weapons as they did so. Then Sue's expression took on a bit of a look of concern. Sue turned this concerned

160

look to Pim, Mim, Tal and Sas. Sue said, "The young female bartok running around with her weapon. Is there much chance she might fall and hurt herself?" Pim said, "It's possible." Tal said, "Sas and I will go over and caution them." Sue said, "Thank you. I wouldn't want her getting something worse than a broken arm."

Tal and Sas parted a bit and rose up a little. Then they moved at lightening speed and stopped over by the bartok. The young female and toddler stopped what they were doing and looked at Tal and Sas. The other bartok stopped what they were doing. They quickly bowed on their knees and lowered their faces to the ground in Tal and Sas's direction. The young female and the toddler did the same. Then Sas turned herself into a duplicate of Sue. The clothes she wore were a shimmering silver colored cloth. It was fairly loose fitting and hung to the ground. This garment was also cinched in a little around the waist with a wide belt of the same cloth. Tal transformed himself into a rectangular screen. Both Sue and I had looks of surprise come over our faces. Sue said with some surprise, "What are Sas and Tal doing!" Mim said, "Tal is going to show the bartok what could happen if the young female wasn't careful and fell on her weapon. Seeing how the concern came from you, Sas turned herself into a likeness of you to relay your concern." Sue and I smiled up at Mim and Pim. Sue said, "That's so sweet!"

Sue and I briefly grinned at each other. Then we turned our grins back to Pim and Mim. Then Sue said, "Would you turn yourselves into Erik and I?" Pim said, "Sure." They came down to a few feet in front of us. The pad of paper that Pim levitated below him moved off to the side and away from us. Then Pim and Mim transformed themselves into exact duplicates of Sue and I. The likeness was astonishing. Both Sue and I both took on surprised looks again as we looked at our smiling, other selves. Then Sue and I grinned. Pim-me and Mim-Sue grinned also. Sue said, "It's amazing!" Mim-Sue said in Sue's voice, "You know us. We're full of surprises." Pim-me said in my voice, "It isn't much different than when we experienced each other as you both in virtual reality. Except here, we're clothed." Sue and I laughed as we went up to our other selves and gave them a hug. Not surprisingly, Pim-me even felt lifelike. We parted our hug and grinned at each other. Sue said, "You can walk us to the entrance."

Pim-me and I grinned at them. Mim-Sue said, "Ok." Mim-Sue and Sue put an arm around each other's lower backs. Pim-me and I placed a hand on each other's opposite shoulder. Then we started walking toward the right side of the house as we grinned at our duplicates. The pad of paper levitated along with us. The Nal that were levitating treats out of their baskets to the forlix began to use them to turn the forlix. No doubt to lead them back out into the field. I said to Pim-me, "I take it that the others are in their bedrooms somewhere enjoying each other's company." Pim-me said, "That's right. It was a wonderful question that you posed to us guys." Mim-Sue and Sue were grinning at us. Mim-Sue said to me, "You're such a dear." At this point, Tal and Sas returned near us. We all grinned at them. Sas said to Sue as Tal levitated the pad of paper over near Sas, "The bartok of course expressed appreciation for your concern." Sue said,

161

"Thank you both. You're such sweethearts." Sue then turned her grin to Mim-Sue and said, "At least you probably can clean yourselves easily even in our form. But I had better get Erik cleaned up more."

Then Sue added in a kidding around voice, "He's such a dirty boy." This caused us all to laugh. Then I said to Sue with a big grin, "Lucky for me darling, you can be pretty naughty yourself." This caused us all to laugh a little more. Afterwards, Sue said to Mim-Sue, "I don't know what you Nal do. But is Pim a naughty boy sometimes?" Sas said, "Oh, yuk!" She and Tal quickly moved off toward the back of the house with the pad of paper levitating below them. Pim-me and I and Mim-Sue and Sue laughed as they went. Apparently just like humans, Sas wasn't interested in hearing about her parent's sex lives. It was so cute. After the laughter, Mim-Sue said, "Oh yes. Pim can be very naughty at times. And I love it so." Pim-me said to the rest of us, "And I love it when Mim is naughty" We all grinned at each other as Sue said, "I'm so very happy for you both." Sue and I gave our other selves a brief extra hug with the arm we had around them. Which Mim-Sue and Pim-me returned. As we approached the entrance, Sue asked Mim-Sue, "Which bathroom can Erik and I use."

Mim-Sue briefly raised her arm to point at the second door on the other side of the glass wall. As Mim-Sue did so, she said, "The bathroom behind the second door will be free." Sue said, "Thank you." We reached the entrance to the kitchen area at this point and stopped. All of us then released each other. Sue and I came together as Pim-me and Mim-Sue stepped toward each other. They smiled lovingly at each other as Sue and I smiled at them. Then they kissed and embraced each other. Giving each other loving caresses as they kissed. This caused sentimental looks to accompany Sue and I's smiles. We leaned the sides of our heads together. Watching them kiss was like watching ourselves kiss. It was a beautiful sight. After a few moments, Pim-me and Mim-Sue transformed into their normal shape. As they did so,

their arms also turned into slowly undulating tendrils on each other's surfaces. Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other. Then we embraced each other and gave each other a loving, tender kiss. Of course, giving each other loving caresses as we did so.

After about thirty seconds, Pim and Mim withdrew their tendrils and started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. They started moving slowly toward the back of the house as they did so. Sue and I kissed each other for about another thirty seconds. Then we slowly parted our kiss and lovingly looked at each other. I said lovingly, "I'm so happy that you're my babe." Sue said lovingly, "And I'm so happy that you're my hunk." We then kissed each other again and lovingly caressed each other more. After about thirty seconds or so, we slowly parted our kiss and briefly looked at each other lovingly. Then we smiled at each other lovingly. Sue and I then slid an arm farther around each other's lower backs as we held each other's forearms in front. We also leaned the sides of our heads together as we walked toward the kitchen door with loving, contented smiles on our faces. The door slid open as we got to it. The kitchen here was pretty much like Zem and Bev's place on planet Bev. Sue and I turned to the right to head down the hallway. If you could even call it a hallway, with the glass wall on the right.

162

Sue and I had seen through the side and back glass walls as we walked up to the door that Zem, Bev, Mav and Til weren't behind the house. But we did see Panny and Lika sitting on the outer edge of the gazebo that sat in the lake. They were looking through a couple of the railings down into the water. I smiled at Sue and said, "I wonder if Panny and Lika are looking at anything interesting." Sue smiled at me too and said, "Could be." Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas were just hanging around behind the house at the outer edge of the ceiling. Each Nal couple were circling around their partners surfaces at differing angles. Sue and I then smiled at each other. When we reached the second door in the opaque section of the wall, the door to the bathroom opened. Sue and I stepped inside. The bathroom was pretty much like the one Sue and I used in the main beach house back on planet Bev. I suppose there wasn't much need to mess with a design that worked. The double sinks and the large mirror on the other side of them were on the right side of the room. There was a maketake to the right of the mirror.

About two feet to the left of the cabinet that held the sinks was a toilet. To the left of it a few feet was a tall cabinet. A couple feet farther was a larger than normal bathtub with enough edge to sit on any side. To the left of the tub there was another door. I took it that this led to another bathroom. On the wall to the left, just about opposite from the tall cabinet, there was another door. I took it that



this led to one of the bedrooms. Sue and I walked over to the maketake machine. When we reached it, Sue faced me and embraced me a little. I also embraced Sue a little. Sue then gave me a big squeeze around the middle. This made me laugh. Sue laughed too. I knew just what Sue was up to. After the laughter, I said in a mirth filled voice, "Are you trying to squeeze the crap out of me again honey?" Sue pursed her lips together and nodded her head a few times in the affirmative. At the same time, Sue hummed in the affirmative, "Um hum!" This made me laugh again. Which Sue quickly joined in on. As we laughed, we fully embraced each other. After the laughter, I said, "I don't think there's much in there after this morning."

Then we parted and held each other in a loose embrace. As we grinned at each other, I said, "You know honey, one of these days I'm probably going to see you poop for real." This caused us both to chuckle a little. Afterwards, Sue said, "We'll cross that bridge when we come to it sweetie. But I'm not looking forward to having you see my poopy face." Sue then briefly made a face like she was straining to defecate. This made me laugh again. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After this levity, I said, "I've never tried an up the butt thing. Nor do I have any wish to. Or you wouldn't probably be having much trouble pooping at all." This made us both laugh a bit. Then Sue said, "You're probably right." We both then chuckled a little. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After we parted our kiss, Sue turned her smile to the maketake machine and said, "Maketake. Fecal matter removal for two please." We then smiled at each other again. I could feel a slight sensation of something disappearing from my intestines. Afterwards, I said, "Thank you sweetie." Sue said, "You're welcome dearest."

We then gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, I parted

163

from Sue a little and said, "Let me make you the way I like you darling." We both smiled lovingly at each other lovingly as I started to pull up on Sue's shirt. Sue released me and raised her arms above her head. As Sue did so, Sue said, "Don't you like me with cloths on darling?" We both grinned as I said, "I love you more than I can say with clothes on darling." As I pulled Sue's top up her arms, I added, "I just like you a tiny bit more without them." Having taken Sue's top off, Sue left her arms up and laid her forearms on top of her head. As I went to put Sue's top into the take alcove, Sue looked at me with a more loving expression and said, "This is the first time we've ever gotten undressed together in the bathroom darling." Having put Sue's top into the take alcove, I looked at Sue with a more loving expression too. As I reached around Sue to undo Sue's bra, I said, "It's going to be just as wonderful after a thousand times darling."

I unclasped Sue's bra and Sue lowered her arms. As I removed Sue's bra, a little more loving look came over my face as Sue's large, firm and succulent breasts came into view. Sue said lovingly, "It will be for me too darling." I put Sue's bra into the take alcove. When I turned back to Sue, both of us wore expressions of solemn love. I caressed Sue's breasts and said, "Your breasts are so wonderful darling." Sue said lovingly, "Thank you darling." I then caressed my hands up to Sue's shoulders. Sue then began to unbutton my shirt. I caressed my hands down Sue's arms and released her. Then I started to unbutton my cuffs. When Sue opened my shirt, Sue's expression took on a little more of a pleased look. I pulled my shirt up out of my pants. Then Sue lovingly took my shirt off me. Sue then took my shirt and tossed it into the take alcove. We smiled at each other lovingly as we undid each other's pants. When they were undone, I started to kneel down as I pulled Sue's pants and panties down. The sight of Sue's wonderful muff was, as always, a delight. I paused briefly as I knelt to caress my hands up Sue's thighs.

Then I nuzzled the side of my nose into Sue's pubic hair as I fondled Sue's butt. I breathed in deeply in hopes of catching the slightest hint of Sue's natural body scent. Sue lovingly ran her fingers through my hair with a pleased, loving look on her face. After a few moments of this, I parted from Sue a little. Sue stopped caressing my head and I took off Sue's socks and slippers. While I held Sue's foot to take them off, I also slipped Sue's foot out from her pants and panties. When I got everything off, I gathered up Sue's things and stood up. We smiled at each other lovingly as Sue said, "Thank you darling." I said, "You're welcome my love." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, we smiled lovingly at each other again. Then I turned to put Sue's things into the take alcove. I then faced Sue again. As we held onto each other, Sue said, "You can take my earrings too darling." I said, "Ok darling." Sue turned the side of her head toward me as I caressed her hair back. As I began to take off Sue's earring, I said, "These are cute darling. But you know they get in the way of me giving your ears some love."

As Sue moved her hair and turned her head for me to get the other earring, Sue said, "Bev doesn't wear them anyway. I won't wear them if you don't want me to." I said, "They aren't that much of a bother darling." Then I tossed the earrings into the take alcove. I then gave Sue a look of solemn love. Sue looked

164

at me in the same way as I added, "Besides. I want whatever you want." Sue said with a highly loving voice, "Oh my love!" We then embraced each other more as we kissed each other passionately. Both of us giving off little moans of pleasure here and there as we did so. After about thirty seconds, Sue caressed her hands down between my butt and my pants. Pulling my pants down as she went. Sue ran her

hands around to the front of my pants and pulled them down there too. Apparently, giving my genitals a little caress as she did so was too much to resist. After pulling my pants down some, we parted a little and looked at each other lovingly. Then Sue began to kneel down. Sue pulled my pants and underwear down further. Of course, Sue looked at my genitals with pleasure as she did so.

After getting my pants lowered, Sue did the same thing I had done to her. Sue caressed her hands up my thighs. Then Sue began to fondle my butt as she nuzzled the side of her nose into my genitals. Sue also breathed in deeply to catch any hint of my natural bodily scent. After a few moments, Sue ceased her enjoyment and took off my shoes, socks and pants just like I had done with her. Then Sue gathered my things up and began to stand. I gently held my dear sweet love's shoulders and helped Sue stand. We looked at each other lovingly as I said, "Thank you darling." Sue said, "You're welcome my love." We then kissed each other lovingly. After a few moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. I released Sue's shoulders and Sue turned to the maketake. Then Sue put my things into the take alcove and thought for it to take. As usual, the items fairly quickly faded out of existence. Sue moved back over toward me and we held each other in a loose embrace. Both of course were smiling lovingly at each other. I said, "Do you think we need to shower darling?"

Sue said, "I don't think so honey. But we can just clean up a little. I don't want to keep Bev and Zem and Til and Mav waiting in case they finish before us." Then Sue looked at the maketake machine. Things started to appear on the make alcove. We released each other and Sue reached for what appeared. Sue took out four towels and a couple washcloths. Then Sue handed them to me and said, "Here ya go sweetie. Put a couple towels on the floor in front of the sinks." I took them and said, "Ok honey." We then gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Then I took these things and brought them over to the sinks as Sue ordered up some other things. I placed a couple towels on the floor. Though I paused for a moment with the second towel as Sue placed some deodorant and body powder on the counter. I went back over to Sue and she handed me a couple glassed and toothbrushes. The toothbrushes already had toothpaste on them. I took these to the sinks and sat them down too. The toothbrushes I sat across the top of the glasses. Then I went back over to Sue and Sue handed me more things. These I brought over to the sinks too.

Sue and I went through this process until we had everything we needed. As Sue and I stood in front of the sinks, we held each other in a loose embrace as we smiled at each other. I said, "Would you like to help me pee again darling?" Sue said, "Of course my cummy bear." This new term of endearment made me laugh a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the laughter, I said, "You're

my cummy bear too darling.” We then gave each other a loving kiss as we embraced and caressed a little more. Though our kiss soon turned more passionate. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other’s. About a minute later, we parted our kiss and fully embraced each other. After a few extended moments of lovingly embracing and caressing each other, I said with a loving voice, “At this rate darling, we’ll never get cleaned up.” Sue said with a loving voice, “You’re right darling.” We parted our embrace and smiled at each other lovingly. Then we put an arm around each other’s lower backs as we held each other’s forearms in front. Sue and I also leaned the sides of our heads together as we headed to the toilet.

I thought for the toilet seats to raise. We stopped in front of the toilet and Sue took hold of my penis. Sue aimed it at the toilet and said with a loving voice, “Ready darling.” After a moment, I started to pee. Sue directed the stream right into the middle of the toilet. As I went, I said, “I’m glad you’re so good at this darling.” Sue lovingly nuzzled my shoulder a little with her cheek and said, “Thanks to you darling.” I also nuzzled near the top of Sue’s head with my cheek. When I was through peeing, Sue shook me a little to remove any remnants. Afterwards, Sue released me and we looked at each other with pleased smiles. I said, “Thank you darling.” Sue said, “My pleasure darling.” We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, I said, “Do you need to go too darling?” Sue said, “Yes my love.” Sue turned to the toilet and thought to it. The lower toilet seat began to lower. As it did so, I stepped aside and said to Sue, “You don’t think it’s a little kinky for us to help each other pee do you honey bunch.” We held each other’s hands as Sue went to set down. As Sue did so, Sue said, “Maybe a little darling.”

Then I went to kneel in front of Sue as Sue added, “But I like being a little kinky with you darling.” Sue sat on the toilet with her legs spread slightly apart. I knelt in between Sue’s knees and held Sue’s outer labia apart a little with my thumbs. Sue rested her hands on my shoulders as I said, “Ready darling.” After a moment, Sue started to pee. As usual, I found it very interesting and enjoyable. I said, “You know darling, until I performed oral sex on you, I always thought women peed and ejaculated from the tip of their clitoris. But it actually comes out just below it.” I smiled lovingly up at Sue. Sue smiled lovingly at me too as I added, “I just love discovering how you work.” Sue said, “When we were doing the whipped cream thing, I checked out something I had heard about.” As Sue started to finish peeing, Sue added, “I held the end of your wiener apart with a couple of fingers and saw that I could look right down your urethra like a tube. That was interesting too.” When Sue was through peeing, I said, “Shall I bidet you darling.” Sue said, “Yes please darling.”

I then looked down at the toilet and thought to it. Just like the last time I did this, a tube came out of the upper front of the toilet rim.

I held Sue's inner labia open. When the tube was extended, it squirted water up inside Sue. When I thought Sue was clean enough, I thought for the bidet to turn off. Then I released Sue and said, "All clean darling." Sue said, "Thank you darling." Then Sue leaned forward a bit. We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, I leaned over a little and took a couple of the kleenex like sheets of

166

toilet paper. Then I daubed Sue dry. After dropping the paper in the toilet, Sue and I smiled at each other as I stood up. Taking Sue's hands, I then helped Sue stand. As I did so, I said, "I just love the way you can make an unpleasant task seem wonderful darling." Sue said, "I feel the same way about you darling." We gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed back to the sinks. Once there, we released each other and turned toward the sinks.

Sue picked up some dental floss and pulled out a strand. As Sue did so, we smiled at each other in the mirror as Sue said, "I usually do this. But I've been being a little lazy lately." As Sue cut off a piece, I reached for it and said, "I think I'll join you darling." Sue handed me the floss container and I pulled out a length of floss for myself. We then both flossed our teeth. After setting our used floss on the counter top, we picked up our toothbrushes and brushed. When we were through with that, we spat in the sink and sat our toothbrushes down. Then we gave each other toothpaste smeared grins in the mirror. Both of us knew that it was time for the fun, slippery toothpaste kiss. Sue and I turned to each other and gave each other a loving kiss. With some minty fresh tongue action going on of course. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue said, "I love you darling." I said, "I love you too darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After that, we turned back to the sinks, spit out a little more and washed off the excess toothpaste. Then we got some water from the sinks and gargled.

When we were through with that, I said, "This is the part I really like." I wetted down a washcloth and put a little soap on it. Sue and I turned to each other and smiled lovingly at each other. As I started cleaning around Sue's face. Even though it wasn't really necessary after our Nal had cleaned us some. Sue said, "You just love spoiling me. Don't you darling." I stopped cleaning Sue briefly and said, "You know it my love." Then I gave Sue a quick peck on the lips. Sue then went back to smiling as I cleaned more. After Sue's face and part of her neck, I cleaned around a little around Sue's breasts. Then I cleaned around Sue's armpits. When I was through with that, I said, "You can rinse your face off darling." As Sue bent over her sink to do so, I rinsed the soap out of my washcloth. When we were both through, I wiped Sue

down with the washcloth. After that, I again rinsed out the washcloth and put a little more soap on it. Then I turned back to Sue and said, "Move your feet apart a little darling." Sue did as I asked, then I cleaned Sue down below. After I was through, I rinsed out the washcloth again. Then I went back to wipe Sue down again.

After I was finished, I sat the washcloth aside and picked up a towel. Then I dried Sue off. Starting at the top and working my way down. When I was through, I sat the towel aside as we looked at each other lovingly. I said with a loving voice as we held each other in a loose embrace, "There darling. You're clean enough for me." Sue caressed a hand down to my genitals as we started to look at each other more passionately. Sue said lovingly as she caressed my genitals, "I'll always be dirty for you darling." I gave out a moan of pleasure as we both beckoned each other with our lips. We didn't keep each other waiting

167

long. Quickly, we were kissing each other passionately again. Though I didn't hold my dearest love too closely. So Sue could have room to fondle me. Both of us also gave off moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. After about thirty seconds, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. At the same time, Sue also caressed her hand away from my genitals. Then Sue said lovingly, "It's my turn darling." We parted and Sue wetted down the other washcloth.

This whole cleaning process then basically repeated itself as Sue cleaned me. When it got to the point of Sue cleaning my genitals, Sue took a little time to fully enjoy my soapy testicles with her bare hand. As Sue did so, I said with love on my face and in my voice, "You have a nice wifely touch darling." Sue smiled at me lovingly and said with a loving voice, "And you have a nice husbandly touch darling." We then lovingly kissed each other. Both of these actions together caused me to become aroused. Which pleased Sue. Sue looked at me passionately and said, "Time for another quicky darling." I of course was looking at Sue passionately too as I said, "Oh darling. You're so good to me." Sue said, "Hold on darling." Then Sue rinsed out the washcloth. Sue then wiped the soap off my genitals. As Sue did so, Sue said with a passionate voice, "This time darling, I want to try it doggy style." I said with a passionate voice, "Whatever you say my love." When Sue was through, she stopped what she was doing and sat the washcloth on the counter. Then Sue leaned forward against the counter and stuck her butt out.

I moved behind Sue as we looked at each other passionately in the mirror. Then I looked at Sue's wonderful behind. The sight of Sue's wonderful muff from behind, so to speak, stiffened my resolve. Then I took hold of my penis and slowly inserted it to where it need to go. Looks of ecstasy came over our faces and we both moaned with

pleasure. I started off fairly slowly. But as Sue said, we had to make this a quicky. So I slowly began to speed up my actions. Soon, I was going at Sue like a mad dog. My hips were slapping against Sue's butt. Through a haze of ecstasy, I could see Sue's breasts jiggling wonderfully in the mirror. After about a forty seconds or so, Sue started giving off orgasmic cries of ecstasy. But I was merciless. Oh how I loved seeing Sue's look of orgasmic ecstasy in the mirror. I had quite a look of ecstasy on my face as well. About twenty seconds later, I gave out my own orgasmic cries of ecstasy. I slowed down my actions as we both moaned with ecstasy. After about another twenty seconds, I stopped my actions and leaned over Sue a little and caressed my hands around her.

Sue leaned up a little and I caressed my hands around Sue's breasts. Then Sue stood up a little more and caressed my forearms with one hand and the side of my head with her other hand. Through a haze of spent ecstasy, as we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, we briefly looked at each other in the mirror before lightly closing our eyes again and letting ourselves be taken away with the pleasure. After a few moments, I said gently with a highly loving voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue said with a gentle, highly loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." We enjoyed holding each other like this for nearly a minute. Then I withdrew myself from Sue. We both gave off slight sighs of

168

pleasure. Then Sue stood erect and turned. We looked at each other with loving passion on our faces. Then Sue stuck the tip of her tongue out far enough for it to be visible between her lips. My eyes glazed over with love as I said, "Oh darling!" I then brought my lips to Sue's and sucked her tongue in past my lips. Then we started French kissing each other passionately. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. We also caressed each other more. Which as usual, at times, included caressing each other's butts.

After kissing for at least a minute, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Sue said lovingly, "That was wonderful darling. But I don't know what all the fuss is about with doggy style." I said, "That was my first time doing it doggy style too my love. But it wouldn't have been as nice without the mirror." Sue said, "I know what you mean darling. I just love looking at you when we make love." This caused Sue and I to start kissing passionately again. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss again and looked at each other lovingly. Then I said lovingly, "You know I'm going to have to bidet you again darling." Sue said, "Oh goodie!" and grinned. I grinned too. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, Sue said, "But first, I need to finish cleaning my husband meat again." This made me laugh. Which Sue quickly joined

in on. Afterwards, I said with an amused tone to my voice, "Whatever you say darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue and I grinned again afterwards. Then Sue and I parted. Sue went back over to the sink and rinsed out her washcloth again.

As Sue did so, I said, "If we had gone with oral sex, it would have meant brushing our teeth again." We smiled lovingly at each other in the mirror as Sue said, "We were bound to need more cleaning one way or another." As Sue came back and started to clean me down below again, I said, "If I had my way about it, I would lick your wonderful muff pie every day." Sue said, "What about when it's that time of the month." I took on a kind of eager look and smacked my lips a little. Then I quickly said with a Dracula voice, "All the better my darling!" Sue and I cracked up laughing. After a little laughter, Sue slapped me on the chest and managed to get out, "Oh Yuk!" We shared in each other's laughter for about another forty seconds. Then Sue continued to clean me. Sue said as she did so, "You're so terrible!" This caused us to chuckle a little more. Then Sue went back to the sink and rinsed out her washcloth. When Sue came back, Sue said with a loving voice as she wiped me down more, "I just love your husband meat darling." I said with a loving voice, "And I just love your wife meat darling." Sue paused long enough for us to give each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue finished wiping me down.

After Sue was finished and sat the washcloth aside, Sue then picked up the other towel and dried me. When Sue was through, I said, "Let's go bidet you again darling." Sue said, "Ok darling." Then we went over to the toilet with loving smiles on our faces. As we went, I said lovingly, "It's hardly fair darling. You have more naughty bits to love than I do." Sue was turning to face me in front of the toilet by the time I finished speaking. The Sue went to sit down as I started to kneel in front of her. As we did so, Sue said, "Maybe. But your one

169

naughty bit makes up for it by being so penetrating." By this time, I was kneeling in front of Sue and Sue had her legs slightly spread apart. What Sue said made our smiles widen a bit. I said, "I never thought about that. Thank you darling." Sue said, "You're welcome my love." I brought my lips for Sue to kiss. Sue leaned forward a little and did so. After the kiss, Sue sat up again and I looked down and thought to the toilet. As the bidet nozzle began to extend, I held Sue's inner labia open a little for the water to squirt into Sue. As I did so, I said, "You have lips on both ends for me to love darling." Sue said fairly quickly with a bit of mirth in her voice, "If you ever see anything like the tip of a tongue stick itself out between them, you'll know its time to worry!"

Sue and I busted up laughing. I managed to get out, "Pause bidet!" Then I put my hands on Sue's hips as we laughed and laughed. It was so funny! The thought of some sort of parasite being inside of Sue that might stick itself out a little like when we did our tongue beckon thing



was so silly! Sue and I joyfully shared in each others laughter for about a minute. Then our laughter diminished to chuckles. I said with a mirth filled voice, "You're so funny darling!" We chuckled a little more. Then Sue said with some mirth in her voice, "Thank you darling!" We then gave each other a loving kiss as we caressed each other a little. After about thirty seconds or so, we parted our kiss and grinned at each other. Then I went back to doing what I had been. I held Sue's inner labia open again and thought for the bidet to resume. Sue caressed my shoulders a little as it squirted water up inside Sue. I turned my grin to Sue again and said, "If I ever saw any parasite sticking itself out when I was down there darling, I would suck it out of you and bite it." Sue was still grinning too. As Sue kneaded my shoulders a little with her fingers, she said, "Thank you darling."

I then went back to paying attention to what I was doing. When I figured that Sue was flushed out well enough, I thought for the bidet to turn off. It did so and the tube began to retract. Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other as I said, "That should do darling." As I stood up, Sue said, "Thank you darling." Then I said as Sue and I held hands and I helped Sue stand up, "Now I can wipe down your wonderful wife meat again." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed toward the sinks. As we did so, Sue said, "And I just love having you wipe me down darling." We were standing in front of the sinks at this point. Sue and I released each other and I picked up the washcloth I had used earlier. I rinsed it out and turned to Sue. We were of course smiling at each other lovingly as I said, "Stand with your feet apart a little darling." Sue did as I asked. I then started to wipe Sue's muff down. As I did so, I said, "Your muff is so wonderful darling. Someday I should do a speed thought thing while I look at it. Just to help get the image of it burned into my mind more."

Then I stopped to rinse out my washcloth again. As I did so, Sue said, "That's a good idea darling. I can do the same with your wiener." As we smiled lovingly at each other in the mirror, I said, "It should make our dreams a little more interesting." Having squeezed the excess water out of the washcloth at this point, I turned back to Sue. After smiling lovingly at each other briefly, I wiped Sue down a little more. As I did so, Sue said, "I already had a dream about you

170

darling that included your wiener. I hope to have many more." We again smiled lovingly at each other. As I sat the washcloth aside, I said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then I picked up Sue's towel and dried her off down below. When I was through, I sat the towel aside and said, "There darling." As we held each other in a loose embrace, I added, "All nice and dry." Sue said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each

other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other.

Sue and I then parted and turned toward the counter top. Then Sue picked up a brush and comb we had gotten earlier. Sue then handed me the comb and said, "Here ya go honey." As I took the comb, I said, "Thank you dearest." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, we turned to the mirror and did our hair with contented smiles on our faces. I finished first and sat my comb down. As Sue gave her hair some finishing brushes, I smiled at Sue in the mirror and said, "You're so beautiful darling." Sue smiled lovingly at me in the mirror and said, "Thank you darling. So are you." This made me grin. Which made Sue grin too. I picked up Sue's deodorant and took the top off. Sue sat her brush down and turned toward me. I said, "Raise your arms sweetness." After doing what I asked, I applied some deodorant to Sue's armpits. When I was through, Sue lowered her arms and said, "Thank you lovie." I said, "You're welcome honey." Then I put the top back on Sue's deodorant and sat it down as Sue picked up my deodorant. Then Sue took the top off of it and said as she adjusted the dial, "Now raise your arms my sweet."

We both smiled lovingly as Sue applied the deodorant to my armpits. When Sue was through, I lowered my arms and said, "Thank you cuddle love." Sue said, "You're welcome squeezey bear." Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, Sue sat down my deodorant and I picked up the cologne Sue had gotten. Sue also picked up the perfume she had gotten. We both applied our scents. When we were through, I picked up the container of Sue's feminine body powder. I opened the container and handed it to my dear sweet love. Sue said, "Thank you darling." I said, "Can I hold your breasts again angel eyes." Sue put her hand on the base of my neck and said, "You don't even need to ask kissy brain." Then Sue pulled my head down a little and gave me a brief kiss on my upper forehead. Afterwards, I did the same with Sue. Then Sue put some powder into her hand, sat the container down and turned toward the mirror. As Sue spread the powder in her hands, I stepped behind Sue. We smiled lovingly at each other in the mirror as I reached over Sue's arms and lovingly took hold of Sue's breasts. I lifted Sue's breasts up and apart slightly. Though as I said before, Sue's breasts were amazingly pert for how large they were. So they didn't need a lot of lifting.

Sue applied the powder under her breasts and a little between them. When Sue was through, I released Sue's wonderful breasts. Sue said to me in the mirror, "Thank you cuddle bits." I said, "You're welcome pillow love." I gave Sue a peck of a kiss on her shoulder. Then I went back over to the counter. Sue picked up the container of powder and put a little more in one hand. After

171

spreading it around a little with her other hand, Sue applied some

powder between her vagina and thighs. I smiled lovingly at Sue in the mirror as Sue did so. It was such a beautiful and extremely sexy sight. When Sue was through, Sue smiled lovingly at me in the mirror and said, "Can I put some on your balls darling?" I was still smiling lovingly at Sue in the mirror as I said, "Of course darling." Then I said, "Let me help." I then turned toward the counter. I had my towel laying there. Then I took my penis and laid it on the towel. Sue grinned. I grinned too and said, "I wouldn't want you to do any heavy lifting." This made Sue laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Sue picked up the container of powder and put a little into her right hand.

As Sue did so, Sue said, "Your love tube isn't that heavy darling. But thank you for the thought." Sue sat the container down and came over to me. Sue looked at my penis with a pleased smile on her face as she did so. Then Sue picked up my penis with her left hand and fondled it a little. Sue then turned her pleased smile to me and said, "Your dick is so wonderful darling. I could suck it right now." Sue then used my penis as a handle and gently turned me toward her. I said, "I'm afraid there's nothing to be had right now darling. Besides. We have to get ready." As Sue started to lovingly and gently apply the powder to my testicles, a more loving look came over Sue's face. I took on the same sort of look too as Sue said, "You're right darling." We then started to kiss each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate as Sue continued to apply the powder. Sue gently kneaded my penis with her fingers as she gently applied the powder to my testicles with her other hand. It took Sue a lot longer than necessary to do this. But we were both enjoying ourselves. After about twenty seconds, we parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly.

While Sue continued to fondle me, Sue said lovingly, "I just love the feel of your balls darling." I said with a loving voice, "I kind of got the impression darling that you liked them all soapy and slippery." Then Sue took on a look of more solemn love. I looked at Sue in the same way as Sue said, "I love them any way I can get them darling." My eyes glazed over with love. Sue's did also. As we brought our lips together, I said fairly quickly, but with a loving voice, "Oh darling!" Sue released me and we embraced each other as we started kissing each other passionately. We kissed and caressed each other for about a minute. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I said, "I'll clean up while you try to make yourself more beautiful my love gush." (It wasn't really necessary for me to clean up. But doing so didn't bother me) This pet name made Sue grin. I grinned too as Sue said, "Ok my love soaker." We then kissed each other lovingly. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Then I gave Sue a little slap and squeeze on her wonderful bottom. We grinned at each other as Sue gave me a little slap and squeeze on my bottom. Then Sue and I gave each other a quick peck on the lips.

Then Sue and I released each other. Sue then went over to her sink

and rinsed the powder off her hands. Then Sue dried them on her towel. While Sue did this, I put the toothbrushes, along with the new and used floss into our glasses. Sue apparently thought to the mirror as she picked up the makeup she had

172

gotten earlier. An area about two foot square with lights around the edges showed an enlarged magnification. Sue leaned forward slightly as she applied some makeup. Though as I mentioned in the first book, Sue was the type of girl who didn't use much. But I didn't think Sue really needed any. I brought the glasses over to the maketake machine. Then I put them into the take alcove. I then thought to it to take. The items fairly quickly faded out of existence. When I turned back to the counter, I smiled at Sue as she applied makeup. Then I grinned as a bit of a thrill went through me for having such a beautiful wife. As I made my way back over to the counter, I paused briefly to give Sue a quick smooch in the middle of her back.

Sue paused what she was doing as I stood erect again. We briefly grinned at each other in the mirror as I continued on to the counter. Sue went back to applying her makeup. I picked up our deodorant, cologne, perfume and Sue's feminine body powder. Then I took these things over to the maketake and disposed of them too. I then went back over to the counter and cleaned around the area with my towel. Though I left our comb and hairbrush on the counter just in case they might be needed again after we got dressed. I also left Sue's towel there. When I was through cleaning up a little, I sat the two washcloths and our soap on my towel. Then I gathered them up into a bundle. I then put a foot on my floor towel. As I made my way back over to the maketake machine, I swiped the floor towel around on the floor to mop up any splashed water or love juice. When I got to the maketake, I put my things into the take alcove. Then I wiped my feet on the floor towel. I then picked it up too and put it into the take alcove. After thinking to the maketake to take, I went back over to my sink. Then I rinsed off my hands and dried them on Sue's towel.

As I did so, Sue stood erect and the mirror transformed itself back into a normal mirror. Then Sue sat down her makeup and turned to smile at me. Sue said, "Whaddya think." My smile quickly turned to a loving look as I sat the towel down. Sue grinned. My expression said it all. The sparing makeup Sue had put on again transformed her unbelievably beautiful face into that of an angelic, super fine ultra goddess. I went over to Sue and we held each other in a loose embrace. Sue's grin turned to a loving smile. I said with a voice just dripping with adoration and love, "Oh darling. How could I have gotten so lucky." Sue's expression turned to a loving look as she said lovingly, "How could I have gotten so lucky darling." We brought our lips together and began to kiss each other passionately. Both of gave off moans of pleasure as we began to caress our tongues together

also. Of course, we embraced each other more and lovingly caressed each other. As we kissed, I thought to the maketake, "Maketake. Give Sue and I a telepathic connection please."

(From this point, until I later told the maketake to end the connection, all of our words were telepathic) Then I said, "You're such a dream my darling love." This made Sue give off a verbal, sighing moan of pleasure as we kissed. I gave off a moan of pleasure myself as Sue answered me with a little extra love in her kiss, tongue action and caresses. After a few moments, Sue said, "You're such a dream too my darling love." I answered Sue with a little extra love in my kiss, tongue action and caresses too. This made Sue give off another sighing moan

173

of pleasure. Sue's moan made me reach under Sue's butt with one arm and lift her. At the same time, Sue hopped up a little and wrapped her legs around my hips. Then Sue moved one of her arms and wrapped it around my neck. As we continued kissing, Sue said, "I love you so much darling!" I said with a highly emotional thought as tears of love started to flow from my lightly closed eyes, "Oh my love!" Sue thought back with a highly emotional, loving thought, "Oh darling!" We parted our kiss and embraced each other fully and firmly. Sue also held me more firmly with her legs.

I thought with a highly emotional thought, "I need you so bad darling! Tell me you don't mind my needing you so bad!" Sue gave me a brief, even harder hug. Sue thought back with a highly emotional thought and said, "Oh! Need me darling! Need me forever! Because I need you even more!" We slid our lips toward each other's and quickly began kissing each other passionately again. I said, "Oh my wife! My love! My life!" Sue started to make a slightly high pitched sound as if she were crying. Which she was. Then Sue said, "Husband darling! My dearest love! My soul!" We kissed for about another fifteen seconds before I said, "Darling!" About fifteen seconds later, Sue said, "Darling!" We kept this up for at least another minute and a half. Then our kiss diminished from a passionate one to a loving, tender one. The firmness of our embrace also lessened. Sue released her legs from me. I stood my dear sweet love on her feet. Then we slowly parted our kiss. Once our kiss was parted, we both slowly opened our eyes and looked at each other lovingly. Both of our cheeks and eyes were still moist from our tears.

Sue said, "I suppose we should finish getting ready my love." We both smiled at each other lovingly. I said, "I suppose you're right my dearest. But first, let me fix you a little." I picked up Sue's towel and held part of it wrapped around my index finger. Then I daubed away the remaining moistness from Sue's face. Trying not to mess up Sue's makeup as I did so. When I was through, I said with a loving thought, "There. Good as new darling. But you might want to double check it."

Sue took the towel and said, "Let me fix you darling." Sue then wiped away any remaining wetness from my face. When Sue was through, Sue sat the towel aside and said, "There. Good as new darling." I said, "Thank you my love." We gave each other another loving kiss. As we kissed, I said, "I love you darling." Sue said, "I love you too darling." A few moments later, we slowly parted our kiss again. We smiled lovingly at each other again. I said, "You can double check your makeup darling." Then I added with a kidding around thought, "But don't take too long. I wouldn't want the others getting mad for you keeping them waiting." This statement made Sue take on an open mouthed, surprised look. Which made me grin.

Then Sue gave me a firm slap on the butt as she closed her mouth. I laughed verbally a little as Sue said, "It's your fault too!" Sue then grinned. I said, "I'll be happy to take any blame darling." Sue then gave me an appreciative, loving smile. I smiled lovingly at Sue also. Sue then said, (with a loving thought of course) "We're one now darling." I took on a glazed over look of love. Sue looked at me the same way as she added, "We will even share blame." I said with a highly loving thought, "Oh darling!" We then started kissing each other

174

passionately again. Both of us gave off moans of loving pleasure as we did so. Our kiss started off with a slightly uncomfortable firmness. Though I have to admit, at first, that was more my doing than Sue's. As we kissed, I said, "Tell me again that we're one darling!" Sue answered me first with her lips, tongue and caresses. Then Sue said with a highly loving thought, "We're one darling!" After a couple moments, Sue said with a highly loving thought, "Tell me that we're one darling!" I answered with my lips, tongue and caresses. Then I held Sue a little more firmly as I gave Sue my telepathic answer. I said with a highly loving thought, "We ARE one darling! For now, and forever!"

Sue moaned with pleasure and gave me a little extra tongue action. I moaned with pleasure too. After about twenty seconds, the firmness of our kiss diminished to a normal, passionate kiss. Sue said, "I love you so much darling." I said, "I love you so much too darling." About twenty seconds later, I lessened our kiss to a normal, loving kiss. I said lovingly, "I suppose we should finish getting ready darling." Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and slowly opened our eyes to look at each other lovingly again. Sue thought lovingly, "Ok darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we caressed our hands off each other. I gestured to the towel on the floor and said, "Let me get this towel darling." Sue said, "Ok darling" and stepped off the end of the towel that was on the floor. I picked it up. Then Sue and I gave each other another brief but loving kiss. I then folded the towel over so that the upper part was facing outward. As I did so, Sue went over to her

sink and thought to the mirror, "Mirror. Give me a lighted area of enlarged magnification again." I brought the towel over to the other side of Sue and used it to mop up any splashes. As I did so, Sue touched up her makeup.

While Sue did so, without looking at me, Sue said, "I wonder how long we've been in here honey." I smiled at Sue and said, "I'm guessing about forty minutes sweetness. The maketake could probably tell you precisely." As I brought the towel over to the maketake machine, Sue said, "It's not that important dearest." I put the towel into the take alcove and told it to take. Sue then gathered up her makeup and picked up her towel. Then Sue brought these over to the maketake too as we smiled at each other. I said with a kidding around thought, "You didn't need to hurry on my account darling." We both grinned as Sue said, "It didn't get messed up that bad honey." This made both of our grins widen a bit. I caressed Sue's upper back as Sue put her things into the take alcove also. Then Sue thought, "Take." The things fairly quickly faded out of existence. Sue then turned to me with a smile. We held each other in a loose embrace as Sue said, "I hope we haven't been keeping those guys waiting." I said, "Probably not. My question seemed to especially put Mav and Til onto a severe state of love." Sue said, "I think Till is going to be happy with you." I said, "No doubt Mav is going to be really happy too."

Then I took on a bit more of a happy expression and said, "As for Zem and Bev, you know how they are." Sue took on a bit more of a happy expression as I spoke. Then we fully embraced. Sue said, "I know! It's so wonderful!" We joyfully embraced and caressed each other for about twenty seconds. Then Sue and I parted enough to grin at each other. Sue said, "Let's have the maketake

175

make sure we're good and clean sweetness." I said, "Ok my love." We parted and held each other's hand as we faced the maketake machine. Sue said, "Maketake, would you make sure that there isn't any excess dirtiness on us?" Sue and I felt a slight sensation of tingling on our bodies. After a moment it stopped. Sue and I turned to smile at each other. As usual, the maketake took away anything that shouldn't be there, but left things such as Sue's makeup and the other things we applied to ourselves. Of course, neither did it do anything like remove an excess of natural oil from our hair. I said, "What do you think we should wear darling." Sue said, "Let's wear something somewhat matching sweetheart." I said, "Ok darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

I said, "Pick out something for me my love. I can be your personal "Ken" doll." Sue smiled at me lovingly. I smiled lovingly at Sue also as we turned to face each other and hold each other in a loose embrace. Sue said with a loving thought, "You're my doll all right darling." I said in a soft loving thought, "You're a doll yourself lovie love." Sue and I

lovingly kissed and caressed each other. After about twenty seconds or so, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other again. I released Sue and moved her away from the maketake another step. Then I said, "I just know you'll find something nice darling." As I said this, I turned Sue toward the maketake and stood behind her. I then reached around Sue and took hold of Sue's breasts. I placed my head next to Sue's as Sue caressed my forearms and hands. Then I said with a loving voice, "I'll just hold these for you darling while you choose something. So take your time." This made Sue verbally chuckle a little. Which I did too. Then Sue gave the side of my head a little nuzzle with hers and said, "Ok darling." Sue felt so wonderful in my arms. Of course Sue's breasts felt wonderful too. And Sue also smelled wonderful.

As usual, there was some random picture on the maketake screen. This one showed a picture of some gently hilly terrain on some planet. There were small bunches of low bushes here and there. The rest was covered with irregularly shaped patches of greenish blue grass and light reddish brown grass. There were fairly low, overcast clouds slowly being swept over the hills. Then Sue thought to the maketake. (I won't bore you with the details of what Sue thought) This picture disappeared and pictures of men's clothing started to appear on the maketake screen. We both had loving, pleased smiles on our faces as Sue went through items of clothing and various colors. It only took a little over a minute for Sue to choose something for me. Then Sue picked out some underwear, socks and shoes. When Sue was through, the clothing appeared all neatly folded in the make alcove. On top of them were a pair of shoes. I released Sue and went to stand beside her as I said with a smile on my face, "Thank you darling." Sue of course was smiling at me too as she said, "I hope you like it." Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, I said, "Even if I don't, I will."

This caused Sue to grin. Which I did also. Sue then said, "Thank you dearest." We gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Then I released Sue and took my clothes. I then brought them over to the counter and sat them down. Then I

176

went back over behind Sue and held my dear sweet love's breasts from behind again. I also placed the side of my head next to Sue's. Sue and I lightly nuzzled the sides of our heads together as Sue caressed my forearms and hands. We were both wearing loving smiles as Sue went through various items for herself. It didn't take Sue too long to pick something out. These things appeared in the make alcove too. I released Sue and said, "Good choice darling." Sue said, "Thank you honey." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I went back over toward my clothes as Sue took hers. We smiled at each other as Sue came over to the counter with her clothes. Sue sat them



down as I took a step away from the counter. Then I spread my feet a little more apart and held my arms out to the side. I said, "Your Ken doll awaits darling." We both grinned. Sue went over to my clothes as she looked me up and down with a bit more of a pleased look on her face. Sue said, "You're much better than a Ken doll darling." I put my arms down as Sue set my socks, shoes and belt aside. Then Sue picked up my underwear. Sue then brought them over to me and held them open as she bent over a little. I lightly placed a hand on Sue's shoulder as I first put one foot through them, then the other. Both of us had pleased smiles on our faces at this point. Then Sue started to pull them up. Sue stood ever more erect as she raised them up. Though Sue kept her pleased smile facing toward my genitals. When Sue got them up, the only thing left outside was my penis. Then Sue did the same thing she had done when we were dressing each other on the Pol-Wim. Sue held out the waistband of my underwear and bounced about half of my penis on it. Causing it to bend over the waistband some. Then Sue used the waistband to fling my penis up and over. Sue then held out the waistband a little more as my penis flopped into my underwear. As Sue did this, Sue said, "Bloop!" This made us both laugh. We looked at each other and shared in each other's laughter as Sue sat my waistband against me. We held each other in a loose embrace as we laughed.

After about ten seconds or so, I said with a mirth filled thought, "You're so silly darling!" We both then chuckled a little. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, we both continued to grin at each other. Then Sue gave my penis a couple light pats through my underwear and said, "There. All nice and snug." I said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue then reached over for my socks. Then Sue bent over again. This time I put a hand on the counter top and raised one foot a little. Sue put on one sock, Then I raised my other foot a little and Sue put on the other sock. Sue then stood up, reached over again and picked up my shirt. When Sue was again facing me, I said as Sue started to unfold it, "Did you ever have a Ken doll sweetiekins?" We were both smiling at each other as Sue said, "Yes I did honey bunch." As Sue helped me on with my shirt, Sue said, "I had all types of things." I put my head through the shirt. Then Sue started to pull it down. I said, "I imagine that Santa was pretty generous with you." Sue said, "Yes. He was pretty generous." As Sue reached over for my pants, Sue looked back at me with a little concern on her face.

Sue already knew that my childhood wasn't anywhere near as privileged as hers. With my father being an alcoholic and her father being a doctor. Sue said,

177

"What were your Christmases like darling." My dear, sweet love's concern caused an appreciative, loving smile to come over my face. It

made Sue take on a slight smile as she unfolded my pants. I said, "Considering everything, they weren't too bad." This caused a bigger smile to come over Sue's face. Sue said, "I'm glad darling." Then Sue held my pants lower. I again put a hand on Sue's shoulder as I slipped first one leg in, and then the other. As Sue raised up my pants, Sue said, "I wonder what kind of Christmases they have on planet Bev." I said, "Whatever they have, no doubt there isn't any kind of religious significance to it." As Sue finished tucking in my shirt, Sue said, "Whatever they do have, I'm sure it would be interesting." Sue then started to do up my pants as I said, "The interesting thing is, if they wanted to, Zem and Bev could probably provide presents just like Santa Claus." At this point, Sue was retrieving my belt. As Sue unrolled the belt, Sue said, "I'm sure they would have better things to do." Sue started to run the belt through my belt loops as I said, "What they've done for us is better than a zillion billion Christmases combined."

Both Sue and I grinned at each other. Sue then said, "At least that many." This made us both chuckle a bit. We continued to grin as Sue finished doing up my belt. When Sue was through, Sue reached over for my shoes. I steadied myself on the counter as I raised up my foot. Sue bent over and put a shoe on that foot. Then I raised my other foot for Sue to put a shoe on it too. Once Sue was again standing, I said, "Thank you darling." Sue said, "You're welcome darling." We then gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. I said, "Now it's time for me to dress you. I wonder if I can do it without getting a boner." This made Sue laugh verbally. Which I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Sue said with a little mirth in her thought, "I guess we'll see darling." Sue and I released each other. We both then took a step back nearer to Sue's clothes. I reached over and took Sue's socks, shoes and belt off from her clothes. Then I picked up Sue's panties. They were dark burgundy with a little lace. I leaned over and held them open.

The sight of Sue's sweet muff was wonderful as usual. Sue put a hand on my shoulder to steady herself as she put first one leg through, then the other. I had a pleased smile on my face as I pulled the panties up. When I was through and standing again, we both were smiling at each other lovingly. I lightly caressed Sue's muff pie through her panties with one hand as I rested the other on Sue's waist. Sue had her hands on my upper arms. I said lovingly, "All snug darling?" Sue said lovingly, "Yes darling." We then gave each other a loving kiss as I caressed my hand from Sue's muff to her waist on the other side. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other again. We released each other. Then I reached over for Sue's bra. It was a pleasing shade of dark yellow and lacy in places. I unfolded it and held out the bra straps for Sue to put her arms through. As I did so, I said, "I hate to cover your perfect boobies darling." Sue said as she put her arms through the bra

straps, "You'll see them again darling." I held the cups of the bra over Sue's breasts and said, "Hold these for me my everything."

This comment made Sue look at me more lovingly. I looked at Sue in the same

178

way as Sue slid her hands under mine and held the cups of her bra over her breasts. As usual, Sue looked alarmingly sexy as she did so. I brought my lips to Sue's and we kissed each other lovingly as I caressed Sue's upper arms. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly again. Then I went to stand behind Sue as Sue turned her back to me. Then I made sure that Sue's bra straps were sitting properly on her shoulders. Though to be sure, I said with a loving thought, "Is this right darling?" Sue said with a loving thought, "Yes darling." I then connected Sue bra. After I did that, I ran the tips of my fingers under the main part of the bra around the side and back of Sue to make sure it was sitting properly. After I did so, I said, "How's that my treasure." Sue said, "Just perfect huggy bear." I then caressed a hand around Sue's tummy and another around Sue's upper chest. As I lovingly enveloped my dear sweet love in my arms, I also placed my cheek against the side of Sue's head. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed at this point with loving looks on our faces.

Sue was caressing my forearm with one hand and brought her other hand up to caress my cheek. As we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, I said with a loving thought, "Is this hug good darling?" Sue caressed my cheek a little more and nuzzled me a little more as she said with a pleased, loving thought, "All your hugs are wonderful darling. But I like it when I can hug you too." I released my hold of Sue and Sue turned in my arms. We smiled at each other lovingly. Sue then stuck the tip of her tongue out so that it was just visible between her lips. I briefly took on a bit of a surprised, loving look. (This was usually the case whenever any of us couples did this to our partners) The surprise was quickly taken over by an extra loving look as I said, "Oh darling!" Then Sue and I brought our lips together. I sucked Sue's tongue in past my lips. Then we started kissing each other passionately as we held each other in a fuller, slightly more firm than usual, caress filled embrace. Both of us also gave off slight moans of pleasure as we began kissing.

After a bit of this, I said, "Your tongue, your lips, your everything darling is so wonderful!" Sue said, "Oh my darling heart! Your lips and tongue are so wonderful too!" As Sue squeezed one of my butt cheeks, Sue added, "Along with everything else!" We kissed for about thirty seconds. Then our embrace and caresses became less firm and more gentle. I said lovingly, "You're such a dream darling." Sue said lovingly, "So are you darling." We then went back to letting ourselves be absorbed by the pleasure of our kiss and caresses. This more

tender part of our kiss lasted for about another thirty seconds. Then we parted our kiss and fully embraced each other. Sue said with a loving thought, "I love you so much darling." I gave Sue a little extra nuzzle with the side of my head and said with a loving thought, "I love you so much too darling." After about another thirty seconds or so of enjoying each other's loving embrace and caresses, we parted enough to look at each other lovingly. I then smiled lovingly at Sue and Sue smiled lovingly back at me. Then I said, "I suppose I should finish dressing you darling." Sue said, "Ok my angel."

Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, we released each other and I stepped over to Sue's clothes. Sue also turned a little

179

to face me. Both of us took on normal smiles as I picked up Sue's dark burgundy colored, girly socks. These were lacy, but opaque with purple, frilly fabric that went around the tops. I bent over as Sue placed a hand on my shoulder and raised one of her feet. After getting Sue's socks on, I stood again and sat her top aside. Then I picked up Sue's neatly pressed pants. As I unfolded them, Sue said, "I hope the others like what I chose." While I held the pants open and Sue put a hand on my shoulder, I said, "I'm sure they will darling." Sue was slipping a leg into her pants at this point. After getting one leg in, I helped Sue put her other leg in. As I started to raise Sue's pants up, I said, "Their choice of clothing styles is probably endless. But none of the Reall or other beings wore anything really far out." While I did up Sue's pants, Sue said, "I have seen bits of really old science fiction movies where some of the people wore really far out, futuristic clothes."

As I got ready to put Sue's belt on, Sue said, "I wonder if any of those science fiction designers knew how normal things would remain, or if they were just trying to convey a futuristic visual quality to their movies." I started to do up Sue's belt as I said, "It was probably a visual thing to make the movies interesting." After I got Sue's belt on, I reached for Sue's top and said, "Speaking of far out, some of the things fashion designers come up with are really out there." Sue was starting to slip her arms into her top at this point. After I got the top over Sue's head, Sue said as I started to lower it, "It must be hard to come with something original that isn't out there." Then Sue took her hair and made sure it was laying on the outside of her top. I then picked up Sue's slippers and sat them on the floor, Sue again put a hand on my shoulder as she raised up one of her feet. After getting one slipper on, I put the other on.

When I was through and again standing erect, we briefly smiled at each other again. Then I turned to pick up Sue's hairbrush. I then handed it to Sue and said, "Here ya go sweetness." Putting on Sue's top had slightly mussed up her hair a bit. As Sue took it, Sue said,

"Thank you honey bunch." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue then turned to the mirror and started brushing her hair. As Sue did so, I picked up my comb and made sure my hair was neat. When I was through, I sat my comb down and smiled at Sue in the mirror. Sue's hair didn't need that much straightening up either. So it was by this time that Sue sat her brush down and smiled back at me in the mirror. Then Sue turned to me and grinned. I grinned too as Sue said, "How do I look darling."

Sue was wearing a dark yellow, decoratively embroidered, pull over shirt. It was V necked and had sleeves that went down to her elbows. Though at the elbows, the fabric tapered a little to a triangle of fabric. Around the edges of the fabric was an inch wide, light yellow, lacy fringe. Sue's pants were a dark burgundy color with neatly ironed pleats and narrow cuffs. Around the top of Sue's pants, Sue wore a thin black belt. Though it was barely visible from the lacy fringe at the bottom of Sue's top. Sue was also wearing some decorative black slippers. My shirt was the same color as Sue's. But made of a slightly thicker and more plain material. It was very slightly V necked. The sleeves went down almost to my elbows. There were plain light yellow hem about an inch

180

wide that went around my collar and the bottoms of my sleeves. There was no such hem that went around the bottom of my shirt. Which I had tucked into my pants. My pants were the same color as Sue's. They also had a neatly ironed look to them, but were more of a man's style. Also, they were made of a slightly thicker and more coarse material. The belt I wore was black and wider than Sue's. My shoes were also black men's type loafers with black socks.

Responding to Sue's question, I said, "You look wonderful darling." Sue's grin widened a bit. Mine quickly did too. As we came together and held each other's forearms, I said, "You could probably design clothes for a living. The sensible, attractive kind that is." Sue said, "Thank you!" We then gave each other a loving kiss as we embraced each other further. After a few extended moments, we parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Sue said, "Let's see if the others are about sweetie." I said, "Ok honey." I looked over at the maketake and said verbally, "End our telepathic connection please." Sue and I smiled at each other. Then Sue said, verbally of course, "Thinking to each other is fun darling. But I think I like hearing your voice more."

I said verbally of course too, "I just loving having the sound of your voice enter my ears darling. But then again, I love anything from you that ends up inside me." What I said caused us both to look at each other more lovingly. Sue said with a loving voice, "I know what you mean darling." We then started to kiss each other passionately. With plenty of loving caresses going on. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then we smiled at

each other lovingly. I said with a tender, loving voice, "Shall we go darling?" We released each other a little as Sue said with a tender, loving voice, "Alright my love." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, we caressed a hand around each other's lower backs, turned toward the door and started walking toward it.

## Chapter Nine Back Outside

Stepping out of the bathroom, Sue and I both looked toward the patio. We saw that Zem and Bev were sitting at the table on the gazebo out on the lake. There were three pairs of chairs at the table. Zem and Bev were sitting on the left side of the table. But they were only using one chair as Bev was sitting across Zem's lap. Zem had his other hand on Bev's thigh and Bev was holding Zem's forearm. They were both smiling lovingly at each other. Pim and Mim were up by the ceiling of the gazebo on the left circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam were doing the same on the far end of the gazebo. Tal and Sas were doing the same near the near side of the gazebo. Panny and Lika were on the beach near the dock that led to the gazebo. They were at the edge of the water and playing. Apparently, Mav and Til hadn't made it out yet. Sue and I both grinned as I said, "There's Zem and Bev." Sue said, "I guess we didn't keep Til and Mav waiting too. And there's your love letter on the maketake counter." It was laying face down. Sue and I grinned at each other as Sue said,

181

"I can't wait to show it to Bev!" Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

We then turned toward the entrance down the hallway. As we headed toward the kitchen and the exit, we both grinned at each other. I said, "Remember. How it was originally written is our naughty little secret." This caused Sue to giggle. I quickly chuckled myself. Afterwards, I said, "There's no sense in letting Zem and Bev know how naughty you are." This made Sue give me a surprised look as the door to the left slid open. Sue moved the arm she had around my back and gave me a slap on the butt. This made me laugh as Sue said, "You're the one who's naughty!" Then Sue grinned as we stepped outside and turned to the left. I put my hand on the hand Sue had around my waist. Sue did the same with me. As we went, I said with a grin, "I think we're both a little naughty. And I love it so." Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss as we walked. Then Sue said, "It doesn't matter anyway. Bev and Zem are pretty naughty themselves." I assumed that this was something that Bev and Sue discussed. As Sue and I got to the back of the house, Zem and Bev

saw us and grinned. Sue and I grinned too.

We released each other's hands and waved at them. Zem and Bev waved back. Though Bev was able to do so a little more freely than Zem. Sue and I briefly turned our grins to each other and then back to Zem and Bev. They too grinned at each other. But for more of a prolonged time. They were probably thinking something to each other. Sue and I stopped as Panny and Lika also started to scamper over toward us. Then Sue and I released each other as Tal and Sas moved quickly toward us. Zem and Bev then turned their grins back toward us as Sue went over to the maketake machine. Tal stopped by me and Sas went along with Sue. Tal said verbally, "I don't want Panny and Lika to get you all dirty. Even if it is mainly just beach sand" I said, "Thanks." Apparently Tal thought something to Panny. Because he stopped by me. Lika had split off from Panny on the way and headed for Sue. Sas caused Lika to stop too. As Tal and Sas moved toward Panny and Lika, Sas said verbally to Sue, "You're all nice and clean. There's no sense in letting Lika and Panny mess you up."

As Tal and Sas cleaned Panny and Lika, Sue said to Sas in a kidding around voice, "You know us. We can be pretty dirty anyway." This caused Sas and Tal to emit telepathic humor. Sue and I laughed a little too. Tal and Sas raised up from near Panny and Lika as Sue picked up her pad of paper. Sas said to Sue, "Nonsense. I'm sure anything you do is just beautiful." I said to Sas with a sentimental tone to my voice, "Thank you." Sue said to Sas with a sentimental tone to her voice, "Thank you. You're such a dear." Then Sue bent forward a little and put her arm out for Lika to jump onto. I did the same with Panny. They both scampered over and jumped onto our arms. Sue cuddled and petted Lika in her arms as she held the pad of paper in her one hand. I also petted Panny in my arms. Sue then headed back toward me and Sas headed toward Tal. As they did so, Sue said to Sas, "I only have a vague understanding of how much more wonderful things must be for a Nal." Tal and Sas started circling each other's surfaces at differing angles as Sue added, "We're so happy for you both."

182

Tal and Sas circled each other a little quicker. As Sue approached me, Tal and Sas said at the same time, "Thank you." Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. We then turned and started walking toward the dock that led out to the gazebo with big smiles on our faces. Tal and Sas led the way about three feet above and two feet in front of us. Zem and Bev were smiling at each other. As Sue and I got to the beach, Zem and Bev turned to grin at us. Sue and I grinned too as. Because we weren't that close yet, Zem called out in a slightly louder than normal voice. Apparently Zem just didn't feel like speaking telepathically. Zem said, "You two look like two peas in a

pod.” Referring of course to the matching colors of our clothing. Sue and I momentarily walked closer and leaned the sides of our heads together with bigger grins on our faces. After standing erect again, Sue called out too and said, “That’s how we feel.” Zem and Bev chuckled a little. Bev hugged Zem a little closer momentarily. Which Zem did with Bev. Bev then called out a little less loudly and said, “I know how you feel.”

Then Zem and Bev gave each other a brief but loving kiss before turning their grins back to Sue and I. As Sue and I started walking across the dock, because of Zem’s comment about our clothing, I took more note of what Zem and Bev were wearing. No doubt having gotten cleaned up themselves, they had also got different clothing. Bev was wearing a white button up long sleeve shirt. Though the collar was V-necked. The weave of it had diamond shaped patterns on it that were a few inches across and an inch or so longer vertically. It was a fairly thin, but opaque material. The fabric of the collar, sleeves and strip of material where the buttons were was a loose and frilly with a bit of a lacy pattern. This frilly material was only about two inches long. But a little longer on the cuffs. Bev’s pants were black and made of a slightly shiny fabric. They were neatly pressed. Bev was also wearing black, decorative slippers with black, lacy, but opaque socks. The slippers were also made of a slightly shiny looking fabric. (Except for, as always, the soles)

Zem was wearing a somewhat loose fitting long sleeve shirt. It was made out of a dark gray, slightly shiny fabric. His pants were dark blue in color and made out of a thicker material than his shirt. They too were neatly pressed and didn’t have that slightly shiny appearance like his shirt or Bev’s pants. Zem also wore a black belt like me. His shoes were black loafers like mine. They weren’t too ornate, or plain. Sue said, “Where’s Til and Mav.” Zem said, “I expect they will be along soon. But you never know.” I gave Panny a good pet and sat him on the deck. Sue went to set Lika down too. But Lika jumped the rest of the way. Lika then went to playfully chase Panny as she made happy chattering sounds. Panny playfully ran away as he made happy chattering sounds too. We all briefly smiled at them as they did so. Sue and I took each other’s hand and continued over to Zem and Bev, we all smiled at each other. Then Zem said more directly to me, “The question you asked had a pretty strong effect on them.” Sue sat the pad of paper face down on the table as we got extra wide grins on our faces. Then we went to stand behind Zem and Bev as Bev added, “As it did for us.” Sue and I leaned over and gave Zem and Bev a hug. Zem and Bev grins widened a bit too as Sue said, “We’re so glad it did.”

After hugging them for a couple moments, Sue and I stood erect. We



all continued to grin. As Sue and I went to the seats on the beach side of the table, Bev said, "I take it you enjoyed your ride on Grabby." Sue's said, "It got pretty lonely without you guys around." We all laughed as I sat in one of the chairs. This was the same sort of lie I had told them when they came for a visit back on their island! Sue sat across my lap facing them. After the laughter, Bev said with a mirth filled voice, "What a liar!" This caused even more laughter. It was the same response I got from Zem when I told the lie! We all got a good laugh out of it. After the laughter, Bev said, "I saw your pad of paper on the maketake counter a few minutes before you guys came out. Mim suggested that we wait for Til and Mav. Then let you guys tell us what's on it" Sue beamed a wide, happy grin up at Mim and said, "Oh Mim! You're so thoughtful!" Zem and Bev also turned their grins to her. Though there was also a bit of pride also showing on Zem and Bev's faces. Mim and Pim started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles a little faster. San did the same with Pam. As Tal did with Sas.

Mim said verbally with a sentimental tone to her voice, "I try to be." After a few moments of these appreciative looks, Zem, Bev, Sue and I turned big smiles to each other. Then Zem said more directly to me, "Mim said you wrote it when you were on Grabby. I highly suspect a leaim letter." Zem then grinned as Bev let out a little giggle. Sue and I took on a bit of a puzzled look. I said, "What is a leaim letter." Zem and Bev briefly smiled at each other. Though there was also a hint of embarrassment on their faces. Then they turned back to us. Zem then said, "I don't want to embarrass you. But it's nothing to be ashamed of." Sue and I took on surprised looks. It looked like our naughty little secret about how the letter had originally been composed was going to be out. Zem said, "I figured that you two didn't spend your time on Grabby writing love letters, in the conventional sense. A leaim letter is something a guy writes on his girl with his tongue during the act of what humans call cunnilingus." Sue and I looked at each other with slightly embarrassed looks.

Zem then said, "I just thought I would tell you because it is going to be easy for Mav and Til to figure out too." Sue and I turned our slightly embarrassed looks back to Zem and Bev. Then Sue said, "Maybe we should dispose of the letter." Zem and Bev smiled reassuringly at Sue and I. This brought slight smiles to Sue and I's faces. Bev said, "Out of propriety, we don't normally speak of such things in mixed company. But it will be alright." Zem then said, "With humans and Reall basically being the same in regards to how we work, it shouldn't be any surprise that Reall guys compose leaim letters too from time to time. Though we might also use mathematical equations or sine wave patterns." We all grinned as Bev gave Zem a little extra hug. Bev then said, "Zem can be very scientific." This caused us all to laugh a bit. As always, it was wonderful to share in each other's laughter. We were all of course grinning as Sue turned to me and said with a kidding around voice, "You need to learn some higher mathematics darling."

This made us all laugh a little again. After the laughter, Zem said, "Besides, knowing Mav, I wouldn't be surprised if he has been doing some writing himself."

184

We all laughed. Everything that Zem and Bev have been saying greatly relieved any embarrassment Sue and I have been feeling. Sue said, "I'm sure you guys will like Erik's letter. For as wonderful as you guys have been, it's nice that we can at least be the cause of love between you." Then Sue looked up at Mim and said, "And it was wonderful for you to be so considerate." Sue then released me and held out the palms of her hand. Then Sue said to Mim, "Can I borrow you for a second." We all had sentimental smiles on our faces as Mim came down and rested in Sue's hands. Sue then pulled Mim in and gave her a brief kiss on her surface. Then Sue held Mim out a little. Pim came down next to Mim and said, "What about me!" Then Sas came down too. Quickly followed by Tal, Pam and San. Each in turn said, "Or me!" We all laughed. Afterwards, Sue said with a mirth filled voice, "Ok!"

We were all grinning as I took Mim from Sue. I gave Mim a quick kiss on her surface. Sue took hold of Pim and gave him a kiss too. After releasing Mim, she floated up. I then took Pim and said to him with a kidding around voice, "Just don't think I'm gay." This caused everybody to laugh a bit and our Nal to emit telepathic humor. Then I gave Pim a quick peck of a kiss too. After holding him out, Pim said with an amused voice, "I wouldn't think that." Pim floated up and joined Mim. They circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Both Sue and I gave Sas, Tal, Pam and San the same treatment. After I held San out, he said in the gayest gay voice, "Thank you Erik." Everybody busted up laughing. Except for me. I got a disgusted look on my face and said, "Oh, Yuk!" As I wiped my lips, everybody laughed even harder. After a moment, I joined in on the laughter. I knew that San was only kidding. We must have laughed for about thirty seconds. Then Bev and Zem turned their attention toward the house. They both then waved as they grinned. Mav and Til must have been approaching.

Sue and I turned and saw them crossing the patio. Sue and I waved at them too as we grinned. Mav and Til were grinning widely as they walked toward us with an arm around each other's lower backs. They also waved before taking hold of each other's forearms in front. No doubt having gotten cleaned up themselves, they too had changed clothing. Til was wearing a fuzzy, light orange pullover shirt. It was V-necked and, just like Sue and Bev's tops, showed a tasteful amount of cleavage. The sleeves came down to just below her shoulders. The outer edge of the sleeves were a little longer than the inner part. The bottom of Til's top sat about three and a half inches below where I imagined the tops of her pants were. There was no discernable hem to

her top. Til was also wearing light beige colored slacks that seemed to have a velvet quality to them. Her slippers were the same color, but a bit darker and decorative. They were an open toed design. Even though Realls only had four toes that were slightly thicker than a human's, and just the slightest hint more widely spaced, I knew from seeing Bev's toes that they were still adorable. Though Sue's toes were adorable too of course.

Mav was wearing a deep purple button up shirt that was tucked into his pants. His pants were like dark green jeans. Though neatly pressed. Mav's belt and loafer style shoes were black. His shoes seemed to be made of a stiff, shiny

185

fabric. As Mav and Til approached, their grins turned to big smiles. Seeing how happy Mav and Til seemed to be, we all smiled at them too with a hint of sentimentality on our faces. After a few moments Zem then said in a slightly louder than normal voice, "What kept you two." This caused grins to come over everybody's faces again. Panny and Lika were sitting in a slightly excited state off to the side of where the dock met the gazebo. Then Bev said, "I thought you were never going to come out." This made Mav and Til's grins widen a bit. Til answered in a slightly less louder voice than Zem's and said, "For a while, neither did we." Mav then said, "But it looked like you were doing ok without us." This made Zem, Bev, Sue and I's grins widen a bit as well. Sue and I briefly beamed our grins at each other. As Zem and Bev did. We then turned them back to Mav and Til.

Sue then said, "Well I'm glad you changed your minds." As Mav and Til got on the gazebo, Panny and Lika happily scampered around their feet. Mav and Til stopped briefly and released each other's forearms. Panny and Lika both stood at one of their legs with their front paws on them. Mav and Til bent forward to give Panny and Lika a quick pet. Then they stood erect again and continued toward the table. Panny and Lika followed them. As Mav and Til approached, Mav said, "We couldn't be so inconsiderate." Mav and Til walked up to Sue and I. They released each other and leaned over to give Sue and I a hug. No doubt they were grateful for the love between them that Sue and I caused. Til gave Sue a kiss on her cheek and Mav gave me a few extra pats on my shoulder. Mav said, "You've shown Zem to be right again when he said that you two were fun to be around." Til then said, "And you've shown again that you're both a joy to have around." Mav and Til then released us, stood erect and took a step back. If Sue and I's grins had gotten any bigger, it seemed as though our faces might break. Sue said, "Thank you!" I said, "We're happy that you're happy."

Mav and Til gave Sue and I appreciative smiles. Then Mav and Til took each other's hand and made their way over to the chairs on the far side of the table. Zem, Bev, Sue and I happily grinned at each

other. We then turned our grins back to Mav and Til. They were looking in the direction of the bartok. Til said, "It looks like the bartok are comfortable." We all turned to look at them with smiles on our faces. All of the bartok were laying down and appeared to be napping. All had their weapons laying near them. The young female was cuddled with a larger female. The toddler was laying between who I took to be Lega and Weem. The other females were also laying with other males. The smaller male was on his own blanket. The houks we had been riding were nearer to us. They were laying on their stomachs near the beach in pairs. Some were napping too. It all looked very idyllic. We turned back to Mav and Til. Mav had taken a seat and Til was sitting across his lap. Sue said to Til, "Your camp was very sweet."

This made everybody's smiles widen a bit. But Til grinned and said, "Thank you." Panny and Lika jumped up on Mav and Til's lap. Mav and Til paused the conversation for a couple moments as they petted them. Then Mav looked at Til with a loving smile. Mav said, "You're nothing but sweet darling." Til's grin turned to a loving smile as she said to Mav, "You're sweeter darling." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, Mav smiled at Zem and

186

said, "What were you guys laughing about." I started to tell Mav, Til, Zem and Bev about what I had said to Sas after our forlix ride. How I asked Sue to give San a kiss. Because I didn't want him to think I was gay. This caused a little laughter. Even the Nal emitted some telepathic humor. Then I told them what San did before. This caused more laughter. Then I told them the similar thing that caused the laughter they saw. This caused even more laughter. Afterwards, we all grinned at San. Til said, "You're just adorable!" All of our Nal circled around their partner's surfaces a little faster for a few moments. As they did so, San said, "Thank you."

After a couple moments, we all grinned at each other again. Sue said, "Mim is such a dear too. Erik wrote me a love letter. Mim suggested to Bev and Zem that they wait until we were all together before they heard what it said." Til said, "I can't wait to hear what you wrote!" Sue and I smiled sentimentally at everybody as Sue said with a bit of sentimentality to her voice, "It might make you guys disappear again." Everybody else took on sentimental smiles. Mav said, "We'll just have to be strong." I put my hand on the pad of paper and slid it a little closer to me. I then said to Mav and Zem, "Will you guys do me a favor?" Zem said, "Sure." I said to the others, "As you know, even though it is a little like throwing gasoline on a fire, it pleases Sue and I to be the cause of love. Seeing how as mere humans, we aren't good for much else." Zem, Bev, Mav and Til briefly took on expressions with a bit of a dismayed look. Then Til said with a bit of a plaintive, sentimental tone to her voice, "Oh! Don't say that! You're both such dears!" Zem, Bev and Mav gave a couple sentimental nods in

agreement with smiles on their faces as Til smiled sentimentally too.

A look of appreciation accompanied Sue and I's sentimental smiles. Sue said to Til with a sentimental voice, "Oh! Thank you!" After a couple moments of enjoying this love, I said to Zem and Mav, "No doubt after all the eons you guys have been with your wonderful ladies," This caused a bit of appreciation to accompany Bev and Til's sentimental smiles as I added, "you have said equally loving things to them." Then I added, "But I would like to transmit what I read to your minds privately. Though it's ok if Sue hears my thoughts as well. As I do so, I would like you to think the words to the holders of your love like they are your own thoughts. Which at one point or another, they probably were." Zem and Mav were smiling at me a bit more sentimentally. There was a bit of loving emotion that showed on Bev, Til and Sue's faces. Mav said with a sentimental voice, "Alright." Pim said, "Excuse me."

We all looked at Pim with the expressions we wore. Pim said, "San, Tal and I would like to join in. We will all temporarily file away our memory of your letter." I said with a sentimental voice, "All the better. Thank you all." The Nal couples extruded loving tendrils over the surfaces of their partners. But for the time being, they just held each other with them. Pim and Mim moved about ten feet from the left side of the gazebo. At the same time, San and Pam did the same on the lake side. Also at the same time, Tal and Sas did the same off to the right of the gazebo. It only took a couple moments for all this to happen. I picked up the pad of paper and turned it toward me. Zem and Bev looked lovingly into each other's eyes. As did Mav and Til. While they did this, Sue laid her cheek

187

near the top of my head and embraced me a little more with the arm she had around my back. At the same time, Sue put her other hand between the base of my neck and other shoulder. Sue lovingly kneaded me with her fingers there. I thought, "To my loving wife, My darling love."

Both Mav and Til looked at each other more lovingly. As did Zem and Bev. The Nal couples began to caress their partners with their tendrils. I thought, "Your love is my life." This made the others look at their spouses even more lovingly. Sue caressed my head a little with her cheek. The tendrils of the Nal began to glow with their chosen color. Then I thought, "I want your eyes to be my destiny." Both Mav and Til's eyes glazed over with love. As did Zem and Bev's. The rest of the Nal began to glow with their chosen color. I thought, "I want to spend the rest of my life filling your life with joy." Tears started to well up in Zem, Bev, Mav and Til's eyes. The Nal couples began to glow a little brighter. Seeing the loving emotion the others were showing to each their partners was so beautiful. I thought, "Because your happiness is like a bright flame in the darkness."

Tears started to slide down everybody's cheeks as Zem and Bev embraced each other more. Mav and Til did the same with each other. Sue also had tears welling up in her eyes. A darkened force field formed around the Nal couples. Like in the photo of Tal and Sas's wedding. This extended around them about ten inches from their surfaces. I could make out the glow of the Nal couples inside. I thought, "My soul is merged with yours. When I see you tired, I love you more. When I see you asleep, I love you more. When I see you awake, I love you more. My very being will always be your home." By this point, both Sue and I had tears rolling down our cheeks. Sue also caressed me more firmly. I thought, "If you ever tire of me," Til grabbed Mav more tightly as she openly sobbed. Bev was openly sobbing to as she and Zem embraced each other more tightly too. Despite the darkened force field around the Nal couples, they were glowing brilliantly with their chosen colors. Continuing on, I thought, "just let me slip away and be forever grateful for any moment with you. The end." As I sat the pad down, Zem and Bev started kissing each other passionately. Sue and I embraced and kissed each other passionately too.

The Nal couples had wider than normal, side to side undulations that traveled up the length of their tendrils. At the same time, Til said with a sobbing voice, "Oh Mav!" Then they slid their lips toward each other's and started kissing each other passionately. We all must have showed love to our partners in this way for at least a few minutes. Gradually, us partners began to separate a little and look at our mates with loving looks. The force field around the Nal couples had disappeared by this time. Though they still glowed softly as they caressed their partners. As each biological couple looked at our partners lovingly, we would dry the eyes of our partners. With some brief, tender, loving kisses in between. After a bit of soaking in the love of our partners, us couples turned loving smiles to the others. (Though the love was for what we were feeling for our partners of course. Not for the other couples) The Nal couples at this point had withdrawn their tendrils and were circling around the surface of their partners at differing angles.

188

Panny and Lika were sitting up on the railing on the lake side. They too were lovingly embracing and nuzzling each other. Mav said to me with a sentimental tone to his voice, "You've expressed my feelings for my sweet love perfectly." Til said with a sentimental tone to her voice, "Your letter was indeed beautiful. When did you write it." The Nal couples began to return to where they had been. Sue and I briefly looked at each other a little sheepishly. Zem and Bev grinned. Sue and I turned our slightly sheepish looks to Til and Mav. Then Sue said with a bit of an embarrassed tone to her voice, "Erik wrote it when we

were on Grabby.” Mav and Til grinned, then fairly quickly turned their grins to each other. They both gave out a knowing, drawn out, “Oh.” Sue buried her embarrassed face into my shoulder. Though I wasn’t quite as embarrassed as Sue, I didn’t want to let Sue endure any embarrassment alone. So I also buried an embarrassed face into Sue’s shoulder. Zem and Bev chuckled a little. Sue said with a slightly plaintive, embarrassed edge to her voice, “Zem said you would guess!” Mav and Til grinned at us. Then everybody smiled at us with a bit of a look on their faces like they were looking at something adorable.

After a few moments, Til said with a soothing tone to her sentimental voice, “If it makes you feel any better, Mav was doing some creative writing himself a while ago.” Zem and Bev grinned at Mav and Til. Sue and I parted from hiding our faces and smiled appreciatively at Til. Mav was looking at Til with a surprised look. This brought grins to Sue and I’s faces. Mav said to Til with a slightly plaintive and slightly commanding tone to his voice, “Til!” Til grinned at Mav as Mav said, “How would you like it if I told them what you did.” Til said, “I think they can already guess.” Zem, Bev, Sue and I chuckled a little. Mav looked at Til with a slightly disapproving look on his face. Til gave Mav an apologetic, loving look. Then Til caressed Mav’s cheek and said with an apologetic, loving tone to her voice, “I’m sorry darling.” The rest of us smiled at them as Til’s apology melted Mav’s slightly disapproving look. As Mav’s expression turned to a loving one, Til said with the sweetest, tender voice, “Can you ever forgive me my darling?” Then, to seal the deal, Til stuck the tip of her tongue out to where it was just visible between her lips.

Mav briefly took on a slight look of loving surprise. But this was quickly replaced by a highly loving look as he said, “Oh darling!” Mav brought his lips to Til’s as they embraced each other. No doubt, Mav sucked Til’s tongue in past his lips. Then they started kissing each other passionately. Apparently, Til certainly knew how to placate Mav. They both gave off slight moans of pleasure. The Nal couples began to circle their partners at a slightly faster speed. Zem, Bev, Sue and I looked at Mav and Til with sentimental smiles on our faces. These we then turned to our partners. Bev then stuck the tip of her tongue out enough for it to be just visible between her lips. Sue did the same with me. Both Zem and I gave our girls highly loving looks. Zem said with a highly loving voice, “Oh my love!” They brought their lips together. At the same time, I said to Sue with a highly loving voice, “Oh darling!” Sue and I brought our lips together too. Just as Zem and Mav had probably done with their girls, I sucked some of Sue’s tongue in past my lips.

We then french kissed. Kissing each other passionately as the others were

doing. Along with, of course, the usual loving caresses. And the interspersed, slight moans of loving pleasure. After about a minute and a half, Mav and Til parted their kiss and embraced each other lovingly. Soon, Zem and Bev were doing the same. Sue and I did the same a few moments later. All of us lovingly caressed and nuzzled our partners. We all had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. After about a minute, we heard Mav say, "It's no wonder Zem and Bev are proud of you." Sue and I parted our hug and leaned the sides of our heads together as we smiled appreciatively at Mav and Til. Zem and Bev did the same. Mav then said to Sue and I, "You know, sometimes love in a relationship has a tendency to settle a little like the flakes in a snow globe. It can even happen to Real couples from time to time. With some flakes still floating about, but not quite so many. Though you two have given our snow globe of love a good shaking." Til at this point gave Mav a little extra hug and laid her cheek near the top of Mav's head. Mav also gave Til a little extra hug.

Til then said, "It's going to take quite a while for these flakes of love to settle." Mav said, "If they ever do." They embraced each other with both their arms as Til said to Mav, "I love you so much darling." Mav said, "I love you so much too darling." Then Mav and Til started kissing each other. Zem and Bev looked at each other lovingly. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly too. The words Mav and Til exchanged expressed what we were feeling for our partners. Zem and Bev started kissing. Which Sue and I did too. This carried on for about a minute before we started to break off the kissing of our partners and embracing them. These embraces were of course accompanied with loving caresses and nuzzles. Everybody of course with our eyes lightly closed and loving expressions on our faces. After about another minute of this, us couples began to break off our embraces and look lovingly at our partners. After a few extended moments, Sue turned to Bev and smiled sweetly. Then Sue said a gentle, contented tone to her voice, "Bev. Will you put the letter in Erik and I's wedding album if I don't get a chance to."

Everybody at this point was smiling at Bev too. Bev said with a gentle, contented tone to her voice, "I'll take care of it for you dear." Then Bev looked at Sas and said with the same tone to her voice, "Sas dear. Would you put the pad in our ship?" Sas and Tal separated. Then Sas came down and levitated the pad of paper up off the table. As she did so, she said verbally with a sentimental tone to her voice, "I'd love to." Sue said with an appreciative tone to her voice, "Thank you Sas. You're such a sweetheart." Sas said, "My pleasure." She and Tal then headed toward our ship with it. I grinned at Mav and Til and said, "Could I ask a couple favors of you two?" Everybody grinned. Mav said, "All you need to do is ask." I said more directly to Til, "I think we could all use some refreshments." Then I said more directly to Mav, "And I would like to feed some of those Multa lake creatures." Everybody took on a little happier expression. Til said, "It would be a pleasure." Then Til briefly turned her grin to the rest of us and stood



up. Til said to Mav in a happy manner, "What can I get for you sweetheart."

Mav said, "Why don't you surprise me my love." Then Mav added with a more

190

loving tone to his voice, "Just make sure you put some extra love in it." Sue and I briefly grinned at each other. This was the same thing I asked Sue to do for me earlier. Til said to Mav with an extra loving voice, "You know I will darling!" Then Til leaned over and gave Mav a brief but loving kiss. This caused sentimental smiles to come over everybody's faces. After Til was again standing erect, Til had her arm around Mav's shoulders and Mav had a hand resting on Til's hip. Til and Mav smiled at Zem and Bev. Bev turned to Zem and said, "What can I get you darling." Zem said, "Why don't you surprise me too honey. Just don't forget the secret ingredient." (It was obvious that Zem meant putting in extra love) Bev said, "I won't forget sweetness." Then Bev and Zem gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Bev stood up and Sue grinned at me. Everybody else smiled at us as Sue said to me, "What can I get you sweetie." I said, "I'll have what you have lovie." Sue seemed to get an idea and whispered something into my ear. Afterwards, we grinned at each other as we parted and I quickly nodded my head a few times.

As Sue stood up, Zem said with a smile, "You two sharing secrets over there?" Sue said, "Yes we are." Til said playfully, "Tell us!" Sue's grin widened a bit as she said to Til, "It wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." We all laughed a little. Bev and Til walked over to where Sue was. Us guys watched them with grins on our faces. Tal and Sas had returned by this time and hovered nearby. Bev took Sue's arm on the one side. As Til took Sue's arm on the other side, Til said to Sue with a grin, "I bet you just love keeping us in suspense." Sue grinned at Til and said, "Yes I do." We all laughed. Sue then said quickly, "Race ya's!" Sue slipped out of their grasp and started running down the dock. Bev and Til both let out little high pitched yells and started running after her. Panny and Lika jumped off of the plank at the top of the railing and took off after them. Bev called out, "You cheater!" as they ran. All this caused us guys to laugh heartily as we watched them running down the dock. As the girls left the dock, Bev and Til started to catch to Sue as she headed toward the maketake machine. Sue briefly looked at them and gave out a little high pitched yell as she ran a little faster.

When Sue reached the maketake machine Sue threw her arms up in the air as she turned to the others. Then Sue called out triumphantly, "I win!" Bev and Til both grabbed Sue and laughed. Which Sue did too. They both spun Sue around as they all laughed. All of them nearly fell over. This brought even more laughter to us guys. The girls started talking to each other in an excited manner and laughing as

they stepped over to the maketake machine. It was wonderful to see them so happy. As our laughter died down, I turned to the others and said in a happy manner, "They're so wonderful." Zem and Mav were grinning as I was. Mav said, "They sure are." Zem also added, "Just great." I looked up and around at our Nal and said, "Mim, Pam, Sas. That goes for you too." All the Nal couples began to circle around their partners at a little faster speed. Zem and Mav smiled at them too. Mim said, "Thank you!" Pam said, "You're so sweet!" Sas said, "Just a dear!" Pim said, "Thank you!" San said, "We appreciate your appreciation." Tal said, "We're some lucky Nal."

After enjoying the sentimentality for a couple moments, Mav said to them, "Why

191

don't you girls go see if the others need any help. I have an errand for the guys." Mim, Pam and Sas all said at the same time, "Ok." They started floating off in the direction of the girls. Then Mav said, to the others, "Would you guys go lure some multa back here." They all said at the same time, "Sure." Then they started moving out over the lake. We watched them leave for a couple moments with smiles on our faces. Then Zem, Mav and I went back to watching the girls. Panny and Lika were scampering around a little near them. Mim, Pam and Sas were floating nearby. Sue was looking at the maketake screen on top of the counter with a big smile on her face. Bev and Til were a few steps away with their backs turned to Sue. They were both grinning at each other with excited looks on their faces. Bev was holding a tray with six glasses on it. Two appeared to hold simi and two appeared to hold teka. Two smaller ones held a greenish liquid. Mav said, "It sure looks like Sue is up to something." Bev raised her tray up a little. Probably for one of the Nal girls to take. I turned my grin back to Mav. Zem said to Mav, "I'm sure she is." Zem then grinned at me and said, "I wonder what it could be." I said in a playful manner, "No guessing!" This caused Zem and Mav to chuckle. Which I quickly joined in on. We then all turned our grins back to the girls. Sue pulled out a little smaller tray that had a decorative silver cover. The cover had a small decorative handle on the top. Sas moved over by Sue. Mim had taken Bev's tray. Pam had taken the two small glasses off of it. Sue raised her tray up to Sas. Sas levitated it out of Sue's hands as Bev and Til turned to grin at Sue. Sue went up between them as they happily chatted about something. Til held Sue's arm on one side and Bev held Sue's other arm on the other side. The girls started walking back in our direction with big grins on their faces as they chatted. As they walked back, Pam had moved a little farther in front of them. Pam had lowered her small glasses lower to the ground. Panny and Lika ran ahead and tried to take them. Pam and the glasses raised up before they could. This caused us all to chuckle. As the girls walked back, a few moments later, Pam and the glasses lowered again to tease Panny

and Lika. Again, Pam raised them out of the way before they could get them. Bev and Til let go of Sue's arms and called Panny and Lika over.

Panny jumped into Bev's arms and Lika jumped onto Til's arms. They all got soothing pets and comments. Pam then moved the glasses near Panny as Bev cuddled him in her arms. He reached out his little front paws and tried to take one. But Pam again moved them out of reach. They all chuckled. It was so adorable. Sue then said compassionately to Panny, "Aw!" And gave him a pet. Bev said to Panny in a compassionate voice, "Pam is such a meanie!" Then Pam did the same with Lika. As Til cuddled Lika in her arms, Lika too tried to reach out with her little front paws to take a glass. But Pam again moved them out of reach. Again, it was so cute. Til gave Lika a bit of a cuddle and some pets. Til said to Lika in a consoling manner, "You'll have some soon you little dear." Zem, Mav and I stood up as the girls approached. We were all grinning of course. I said, "I know you're not trying to be. But do you guys have any idea how utterly adorable you are?" Bev, Til and Sue just beamed even wider grins. As Mim and Sas lowered their trays to the table, I said to Mim, "That includes

192

you, Sas and Pam." Pam lowered herself to the flat board on top of the railing on the left and levitated a glass on either side of her at the right height for Panny and Lika to take.

Mim, Pam and Sas all said with an appreciative tone to their voices, "Thank you." Bev and Til went over to the railing with Panny and Lika. Mim and Sas floated up in the air and started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Til sat Lika to the right of Pam and Bev sat Panny to the left of her. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we caressed a hand around each other's lower backs and turned our grinning faces to look at Panny and Lika finally get their drinks. They seemed quite happy and not at all upset about Pam having teased them. Bev went over to Zem. They gave each other a brief but loving kiss as Til went over to Mav. Pam floated up to Mim and Sas. All three circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Sue and I smiled at the others as Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss too. Bev and Zem released each other. Zem went to sit down as Bev took a couple glasses from the tray and sat them where they would be sitting. Sue and I grinned at each other. Then Sue and I released each other. Mav and Til parted their kiss and smiled at each other.

Bev went to sit across Zem's lap as Mav went to sit down. Sue started to make her way around the left side of the table as Mav sat down. I sat down too as Til sat across Mav's lap. Zem, Bev and I grinned at Sue. Sue was grinning too. No doubt chomping at the bit to reveal her surprise to Mav and Til. Mav and Til then turned to grin at Sue too as Sue leaned over the table a little. Sue then slid the covered

tray in front of Mav and Til. As Sue stood near the table between where Zem and Bev and Mav and Til were sitting, Sue said, "What I got isn't much. But I hope it's something you will use often." A look of eager anticipation accompanied Mav and Til's grins. Then Sue lifted the lid off the tray. On the tray were two white mugs with decorations on them. Til and Mav picked them up carefully so as not to spill what I took to be hot chocolate that was in them. As Mav and Til examined them, their expressions showed even more happiness. Mim, Pam and Sas stopped circling around each other and lowered down a little to look at them too. Mav and Til's reaction made both Sue and I beam wide grins.

Zem and Bev briefly turned their grins to each other and gave each other a brief extra hug. Then they turned back to enjoy Mav and Til's delight. Sue bent her knees and sat the lid below the edge of the table before standing again. The mugs were pretty much like the ones I had made for Zem and Bev. And which made Sue want to have a pair too. As you should remember if you read the first book, they had heart outlines on them. One contained a portrait of Zem and Bev, on a light blue background, from the shoulders up. Another held a portrait of Sue and I. A smaller heart outline held a portrait of Pim and Mim. Though instead of making Pim and Mim's shapes round, I made them heart shaped. All of them had the appearance of being hand painted, but done very well. Below each was our names with a plus sign in between them. There were some other smaller solid red hearts around the mugs. These mugs had three larger heart outlines with portraits of one of us couples in each. These too were from the

193

shoulders up and appeared to be hand painted. The shoulders showed the same kinds of tops the girls were now wearing and the shirts us guys were now wearing.

Below Mav and Til's of course, it had Mav + Til. There were three smaller heart outlines that nearly touched just to the right of the larger heart outlines. These each held portraits of Pim and Mim, San and Pam and Tal and Sas. They were on a light blue background too. Sue had made them heart shaped too. Though they were the colors they had chosen for themselves. Below each were the names of each Nal couple, in slightly smaller print, with a plus sign in between them. There were some smaller solid red hearts here and there scattered around the mugs. After Mav and Til admired them for a few moments, they both turned appreciative grins to Sue. Til said, "They're adorable!" Mav said, "We'll use them all the time!" Sue got an even happier expression on her face and a grin that couldn't possibly get any bigger. Til got a sentimental expression on her face and said, "You're such a dear!" Mim, Pam and Sas all turned into heart shapes.

Mim said, "You're so sweet!" Quickly followed by Sas saying, "You are a dear!" And quickly followed by Pam saying, "They're just

adorable!" San's thoughts then quickly followed. He said, "You're so sweet!" Tal said, "Thank you for thinking of us!" Pim said, "You're so considerate." Sue clasped her hands over her chest and thought, "They wouldn't be complete without you dear Nal. I guess you guys can see what Mim, Pam and Sas see." At the same time as Sue said this, Mim, Pam and Sas touched the edges of their heart shapes. Then they began to turn in a stationary position as they rose up a little further in the air. As they turned, sometimes they of course were like three hearts all fairly flat together. At other times, they were again like three hearts touching their outer edges together in a row. Mim just happened to be the middle heart. Pim answered Sue and said, "That's right. That is, when they let us. We couldn't miss your surprise." Sue was looking at Mim, Pam and Sas as she said, "You're all very welcome." Then Sue happily scampered over behind Mav and Til.

Sue bent over a little and put her head a little above and between theirs. With a hand on both Mav and Til's shoulders, Sue said, "I need a picture!" We all chuckled. One of the other Nal that was probably still hanging around somewhere came zipping in. Apparently Mim, Pam and Sas were enjoying themselves too much to be bothered personally. It stopped near me. Mav, Sue and Til grinned at it as Mav and Til held up their coco mugs a little to get them into the shot too. At the same time, Sue put her face a little more in between theirs. The Nal let off a flash. I stood up and said with a big grin, "Me too!" Everybody else laughed a little as I happily scampered around the right side of the table to stand behind Mav and Til also. I said, Mim, Pam, Sas, "You too!" Sue put her head down next to Mav's and I bent over and put my head next to Til's. Mim, Pam and Sas came down and sat a little above our heads to get in the shot. They levitated there with the edges of their heart shapes touching. We all grinned at the Nal again and it flashed.

Then Sue and I leaned up a little. Mim, Pam and Sas also raised up a little. Sue turned her grin to Zem and Bev and said, "There's room for a couple more

194

over here." Til added, "The more, the merrier." Zem and Bev turned their grins to each other. Then they grinned back at us as Bev got up. Bev said, "Ok!" Zem got up too and they came over behind Sue and I. Sue and I leaned over again. Bev leaned in next to Sue and Zem leaned in next to me. Mim, Pam and Sas also lowered down a little again. Sue said, "Everybody say cheese!" Mim, Pam and Sas made grinning mouths appear on their surfaces. The Nal again flashed. Then we all stood up as Mim, Pam and Sas raised up higher into the air. Mav and Til sat their mugs down and turned their grins to us. Til turned her grin to Sue and Bev and said, "That'll be a keeper." Mav turned his grin to Zem and I and said, "Thanks guys." The picture taking Nal floated up and back near the ceiling. Mim, Pam and Sas

swung around in a row above where Sue and I had been sitting. The grins they had been wearing were now facing in our direction.

A slightly more delighted look came over Sue and I's faces at seeing their grins. Knowing that their grins were included in the last picture, Sue said, "Oh you sweet dears! Now the picture will be even more of a keeper!" Mav said to them, "Just as Erik said, you guys are adorable." They all said at the same time, "Thank you!" They made their grins disappear and they resumed their normal, round shape. Then they started rotating around each other's surfaces at differing angles again. But at a little faster speed than normal. Zem and Bev took each other's hand and started back to their seat. Sue and I took each other's hand and went back to our seat on the other side of the table. As we did so, Pam said telepathically, "We'll go see how the guys are doing." We all heard this of course. Til smiled up at them and thought, "Ok dears." They started moving out over the lake as they parted a bit. No doubt heading to different parts of the lake where their guys were rounding up multa. I sat down and Sue sat across my lap. Bev had just sat down across Zem's lap. Mav and Til were again holding their mugs by the handle with their other hands under them as they examined them more. Both of them had big smiles on their faces.

Bev said to them, "Erik had some similar mugs made for Zem and I." Mav and Til grinned at Bev as she added, "They had pictures of Zem and I, Sue and Erik and Mim and Pim." Sue said to Mav and Til, "I'm so glad you like them. I had to have a similar pair as Bev and Zem's for myself. Though now I think I'm going to need a pair like yours too." Til said, "You're too sweet!" Bev smiled at Sue and said, "That was very thoughtful." Sue to Bev with a big grin, "It seemed like a good idea." I said to Mav and Til, "It's little enough compared with what you've done for us." As they sat their mugs down, Mav said, "Don't mention it." Til said, "Even if your presents weren't so dear, sometimes it's the littlest things that mean the most." Then Mav picked up his mug and moved it a little closer to Til. He looked at Til with a loving smile. Til looked at Mav in the same way. Mav then said with a loving voice, "My love." Then Mav brought his mug up to Til's lips. As Til went to take a sip, Zem and I picked up our glasses too. Us couples also smiled lovingly at our partners as I said to Sue with a loving voice, "My love." Zem said to Bev, "My love."

Til gave Mav a brief but loving kiss after taking a sip. After Bev and Sue had taken a drink from Zem and I, we received a brief but loving kiss from our girls

195

too. As we did so, Til held her mug to Mav and said with a loving voice, "My love." Then Til brought it to Mav's lips and he took a drink. After Zem and I had set our drinks down, Bev and Sue picked up their drinks and lovingly offered drinks to their guys in the same way. Which Zem and I lovingly received from our girls. After everybody had received

their drinks and the drinks were sat down, all of us couples passionately kissed our partners. There were of course some slight moans of pleasure going on here and there. As Sue and I kissed, I of course was loving to death Sue's soft, loving lips. Sue's slippery, loving tongue was also a dream. As Sue and I kissed, the thought that I would be able to kiss these wonderful lips whenever I wanted to for the rest of my life was almost too wonderful to bear. I again thought of how lucky I was to have this loving, amazing girl in my life. After about a minute of kissing, we began to break off the kissing of our partners. We then embraced and caressed our partners.

After a bit of this, we heard Til say to Mav with a loving voice, "I love you darling." Mav said to Til with a loving voice, "I love you too darling." Then they parted enough to look at each other lovingly. As they went to give each other a brief but loving kiss, Zem said to Bev with a loving voice, "My darling." Bev lovingly said to Zem, "My darling." They then parted and looked at each other lovingly as Mav and Til smiled sentimentally at them. As Zem and Bev went to give each other a brief but loving kiss, I said to Sue with a loving voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue said to me with a loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." We then parted and looked at each other lovingly. Mav and Til went to pick up their mugs as Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, Sue and I smiled at each other lovingly. Zem and Bev were smiling at each other lovingly too. Sue and I turned to smile at the others as Mav and Til sat their mugs down. Sue and I picked up our drinks.

As we went to take a drink, Zem and Bev smiled at the rest of us before picking up their drinks too. We all took a drink. More smiles were exchanged as we sat our glasses down. Then Til said to Sue and I, with a smile of course, "Your mugs were a wonderful surprise." Everybody was smiling at Sue and I as Mav said, "We have a little surprise planned for you too." Sue and I looked at each other with open mouthed, surprised and extra happy looks. Both Sue and I knew that any surprise from a Reall had to be wonderful! Bev briefly grinned at Mav and Til. Zem only smiled at them. Then Sue and I turned our expressions to Mav and Til. Bev grinned at Sue and I. Zem again only smiled. Sue and I took on big grins as I said, "But you've done so much already!" Zem turned his smile back to Mav as he said, "What are you trying to do. Spoil them?" Mav and Til chuckled a little. Then Mav said to Zem with a grin, "It's only a little thing. At least I don't see it changing your plans for them much. If at all." This made Zem's smile widen a bit as Sue said excitedly to Mav and Til, "What is it!" Til said, "It wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." We all laughed. Afterwards, Sue said, "I can't wait!"

This made us all laugh a little more. Then Til said, "You'll have to wait a little while to find out what it is." Bev said a little excitedly to Til, "You can think to us what the surprise is!" Til said, "No way! You might give it away. We're not even telling Mim and Pim. It's just going to have to be a surprise to you too." Bev and

Zem grinned at each other. They probably figured that it wouldn't be anything too spoiling. And the surprise would be fun. Sue and I gave each other an extra happy hug. Seeing our happiness kept everybody grinning. After a few moments of enjoying Sue and I's happiness, Mav and Til went to take another drink. The rest of us did so too. After everybody had their drinks sat back down, Sue said to Mav and Til, "When are the multa going to get here." Til said, "It may take the Nal a bit to group them up and for them to make the swim here. Especially since there will be young ones that need to keep up. But it shouldn't be too long." What Til said made everybody's smiles widen a bit. After a couple moments, I took on a bit more of a somber look and said to Mav and Til, "You're both obviously experts on human cultures. Mind if I ask you a question?" Nobody's smiles changed at all as Til said, "Not at all."

I said, "I'm not a fan of conspiracy theories. After all, why search for conspiracies when there are so many blatant problems to deal with. But do you know of any secrets that the average American doesn't know about?" Mav said, "You know, for a human, you are a cut above the other's I've briefly known." This made Sue and I and Zem and Bev grin. Though Sue and I's grins were a bit bigger. Mav and Til grinned too as Sue gave me a brief extra hug and said, "I think so too!" Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we turned our grins back to Mav and Til. (During this next part of the conversation, every now and then, somebody would of course take a drink of their beverage) Mav said, "There are many popular books, movies and television shows dealing with conspiracy theories and the like. But as you pointed out, look at some of the things Americans already know. It has been demonstrated clearly enough that fracking pollutes ground water, streams, rivers and lakes." The rest of our expressions turned more somber as Mav added, "It also causes earthquakes. Yet your Environmental Protection Agency exempted companies who do it from their rules."

Til then said, "It has also been a long known fact that the U.S. government is in bed with the Mafia. For instance, the U.S. wanted to bust some KKK people for the murders of a few outside agitators. A nigger and a couple Jews. The government couldn't get the evidence they needed. But they knew of many Mafia enforcers. They made a deal with the mob to have one go and kidnap one of their suspects and obtain a confession. This Mafia enforcer did kidnap a KKK suspect. He tortured a confession out of him. It was interesting that the U.S. legal system allowed a confession gained through torture to be used. Though maybe with both the U.S. government and the Mafia to go against, the defendants just figured it wouldn't be wise to object. After all, they were just fed up, misguided, regular people. They were also fairly moral by human standards. But they were up against hardened



criminals and the governmental dogs of the Jews. So they wouldn't have stood much of a chance. That the U.S. government knows of such Mafia enforcers and doesn't use such tactics on them to help shield the American people from criminal organizations speaks volumes. "Another thing is that when the U.S. government wants to import drugs to help support some friendly foreign government or anti Communist fighters, they have the mob there more than willing to buy and distribute any drugs they bring in." I

197

said, "That is pretty bad. But I'm no fan of the KKK anyway. To me, the Confederate flag should just be a white banner with the words "Nigger Lovers" written across it. After all, who was mostly responsible for bringing them to the U.S. And who fought so desperately hard to keep them there. It was everything the Confederate flags KKK people like to display stands for. If they wanted to show some true racial patriotism, they should fly a Nazi flag." Mav said, "The role of money does often throw a monkey wrench into the works. Look at all of the White south Africans who supported apartheid. But they employed hordes of black Africans. Though you just can't have other species around like that without them seeking integration. And doing the work they did, they had a fairly strong moral basis for doing so. In that respect, the U.S. government had sealed its own fate almost from the beginning.

"One of the few sane things they did was to try and wipe out the Indians. The Jew media is full of stories about the poor, mistreated Indians. But most Indian tribes didn't treat each other any better. Then the Jew media got most Americans sold on the idea of integration. Though with this idea making it easier for companies to find foreign workers to exploit, it made it easier to sell. After all, having people around who are desperate for work are better than slaves. Employers can just chew them up, spit them out and get replacements. Neither do they have to worry much about their upkeep. Unlike actual slave owners had to do. Though unemployment benefits do help until they are able to find another employer to exploit them. Also, many Americans know that the only reason they got the Statue of Liberty was because the Egyptians didn't want it. Partially in support of gaining more immigrants to exploit, they had some Jew write that "Give us your tired, your poor" crap on it. I think that most Americans also know that as of right now, there are simply too many people on earth for it to sustainably support.

"There are so many examples of the unfortunate things the American people do know, as you said, it doesn't make much sense for them to go seeking conspiracies. But doing so does help them overlook the bad things they know about and are at least in part responsible for themselves." Til said, "This "Johnny come lately" idea in America of inviting everybody in so they can all hold hands and supposedly think

happy thoughts is just more brainwashing to support more of the same ole exploitation crap. It doesn't seem to matter that their being what they are would far outlive their current "politically correct" views. Also, apart from the symbiosis that first created simple life forms, it goes against everything life stands for. For the non whites, they're all for it. But to a flea, anything the dog has to suffer for them to live is worth it in their eyes. Also, nothing short of war is going to keep the overpopulating Mexican hordes from flooding your country. Though that is difficult to do with the Jew media bombarding the populace with that "politically correct" crap. And then, again, there are those eager to have new workers to exploit.

"It's no wonder that many in the U.S. want to give illegals a path to citizenship. Though they claim they will also increase the sham of border security. It may slow them down a little. But as it is, most Mexicans seeking to enter the U.S. illegally succeed. And when all an invader has to do is claim that they are on a

198

path to citizenship, border security will eventually become pointless." Zem and Bev continued to listen to all of this with polite interest. Mav then said, "We know a huge unknown fact that you could call a conspiracy. You should find it interesting. When it became clear that the union was going to win in the civil war, many northerners started licking their chops at the idea of how much money they would be making. Though this meant keeping the nigger workforce around. But being more interested in the people than with money, Lincoln wanted to ship most of the slaves off somewhere. For the northerners licking their greedy chops, this couldn't be allowed to happen. It was easy enough to find a vengeful, southern sympathizing patsy to kill him. As for the soldier who was supposed to be guarding the President's door, his being down in a bar instead and having some drinks was no accident."

Sue seemed more surprised by this information than me. After all, we did come from practically different worlds. I had been a homeless guy. Sue was the daughter of a successful doctor. Any revelations Zem, Bev, Mav and Til had about humans in general, I either knew a bit about myself or wasn't surprised by. Having seen Sue's surprise, Zem said to Sue, "I can show you one of the results of what Mav and Til are saying." Then Zem looked up at the Nal that was floating near the ceiling and appeared to think something to it. It moved to the right of our table and lowered about five feet. It then transformed into a four by six foot screen. A picture appeared on it. It must have been when Zem and Pim approached Stevo, Swarm and I as we slept in our spots under the overpass. After a moment, the picture changed to a picture of me where I was sleeping. I was of course sleeping on my cardboard, with my blankets, next to one of the overpass supports. Pim must have taken it just before Zem woke me up. Sue got a sad, emotional

look on her face as tears started to appear in her eyes. Then Sue turned her expression to me. Which caused a compassionate, emotional look to come over my face. Sue said with a sad, shamed, emotional voice, "I'm so sorry darling!" I said with an emotional yet soothing voice, "It's not your fault darling." Sue then said, "But you don't understand darling!"

The Nal transformed back into its normal shape and returned to where it was. Sue looked at everybody with emotional, teary guilt written on her face. They all had compassionate looks on their faces. Then Sue said to Mav and Til with a shamed tone to her voice, "I was one of those willingly ignorant people you speak of!" Sue then buried her face at the base of my neck and said through her tears, "How can you stand being around someone so disgusting!" Zem and Bev looked at each other with surprise accompanying their compassionate looks. As did Mav and Til. Tears were welling up in my eyes as I hugged Sue back and said tearfully, "Oh my life! You could never be disgusting!" At the same time, Bev, Til, Zem and Mav shot out of their seats and hurried over to us. Bev laid her cheek on Sue's head with one hand on Sue's back and the other on my shoulder. As Bev caressed Sue comfortingly with one hand, Bev said with a comforting tone to her voice, "It isn't your fault!" Zem placed a hand on Bev's back and a comforting hand on Sue's right shoulder as he said with a comforting tone to his voice, "Any human can be fooled!"

Til had just placed a hand on Bev's back and a comforting hand on Sue by the

199

time Zem finished speaking. Then Til quickly added with a comforting tone to her voice, "You're too sweet to be disgusting!" It was at this point that Panny and Lika also hopped up onto Sue's lap. They gave off slight whimpering sounds. Apparently they meant to comfort Sue also. By the time Til finished speaking, Mav had a hand on Til's back and a comforting hand on Sue. Mav said with a comforting tone to his voice, "It's natural for most beings to follow the pack you sweet dear! You mustn't blame yourself!" Bev moved her head as Sue looked up at everybody with a teary face. I was looking at Sue with a tearful look of love. The expressions of Bev, Zem, Mav and Til were just oozing with compassion. As Sue moved a hand to offhandedly pet Panny and Lika, Sue said tearfully, "You're all so wonderful!" I briefly glanced at the others with an emotional look of gratitude and compassion for Sue. Sue put her face back where it had been and cried more. I continued to comfortingly hold Sue. Everybody continued to caress Sue comfortingly too as Bev said with a gentle, soothing voice, "That's all right Sue honey. Let it all out."

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til looked at each other with compassionate looks. Though along with these, there was a slight expression like they were witnessing something adorable. Then they turned these back to

Sue. They knew Sue would be ok. After letting Sue cry for a few extended moments, Zem said with a comforting tone, "I don't want to hear any self-deprecating remarks ever again from our hug monster." This caused Sue to give off a brief, tearful laugh. Everybody's smiled. I said to Sue with a voice full of gentle, loving compassion, "Maybe I shouldn't have brought the subject up darling." Sue's crying began to stop. Til said, "Mav and I could have been a little less blunt about things." Zem then said, "Maybe I shouldn't have shown you the picture of how I found Erik." Then Sue lifted her head with a teary, slight smile on her face and looked at the others. Sue's smile made their expressions take on a sentimental look. Referring to the pictures Zem had one of the spare Nal show us, Sue said to Zem, "I'm glad you showed me." The other's removed their comforting hands from Sue and stood erect. Then they held their partner's arms.

Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue released me and cuddled Panny and Lika in her arms. I removed a hand from Sue and helped her pet them. Then Sue smiled gratefully at everybody and said, "If we're to learn anything, you can't pull any punches with us." Mav said, "Ok. But we'll try to take it easy with you." This made Sue and the rest of us smile a bit more. Zem then looked out over the lake and grinned. Then Zem said, "Looks like something to cheer you up is on the way. The multa will be here pretty soon." We all grinned in the direction Zem was looking. About a mile and a half out, I could just make out the tiny specks of Pim and Mim, Tal and Sas, and San and Pam. They were flying in pairs. Each Nal couple were about a hundred and fifty feet apart from the others and about six feet above the water. I could make out multiple disturbances in the water below them. A couple spouts of vapor mist and a few multa heads were either raising up from or lowering down into the water. Sue and I's expressions took on a bit of surprise. There appeared to be quite a few multa.

Til said to Sue and I, "They will be a little while yet." Sue and I turned our  
200

surprised looks to the others. Sue and I then grinned at each other. Panny and Lika jumped from our laps and headed for the railing on the right as Sue and I dried each other's faces a little. Then we turned grins to the others. Sue said to Til, "How many of them are there!" Then Mav said, "Let me see how many they have." Mav then seemed to think to the Nal. Panny and Lika jumped up on the railing on the right and looked out over the lake excitedly. Then Mav turned back to Sue and said, "They have thirty seven. But there will be more. The multa are terrible at keeping secrets." This made everybody laugh a little. Til then said to Sue, "There are fifty three multa in the lake right now." Mav turned his grin to Til and said with a wry tone to his voice, "I wonder where could find some help feeding them all." Til

said, "What a wonderful idea! The bartok have always been a little skittish of them." Then Til nodded her head a little in the direction of the bartok and added, "I think we can cure these ones of that. I'll go over and let them know." Sue said excitedly, "Can I go too?!" Til said, "Sure." Bev said happily, "I'll go with you!"

Sue and I gave each other a quick peck of a kiss. Then Sue turned and shot up off my lap as she made a happy "Eee!" sound. Mav and Zem released their girls. Bev and Sue stepped next to each other. Til took a few steps over to them. Bev held Sue's arm on one side and Til held Sue's arm on the other. We were all grinning. But Sue seemed a bit happier. Til said to Sue, "Here we go!" Then they fairly quickly faded out of existence. Along with the spare Nal that had been floating up near the ceiling. Mav and Zem turned their grins in the direction of the bartok. I turned my grin in that direction too as I stood up. The girls fairly quickly materialized next to the bartok camp with their backs to us. I stepped next to Zem and put my hand on his opposite shoulder. We briefly grinned at each other as Zem did the same with me. Then we returned our grins to the girls. The girls released each other. Having seen Bev, Til and Sue, all of the bartok threw themselves to the ground facing them. Mav came next to me and put his hand on my opposite shoulder. We briefly grinned at each other as I put a hand on his opposite shoulder. Then we turned our grins back to the girls. Til gestured with her arm to them as the other spare Nal that had been hanging around the front of the house began to show up from both sides of the house. The bartok began to rise to a kneeling position. Til apparently said something to them and then gestured her arm out over the lake. The rest of the bartok looked too. Til then spoke to them more. A Nal levitating a couple of baskets headed in their direction. One held silvery looking fish about eight inches long and the other held treats like we had fed the other animals. The Nal that was with the girls transformed itself into a screen. Til gestured to it. All of the bartok looked at it too. If I had to guess, I would have to say that Til was going to show them how to feed a multa. As another Nal with a couple baskets of fish and treats headed in their direction, the houks that were laying in between us and where the bartok were looked with a little curiosity at the first Nal and baskets of food passing by. The bartok looked at the Nal screen with great interest. Another Nal with a basket of fish and one with treats headed in their direction.

The first Nal with its baskets of food appeared to be heading toward the beach near them. Til then gestured to the screen again and appeared to say

201

something to the bartok. Another Nal with a basket of fish and one with treats headed in their direction. After a couple more moments, the Nal screen transformed itself back into its original shape. The

bartok began to bow repeatedly toward the girls as the first Nal landed its baskets of food on the beach. Another Nal with a couple baskets of fish and treats started heading in their direction. I turned my grin to Mav and said, "Something tells me the bartok are going to be enjoying themselves." Both Mav and Zem turned their grins to me as Mav said, "You know how much fun it is to feed our critters." I gave Mav a couple brief, firm, manly hugs with the hand I had on his shoulder and said, "More fun that humans should be allowed to have!" We all laughed. All of us looked around at each other to share in each other's laughter as we did so. Mav also gave me a couple slaps on my shoulder. After the laughter, we turned our grins to the girls. The girls gave each other a brief hug.

I said to Zem, "Don't you just love seeing them so happy." Zem gave my shoulder a couple quick pats and said, "It's like a bright flame in the darkness." Mav gave my shoulder a bit of a squeeze as we all exchanged sentimental smiles. Then we turned back to the girls. They were waving at the bartok. The bartok continued to bow at the girls. No doubt they were voicing statements of reverence, thanks and making their goodby's. A Nal levitating a basket of fish and one of treats headed in our direction from the maketake. Zem gave me a couple pats on my back and said, "They'll be back any second now." After a couple moments, the girls fairly quickly disappeared from where they were and reappeared in front of us a few feet away. Our sentimental smiles were replaced with grins of joy at the girls return. The girls were grinning too. Us guys released each other and went to our girls. Mav said to Til, "How'd things go." As we all took the hands of our partners, we all grinned at Til to hear her answer. Til said, "They were more than happy to help us out."

Bev was the next to speak. We all turned our grins to Bev as she said, "I think they're going to enjoy it." Then we all grinned at Sue as she said, "I know I'm going to enjoy it. And you know me. I can't wait!" We all laughed a little. At this point, the Nal with the first two baskets of food for us was setting them down near the railing on the right. Yet another Nal was getting ready to set a couple baskets there too. Panny and Lika looked at the food with interest. A couple more Nal were heading our way with a basket of food and another was taking a second basket containing fish out of the maketake. After the laughter, we all gave our partners a loving kiss. We kissed our partners for a few extended moments. Then we began to part from them. As each couple did so, we gave our partners loving smiles. Mav then turned and glanced out over the lake. Which caused the rest of us to do so also. Two Nal were setting down baskets of food on the mountain side of the gazebo. Another Nal was levitating a basket of fish and a basket of treats on the other side of the railing near us. Yet another Nal was approaching it. They would probably wait for us to get out of the way to give them plenty of room to set them down on our side of the railing.

The multa and the Nal above them had come a little over half the

distance they were when we first spotted them. Mav said to everybody, "Let's go watch them approach." We all put an arm around our partner's lower backs and walked over

202

to where the Nal had just set down four baskets of food. Zem and Bev went around the table on the far side. Mav and Til and Sue and I went from where we were. We were all still grinning as Zem and Bev approached us on the other side. Bev said to Sue and I, "You're just going to love them. They're just as friendly as tucuxi. Just a lot bigger." As we all stood at the railing, Til said, "The tucuxi are just adorable." Mav said in a kidding around kind of voice, "Just be careful the multa don't accidentally bite a finger." Sue and I knew that Mav was probably kidding. Even so, Sue said to Mav, "They don't really bite do they?"

Mav said, "It's possible one may give you a friendly little nibble. But just like the houks, they're far too friendly and intelligent to bite hard." We all turned our grins to the approaching multa.

They were still quite a distance away. But we could see that who seemed to be Pam was levitating one of the babies just above the surface. The baby and what I took to be the mother were nuzzling heads. Sue said, "That's so adorable!" We all grinned at Sue. Til said, "Pam probably figured the baby needed help keeping up." We all went back to watching the approaching multa. Every now and then, one would briefly raise its head and part of its neck above the water. I stood behind Sue and wrapped my arms around my dear sweet love. With one arm over Sue's breasts and another below them. At the same time, I placed my cheek against the side of Sue's head. Sue reached her arms behind her and held onto my lower waist. I took my cheek off Sue and said, "You never gave me a backward hug before darling." Sue turned her grin to me. We parted enough to give each other a brief but loving kiss before returning to our embrace and grinning at the approaching multa. As I spoke, the others also grinned at us. Mav stood behind Til and Zem stood behind Bev. They held each other in the same way as Sue and I. Though no doubt, Zem and Mav had received backwards hugs from their girls before.

After watching the approaching multa for a few moments, Bev turned a contented smile toward Til and said, "I really like seeing the little ones enjoying their treats." Sue and I turned contented smiles to Bev and Zem as Bev spoke. Then turned them to Til and Mav to hear Til's answer. Mav and Til were also giving Bev and Zem contented smiles. Til said, "As for the adults, they never seem to forget." Panny and Lika were holding onto each other and watching the approaching multa. They briefly looked at each other and made some excited chattering sounds. Zem let go of Bev and took a couple of the small fish out of a basket. Zem then placed them on the polished brown wooden plank that made up the tops of the railings. Then Zem said to

Panny and Lika, "You can help feed multa too." Panny picked up the fish and took a bite out of it. We all laughed as Bev fairly gently swatted the fish out of Panny's grasp. The rest of the fish fell into the water. Bev said with a slight hint of scolding to her voice, "Oh yuck! Now if you lick anybody, it's going to be with fishy tongue!" Panny didn't seem to care as he happily chewed his piece of fish. What Bev said made the rest of us laugh more.

After the laughter, Zem picked up another small fish and laid it on the plank. Then Zem waved his finger at both Panny and Lika. I figured that Zem probably told them telepathically at the same time not to eat the fish and treats. Or

203

something along those lines. Then Zem smiled lovingly at Bev and said, "Even in your present form darling, I wouldn't care if you had fishy tongue." This made us all chuckle. Which Zem quickly joined in on. I would have to assume that in virtual reality, Zem and Bev had experienced each other as creatures that had fishy tongues. After the laughter, Bev said with a mirth filled voice, "Thank you darling." They then embraced and gave each other a loving kiss. The rest of us smiled at them sentimentally. Something told me that Bev was probably giving Zem some tongue. I guess it was just an added bonus to Zem that it wasn't fishy. Then the rest of us went back to watching the approaching multa. Zem and Bev parted their kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Then Zem went to stand behind Bev again. They held each other in an embrace like before. Sue felt so wonderful in my arms. And the little bit of side boob under my hand was awfully nice too.

Both of us lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together a little with loving, contented smiles on our faces. Just as the other's were doing. After about a minute, Mav looked at the rest of us with a smile and said, "I suppose we should get ready." This made the rest of us grin. Which Mav did too. Mav gave Til a kiss on the cheek and let her go. Zem and I gave our girls a kiss on the cheek and let them go too. Mav then looked at Sue and I and said, "Which side would you like to feed from." Sue gestured to the side that faced the bartok and said, "We'll take this side over here." Bev said to me, "Sue already knows. You should try to only give fish to the little ones." Til then added with a smile, "And not too much. You both know that babies can be so cute, you could feed them until they explode." Then Sue said, "I hope we don't over feed them." Til said, "I was just kidding a bit. They'll stop eating if they get too full." Mav then said, "Though I've hardly ever known a multa to get too full." Then Mav said to Sue and I, "We're going to have to spread out a little. They're going to be hungry multa heads everywhere." Then Sue and I briefly gave each other excited grins before turning our attention back to Mav.

Mav then said, "Set both kinds of treats on either side of you. That



way you can grab whatever treat you may need more easily.” I said, “Ok.” Then Sue said, “Oh boy!” Sue’s enthusiasm made the rest of us chuckle. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Then Bev gestured with her head to the side facing the mountains and said, “Zem and I will take this side.” Sue and I held hands and headed to the other side. Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss, then started spacing out their baskets of food. While Mav and Til did so, Bev said to Zem as they headed to the other side holding hands, “I hope they aren’t too hungry.” Til paused what she was doing long enough to give Panny and Lika a pet. Mav started placing some food items on the railing. Til soon started to do the same. Sue and I could see the bartok standing at the lakeshore. They were spread out a little along the shore with their baskets of food. It appeared as though they were talking to each other excitedly. They had left their weapons behind. Sue and I went to our baskets of food. We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we started to space out our baskets too. Seeing what Mav and Til were doing, Sue and I also placed fish and treats on the railing.

The multa were close enough by now that we could hear some of the sounds

204

the ones with their heads above water made. They sounded a lot like dolphins on earth. About twenty five seconds or so later, leaving their multa to come the rest of the way themselves, San and Pam arrived. Pam said, “We have some hungry, hungry multa!” This made everybody turn to them and chuckle. San and Pam also emitted telepathic humor. Then San said, “Sorry to keep you waiting. But you know the little ones don’t swim so fast.” Til said with a bit of amusement still in her voice from what Pam, “No problem. Thank you.” San and Pam turned themselves into fuzzy heart shapes and landed on Sue’s cheeks. Pam said, “We wouldn’t do this with anybody who was disgusting.” We all smiled sentimentally at this as Sue placed her wrists on San and Pam and caressed them. Sue said with an appreciative, sentimental smile on her face, “Oh!... You saw that!” We were all smiling sentimentally at San, Pam and Sue. Though there was a little appreciation also showing on my face. San said, “We try not to be nosy. But yes, we saw it.”

Sue said with some hurried, sentimental enthusiasm in her voice, “I want to hug you! Even though I know you can easily clean yourselves, I don’t want to hug you with fishy hands.” At this point, Pim and Mim arrived over by Sue. They too transformed into fuzzy heart shapes as Sue finished speaking, saying, “You’ll have to clean them first.” Pim said, “That’s ok. In fact, having a little better idea of how easily we can clean ourselves might scare you a little.” As Sue smiled at Pim and Mim, Sue said, “That’s ok. I won’t be scared. Whaddya mean.” Pim turned himself into his regular shape and moved a little closer to Sue and a bit lower. At the same time, San and Pam levitated away from

Sue. Pim said, "Take that yellow fruit you have there and smash it on me with the palm of your hand." Both Sue and I knew from feeding the animals that the yellow fruit had a mushy, almost pudding like core. It would be sure to make a mess. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all grinned at us. Sue took on a surprised look and said, "I wouldn't want to do that to you!" Pim said, "It will be fine. Go ahead." Sue said, "Well, ok." Sue picked up a yellow fruit that she had sitting on the railing. Then Sue smashed it on Pim's surface. Pim didn't move even a fraction of an inch.

All of the fruit that came into contact with Pim just disappeared. I could hear the palm of Sue's hand slap against Pim's surface. The bits of fruit that didn't hit Pim fell to the deck as if sliced to Pim's circumference. Sue pulled her hand back and shook it a little as she said, "Ow! You're so hard!" (Very briefly, I thought about plaintively telling Sue that she never said that to me. Even though Sue had every reason to say such a thing to me many times. But I didn't) Sue rubbed her hand because of the pain of the slap. Pim moved up a little and about an inch closer to Sue. Then Pim said with a hint of eagerness in his voice, "I can fix it." Sue said, "That's ok. It'll be ok in a minute." Pim then turned back into a fuzzy heart and backed away a little. Then Pam said, "Then give us your best fishy hug you un-disgusting dear!" They all flew at Sue. San and Pam each landed on Sue's cheeks. Pim and Mim landed closer to Sue's shoulders, just below her neck. We all laughed as Sue was pushed back a tiny bit. Pim, Mim, San and Pam also emitted telepathic humor. Even though they weren't there, so did Tal and Sas.

At this point, the multa were getting close. I could hear them expelling air when

205

they breathed out. Their vocalizations were also more distinct. Tal and Sas were out from the end of the gazebo a ways. They were bringing another group of multa toward the bartok. After a bit of laughter, as Sue joyfully caressed the Nal, Sue said between laughs, "You hit like fuzzy water balloons!" (Though Pim, Mim, San and Pam didn't pop of course) This enlivened everybody's laughter. Sas said with an amused thought, "After we deliver these multa, get ready for a couple more!" This added to the laughter too. After a few moments, Sue said with a sentimental tone to her voice as she caressed and hugged, Pim, Mim, San and Pam, "You're all such dears!"

## Chapter Ten The Multa Arrive

It was at this point that the first multa reached Mav and Til's side of the gazebo. They were making seemingly happy, dolphin like sounds.

This took everybody's attention away from Sue and the Nal. Sue also released Pim, Mim, Tal and Sas as she looked at the multa with happy amazement. The Nal raised off of Sue and turned into their normal shape. Pim and Mim started to go over to Zem and Bev. San and Pam went over toward Mav and Til. The largest multa raised their necks about eight feet out of the water. Though this wasn't their entire length. The necks of the largest ones were about a foot and a half in diameter at their narrowest. Also, the heads of the largest ones were a little over two feet wide, close to three feet long and almost two feet thick at their thickest. Their muzzles were narrower toward the front with cow like, multa colored lips that curved around them a bit. Near the tops of their heads were two narrow slits for nostrils that sat fairly close to each other. These were at the back edge of a slightly bulbous area on the top of their heads. Below and to the front of this area, they had two black eyes. These showed through their eyelids about three and a half inches long and two and a half inches high. They faced a little sideways and forward.

As I had observed earlier, their skin was a bluish grey color. It was a little darker on top and the lower parts of their necks was a lighter color. I figured this lighter color went along the bottom portion of their entire bodies. Some of the dolphin like clicks and squeals they emitted were slightly deeper in pitch than normal earth dolphins. And certainly deeper than the much smaller tucuxi. Some other multa were heading toward where Zem and Bev were. Most with their necks raised out of the water. Others were heading to the side of the gazebo where Sue and I were. The largest ones rose their heads out of the water about fifteen feet as the other multa were surrounding our gazebo. Mav and Til started tossing or handing the multa treats. Til petted ones head as she fed it and said, "Hello you little dear." (Though there really wasn't anything "little" about it) It gave out some happy squeaks and clicks seemingly in response. Other multa picked up treats that were already sitting on the railing. Panny and Lika handed out treats too as they briefly chattered a little excitedly at this new fun. Though seeing the size of Panny and Lika, the multa gingerly took the

206

treats from them. Despite the treats we fed to other larger creatures, Sue and I were still a little amazed by the events unfolding around us.

Bev fed one of the multa a fish directly and tossed one to another multa. Another multa picked up a treat directly off the railing. Zem gave one of the multa heads near him a treat and tossed a treat to another multa. Sue and I quickly shot each other excited grins before returning our attention to the multa. A couple of the extra Nal came and hovered above Sue and I. But a little nearer to the ceiling edge. I could see the backs of the multa and could easily see their flippers moving just under the surface. There was a small multa on our side that was only about eight feet long. Sue said excitedly to me, "The

baby one is so cute!” Everybody shot Sue a quick grin before returning their attention to the multa. Then Sue picked up a fish she had sitting on the railing and tossed it to the baby. Which it eagerly grabbed as it hit the water. The multa on our side stopped as they came close to the gazebo. It was interesting to see their flippers under the surface effortlessly controlling their movement. One of the large ones on Zem and Bev’s side lowered its head and went in toward one of Zem’s baskets of food as Sue and I picked up treats we had sitting on the railing. Though one of the multa on our side took one off the railing for himself.

Zem grabbed the sides of the muzzle of the multa that was going for a basket. Then Zem shoved its head back as he chuckled. Zem said, “Don’t get too eager there boy!” It made some somewhat disappointed sounding whistling and clicking sounds as Bev grabbed a treat. A multa head came close to me as I held up a fish. It opened its mouth. In the front part, it had upper and lower canine teeth like a dogs. But the teeth in between were incisor teeth like a plant eater. In the back, it had fairly flat molars. I tossed the treat in. I then petted it around its muzzle. Its skin wasn’t all that slippery. It felt pretty much like the tucuxi. Sue petted one of the multa heads she had just fed a treat to. Then Sue tossed another fish to the little multa. It couldn’t get as close to us as the others. Just as Mav had said, there were hungry multa heads everywhere. There were six near Sue and I. Bev held a treat up to a multa that was only about a foot and a half from her. It opened its mouth as Bev petted its nose and placed the treat in its mouth. The rest of us were similarly occupied. Sue said as she petted an appreciative, chewing multa head, “This is so much fun!” Everybody grinned at Sue. Til said, “They are that.” Then we all went back to feeding and petting multa.

After about a minute, Tal and Sas approached fairly quickly as they turned into fuzzy heart shapes. They apparently left the multa they were leading to go the rest of the way to the bartok themselves. I could see the multa heading toward the beach with their heads and necks raised out of the water at varying heights. Sue and I saw Tal and Sas turned into fuzzy heart shapes. This caused Sue and I to grin at them. Though there was a bit more of a delighted, sentimental look to Sue’s sweet face. They came over to the gazebo just behind Sue and I. We both turned to them. Some of the spare Nal that were hanging around levitated treats to the multa Sue and I were tending to. Sas said, “Try and give us your most disgusting hug you dear.” As Sas spoke, Zem, Bev, Mav and Til turned grins to them. Sue held up and spread her arms to them. Sue said, “You  
207

got it!” Tal and Sas came down fairly quickly and hit Sue on her upper shoulders near the base of Sue’s neck. They seemed to hit with a bit of a splat. This made Sue laugh. Which Zem, Bev, Mav, Til and I did

to. Pim, Mim, San and Pam emitted telepathic humor. Apparently, Tal and Sas were feeling something different. Sue then cuddled Tal and Sas with her eyes lightly closed and an appreciative, sentimental smile on her face.

The rest of us looked at this sight with sentimental smiles on our faces also. Some of the spare Nal also levitated treats to Zem, Bev, Mav and Til's multa as they all took in the adorable sight. Pim and Mim circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam were doing the same. Sue said with a sentimental tone to her voice, "You guys are such dears!" Tal said telepathically, "Just as I surmised, to an extent far beyond human understanding, you're not disgusting at all." An emotional, surprised look came over Sue's face. Sue took hold of both of them and held them a little ways from her face. Sue said in a drawn out, emotional way, "Oh!" Then Sue gave each of them a brief kiss. Then Sue squished them against her cheeks as she lightly closed her eyes again with her sentimental, slightly emotional look on her face. At the same time, Sue turned her upper body from side to side a little as she hugged them. This sight made us all take on a little more sentimental look. Though for Zem, Bev, Mav and Til, they had a bit more of a look to them like they were looking at something adorable. Which they were.

I had a terrible urge to go embrace them all too. But I didn't. I figured it would be best to let my dear sweet love have her moment. After a few extended moments, Sue stopped turning her upper body. With her eyes still lightly closed, Sue said with a sentimental voice, "How can you guys be so wonderful!" Sas said with a sentimental thought, "We had some good role models." Zem and Bev briefly turned their sentimental looks to each other. As did Mav and Til. Pim, Mim, San and Pam all circled their partners at a little faster speed. After a few more moments, one of the multa stroked its muzzle up Sue's back before retreating a few feet. This made Sue open her eyes and hold Tal and Sas out a little. Sue said, "Thank you dears. But I think the multa are hungry." I held out my arms to Tal and Sas and said, "I think you're wonderful too." Everybody smiled sentimentally at me as Tal and Sas levitated over to me. Then I took hold of them and squished them into my cheeks too. I too had my eyes lightly closed with a sentimental, appreciative look on my face. Sas said with a sentimental thought, "We think you're both wonderful too."

As I held them, more multa started to arrive. But they couldn't get too close. I held Tal and Sas out a little ways from me and said with an appreciative tone to my voice, "Thank you." Tal and Sas levitated out of my hands and turned into their regular shape as they rose up. Everybody started reaching for treats as Tal and Sas started to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles. We started to toss the our multa treats too. At this point, other Nal were heading out from the direction of the maketake. Three in all. Each levitated a couple baskets of food near it. These headed out to the new arrivals. I

heard one of the multa near Sue give out a seemingly more delighted series of squeaks and clicks. Glancing over briefly as I handed out a couple more treats, Sue was fairly

208

vigorously rubbing the head of a multa she had just given a treat to. At the same time, Sue said with a big grin and a delighted voice, "You really like those. Don't you." Looking down the lakeshore, I could see that a number of multa had partially beached themselves near the bartok. The bartok were feeding them treats and petting them.

The houks that were laying near the beach were now standing at the edge of the lake. They seemed to be looking at what was going on with envy. After handing out a couple more treats, I said, "Mav." Everybody turned grins to me. Pam was in the process of giving Panny and Lika a couple treats to hand out. I then said, "I think the houks may be a little envious." Everybody looked in that direction. Mav said, "I'll take care of it." Then Mav looked in the direction of the patio and seemed to briefly think something. I saw one of the spare Nal move toward the maketake. No doubt it was going to get more food and bring it to the houks. The Nal that had been levitating food over the water started to lure the newly arrived multa in that direction. At this point, one of the multa near Bev had apparently submerged itself. It rose its head and neck straight up near Bev with its head a little sideways to Bev. With its muzzle straight up in the air, it made smacking sounds and squeals as it opened and closed its mouth. Bev laughed. We all looked and laughed too. It was so cute!

Bev dropped a fish in its mouth. Then Bev petted its muzzle and said, "There ya go!" It started to submerge as Bev rubbed its muzzle. Sue of course was right. These multa were so much fun! I grinned at the others as Sue went for more treats. Everybody was happily feeding or petting multa. Panny and Lika were having fun handing out treats that Pam gave to them. San, Pim and Mim were also helping the others hand out treats. Tal and Sas were giving Sue and I a little help too. I went back to feeding the multa. Even so, every now and then, Sue and I would have to shove back the head of an overly eager multa. Though they could have easily overpowered Sue and I, they were surprisingly gentle. And of course, friendly. The others also did the same every now and then. After about a minute, one of our multa stuck its head and about four feet of its neck over the railing and looked around. Sas levitated a treat to it and moved its head back. I tossed in a leafy treat into the mouth of a multa. As it chewed, it apparently decided to open and close its nostrils quickly a few times. The way they worked was pretty interesting.

Once in a while, one of the multa would slap another with a fin. Though they weren't acting aggressive. It seemed that they were just having fun. Speaking of slapping, about a minute later I heard some lighter slapping coming from Mav and Til's side of the gazebo. Both

Mav and Til laughed. Til said to Sue fairly quickly, "Sue! Come over and look at this!" Sue quickly and happily scampered over by Mav. Sue started giggling with delight. Zem, Bev and I also moved in that direction to see what was so amusing. One of the babies was on the back of a female. It was smaller than the one in Sue and I's side. This one was only a little over six feet long. This was probably the baby I had seen Pam levitate part of the way here. It was slapping its fins and making high pitched noises in a seemingly happy manner. Zem, Bev and I laughed as we approached their railing. Sue said, "How adorable!" Til said, "They're cute, aren't they." Sue said

209

in a delighted manner, "They sure are!" Til said, "Watch this." Til tossed the baby another small fish, which it plucked out of the air. It again made some happy sounding high pitched sounds and slapped all four of its flippers on the back of the female it was on.

At the same time, Bev, Til and Sue said in a drawn out, happy, sentimental way, "Aw!" Then Sue said, "I think I'm going to name it Slappy." This caused everybody to laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Mav said to Sue with mirth in his voice and a big grin, "Snappy, Grabby, Flappy and now Slappy. I think I'm starting to detect a pattern here." We all laughed again. After the laughter, Sue said in an amused but slightly plaintive voice, "I think they're nice names!" Bev said with a pleased, happy tone to her voice, "They are." Mav said to Bev and Sue with an amused, but slightly plaintive voice, "I didn't say they weren't!" This caused us all to laugh a little again. Sue gave Mav a bit of a hug from the side. After parting, they briefly grinned at each other. Then Sue turned her grin to Til and said, "The babies are so cute! I wish I could pet one." Til said, "That can be arranged." Sue's face lit up as she said, "Oh goodie!" Til said to Mav, "We're going to the beach darling." Assuming that Bev would be going to, Zem said to Bev, "See if you can get some of these multa to go with you sugar." Bev said, "Ok honey." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Sue and I stepped next to each other as Til took a few steps over to Mav. As Sue and I held each other's forearms, I said, "Have fun lovie." Sue said to me, "Thank you dearest." As Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss, Mav said to Til, "Give Slappy a pet for me sweetie." Sue and I parted our kiss and smiled at them. Zem and Bev were smiling at them too. Til said to Mav, "Ok sweetheart." As they gave each other a brief but loving kiss, Bev picked up a basket of fish and came up to Sue and I. Bev and I briefly exchanged grins. Then Bev said to Sue with a tiny bit of strain in her voice, "Would you grab another basket of treats. We can't be too lazy." We all grinned at Bev as Sue happily said, "Ok." Sue and I released each other. Then Sue picked up a basket of treats. I knew that the baskets still had to be pretty heavy with the number of treats in them. But the exercise

would no doubt do the girls good. Til picked up another basket of treats too. Both Til and I briefly exchanged grins too. Then the girls started heading toward the dock. Sue said to Til, "This lake's pretty big. But it's hard to believe it can feed all of these multa."

Panny and Lika jumped down off the railing and started following the girls. Pam, Mim and Sas picked up treats and started to lure some of the multa over to the beach near where we had our spacecraft parked. Answering Sue, Til said, "We have plenty of fish and underwater plants for them to eat. Along with handy land plants near the shore. But as you noticed, they especially like our treats." Another Nal was levitating away from the maketake a couple baskets of treats. It headed toward the gazebo. Yet another Nal was just levitating a basket out of the maketake. At this moment, the shadow of the house was halfway across the dock. Time was indeed passing. I didn't know when Zem was going to suggest that it would be time for us to leave. But I didn't even want to think about it. The girls continued chatting as Zem said with a smile, "Let's feed the rest off of the

210

end." Mav and I were smiling too as Mav said, "Ok. I'll cover this corner." I said, "I'll take the other one." Mav picked up a basket of food. I went over to my side of the gazebo. Tal was already levitating my baskets of food over to the other end. He passed a treat to the multa as he went.

Pim was moving both of Bev's baskets closer to Zem's. No doubt leaving Zem's baskets for him to move himself. San also levitated one of Sue's baskets over near mine. He considerably left Sue's farthest basket for me to carry. When I reached my basket, I took a treat out and gave it to a multa. After giving its nose a brief rub, I picked up the basket and brought it over to the others. Tal and San were repositioning the multa with treats. Looking in the general direction of the bartok, there were a group of multa that had partially beached themselves near the houks. The houks were near the shore. A couple of the houks and multa were checking each other out. There were four Nal spread out a little levitating treats to both the houks and multa. Farther down the beach, the bartok and the multa seemed to be getting along well. All of the adult bartok were still spread out a little on the beach. They were standing at the shore and feeding or petting multa. The young female, Kubt, was sitting at the shore near an adult female. Next to the young female was the toddler. They were feeding and petting one of the baby multa.

Zem had dragged his baskets over nearer to the center. I picked up a couple treats as I smiled at Zem and Mav. Zem was getting ready to hand out more treats. Mav had just fed one. I said to Mav, "If these bartok were skittish of the multa, I don't think they are anymore." Mav and Zem briefly grinned at me. I grinned too as they turned their attention to the bartok. I did too as I handed out a couple treats, Mav



said, "That's good. Just because they live in the water, the bartok had no real reason to be leery toward them." I reached for more treats. Out of the corner of my eye, I saw a Nal heading away from the patio with a folded blanket. Taking a quick look at the girls, they were happily chatting as they headed down the beach with their baskets of treats. A couple Nal at this point were setting down a few baskets of treats near Mav. I handed out the treats I had grabbed to a multa on either side of the corner post. We heard the girls laughing heartily. Us guys turned grins to them. They had paused laying out a beach blanket as they laughed. Panny and Lika were playfully scampering around near the water's edge.

A couple of the multa had reached the beach. They were in the process of beaching themselves a little. Us guys grinned at each other. Then we went for more treats. After handing them out and petting some multa, Mav again grinned at the girls. Their hearty laughter had subsided to chuckles. Mav thought to them. Which I and no doubt Zem heard also. Mav said, "What are you guys laughing about." Zem and I grinned at them too as they turned their chuckles toward us. Til thought with a mirth filled thought, "Just girl stuff!" I kind of wondered if Sue told them about her witty, vaginal lip, tongue beckon "thing." It was certainly funny enough to cause that kind of laughter. Us guys turned big grins to each other. I said verbally to Zem and Mav, "As long as they're having fun." We then happily went for more treats. After feeding and petting some multa, I smiled at Mav and said, "Did you bring these multa here because they

211

were on their way to extinction on their planet too?" Mav and Zem were smiling at me by the time I finished speaking. Then Mav said, "Yes." This made me grin. Which made Mav and Zem grin also.

I said, "You guys are just great." Mav said, "Like Til said, it isn't much. But saving interesting and worthy creatures is nice." I was smiling appreciatively by the time Mav finished speaking. Then I said, "If they knew as Sue and I know how much it means, they would be loving you to death." More sentimentality accompanied Mav and Zem's smiles. Though Zem's sentimentality was a slight hint greater. The multa near Mav and Zem stuck their heads a little farther in and started making sounds like they wanted more food. Though the one near Zem nudged him a little. This caused us all to chuckle. Zem said, "Well at least you guys aren't as needy as these multa." We all laughed a little as Zem petted the multa. Then we went for more treats. With grins on our faces, we fed and petted the multa more. After feeding a couple more treats and petting a multa head, a somber look came over my face. I said to nobody in particular, "It's too bad how cruel the universe can sometimes be." Mav briefly glanced at me with a somber look also and said, "As you know, sometimes the destruction can be quite extensive."

At this point, we heard laughs coming from the lakeshore. We all looked over and saw the girls over on the lakeshore and sitting on a beach blanket. Seeing the happy scene brought big smiles to our faces. There were five adult multa near them that had pulled themselves partially onto the beach. Just like I had seen the other multa near the houks and bartok do. It kind of reminded me a little of something like a sea turtle might have done. A smaller multa and the baby multa "Slappy" were farther on the shore. They had their heads partially over the blanket and the girls were petting them. Panny was on one's neck and Lika was on Slappy's back. They were both also petting their baby multa. Though Panny only did so with one hand as he held on with his other three legs and tail. Mim, Pam and Sas were delivering treats to some of the multa. At this particular moment, Bev and Sue were paying quite a lot of attention to Slappy. Which it seemed to be enjoying. Zem said, "It looks like they're having fun." I said, "Girls and little baby animals. The two seem to go together." Mav said as we all continued to watch them, "They are adorable."

I said, "One of the pleasing things I discovered from Bev is that the nurturing aspect of the female Reall doesn't seem to have been lost in your evolution." Zem and Mav turned their smiles to me. Zem said, "They wouldn't be nearly quite so loveable if it had been lost." One of the multa butted its head a little against Mav. They were all also making noises that seemed to be for attention. We all turned and started handing out and tossing more treats. Which the multa were surprisingly good at grabbing out of the air. As we all fed the multa, I said to Mav with a somber look on my face, "As far as what you said about the cruelty in the universe being shocking, (Mav gave me a slight smile and a nod before returning his attention to the eager multa) I am shocked by some of it that happens on earth. Such as whales eating up whole schools of fish. Bev mentioned the other day male lions that will kill the young of a defeated male lion. Even among humans, we talked about some who won't hesitate to kill a

212

female newborn if they feel the need." Zem gave me a brief, somber nod before going back to tending the multa again.

I then said, "I have even heard of older working male children in impoverished nations being given a larger portion of food to the detriment of the younger ones. Even in my country, the way people selfishly destroy the environment and other things is disgusting. It's like an adult sitting somewhere and calling over a cute little child or favorite niece or nephew. And as the cute youngster runs over to them with a happy smiling face, the adult smiles at them as he cups the happy little face in his hands. Then the adult changes their expression to anger, spits in their face and smacks them across their head hard enough to knock them off their feet. With the world getting worse and worse, that's basically what they're doing. The self centered

bastards.” Mav looked over at me and said, “Nothing is out of bounds when humans can call their actions god’s will.”

Then Zem said, “There’s another fortunate and unfortunate aspect to human behavior. Though both are fairly common amongst biological beings. Both of these things basically stick with people their entire lives. Though as for the unfortunate aspect of it, that is something you can break to Sue in your own time. Your life has made you more mentally prepared than Sue. What I’m going to tell you isn’t something we Reall had to do tests to discover. But recently humans on earth have.” We continued to periodically pet or feed multa between looking at each other. Zem added, “Humans on earth recently discovered that even babies are what the status quo would like to call bigoted. Which being an effective way of avoiding parasitism, is the way things should be. But a little more troubling aspect was revealed when they did one particular test on older children. A child was far more likely to accept less of something if it meant that another child not present at the time would receive nothing at all.” A surprised look briefly came over my face as Zem added, “This is a status thing that came from the creatures primates evolved from. But the unfortunate evolutionary pressures exerted by humanity’s greed based economic system has added to it.

“For example, there was a documentary done on earth that should be required viewing for all humans. But I doubt if it would do much good. It’s called, “The Corporation.” Though I found it a little long winded, it was interesting to see that it came to a correct conclusion.” I tossed a treat to a multa and handed a treat to another. Then I turned to Zem and said, “What’s that.” Zem petted a multa as he looked at me. Pim was feeding another multa near Zem a treat. Zem said, “They pointed out that corporations were psychotic and sociopathic entities.” I said, “I’m not surprised.” We both went for more treats as Mav fed a couple more multa. Mav turned to me and said, “With corporations being given the same rights as people, it makes it especially bad. The people who run them may often seem nice. But if you met a necrophiliac outside of doing what they do, you might think they were nice too.” Having fed a couple multa, I reached for a couple more treats as I looked at Mav. I said, “Don’t even get me started on how much some human behavior shames me. Just out of curiosity, I checked out of something disgusting I heard about,” (I had a multa nudge me a little. I handed out a couple treats as I added) “on the internet. It showed people shitting on each other and eating shit.”

213

This caused Zem and Mav to look at me with “yuck” expressions on their faces. Mav said, “I know of such behavior amongst some humans. But ew!” Zem said, “Me too. But yuck!” As I went for a couple more treats, I said, “Meeting people on the street who ate crap,

there's a good chance that they might seem nice too. Just like the psychos who run corporations." Zem fed a couple of multa and turned to me. Then Zem said, "Though in the case of those who run corporations, just as those who seek cheap labor or export jobs, it is the regular people who end up eating the shit." I said, "And don't I know it." We gave each other a solemn nod and went back to feeding the multa. As we did so, I said, "That reminds me of something I saw on a news program once. There is this billionaire software tycoon in the U.S." Zem and Mav briefly looked at me as I added, "I need to kiss Sue with these lips, so I won't even speak his name." Zem and Mav smiled at me. Then Zem said, "That's ok. We know who you're speaking about."

I said, "I saw him sitting in front of a congressional committee and telling them that they should allow unlimited immigration of skilled foreign workers. Giving American educated workers a big shit sandwich to eat." As we continued to feed and pet multa, I added, "Basically, what he meant was to end all immigration restrictions. Maybe he figured that it was an acceptable alternative to shipping jobs overseas. But it isn't a very good one. Why not just have all Americans move overseas and let all them move to the U.S. Though the way things are going, the U.S. will probably end up experiencing the same kind of grinding poverty that less developed countries experience. As Til brought up earlier, these people are just criminals." Tal said telepathically, "May I make a comment?" We all smiled at him as Mav said, "Of course." Tal said to me, "Your talk about criminals is interesting. With one of the spare Nal around, I am also aware of the conversation you had earlier and what Til said about the links between the U.S. government and the mafia. There is an excerpt from something written by an American general once named Smedley Butler. You may find it interesting. He wrote:

"I helped make Mexico, especially Tampico, safe for American oil interests in 1914. I helped make Haiti and Cuba a decent place for the National City Bank boys to collect revenues in. I helped in the raping of half a dozen Central American republics for the benefit of Wall Street. The record of racketeering is long. I helped purify Nicaragua for the international banking house of Brown Brothers in 1909 - 1912. I brought light to the Dominican Republic for American sugar interests in 1916. In China I helped to see that Standard Oil went its way unmolested. During those years, I had as the boys in the back room would say, a swell racket. Looking back on it, I feel that I could have given Al Capone a few hints. The best he could do was to operate his racket in three districts. I operated on three continents." I thought you would like to know this example of the ugly truths about Capitalism and "free" enterprise. It is another one of those open conspiracy theories. The way such things are now done may have changed a little. But as you know, not much. The only thing that allows America to raise its head above the muck at all is that things are worse in many other countries. You will find things on planet Bev

to be infinitely better.”

214

What Tal said about planet Bev made me grin. I said, “Thank you Tal. What you said was interesting.” Zem and Mav both turned slight smiles to me after handing out treats. Mav said, “I know something equally bad about that billionaire you spoke of.” I again took on a solemn look. Mav and Zem did too as Mav said, “Have you ever heard of a racist Mexican group called LaRaza?” A bit of a surprised look came over my face. I said, “Yes I have. It means “The Race” in spick. Let me guess. He donated money to them.” We all reached for more treats as Mav said, “Yes. Millions of dollars.” I shook my head a little in a disgusted manner and went back to feeding the multa. Then I said as we all tended to the multa, “I’m not surprised. If you’re going to betray your country, why not betray your species as well. Apart from cheap labor concerns, no doubt he got a disgusting brain drug thrill out of not being “racist.” I then gave a multa head a good petting as I added, “No doubt he thought he was right. But I wonder if he ever considered the consequences of his being wrong. Which he obviously is.”

Zem and Mav looked at me as Zem said, “I doubt it. That isn’t a question most humans like to ask themselves. Especially, as you know, where money is involved.” I then gave Zem a nod in agreement. We then went for more treats. After feeding some multa, I said to Mav, “Mav. I hate to ask. But could you do me a favor?” By the time I finished speaking, Zem and Mav were smiling at me. Mav said, “If I can.” I said, “About the punishment I asked that the others besides Jesus and Mohammed receive. When you know who dies, could you make his spirit suffer the same fate?” Mav and Zem grinned. Which I did too. Mav said, “Sure. No problem.” I said, “Thank you.” As I petted a multa head, I added, “I know that there isn’t much I can do for you in return. But like I told Zem and Bev. If there’s anybody you would like me to haunt after I’m dead, you just let me know.” This made Mav and Zem laugh. Which I quickly joined in on.

After the laughter, Mav said with a mirthful voice, “Thank you. I’ll keep that in mind.” We then went back to tending the multa in a more happy manner. After handing out or tossing four more treats, I was feeling a little guilty for having dampened the mood with my talk about humans.

I grinned at Zem and Mav and said, “Do you want to hear another joke?” Zem and Mav grinned at me. Mav said, “Sure.” Zem said in a jovial voice, “The last one was pretty good.” I said, “Interestingly enough, it has some relevance to the American socio-economic system.” I then told them a joke involving an act called “Mombugombe” as we went back to feeding the multa. Every now and

then, taking time to grin at each other as I told it. When I delivered the punch line, Zem and Mav cracked up laughing. Which I quickly joined in on. We laughed heartily. As we laughed, I could hear Bev in my mind. As no doubt the others did too. Bev said, "Are you guys telling dirty jokes again?" We all turned with a little laugh still coming out of us and grinned over at the girls. They were all grinning back at us. Zem thought, "Yes. Erik told us another." Til said, "We want to hear it too!" The girls briefly looked at each other and giggled before returning their grinning faces back to us. Mav said to Til, "You know that you'll just get me to tell you later." Which caused us guys to chuckle and the girls to giggle again.

215

Zem grinned at me and again said telepathically for us all to hear, "The girls have their ways of getting information out of us." This caused us all to laugh. Afterwards, as I grinned at Zem, I thought for everybody to hear, "I know what you mean. Sue could probably get me to spill the beans about anything." We all laughed a little. Then Sue said to me in a playful manner, "And don't you forget it!" We all laughed a bit again. Til then said, "But I want to hear the joke now." I said, "I don't know if I should tell you. Between us guys it's one thing. But I don't want to seem like an uncouth barbarian by saying such things to ladies." Bev said in a pleading manner, "Pleeease!" We all laughed at Bev's plea. Mav said to me, "You may as well. I think we can let a little lapse in etiquette pass in this instance." I said, "Well, ok." Then I smiled back at the girls and said, "But remember, you asked for it. Though instead of depriving Zem and Mav the pleasure of trying to resist your persuasion to tell it to you later, (This made everybody's grins widen a bit as I added) I'll tell you another that is just as good. It concerns a bar bet."

I started telling everybody the joke. It caused us to slow down our delivery of food to the multa a little. Then I delivered the punch line. We all laughed heartily. Til laid back on the blanket laughing. Sue and Bev placed a hand on each other's shoulders and laughed. After a few extended moments, Til sat back up laughing and thought with a mirthful thought, "I hope it was at least a female pig!" This caused a little laughter. I said with a bit of exclamation in my thought, "It wasn't!" This caused even more laughter. After a few extended moments, the laughter subsided. As we all exchanged wide grins, Bev said with a mirth filled thought, "Thanks. That was funny." Zem, Mav and I exchanged grins and then went back to feeding the Multa. The girls went back to happily chatting and attending to their multa. After a moment, I said, "I'm getting a little low on treats." Zem and Mav smiled at me. Mav said, "I'll take care of it." Then Mav looked at the maketake and seemed to think something. No doubt, some of the spare Nal would soon be delivering more baskets of treats. We went

back to feeding the multa.

After handing out a couple treats and petting a multa, Mav said in an audible voice, "I have one for you." Zem and I grinned at Mav. Mav then said to me, "But first you should know in case Zem and Bev never mentioned it, we Reall had our own niggers whom we separated ourselves from long ago. We call them Gitak." Still grinning in anticipation of Mav's joke, I said, "Yes. Zem did bring them up." Mav said, "Ok. Now. Do you know what a human Otolaryngologist would use to examine a female Gitak's ear?" I grinned and said, "I've seen them. But I don't know what they're called." Mav said, "He would use an otoscope. Do you know what a human Cardiologist would use to listen to a female Gitak's heart?" I said, "Probably a stethoscope." Mav said, "That's right. Do you know what a human Gynecologist would use to examine a female Gitak's vagina?" My grin widened as I said, "No." Mav said, "A parachute!" Zem and I laughed. Which Mav quickly joined in on. It was pretty good. But not quite as involved as mine had been. But we got a pretty good laugh out of it anyway. As we laughed, four more baskets of treats were delivered by a couple spare Nal. We went back to feeding the Multa.

216

After handing out more treats, I smiled at the others and said, "That was pretty good." Both Zem and Mav smiled at me too. Then I said, "Though the way Mexicans or other lowlifes spit out babies on earth, your joke makes Gitak sound more like them." Zem said with a slight smile, "When it came to Gitak, they had the same undesirable traits." I said with a slight smile too, "Being angry about the coming destruction of the earth, and other things, it's bad enough that I bring up the topic of how disgusting some humans are. But it would probably be best if we not sully our conversation for now with talk about Gitak." Mav turned to smile at me and said, "As you like." This increased my smile a little. Then we went back to feeding the multa. I moved over a little and gave one of the multa I had been tossing treats to some extra good pets around its head after giving it a treat from my hands. The multa, as usual, seemed to really appreciate both. Looking at the bartok, a couple Nal delivered six more baskets of treats to the bartok on the beach. Not surprisingly, the bartok seemed to be going enjoying themselves.

The young female and the toddler were now sitting in the surf and enjoying the attention of an infant multa. I just happened to see the infant multa they were paying attention to flapping it's flippers in the water near them. Which the children seemed to enjoy. I glanced over at the girls. They were still sitting on their beach blanket and enjoying themselves with their multa too. Panny at this point was holding onto the neck of Slappy. Lika was playfully avoiding the lunging head of the other. Bev was just tossing another fish to a multa. Mim and Pam

were also levitating out treats. The girls were also enjoying the antics of Panny and Lika. Sas was at the water's surface a little ways behind the multa. She was causing an arching stream of water to squirt on one of the adult multa. Which it seemed to enjoy. The multa next to it looked like it had already been wetted down. I grinned at Zem and Mav and said, "Sas has a good idea there." They all grinned at Sas and then to me. I then said, "Do you think any of the other multa are drying out?" Mav said, "They aren't all that bothered by dryness. Sas is just doing it because they enjoy it. But I think the others would enjoy it too."

Mav seemed to think something. Four of the Nal that were near the maketake machine started heading in the direction of the multa near the houks. The Nal that were hanging around the bartok moved in the direction of the water. We all grinned at each other and went back to feeding and petting the multa. The sun had gotten a little lower in the sky; the shadow from the house had reached over three quarters of the way across the dock; the temperature was warm and comfortable. Everything was so idyllic. I again thought of the other wonderful things I had been shown by my new friends. It was such a pity that humans on earth would never experience anything like this. If only they knew, they would know that anything, absolutely anything, was worth the price to have such an outcome. But they were too caught up in their own petty desires. Not really caring what happens. As long as it happens to someone else. I was so glad that Sue and I wouldn't have to live the rest of our lives in that hell hole. But what was I doing even thinking about them. I handed a multa another fish and petted it around its head with a big smile on my face as it chewed it. As usual, it gave

217

off sounds and clicks that seemed to show enjoyment for my treat and attention as I did so.

I smiled over to Mav and said, "Do you guys ever go swimming with the multa?" Zem and Mav both smiled at me. Mav said, "We do from time to time. Would you like to?" I said, "It might be getting a little late for that. But I and no doubt Sue would love to someday." Zem grinned at Mav and said in a kidding around kind of voice, "I think Erik has a little of the bartok skittishness going on." This caused a bit of a surprised look to come over my face. Then Zem turned his grin to me. Which Mav did too. I grinned also. Then Zem said in a taunting manner, "I think you're just chicken!" A bit of a determined look accompanied my grin as I said, "I'll show you who's chicken!" As Zem and Mav laughed, I started taking off my shirt. Zem looked at the girls and thought so everybody could hear, "You girls might want to get some bathing suits." I grinned in their direction too. The girls looked at us with big, beaming grins. Til thought, "That sounds like fun!" Bev thought, "Good idea!" Sue thought excitedly, "Oh goodie!" The girls



started excitedly talking verbally amongst themselves as Zem and Mav started taking their shirts off too. When Mav got his shirt off, I could see that he was as well built as Zem.

Out of the corner of my eye, I saw a Nal levitating some folded, black swimming trunks in our direction. Looking more in that direction, there was another Nal levitating bathing suits for the girls out of the maketake. They too were folded and were purple, yellow and blue. The same colors that Mim, Pam and Sas had chosen for themselves. It headed in the direction of the girls. As I started taking off my socks, Mav said to the girls, "No peaking you guys!" The girls started laughing. San transformed himself into a screen between the girls and us. Bev said in a playful manner, "It's you guys who we're afraid would do the peeking!" We all laughed some more. The Nal with the swimming trunks levitated a pair to each of us. We all took them and set them on the railing nearest to us. Then we stripped down the rest of the way. Though I tried not to look, I couldn't help but notice out of the corner of my eye that Mav was also equally as well hung down below as Zem. Which being products of eugenics, was no surprise.

We slipped on our swimming trunks. After we had gotten them on, Mav and I went to the end railing near Zem. Zem said, "Last one in is a Gitak Gynecologist!" We all laughed at what Zem said as we quickly made our way onto the plank on top of the railing. I was determined to not be the last one in. As I swung my feet over the railing, I looked at a spot of water between a couple of the multa. Briefly putting my heels down on a bit of the deck that extended a few inches in front of the vertical railings, I dove in. The water was very nice. I opened my eyes underwater and looked around. The water was slightly cloudy from the multa having disturbed the water. Though the seaweed that covered the downward sloping lake shore here kept it from being too bad. Briefly looking at the others dive through the water, along with the various multa swimming and lowering their heads into the water, it looked like Zem was going to be the Gitak Gynecologist. I started to look around more.

Further down, different kinds of seaweed grew. Some of which looked like thin pine trees with upturned branches. There were small, multicolored fruits on them

218

that appeared to be somewhat buoyant. I didn't see many fish around. Probably because the multa had scared most of them off. Though there were some that I couldn't quite make out swimming amongst the lower seaweed. There were also a couple schools of fish like I had seen on planet Bev. They would move as they illuminated in one direction. Then they would turn their lights off and dart a little in another direction. It was no wonder that Mav and Til brought them here too. What they did was an interesting display. There was one larger fish I saw out in the water. It looked like a barracuda with a

slightly pointer snout. I also saw a number of smaller fish that were swimming along the slope above the shorter seaweed. They were about three and a half inches long and appeared to be built for speed too. These fish were a greenish color on top and were a bright reddish color along their bottoms. Their fins and tails were yellow.

Around the plant incrustated piers of the gazebo, there were a number of smaller fish swimming. They were only about two inches long and almost as high. These were orange, black and yellow. The bodies were mostly yellow with lines of black spots that ran at an angle from the top to bottom. The back third of their fins were orange. Looking at the gazebo supports, I also saw a slug like animal on one of them. It was about a foot long and was very colorful. It had four short flexible legs on it. They ended with feet that looked like small starfish. Near it, I saw what appeared to be some sort of clam about four inches long attached to the support. It was a vibrant purple color. There were a number of these here and there attached to the support. They would open and extend a red bristle like a large coral. After making a sweep, these would retract and the clam would close. I could see the flippers of the multa near us moving a little under the water as they lowered themselves into the water and backed away. Of course, their vocalizations and clicks sounded a little different than they had in the air.

There were a few fish swimming over the surfaces of the multa. Some were like those swimming around the gazebo supports. A few others that weren't quite as wide were also swimming close to the multa. These were mostly silver with vibrant green spots on them. Looking over at the others again, I could see Zem gliding through the water as he made a sweeping strike with his arms. Looking over into the direction of where Mav had dove in, I could see him beginning to turn toward the surface. There was a multa head not too far from him. It seemed to be happily watching him. Pim, San and Tal had joined us in the water. I made my way up to the surface too. As I came to the surface, Mav was laughing. I started laughing too and looked at Mav as Zem surfaced. Mav turned his attention to Zem. I looked at Zem too. Zem didn't laugh, but only grinned. I could see out of the corner of my eye that Sas had stopped spraying water on the multa near the girls. The multa there had retreated a little farther into the water. Apparently, the Nal that had brought the girls their bathing suits had transformed itself into a screen too. Mim, Pam and Sas were floating above where the girls were. One of the multa was looking over the Nal screen. Apparently it was curious. No doubt the girls were still getting into their bathing suits. I could just imagine the wonderful sight the multa was seeing.

I said to Zem, "You're the Gitak Gynecologist!" Mav and I laughed some more. Zem splashed some water at me and said as I turned away from the splash, "A

multa was in my way!" As some multa heads came toward us, Mav said, "Excuses excuses." Zem grinned and splashed some water in Mav's direction as he and I laughed. Mav turned away from the splash as Zem laughed too. We all then petted the squeaking and clicking multa heads near us. There were a couple others nearby. As for the ones under the water, I could feel and slightly hear their sonar checking us out. The multa head I petted then submerged and rubbed the front of its muzzle against me. This made me laugh some more as I looked into the water at its head. Apparently Zem and Mav were also getting some attention from other multa as they turned their attention toward the water also. I rubbed my hands around my multa's head. As I did so, I could feel sound emanating from the slightly bulbous portion of its head. I grinned at Zem and said, "They seem even friendlier in the water." Zem and Mav both grinned at me as Zem said, "Of course. We're in their element now." Then I said, "I guess I'll join them." I then took a deep breath and went under water. Using the multa's head I was petting for leverage, I pushed myself a little deeper.

The multa was giving out sounds that were a lot louder now that my ears were so close to it. As I rubbed my hands all around the multa's head, I could also hear the others that were nearby. The multa seemed to enjoy my petting as it bobbed its head up and down a little. It then moved its head along my side and under my arm as it moved behind me. I wrapped my arms around its neck and let it slide through them. The multa's neck started going lower as it seemed to be going to swim in a horizontal circle. I let its neck go as it turned under me. Its back glided past me as I rubbed both hands on it. After it and its accompanying fish had passed by, I heard Til's thoughts in my mind. Which the others were no doubt hearing too. Til said with a bit of an excited thought, "We're on our way!" I saw Zem and Mav making their way to the surface too as Mav said, "It's about time!" I could feel telepathic humor as I made my way back to the surface too. When I came to the surface, I wiped water off my face and grinned over in the direction of the girls. Bev, Til and Sue were laying on the backs of a multa. Each had their arms wrapped around the base of the multa's necks with big grins on their faces.

Panny was lying on Bev like Bev was lying on her multa. Lika was doing the same with Til. It was so utterly adorable! Sue was wearing a Sas purple bikini. Bev was wearing a Mim yellow bikini and Til was wearing a Pam blue bikini. That was adorable in itself. Needless to say, all three of our girls bikini bottoms showed wonderfully rounded butts. I couldn't see either Mim, Pam or Sas. They were probably underwater. There was a bit of a wake being pushed up by the fronts of the multa as they headed in our direction. Seeing Sue so utterly happy caused a bit of the feeling to come over me that seeing Sue enjoying herself in flight had on me. But I was determined not to let another breakdown spoil things. And having another multa head seeking attention from me helped distract me. As I petted the multa

head, I grinned at Sue and thought, "Are you having fun darling?" Sue said, "Am I ever!" The girls all grinned at each other. I could hear Sue think to Til, "These multa are so wonderful! You and Mav sure know how to pick'em!" Til said, "Thank you dear. But so do Bev and Zem."

Sue face lit up with even more happiness. Then Sue said, "Do you mean Erik

220

and me!?" Til said, "Of course." A sentimental grin came over Sue's face. Sue said, "You better be careful! There's nothing worse than a wet hug monster!" We all laughed. Zem, Mav and I were still petting multa heads. Our laughter seemed to elicit more playful attention from other multa near us underwater. After the laughter, the girls were close enough to talk to verbally. Zem said in a little louder than normal voice to Sue, "I'm afraid I can't take credit for your initial selection. But I couldn't have chosen better." As I swam over to Zem with a sentimental look on my face, Sue said, "Thank you! You're so sweet!" I put a hand in the top of Zem's current multa and hugged Zem a little from the side. As Zem and I smiled sentimentally at each other, I thought sentimentally for everybody to hear, "I wish Sue and I could have chosen you and Bev too." At this point, some of the multa between the girls and us submerged themselves. Zem patted my forearms a couple of times and then took hold of it. At the same time, Zem thought back with a sentimental thought, "You can't have everything." I gave Zem a brief extra firm hug and released him. Everybody was looking at us with sentimental smiles.

As I swam back from Zem, Mav thought and said, "Well at least you chose to have Til and I come to visit too." I said verbally in a slightly louder than normal voice for everybody to hear, "Not to diminish how ultra wonderful Zem and Bev are, we're so very happy we did!" This caused a bit of appreciation to accompany Mav, Til, Zem and Bev's expressions. As the girls' multa began to slow down, the multa near Mav and Til submerged themselves to make some room for the girls' multa. Sue said with a slightly louder than normal verbal voice, "Well I can see why you guys chose each other to be friends. And the sweet, extra Nal are like icing on the cake." We all turned our sentimental smiles to Sue. Though a bit of appreciation still showed on Zem, Bev, Mav and Til's faces. Til said with a sentimental voice, "Thank you!" Bev said, "You're such a dear!" Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas all thought at the same time, "We think so too!" All this caused my grin to widen. Sue's face was beaming with happiness. At this point, Til's multa was about twenty feet off the front right end of the gazebo. A couple small spheres from Pim and Mim emerged from the water.

They flew over to Til and Bev. Then they transformed themselves into rectangular bands and wrapped around Lika and Panny's necks. Of course, this was to enable them to breathe underwater. Til started

to get up on the back of her multa. Lika jumped off her back. As Bev and Sue also started to stand on the backs of their multa, Panny also jumped off Bev's back. Til, along with Bev and Sue of course, looked amazing in a bikini. Though as I said before, Sue had a tiny bit more going on in the breast department. Til and the rest of us all grinned. Then Til said to Mav, "Here I come!" Til then took a couple long, quick steps toward the side of her multa and dove into the water. Lika just scampered over and jumped in. Mav dove down too. No doubt to meet Til underwater. Bev and Sue also dove into the water. Panny just jumped in. Zem and I also dove down to meet our girls. Looking underwater, both Sue and Bev were visions of happy loveliness as they glided through the water. Though I hardly took notice at this moment, Mav and Til swam toward each other with smiles on their faces. Panny and Lika swam deeper with thin layers of air around their heads.

Slappy

221

was near them. There were multa swimming around at various distances, angles and depths.

Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas had apparently all transformed themselves into fairly fine bristled brushes. At this particular moment, I could see Mim and Tal making back and forth swipes on a couple multa. These multa, along with others no doubt being given the same treatment, seemed to give off heightened multa vocalizations of pleasure. As Sue and I swam toward each other with smiles on our faces, I thought, "How was the ride honey." Sue thought back and said, "Just a blast darling!" Mav and Til came together and kissed. Zem and Bev were the next to do so. Then Sue and I did so. Of course, everybody embraced their partners as they did so. As Sue and I kissed, Sue said, "Underwater kisses are always nice." I said, "You have less chance of getting water up your nose with surface ones." I could feel telepathic humor from the others. Then Til thought, "That can be a problem at times." Sue and I parted our kiss and smiled at each other. Then we released each other and swam to the surface. Mav and Til did the same. Quickly followed by Zem and Bev. Everybody wiped water from their faces and grinned at their partners when they surfaced. Though Sue and I had to wipe a little hair back too.

Bev said to Zem, "Now you can't get water up your nose darling." We all turned grins to them as Zem said to Bev, "Water up the nose is a small price to pay for your kisses sugar lips." Then they kissed again. Sue and I turned our grins to Mav and Til as Mav said to Til, "That's how I feel my sweet." They were smiling at each other lovingly. Then they kissed too. Sue and I smiled at each other lovingly. I said, "How's the water darling." Sue said, "Just perfect honey." Then we kissed each other lovingly too. Sue and I didn't kiss too long before a multa shoved its head in between Sue and I. We parted and laughed as Sue

and I both began to pet this newcomer just under the surface. Zem and Bev parted their kiss and grinned at Sue and I. At the same time, Mav and Til did the same. Mav said, "Looks like the multa wants some love too." Sue and I turned our grins to Mav and Til. Sue said, "Swimming with these guys is even more fun than feeding them!" Both Sue and I were petting the multa's neck at this point. Til said, "The treats made them especially friendly." I said, "Just like the other animals." After exchanging grins with the others for a moment, I turned my grin to Sue and said with a bit of excitement, "Let's go under sweetie and give him a real hug!" Sue said, "Ok honey!"

Then Sue and I both took deep breaths and submerged ourselves. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all grinned at each other. Then they took deep breaths and submerged themselves too. Sue and I wrapped our legs around the multa's neck. With an arm on each other and our other arms holding the multa's neck, I tugged with my arm downward on the multa's neck. It moved its head and neck down and started moving downward. Sue and I were taken deeper as our multa turned and started moving away from the gazebo's underwater piers. Once we were about thirty feet down, Sue and I released its neck. The multa turned again and started to do an inverted, downward roll. Sue and I used more of our fingernails on its underside as we petted it. It happened to be a female. As I had seen with other female multa from underneath, they had a couple nipple

222

like structures on their chest that the babies fed from of course. Neither Sue nor I scratched the nipples as they passed by us. Though we did scratch near them. The multa gave off seemingly pleased sounds. I smiled at Sue as I thought to her and said, "They sure seem to like getting scratched." Sue said, "I noticed. They're so adorable."

Til said, "They sure like having us to swim with." Zem said, "For such basically intelligent animals, it probably beats doing the same ole thing everyday." The multa Sue and I were petting had passed by us at this point. We started to slowly head toward the surface. Both of us looked around as we headed to the surface. Mav and Til were scratching upward along the back of a multa that was passing over them upside down. Zem and Bev both had ahold of a multa's back flippers on either side as it pulled them through the water in an inverted, sideways roll. Panny and Lika were having fun with Slappy. Lika was wrapped around its neck just behind the head. Panny was below its head with his fingers in its mouth as it swam. No doubt, this was just play. Slappy may have even been gumming Panny's fingers. The other slightly older baby multa swam along with them. I could see Pim, Mim, Sas and Pam brushing some other multa. All this and more made me so glad that I brought up the topic of swimming with the multa. This was all so much fun! Which is something Zem probably already knew. No doubt it was why he had goaded me into swimming.

Sue said, "Bev and Zem's underwater observation room at their island was wonderful. I'm surprised you don't have one here." Mav and Til smiled at us as we got near the surface. As they headed for the surface too, Til said, "We have them in other places." Both of us couples surfaced. Mav said to us telepathically as we all grinned, "We don't have as many underwater life forms in this lake as you probably saw on planet Bev." Zem and Bev surfaced too. We all grinned at them. Then Mav turned his grin back to Sue and I and said verbally, "In this location, the real attraction is above the water." A couple multa heads surfaced near Mav and Til. They exhaled air from their nostrils at about the same time and shot some spray up into the air. At about the same time, another multa head surfaced near Sue and I. Yet another surfaced near Zem and Bev. Mav and Til were each holding onto and petting a multa head. Sue and I petted the one near us. Bev said as she and Zem petted the multa head near them, "Our little island place isn't as scenic as it is here." Another multa raised its head near Zem and Bev.

Zem turned a little to pet this other multa head. Sue said to Zem and Bev, "I think the island is just as nice in its own way." Bev said, "Thank you." I turned to Mav and Til and said, "These multa are so wonderful. I'll bet you're happy you saved them." Mav said, "Yes I am. Though it was actually Til who first suggested it. Which is a decision would have probably made myself." Sue and I started scratching around the head of our multa. Which it again seem to enjoy. Responding to Mav, Sue said, "I'm so happy you did!" Then Sue looked around quickly at everybody with a surprised look on her face. Sue then turned back to Mav and Til. Then Sue said, "Oh no! It's happening again!" Sue then took on a crazed look and started swimming over to Mav and Til as she made growling sounds. We all cracked up laughing. It was the return of the hug monster! Sue

223

put her head in between theirs and hugged them. While still making hug monster sounds, Sue lowered her face into the water a little and started to expel air from her lips. At the same time, Sue loudly vocalized purposeful bubbling sounds as she quickly flapped her tongue against her lips. This increased everybody's laughter.

After a moment, Sue raised her face and parted from Mav and Til enough to share in their laughter. The multa also gave off some seemingly amused squeaks and clicks. After the laughter, Til said with a mirth filled voice, "A wet hug monster isn't so bad." This caused a little more laughter. After the laughter, Sue swam back over to me. As we all grinned, I said to Sue, "You're just too adorable darling." Sue put her hand on our multa's head and said, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Mav and Til gave each other a kiss too. As did Zem and Bev. I gave Mav and Til a slight smile and said, "I hate to be Donny downer so often. But what drove these multa

to extinction on their home planet.” Everybody else’s grins turned to just smiles too as Mav said, “The usual cause. A pesky asteroid.” I said, “That’s too bad.” A grin came over Mav’s face. This caused the rest of us to grin too as Mav said, “Well for these guys and the other animals on this planet, they’re better off here.” It looked like the slightly larger baby multa had shoved its head between Mav and Til below the surface. They both petted it as they laughed.

Another multa brushed its head along Sue and I. Which caused us to laugh also. We petted it also as Zem and Bev watched the fun with big grins on their faces. Sue said to me, “They’re so wonderful!” I said, “I know!” Bev said to Zem, “Let’s go down again honey!” Zem said, “Ok lovie!” They both gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then they took a couple deep breaths and held in a third. Using their multa’s head for leverage, they both shoved themselves down under the water. Mav said to Til, “Get ready darling!” They both started taking a few deep breaths too. Sue and I grinned at each other. I said, “Let’s go sweetie!” Sue said happily, “Ok honey!” Sue and I started to take a few deep breaths too as Mav and Til submerged themselves. Then Sue and I submerged ourselves too. The multa head near Sue and I submerged itself too as we heard Bev think, “Weee!” Sue and I were both again subjected to the fairly loud and seemingly happy sounds that our multa emitted from its head. Sue and I turned to see Bev on a multa’s back with her arms wrapped around the base of its neck. Zem was below the multa with his arms wrapped around the base of its neck too. With the multa’s neck being wider at its body than it was near their heads, both Bev and Zem were holding onto each other’s wrists. Zem and Bev’s multa was moving out into deeper water at an angle. It was also going at a pretty good speed. I thought, “Can I direct our multa?” Tal answered and said, “Think away.” Sue and I briefly grinned at each other. Then I looked at the multa head near Sue and I. I pointed at Zem and Bev’s multa and said, “Catch up!” Sue and I wrapped our hands around each other’s wrists with the multa neck in between. I let Sue take the top of our multa and I went below. As we slid down to the base of its neck, Til said, “We have a quick one too!” Zem said fairly quickly, “You won’t catch us!” Bev briefly turned her head enough to glimpse us. It couldn’t have been easy with the water rushing past. Fairly quickly, our multa

224

turned and took off after the multa Zem and Bev were holding on to. Bev said, “Follow the leader!” Zem and Bev’s multa picked up speed and headed toward the surface.

Mav and Til’s multa started swimming up near the one Sue and I were holding on to. They too were holding their multa the same way the rest of us were. Zem and Bev’s multa breached the surface. It nearly became completely airborne before plunging back into the water. Sue and I’s multa soon did the same. It was quite a rush. A couple



moments later, Mav and Til's multa did the same. After it plunged back into the water, Til thought in a slightly distressed manner, "Eee!" Then Til thought, "None of you guys look!" Zem, Bev, Mav, Sue and I all emitted telepathic humor. We could all pretty much guess that Til experienced some sort of bikini malfunction. Bev said fairly quickly with an amused tone to her thought as our multa began to slow down, "What happened!" Til said, "My top string came undone!" This caused more telepathic humor. Zem and Bev's multa started to turn back toward the gazebo and head at an angle toward the surface. Sue and I's multa did the same. I looked up ahead. But not in Til's direction. Though being under our multa, I couldn't have seen anything if I wanted to. Other multa had been going along with our joyride.

I could see Panny and Lika holding onto the upper neck of the slightly larger baby multa. Responding to Til's predicament, I said with an amused thought, "I'm sure you just made Mav very happy!" Mav said as the rest of us exchanged telepathic humor, "She sure did!" We all exchanged more telepathic humor. Afterwards, Zem said to Bev, "I better check the ties on your top too sweetness." I added, "And me yours honey." Bev said, "It might be a good idea." Sue added in a kidding around thought as we came to the surface, "No sense in giving you guys a peep show too." As we released our multa and let them swim on, Til said with a bit of a plaintive, embarrassed edge to her thought, "You guys!" At the same time, being safe to do so, we all grinned at Mav and Til. They were at the surface farther out in the water. Til had her back to us and Mav was behind Til. Mav was tying Til's top bikini tie. What Til said caused Zem, Bev, Sue and I to laugh. Mav and Til chuckled. Then Zem thought, "Don't worry. I didn't look." I added, "Me either." This caused us all to chuckle a little more.

A multa head was surfaced near Mav and Til. Of course, other multa were swimming about us all. But being so large, they weren't of course too close. The ones that were nearer to us were being careful as usual to not bump us with their flippers. Though once in a while, multa had gently brushed us with them. Zem grinned at Bev and said verbally, "Turn around sweetie." Sue and I were already grinning at each other as I said, "You too honey." Zem and I checked Bev and Sue's bikini tops. Sue's and apparently Bev's were fine. Mav and Til at this point were holding onto each other, mostly from their sides, with an arm around each other. Their other arms they had outstretched as they were being shoved through the water toward the gazebo. It looked like Mav and Til had a foot on the end of a submerged multa's snout. Speaking of the top tie on Bev's bikini top, Zem said to Bev, "It's fine love lumps." I said to Sue, "Yours are good too lovie love." Bev turned to Zem and said, "Thank you dearest." They gave each other a brief but loving kiss as Mav and Til stopped being pushed near us.

Sue turned to me and said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. As Sue and I parted our kiss, Mav said to Zem, Bev, Sue and I, "That was fun." Til then said, as she petted the multa head that had been pushing them, "Until my top came undone." Zem, Bev and I were exchanging grins with Mav and Til. Except for Sue. Sue only had a slight smile and an apologetic look on her face. Then Sue said to Til with an apologetic tone to her voice, "I'm sorry. You would think that I knew how to tie a bikini top." As we all started petting multa heads, Til said, "That's ok." This made Sue's smile widen a bit as Til said, "It may not have been your fault. I had a multa flipper brush against my back. I think it may have pulled on a string a little." Being relieved a little, this made Sue grin. Mav's grin widened a bit as he said in a kidding around manner, "Just in case, from now on, you're Til's official bikini top tyer." We all laughed. Except Til. Til gave Mav an openmouthed, amused but surprised look. Then Til said with a slightly plaintive edge to her voice, "Mav!" This only enlivened everybody's laughter. Then Til laughed herself.

After the laughter, Mav said to Til with an apologetic tone to his voice, "Sorry darling." Then, using their multa head to help keep their heads above water, they gave each other a loving kiss. Which seemed like a good idea. So Zem and Bev also kissed each other lovingly. Sue and I kissed each other lovingly too. After a few extended moments, we began to part our kisses from our partners and smile lovingly at our partners. We then went back to petting our multa. Of course, this caused more seemingly pleased vocalizations from the multa. I started scratching around just behind the head of ours. Sue petted it near its eye. It closed its eye and Sue gently rubbed her hand over the closed eyelid. This wasn't any big deal. Sue and I had seen Til do the same thing with a houk head she petted. What Sue was doing made it close both of its eyes. I gently rubbed it over its other eyelid too. After a few moments, we went back to petting it elsewhere on its head and neck. The multa of course opened its eyes again as we did so. After a few more moments, our multa started to submerge and do a downward roll as Sue and I scratched along its neck and then back. When it moved past us, another multa swam in to take its place.

As usual, they seemed to be taking turns getting attention from us rather than mobbing us. Which given their size, was a good thing. Though no doubt if any of them became bothersome, one of our Nal would probably drag them away. As Sue and I got ready to pet this multa, Sue said to it with a friendly, higher than normal pitch, "Oh. We have some for you too." I looked over to the others and saw that Mav and Til were having to split their attention between an adult multa and the slightly larger baby multa. As Sue and I started to pet our multa, we heard a funny sound, and then laughter coming from the direction of Mav and Til. Zem, Bev, Sue and I quickly shot extra happy expressions at them, then laughed too. Til was raking her fingers up

and down over the baby multa's lips as it gave out vocalizations. You could probably imagine the sound it made. This caused everybody to laugh. The baby multa making the sound seemed to be pleased by it too. As it seemed did the other multa seeing it. After a little laughter, Sue said to Til with a mirth filled voice, "That's so cute!" We all laughed a little more. Then Til stopped what she was doing.

226

The baby and the adult Mav was petting rubbed heads and made happy vocalizations. While they did so, Til said to Sue with a mirth filled voice, "They are adorable." After we all shared enjoying each other's enjoyment for a couple moments, we went back to petting our multa. The whole thing caused Sue and I to give our multa's head and neck some extra good petting. It lowered its head and did a sideways roll. Sue and I then started petting the bottom of its head and neck. Then Sue and I moved down its neck as we petted and scratched along it. Sue and I then slid ourselves onto its belly and scratched around some more. The multa then raised itself up a little. Raising both Sue and I just above the surface as we laid on its belly. Sue and I briefly grinned at each other as we made big sweeping scratches with our hands. As we did so, Sue said rather excitedly, "I think he likes it!" Having overheard us, Til said to Sue and I, "They're always ready for a good belly scratch." Sue and I parted a bit to scratch more of it. Our multa flapped its flippers on the surface a little. Which made Sue and I laugh. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til must have directed the adult multas they were petting to do the same.

Soon, they were all laying on the belly of a multa and scratching around on them. Their multa also slapped their flippers on the surface of the water a little. After giving our multa belly a good scratching, our multa submerged and swam downward. Another multa swam in upside down and raised Sue and I just above the surface on its belly. Sue and I gave it a good scratching too. It too slapped its flippers on the surface of the water a little. When another multa came in for Mav and Til to pet the same way, Slappy slid up onto the belly of a multa with Panny and Lika holding onto its neck. As Mav and Til began to scratch around the belly of this new multa, Panny and Lika released Slappy's neck as it rolled over on its back. It was so cute! Then Slappy began to sweep its front and back flippers forward and backward a little. Mav and Til laughed as this kicked the cuteness up a notch. Both Bev and Sue said in a drawn out, sentimental manner, "Aw!" We all looked at the adorable sight as Til, Panny and Lika all scratched around its belly too. The baby also slapped its flippers on the belly of the adult multa. Sue called out in a little louder than normal voice, "That's Slappy for ya!"

This caused everybody to laugh a little. After some scratching on Slappy and the adult, Mav and Til's multa began to submerge. Slappy

of course went down with it. Panny and Lika laid on Mav and Til's back as they took hold of their necks with their front paws. Both Mav and Til gave them a little pet. Another multa approached them in the same way. But either Mav or Til must have thought to it. Because it rolled over again and raised its head just above the surface near them. The multa we were petting also submerged. Mav and Til started to swim closer to us. We all of course had big smiles on our faces. Panny and Lika let go of their necks and went back underwater. Sue and I started to swim closer to the others too. After a few moments, Sue grinned at Bev. This made grins spread to the rest of us as Sue said to Bev, "They sure are gentle for how big they are." Bev said, "They know they could cause us harm if they wanted to. At least they think they could. But they're too sweet to do that." I looked around at the others as I said, "It looked like the ride you girls had over

227

here was fun. Can we all go for another ride?" My suggestion made everybody's grins slightly widen. Til said to Sue and I, "Sure. Would you like your own multa, or would you like to share one." Sue and I briefly grinned at each other. Then we turned our grins back to Til. Sue said, "It won't make any of the multa jealous if we share one would it." Til said, "Maybe a little. But we can just take one out, then ride others back. That way, we can make a few more of them happy. The rest will be happy enough. Just go to whichever one you want." We all began to swim over to the multa that were closest. Others dove out of the way. Panny and Lika swam just under the surface toward Zem and Bev. A multa positioned their bodies under each of us couples. Sue and I took hold of our multa's neck. It slid up under our hands as it raised its body up until Sue and I were just above the surface. Tal and Sas came out of the water near Sue and I. Pim and Mim came out of the water near Zem and Bev. San and Pam came out of the water near Mav and Til. Tal said to Sue and I, "Please move back just a little." Sue and I briefly grinned at each other and did as Tal requested. Slappy swam up over Mav and Til's multa. Which hadn't completely surfaced yet either.

Tal and Sas transformed themselves into what looked like suction cups with handles across the top. They came down and attached themselves to our multa just in front of Sue and I. Sue and I both grinned at them as Sue said, "Thank you. You're so thoughtful. The multa are pretty slippery." As Sue took hold of Sas's handle and I took hold of Tal's handle, Sas said, "You probably won't need us. But we know that you all most often like to look at each other while you chat. It will be easier to do without holding onto a multa neck." I said to Tal, "You guys think of everything." Tal said, "We try." Sue and I briefly grinned at each other. Then we turned our grins to the others. By this time, Pim, Mim, San and Pam had also done the same thing and were now attached to Zem, Bev, Mav and Til's multa. It apparently didn't

matter that small bits of Pim and Mim were around Panny and Lika's necks. Panny and Lika were laying on Zem and Bev's backs with their front arms wrapped around their necks. I suppose it wasn't necessary for Pim and Mim to make smaller handles for Panny and Lika. Mav, Til and Slappy were also raised out of the water. Zem and Bev were grinning at them.

Both Mav and Til had their bodies angled a little away from each other toward the back. Slappy was laying between their legs with his front flippers laying across Mav and Til's lower legs. They both started to pet Slappy around his head and neck with a free hand. Slappy gave off some happy baby multa sounds and slapped his flippers. The rear two slapped on the multa. The front two flippers slapped against the backs of Mav and Til's legs. It was so cute. Mav and Til both laughed. The rest of us chuckled. After Slappy had gotten his slaps out of him, Mav and Til stopped petting him. Then they turned their grins to the rest of us. Mav thought, "You guys ready over there?" Bev thought, "Ready here!" Then they all grinned at Sue and I. Sue thought, "We're ready!" Mav said, "Ok. Lets go." The multa we were on began to swim across this narrower end of the lake. Our multa lined up with Sue and I on the left, Zem and Bev on our right and Mav and Til off to the right of them. Probably just by chance, it was the same arrangement we had when we were flying. The multa

228

we were on probably could have moved much faster. But they didn't. Even so, they all pushed up a bit of a bow wave in front of them.

Other multa swam about as we headed out. Some were at the surface, and some underwater. About four of them were out in front of our three multa. There were probably others somewhere below our multa. Unlike the houk I flew, I couldn't feel a lot of muscle movement under me. Sue and I grinned briefly at each other, then turned our grins back to the others. I thought, "On the water, this is the best way to get around." Zem, Bev, Mav and Til were grinning at me by the time I finished thinking to them. Mav thought back and said, "The multa sure don't mind." The multa were giving off more frequent happy multa sounds. Even Slappy looked and sounded like he was enjoying himself. Bev said, "It's too bad we don't have them on planet Bev. But we wouldn't want to spoil the uniqueness of this planet." Til said, "We don't mind if you make some for your planet." We were all now grinning at Til. Bev said, "Yeah. But you know too that it gives us more reason to visit here." Til said, "Just like your adorable little silmet and things gives us more reason to visit your planet."

As our multa headed farther out into the lake, Sue said, "The silmet are just too adorable. I could almost squish one right to death. But here, if anything got squished with love, it would probably be one of us." This caused everybody to chuckle. Everybody was grinning at Sue and I. Zem said to Sue, "You can do some pretty good squishing

yourself.” This made Sue and I bust up laughing. Which the other’s quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Sue said, “Well at least it wasn’t a hug monster squish!” This caused a little more laughter. Then Mav said jovially, “It’s only a matter of time!” This caused even more laughter. After the laughter, I said, “Well luckily for you guys, I’ll leave the squishing to Sue.” This caused us all to chuckle. Afterwards, Zem said, “We’re tough enough. Besides, if you can take a squishing from Sue and Bev, I think Bev and I could handle a squishing from you.” This caused a little more chuckling. Afterwards, I said, “I’ll try to restrain myself. But you never know!” This caused us to laugh a bit. After the laughter, I said, “I had this friend with a small son. He told me one time about his son asking him “why” about something. When he answered his son’s question, his son would ask “why” about the answer.”

Everybody was of course smiling at me. I then said, “This would keep happening until my friend got tired of answering questions. The reason I brought this up is because we don’t want to become tiresome with questions.” Bev said, “We don’t mind.” Mav said, “If we really got tired of your questions, we could simply answer them with super involved scientific intricacies that you would probably get tired of listening to.” Sue said, “Erik and I already experienced a little of that from Bev and Zem. And that isn’t even what they were trying to do.” This caused us all to chuckle a bit. Then Zem said, “Things can get awfully involved.” I said, “All the same, Mav and Til, I think I would like to ask you a scientific question.” Til said, “That sounds like fun.” I said, “Zem and Bev showed us a picture of a black hole and explained some things about them. I was wondering if you two could explain how they can be so dense.”

Mav smiled at Til and said, “Why don’t you take this one darling.” Til was of course smiling at Mav as she said, “Ok honey buns.” They gave each other a

229

brief but loving kiss. Then they turned their smiles back to Sue and I. Zem and Bev did too. Til said, “Most of an atom is made up of empty space. In a neutron star, atoms are broken up and all their particles are smashed close together. The subatomic particles that make up the basic particles of an atom are mostly empty space too. In a black hole, the atomic particles are broken apart and it is the subatomic particles that are smashed close together. Taking up much less volume. But at the same time, producing much more gravity for their mass.” I said, “Very interesting.” Sue said, “Zem already told us basically that much more gravity is created the more dense matter becomes. But from a human understanding of physics, it’s still pretty bizarre. I have another question either you or Mav could answer for me.” Til said, “Sure. Fire away.” This made Sue and I grin. Which the others did too. Sue said, “Bev told us that humans were experimenting with UFO

technology. Could you tell us about what they're up to?" All of our grins turned back into smiles. Mav and Til smiled at each other. Til said, "Why don't you take this one sweetness." Mav said, "Thank you lovie." They gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

As they did so, Slappy stuck his muzzle in there too. Mav and Til parted their kiss, laughing. The rest of us laughed too. Both Mav and Til took a hand off of San and Pam and petted Slappy about his head. Slappy made happy little multa sounds. After giving Slappy some good pets, Mav and Til put their hands back on the San and Pam handles. Mav and Til then turned their grins back to Sue and I. Zem and Bev turned their grins to Sue and I also. Mav said, "There was an incident reported on various UFO programs that you may have heard of." Mav at this point took on more of a solemn look. The rest of us did too as Mav added, "Two women and a child encountered one of your country's experimental aircraft. They stopped on a road and one of them got out to look at it. They were all irradiated." Then Mav gave Til a slight smile and said, "You tell them some more sweetie." Til smiled at Mav and said, "Thank you dearest." They gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then they parted and turned slight smiles back to Sue and I.

Til said, "Decades ago, scientists in the U.S. were experimenting with nuclear powered rockets. But they decided not to pursue that form of propulsion. Though one thing they discovered was that the process freed up a lot of electrons. With the craft that irradiated the people stopped on the road, it too used a nuclear rocket. But not one as large to be used for thrust. If it had been for thrust, the windows of their car would have been blown out and they would have been burnt to a radioactive crisp inside. It was just the most efficient way they had to produce large amounts of electricity. Which they needed for that particular form of propulsion. Though obviously, that kind of electrical generation isn't very environmentally friendly. It's kind of surprising that your people decided to keep that secret." Sue said, "Why would they tell anybody." Til's slight smile disappeared as she said with a more solemn countenance, "That would involve telling you of another conspiracy. And you don't seem to care for them too much." Sue said, "You have to tell us now. I promise to be good."

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all smiled at Sue like they were looking at something adorable. I smiled lovingly at Sue. As Sue saw how Zem, Bev, Mav and Til

230

looked at her, Sue smiled at them with a sentimental look on her face. Mav said to Zem and Bev, "You don't mind do you." Zem said, "Not at all. Go ahead." Mav then smiled at Sue and I and said, "Are you sure you want to hear of more human shenanigans?" Sue said to Mav with a smile, "If it is any help, I and no doubt Erik no longer consider ourselves to be earth humans." I released one hand from Tal and put

an arm around Sue's back. At the same time, I said to Mav with a smile, "Sue's right." Sue then said, "So give it to us with both barrels." We had again all taken on solemn looks as Mav said, "It is mainly, though not completely, an American problem. Just as the American people have been played for saps when it comes to outsourcing and immigration, they have been played for major saps when it comes to military secrets. All of the trillions of dollars the average American has been expected to pay for military technology has been for nothing. Because the U.S. routinely arranges for those secrets to leak out." For a few moments, the depth of such treason caused surprised looks to come over Sue and I's faces.

Mav gave Sue and I a couple moments to get over our surprise. Then Mav said, "Though some are lost through spying or accident, most aren't. There are two main reasons for this. First, the U.S. and other countries know of the existence of extraterrestrials. They also know that alien technology is much more advanced. Though in the case of beings at our level of development, they haven't a clue. For the military, this is an unacceptable situation. So they seek to develop ever more sophisticated weapons. To have a justification for doing so, they arrange for military secrets to leak out. Then they can wave the American flag and seek money to develop even more sophisticated weapons. For all the good it will do them. Even in the case of the more primitive space faring beings, their efforts in that direction would be basically pointless for thousands of years. Earth humans have very little idea of what they're up against. Also, as you know, on a couple of occasions, this strategy nearly ended in disaster. Which could still happen, before they simply heat themselves out of existence.

"One of the tragedies of all this is that if they simply behaved in a more civilized manner, the aliens they fear would probably just give them technology that it could take humans thousands of years to develop on their own. But for humans to behave in a more sane manner wouldn't be very politically correct for the way things now work. Economically, it would also cause trouble for the ruling elite. On top of that, most of the rich or successful aren't genetically fit. No doubt, they would oppose any moves in a eugenic direction. The other reason military secrets are given away is just plain greed. Scientists do well with the military research that is funded. And anybody who knows anything about anything knows that military leaders are savagely brown nosed by weapons producers. This is known as the military-industrial complex. They too have a stake in military secrets slipping out. Again, it gives weapons producers a willing market to sell ever more sophisticated weapons systems. If they are more expensive, who cares. It is just the lowly peons who will bear most of the burden anyway. And if the American people balk at the workload, they can simply let more desperate people immigrate to the U.S.



"It is interesting how the U.S. manages to make some of this technology escaping seem like it was done through bad luck or theft. Though the whole thing seems less treasonous when military funding is involved. Well, I think I've said enough on that matter." Sue said, "Well, I'm thoroughly disgusted. But I'll be over it in a minute." This made the other's chuckle. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. After the levity, I smiled at the others and said, "How can you guys know so much." Zem said, "As you know, what is happening on earth is a story that has been repeated countless times on other planets. We know who's minds to look into. Of course, with beings we know like you two, it wouldn't be an ethical thing to do. Though before you proposed to Sue, we had to make sure that you both really loved each other." Sue and I briefly beamed extra happy grins at each other. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, Sue and I turned our extra happy expressions back to Zem and Bev. Zem then said, "Humans in the wilds of earth are a different matter. They have less of a chance keeping a secret from us than they imagine they can keep a secret from whatever gods they invented.

"For example, your one time president Regan spoke at the U.N. One of the things he said basically was of how the differences among humans would disappear if the earth was faced with a threat from some other civilization from out in space. Though I know that he had no knowledge of giving away military secrets as a reason to develop better ones to fight such potential threats with. Neither was he given information about the existence of extraterrestrials. Those in the know simply don't share such information with elected corporate shills. Regan and his wife had simply seen an Eban ship years earlier." I said, "Even if he knew about giving away military secrets for the cause of coming up with better weapons to fight possible extraterrestrial threats with, it's a pretty poor excuse. And as for the differences between humans disappearing goes, we all know those differences serve a purpose. Me personally, because of the decreased drive for symbiosis, I would rather have seen my sister date a Lasser (As you may remember. This was the centipede like creature that Bev chose for herself in our virtual reality game) than a nigger, spick or gook."

Mav said, "Your patriotism is commendable. I guess it's just another reason why you make Zem and Bev proud." This made Sue and I beam grins at Mav. The others grinned too. Sue said, "Thank you! You're such a dear!" I said, "It may not mean much coming from a primitive human, but we're proud of Zem and Bev too." We all exchanged sentimental smiles. Bev said, "Thank you. You're so sweet." Zem said, "Thank you. You may not be as evolved. But we still appreciate your feelings. Even more so sense we've gotten to know you." Sue said, "We're especially proud of you for having such wonderful friends." Mav and Til briefly turned their sentimental smiles to each other. Then they turned them back to Sue and I. Til said, "You better be careful. Or you'll have me turning into a hug monster too!"

We all laughed. After the laughter, we all grinned sentimentally at each other. Then we turned our attention to where we were going. At this point, we were about half way across this narrower end of the lake. Mav said, "I think we should get ready to head back."

As our multa slowed down, Bev said, "I think the glare off the water could

232

become a bit of a problem. But I'll take care of it." The sun was at a bit of a bothersome angle. Bev then seemed to think something. Zem smiled at Mav and Til and thought, "I have a good idea." Our multa had stopped at this point. Zem and then Bev sat up on their multa. Panny and Lika jumped off the backs as they did so. The rest of us sat up also. Mav and Til petted Slappy a little more. Then he started moving back with his flippers. Other multa were swimming around us. Yet others were no doubt below the surface of the water somewhere. Zem said to Mav and Til, "Back at our island, Erik mentioned jet skis." Sue and I briefly shot each other excited grins. We both had a good idea of what Zem was going to say. These multa had to be even more fun than a jet ski! Sue and I turned our grins back to Zem as he said, "Let's do a jet ski thing with the multa." Mav said, "Good idea!" The sunlight we were in began to disappear. Both Sue and I looked in the direction of the sun as Slappy slipped into the water from Mav and Til's multa. Up in the sky, far out and above the large grassy area behind the house, a number of billowing circular clouds were forming up in the sky. One of the inner ones started to cast some comfortable shade in our general direction.

I could also see a spare Nal heading our way. Sue and I turned big smiles at each other. Then we turned these to the others. All of our Nal rose up off the backs of our multa and reformed into their normal shape. They hovered about eight feet in the air near us all. Other multa began to surface near us. Mav said to Sue and I, "It will be more fun if we all take our own multa. Let's choose different ones so they won't feel left out." Mav and Til stood up. The rest of us did so too. Til then grinned at Sue and I and said, "Just think to whatever one you want to come over to you." Sue and I grinned at each other. I said to Sue verbally, "Which one do you want darling." Sue grinned around for a moment at the multa. Then Sue smiled and said, "Humm. Let me see." Most of the multa at this particular moment were making happy multa sounds. Sue pointed to one and said verbally, "I'll take that one." Then Sue apparently thought to it. It started to swim up to our multa. I smiled at Sue and said, "Good choice darling." The fact that any choice would have been a good one made Sue grin. I grinned too. Then Sue said, "Thank you sweetie." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, we both still grinned at each other.

The multa Sue had chosen swam up to ours and laid its front flipper on the back of our multa. I said, "Have fun honey." Sue said, "Thank

you dearest.” We gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Then Sue turned toward the flipper and walked over to it. Sas followed Sue. When Sue got to the flipper, Sue scampered over it to the back of her new multa. I looked around to select my own multa. The others had different multa coming up to theirs also. After Sue was on the back of her multa, Sas transformed herself again. This time, Sas turned part of herself into a collar. This went around the base of Sue’s multa’s neck. From it extended a cable about twelve feet long. At the end of which was a triangular rod. The part meant for gripping was thicker than the rest. This suspended itself about three and a half feet off the back of Sue’s multa. Sue went over to it and took hold of it. Then Sue’s multa swam away from mine as Sue stood on its back.

233

A multa I had chosen swam up behind Sue’s. When it got next to mine, it too put its flipper onto the back of mine. As Bev ran across a flipper to her new multa, I went over to the flipper of my new multa and ran across it. The part of the flipper that wasn’t in direct contact with the back of my multa flexed a little under my steps. Tal went over to the neck of my new multa and transformed himself into the same sort of setup Sas had. There seemed to be a hint of disappointment in the multa sounds of the multa I just left. I went over to the handle Tal made and took hold of it. I said verbally, “Thank you Tal.” As the multa I had been riding began to submerge, Tal thought to me and said, “You’re welcome.” The multa Sue was riding was swinging around. I grinned at Sue as it did so. Then Sue looked toward the house and her face lit up with joy. Sue thought with an exclamation, “Oh Bev! How wonderful!” I turned to see what Sue was looking at. The clouds Bev had made form were now fully formed. There were three pairs of fairly large, heart shaped clouds next to each other. Each pair were separated by a little distance. The inner left one was giving us some shade. A little farther distance above each pair of clouds, there were two smaller heart shaped clouds next to each other.

Bev thought and said, “I thought if I was going to have a cloud made, I would do a little something special.” We all grinned at Bev. At this point, Panny and Lika were sitting on the back of one of the smaller multa. The spare Nal I had seen heading our way had transformed itself into a smaller collar, leash and handle on Panny and Lika’s smaller multa. Both Panny and Lika were now holding onto its handle. Bev and her new multa were swimming away from the multa she had been on. As it did so, Bev was holding onto a Mim handle and grinning at Sue. Zem was just getting onto the back of his own multa. Til and her new multa were swimming away from the one she had been on. Mav was on the back of his new multa and just taking hold of the San handle. As Mav and Til’s old multa was submerging, I thought to Bev. Referring to the clouds Bev had made, I said, “You’re too adorable!”

Zem thought and said, "I could have told you that." Bev's face was of course lit up with a beaming a grin. Til thought and said to Bev, "It seems like the older you get, the sweeter you get." Bev said with an appreciative, sentimental tone to her thought, "It was nothing. Besides, part of the idea is because of Erik and Sue's mugs." As Zem's multa swing around, everybody grinned at Sue and I. Sue's multa pulled up next to mine. But not too close. Zem said to Sue and I, "You both certainly aren't less evolved when it comes to being adorable." This time, it was Sue and I's turn to beam grins. Sue said, "Thank you! You're so sweet!" I said, "Just wonderful." The rest of the multa began to line up. But not too close to each other's. All of them were pointing in the general direction of the gazebo.

## Chapter Eleven Ready For The Ride Back

From left to right, it was Mav, Til, Bev, Zem, myself and Sue. Panny and Lika's

234

slightly smaller multa was behind and between Sue and I's. I thought to Sue and said, "Have you ever ridden a jet ski before sugar everything." My new term of endearment made Sue grin at me with a little more sweetness in her expression. Sue said, "Yes I have huggy love." I said, "I never have sweetness." My statement made Sue's grin diminish to a smile as I added, "You'll have to tell me how it compares." Zem said, "You'll find this just as much fun in regard to the ride." Sue and I both grinned at Zem. Then Zem said, "With the jet skis humans use, you know what they're going to do. But unless you're directing your multa, you never know exactly what they're going to do. The multa may not be able to go quite as fast as a jet ski or for a prolonged period of time. But the things they do will more than make up for it. Especially if you have them go underwater." Til then said, "While you're standing on them, it might be a good idea to be ready to bend your knees." Mav said, "Let's be off then." Our multa began to swim in the direction of the gazebo. But they didn't swim any faster than they did on their way out.

Mav then grinned over at Sue and I and said, "Normally, you could just think to them to make them go fast. But there is another way that they like. Just stomp your feet up and down until they get ready to take off. Then be ready for acceleration." We were all grinning at Mav. Then Mav turned back forward and stomped his feet up and down quickly on the back of his multa. The rest of us did so too. Mav's multa gave off some seemingly happy multa sounds as Mav bent his knees a little. The rest of us did so too. The rest of our multa also gave off seemingly happy multa sounds. They all lowered their heads

and necks a little and took off as Mav verbally called out, "Ya Ha!" It flexed its back a little as it made powerful flaps with its flippers. The rest of our multa also started making slight undulations with their backs as they made powerful flaps with their flippers. The undulations and acceleration made standing on mine more difficult. No doubt the others were experiencing the same thing. The acceleration wasn't as intense as when we took off on the houks from the river bank. But in it's own way, it was just as exhilarating.

At about the same time as Mav called out, Til called out, "Weee!" Bev called out, "Wha hoo!" Zem called out, "Ye ha!" I called out, "He ya!" Sue called out, "Woo Hoo!" Soon, all of our multa were really moving. Their heads lowered to just above the water as they undulated in the water. Periodic waves of water would wash over our feet. Sue thought excitedly, "This is fun!" Mav said, "Check this out!" Then Mav apparently started giving commands to his multa. Which the rest of our multa followed. Mav's multa banked off to the left. It was interesting how it used its head and neck to help steer into the turn. The rest of our's followed. We were lowered lower to the water as our multa turned to the side a bit. The G forces kept us in a standing position. Then they turned off to the right. With the same results as before. Our maneuvers let the smaller multa that Panny and Lika were riding catch up to ours. Both of them were chattering happily. Once we came out of that turn, our multa began to pick up speed again. Then they turned from side to side a bit at this greater speed. Making less pronounced turns in the water as they did so. After a little of this, Mav's multa began to slow down. The rest of ours did too.

235

Our multa were breathing slightly heavier as we started heading back toward the gazebo at the same slow speed as we came out. As our multa swam up abreast of each other and raised their heads up, Sue thought and said, "Just from the ride, I would much rather have one of these than a jet ski!" Til said, "They aren't houks. But they are fun." I said, "I'll say!" Everybody briefly turned their grins from Sue to me. Then we went back to enjoying the ride. It didn't take long for the multa to start breathing normally again. After about a minute, Mav grinned at Sue and I. Then Mav said, "You ready for more fun?" We all grinned at Mav. Then Zem, Bev and Til grinned at Sue and I too. Sue said, "Sure!" Mav said, "This time, we see who the first one to lose their footing is. And whoever falls first has to french kiss a bartok." This caused surprised looks to come over Sue and I's faces. The others laughed. Which figuring that Mav wasn't serious about what he said, Sue and I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Mav said, "Just kidding!" Bev then grinned at Sue and I and said with a happy thought, "But whoever falls first is a rotten egg!" I said, "I'm ready!" Sue said, "Me too!"

Mav said, "Ok! Start stomping!" Then Mav quickly stomped his feet up and down on his multa again. The rest of us did so too. Mav's multa called out happily and started speeding up. It lowered its head into the water. The rest of ours did the same. Mav's multa lowered itself further so that there was about a foot of water rushing over the back of his multa. The rest of ours did the same at the same time. Our footing indeed became more difficult. We all put one foot in front of the other and bent our knees a little more. At the same time, we all leaned back a little to counteract the pressure being exerted on our feet. After doing this for a few extended moments, the multa lowered themselves a little more. Now there was about a foot and a half of water rushing over the backs of our multas. The smaller multa that Panny and Lika were riding didn't participate in this game. But it did swim after our multa on the surface. After a few extended moments at this new depth, Sue gave off a brief, high pitched yell. Then Sue hit the water as she let go of her Sas handle. The rest of our multa surfaced and started slowing down as they turned back toward Sue. We all laughed and looked back at Sue.

Sue was treading water and wiping water from her face. The multa Sue had been riding was deeper underwater. I could see it swimming back toward Sue underwater as the rest of our multa swam back toward Sue on the surface. There were of course other multa swimming around. They seemed to be happy with the game also. As we started heading back toward Sue, I called out to Sue and said, "You know I love you darling. But better you than me!" We all laughed. Sue made a mock angry face and shook her fist at me. At the same time, Sue thought angrily, "Ooo!" This enlivened the laughter of the rest of us. Sue then joined in on the laughter too. Then Sue's multa brought its head up out of the water next to Sue. It sprayed vapor from its nostrils. Then it turned its head and neck a little to look at Sue and make happy multa sounds. Sue petted it around its head. Then Sue started to pet its neck as it rose out of the water more. As Sue's multa began to raise her out of the water, Sue said verbally with a slightly louder than normal voice, "I had to pick an extra slippery one!" This

236

caused the rest of us to laugh again. Which Sue quickly joined in on. We all knew of course that one multa was no more slippery than another.

Then Sue took hold of her Sas handle and stood up as our multa began to turn in the direction of the gazebo. As the rest of our multa turned back around, I thought to Sue and said, "Don't feel too bad sweetness. I was about ready to fall myself." Zem said, "I don't think that any of us could have held on much longer." Sue smiled around at everybody. As Sue did so, Sue said, "At least it was a soft landing." Til

then said, "And at least you kept your top on." This caused us all to laugh a little. After a moment, our multa began to swim in the direction of the gazebo again. We were close enough by now to get a good view at what was going on where the houks, multa, bartok and the multa near them were. Sue said, "It looks like everybody is having fun over there." The rest of us looked too. Apparently, the treats had all run out. The baskets that the Nal had been feeding the houks and multa from were gone. At this particular moment, these Nal were about twenty five feet behind the multa on the surface of the water. They were spraying arching streams of water at the multa and houks. The houks were all standing in the surf.

One of the houks was partially laying on the back of a multa from the side. Even though the hok was nearly as large as the multa, the multa didn't seem to mind. There was a stream of water landing on this hok's back. It flapped its unextended wings a little. There was another hok in the surf that had lowered itself a little farther into the water. It was flapping its unextended wings a little. Causing water to splash up onto its back. Other streams of water landed on a hok and multa. One of the houks and multa were playfully shoving their heads from side to side a little. Alternating which of their heads got to have a stream of water land on it. Of course, there were other groups of animals much farther inland. Farther down the beach, I could see a small column of smoke rising from the campfire of the bartok's temporarily deserted campsite. It rose up about fifteen feet, then started to angle off toward the left. Looking at the bartok and multa on the beach, they were having fun. Apparently, they had run out of treats too. Their empty baskets sat unattended on the beach.

The young female and the toddler were a little farther out into the water. One of the adult females was apparently kneeling in the water next to them. All three were enjoying the attention of a young multa. There were five streams of water being sprayed. Four landed on multa and another fell on a bartok that was next to a multa in the surf. A couple of the bartok were swimming out in the water with a couple of multa. Another of the bartok was also standing in water that went up to mid body level. A multa had its mouth wrapped partially around this bartok's forearm. The bartok was playfully moving this multa's head and upper neck around a little. Another bartok was standing in the water and petting multa. There was another bartok sitting on the beach and petting a multa. At this distance, I could barely make out a couple small specks of Nal near the beach. The bartok and multa seemed to be having a ball. Referring to the swimming bartok, Sue grinned at the others and said, "I didn't think the bartok could swim so well." Til said, "They are quite good swimmers."

We all turned our grins back to the happy scenes. After a few moments, I had

a fun idea come to mind. I had Tal secretly relay a command to our other multa.

Our multa began to move a little closer to each other and slow down. Til grinned at the rest of us and said, "Is somebody up to something?" I said, "I was just thinking that Sue and Zem were looking a little dry." Then I had Tal put my plan into action. My multa began to flap its front flippers on the water and splash water on Sue and Zem. Sue gave out a little high pitched yell as water splashed on her. Zem exclaimed verbally, "Ah!" as water splashed on him. Bev, Mav and Til started laughing. I quickly joined in on the laughter. Then Zem and Sue joined in. After a little laughter, Zem said, "Take this!" Zem's multa began to splash water on me and Bev. Bev gave out a little exclamation too. Sue's multa splashed water on me from the other side. As we laughed, all of our multa began to splash water on us. Which the multa seemed to delight in. After a bit of splashing, I stomped my feet quickly up and down on the back of my multa. My multa took off to get me out of the splash zone. I had it swim around the front of Sue's multa and bump it. Play time was on! The rest of the multa began to swim around and playfully bump another.

Of course, the older multa took it easy with the smaller multa that Panny and Lika were riding. Slappy and the other baby multa were kept out of the fray by other multa. Water churned around our feet as our multa did fairly quick, banking turns in the water. We all laughed or gave off excited verbal or telepathic exclamations as our multa swam acrobatically around on the surface. Our multa accelerated, decelerated, dove slightly, etc. They did too many different kinds of maneuvers to go into. All the while of course, we wore happy expressions that often turned into excited ones. I didn't have to give my multa very many commands. It seemed these multa knew very well how to have fun on their own. And they were intelligent enough to be mindful of their passengers. Though right from the start, it seemed that the more they found that we could handle, the more they did. We were having all kinds of fun. At one point, Mav and I's multa headed straight toward each other like we were playing a game of chicken. I thought to Mav and said quickly and excitedly, "You better look out!" Mav thought back in the same kind of way, "You better too!"

When our multa met, they each turned their bellies a little toward each other with their flippers flat along their sides. They gave each other a playful bump as they turned away from each other. It was amazing that Mav and I managed to keep on our feet. Though I had never been on a jet ski, I had seen them in real life and on TV. This playful swimming part of our interaction with the multa had to be more fun than a jet ski! After about ten minutes of this play, our multa began to stop. Somebody must have thought to them. Our multa all swam up to each other in a circle. The multa gave off happy vocalizations. We were all grinning as we petted another's multa head. As we did so, Sue said to everybody verbally in an excited voice, "This is so much fun!" Til said verbally to Sue, "The multa are such dears!"



I looked over at Panny and Lika. Their smaller multa had joined ours. I grinned at Zem and pointed at Panny and Lika. Feeling like asking a stupid question, I said, "Do you think these guys are enjoying themselves?" We all chuckled a little. Zem said, "Let me ask." We all grinned at Panny and Lika as Zem apparently thought something to them.

238

They began to chatter excitedly and hop up and down a little as they held onto their smaller Nal handle. It was so cute, we all had to laugh. As we all turned our grins back to each other, Zem said, "Well, there's your answer!" We all laughed again. After the laughter, Bev said, "Panny has ridden multa before. But Lika has only ever ridden a tucuxi. It's no wonder she is enjoying it." Mav grinned at Sue and I and said, "How deep have either of you two gone when swimming." I said, "One of the multa at the gazebo took me deeper than I've ever gone before." Sue said, "I've been as deep as about eighty feet few times when scuba diving on earth." Mav said, "Without the help of a Nal, I think we can briefly do a little better than that." As Mav's multa began to back away, the rest of ours did the same. As they did so, Sue said, "I hope we don't go too deep." The others started to lay down on their multa. Sue and I did the same as Mav said, "Not too deep. Certainly nothing near what a multa is capable of. And you have nothing to worry about with Sas around. Though whenever you feel you've gone deep enough, you can just think to your multa to head back to the surface. This isn't a contest. So nobody has to worry about being a rotten egg." This made the rest of us laugh a little. Which Mav quickly joined in on. By the time the laughter stopped, our multa also stopped. Bev thought to Sue and I. Though everybody could hear. Bev said, "Take some deep breaths!" We all started taking some deep breaths. After taking a few, Mav said, "Here we go!" Mav's multa nosed down in the water. The rest of ours did the same. Just like the others, the body of my multa also bent its body downward. As soon as I was underwater, I smiled around at the others. Panny and Lika accompanied us on their multa. Sue and I exchanged brief smiles. Then we turned back toward our dive. I couldn't see anything besides deep water below us and a few smaller fish swimming along with us. I thought just as a general question for anybody to answer, "I can't see the bottom. Just how deep is the water out here."

Til said, "Only about six hundred feet." Sue said, "Those are some interesting fish." I looked over and saw the fish Sue was looking at. There was a group of about seven of them. Overall, they were about four feet long. The front part of them sort of reminded me of a Penguin. Though its head was more fish like with a short, flexible neck. The front flippers appeared to do most of the work. They had forked tails that trailed fins back about a foot. The back third of which were a

vibrant purple color. As were the end third of their front flippers. The rest of their body was mostly orange. This orange color was lighter on their bellies and graduated to a darker orange along their backs. Also on their bodies, they had a number of vertical, thin stripes. These started off as a light green color at their bottoms, but changed to a blue color near their tops. Their eyes were red with a black pupil. Everybody else looked at the fish too. Til said, "Yes. They are pretty colorful." We went back to looking at where we were going. The multa Panny and Lika were riding headed back toward the surface. The water pressure continued to increase the deeper we went.

After a certain point, we must have gone through a different layer of water. Because the water here was a lot colder. We were only about a hundred feet underwater. About twice the overall length of the largest multa. Sue said, "It's too cold down here! I'm going back to the surface." As Sue's multa angled its

239

head and flexed its neck and body back toward the surface, Bev said, "I agree. I'll join you." As Bev's multa also turned toward the surface, Mav said, "I've gone deep enough too." The rest of our multa also headed toward the surface. I said, "I hope we don't get the bends." I could sense humor from the others. Zem said, "That takes more time underwater." Til said, "Sue. Start letting a little breath out to counteract the pressure." Sue thought, "Ok." I looked at Sue. Following Til's suggestion, I could see a little trail of bubbles coming from Sue's head. There were some other multa swimming about too. Of course, the water had various multa sounds going on. Up near the surface, Panny and Lika's multa was again taking them for a shallow dive. When I got to about where Sue had started letting out air, I did the same.

No doubt, as Mav had said, this dive was nothing for a multa. But it was quite an adventure for me. Soon, I could see Sue's multa break the surface. Quickly followed by Bev's. The rest of ours weren't far behind. Once Sue and Bev were surfaced, I heard Sue think to Bev, "That was fun." As the rest of our multa began to break the surface, Bev said, "A nice little dive is always fun." Once we had all come to the surface, Sue and Bev were still laying on their multa. Both of them were giving their multa backs a good scratch. After the rest of us caught our breath, we all did the same. I thought to the others as I did so, "I would imagine that you guys sometimes do the same with the Nal's help." Mav said as he scratched his multa, "Sometimes. But usually in warmer water." Sue started slapping the areas she had just scratched. Then Sue rubbed them. Seeing how much Sue's multa enjoyed it, the rest of us did the same. As we did so, our multa started to swim next to the ones our partners were on. All of us sat up on our multa and grinned at each other.

I wasn't about to be indelicate by saying anything. But the deep cold

water was still having an effect on our girls. All of them showed extra firm nipples under their bikini tops. Which of course, only made them more appealing. It also made me long to have my love in my arms again. We grinned at our partners as our multa neared each other. Our Nal transformed themselves back into their normal shape. Tal and Sas came together and started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Pim and Mim did the same. As did San and Pam. I said to Sue verbally in a slightly louder than normal voice, "Come on over to my multa darling and let me warm you up." Sue smiled at me lovingly and said, "Sure darling." Zem also called over to Bev verbally as he held out his hand to her. Zem said with a loving look on his face, "Come over and let me warm you too darling." As Bev's multa moved toward Zem's, Bev said with a loving look on her face, "Ok darling." Mav looked at Til lovingly. Mav also held out his arm toward Til and said, "Come and let me warm you as you warm my soul!" Til's multa was already heading toward Mav's as Til said to him with a loving look on her face, "Oh Mav!"

Sue's multa came next to mine and put a flipper on the back of my multa as we both stood up. Then Sue happily scampered across the flipper over to my multa. We both smiled lovingly at each other. Bev happily scampered across a flipper to Zem's multa and Til did the same across a flipper to Mav's multa. As Sue and I held each other in a loose embrace and looked at each other lovingly. Sue said

240

lovingly, "Did you miss me darling?" I said lovingly to Sue, "I'll always miss you darling." A more loving look came over Sue's face. Sue took on a "kiss me" look as her lips beckoned to me. Sue didn't wait long. Quickly, we started kissing each other passionately as we held each other in a fuller, caress filled embrace. Sue and I gave off slight moans of pleasure. I also let Sue know how I felt with my lips, tongue, embrace and caresses. My dearest sweet love did the same with me. Of course, Zem and Bev were kissing each other in a similar manner. As were Mav and Til. While we kissed our partners, some of what I took to be male and female multa also lovingly rubbed their heads and necks together. Making seemingly loving multa sounds as they did so.

My dear sweet love and I must have kissed each other for about a minute before breaking off our kiss and fully embracing each other. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces while we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together. At this point, I was stiff as a board down below. I sure hoped nobody would notice. Though if I had to guess, I would say that Zem and Mav were experiencing the same thing. As Sue and I also lovingly caressed each other, I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Whenever you're not with me darling, it's torture." Sue said with a voice just dripping with love as she slid her lips back toward mine, "Oh darling!" We started kissing each other passionately again. Both of us also again gave off

slight moans of pleasure again as we started doing so. Sue and I gave each other a caress filled kiss for at least another minute. Then we fully embraced again.

After about a minute of this, Mav called out and said to Sue and I, "You guys ready for the ride back?" Sue and I parted enough to grin at the others. They were all holding their partners in a loose embrace and smiling at Sue and I. Sue called back and said, "Sure. We're ready." Til said, "I'll send over an unriden multa." Til then looked around and apparently thought to some other multa. These started to head toward the multa us couples were on. Sue and I smiled at each other. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue and I then turned our smiles back to the others. I thought to Mav and Til and said, "I hope you're not in too much of a hurry to get back. It's so beautiful out here." This made the other's grin. Which I did too. As a multa came up on the right side of ours and put its flipper on our multa's back, Mav said, "We'll take it nice and slow." Sue and I gave each a little extra hug at Mav's statement. Then Sue and I briefly turned our grins to each other as we took each other's hand. We Then walked over to the flipper. I let go of Sue's hand and said, "You go first honey."

Sue gave me a brief little extra grin and scampered across the flipper. After Sue was across, I followed. Sue jogged into the middle of our new multa's back as it made some seemingly happy multa sounds. I jogged up to Sue and we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, Sue said to me verbally, "I think somebody needs some petting." I said quickly, "Me first!" Then I dropped down quickly to my knees and started scratching around the multa's back. Sue quickly followed and started scratching too as we both shared in each other's laughter. Our multa of course enjoyed our scratching. While we did so, Til and Mav made their way onto a new multa in a similar manner. So did Bev and Zem. They also scratched around on their multas. After Sue and I were sure that our

241

multa was well petted, Sue and I leaned forward on our hands and knees. We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After our kiss, I sat down on the multa and faced forward with my legs apart a little. Sue sat cross legged between my legs. I wrapped my arms around my dear sweet love from behind and laid the side of my head next to Sue's. Sue caressed my arms in front. We both had loving, contented smiles on our faces as we got all snugly.

At this moment, Zem and Bev were getting into a similar sitting position on their multa. Mav and Til were getting into a similar sitting position on their multa too. I directed our multa to swim off to the right side of Zem and Bev's multa. Bev's adorable clouds that she had made still hung up in the sky. But because the sun had gotten a little lower, they had gotten a little lower too. The sight of them made me

caress Sue's head a little with my cheek. Sue gave my arms a little extra caress and caressed my cheek back slightly with her head. We were still a pretty good distance from the gazebo. But as I said to Mav and Til, I was in no particular hurry to get back. Though anyplace I was with Sue was wonderful anyway. There were of course other multa swimming about as we pulled up near Zem and Bev's multa. Some of which were underwater. The slightly smaller multa Panny and Lika were riding was at this moment a little ways behind Mav and Til's multa. They were laying on their stomachs next to each other with their tails entwined. What had been their Nal collar, leash and handle was back in a Nal shape and hovering about five feet above them. Mav, Til, Zem and Bev all turned contented smiles to Sue and I.

Sue and I smiled in a similar manner at them as Bev said to Sue and I with a slightly louder than normal voice, "You two ready?" Sue said to Bev in a similar manner, "Ready." Our multa started moving back toward the other shore. Though at a slower pace than before. Also, we were heading off toward the left of where we had our spaceships parked. Apparently, along with going slow, we were also going to take a bit of a zig zag course back. We turned our attention back in that general direction. As we went, Sue said with a contented tone to her thought, "Bev. The shade of your clouds is like being in the shade of love. They're so sweet." Bev thought back with an equally contented thought, "Thank you." Zem then thought to Bev. We could all hear this. It wasn't anything of an intimate nature or something we hadn't heard before. Zem said, "You'll always be in the shade of my love darling." We all turned sentimental smiles to Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev had turned a little in their embrace to look at each other lovingly. Bev said with a highly loving thought, "Oh darling. Your love is both my sunshine and my shade."

Zem and Bev turned a little a little more in their position and started kissing each other passionately. The Nal couples also extruded a number of loving tendrils over the surfaces of their partners. Mav and Til looked at each other lovingly as Mav said to Til with a loving thought, "The love of your eyes darling is my light. And your kiss is my loving shade." Til said lovingly, "Let me give you some shade darling." They started to kiss each other passionately too. The Nal couples began to glow with their chosen color. Sue and I turned loving looks to each other. I lovingly thought to Sue for everybody to hear, "Your eyes light my soul darling. And your lips shade my heart." Sue's eyes glazed over with

242

love. Mine did too. Sue said with a loving thought as Sue's lips beckoned to me, "Let me give your heart some shade darling." We began to kiss each other passionately too. As our tongues caressed each other's, we both gave off slight moans of pleasure. While we kissed, Sue also caressed her hand up my inner thigh and under the

loose fitting leg of my swimming trunks. For a few extended moments, Sue lovingly caressed my genitals over the inner lining of my swimming trunks.

While Sue did so, we both gave off a little louder moans of pleasure as I also caressed one of Sue's breasts. Seeing how the others were occupied, all this was probably ok. In fact, I would have been disappointed if the other couples didn't sneak in a tiny bit of intimate petting of their partners here and there. And I was almost positive that I wouldn't have been disappointed. What Sue did caused me to become rock hard again. Sue then removed her hand and started caressing me elsewhere. I removed my hand from Sue's breast and started caressing her elsewhere. Then I parted my kiss from Sue and kissed my way to Sue's ear. Both of our eyes were of course lightly closed with passionate expressions on our faces. After giving Sue's ear a good but brief kiss, I whispered lovingly into Sue's ear, "Where Tal and Sas can see darling. You're so naughty." Sue then gave my ear a good kiss. After kissing my ear a little, Sue whispered lovingly, "If they're even noticing darling, I'm sure they don't care." I gave Sue's ear another loving kiss. Then I whispered lovingly into Sue's ear, "I was only kidding my love." Sue and I then slid the edges of our lips across each other's cheeks toward each other's lips.

When our eager lips met, we kissed each other passionately. This caused us to give off slight moans of pleasure. After about a minute of kissing, we parted our kiss and nuzzled the sides of each other's heads with our cheeks. As usual, both of our eyes were lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. While Sue and I did so, I said with a soft, loving voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." Then Sue and I started to caress our cheeks back to bring us back to a heavenly kiss. When our lips met, Sue and I started kissing each other passionately again. Oh how I loved the soft, loving lips of my wife. And the caress of each other's tongues was heavenly. Sue and I again gave off slight moans of pleasure as we kissed. No doubt Sue was equally pleased with my kiss. We all must have kissed and caressed our partners for about another minute and a half. Then, one by one, us couples slowly parted our kiss from our partners and smiled lovingly at our partners. Then we would get back into our cuddly position and look at the scenery with loving, contented looks on our faces.

Not long after Sue and I had done so, our zig had zagged a little more in the direction of the bartok. The houks and the multa still seemed to be enjoying themselves. As were the bartok and the multa they were with. At this particular moment, one of the bartok that was out swimming with a multa had its hands around the upper neck of a multa. The multa only had its head raised a little out of the water. That multa was pulling the bartok through the water at a pretty good speed toward the beach. It was all such a wonderful sight. After taking in the scenery at our leisurely pace and enjoying the cuddliness of our partners for

a while, Sue smiled at Zem and Bev. Sue said with a contented tone to her thought, "I hope that when Erik and I go to live on planet Bev, we will still be able to visit here sometime." Everybody at this point was smiling at Sue. Bev said, "I think that can be arranged." This made Sue and I grin. Which the others did too as Sue and I gave each other a little extra hug. Then my grin turned to just a smile as I said to the others, "I hate to be a kill joy." Everybody's grins turned to just smiles as I added, "But I have a question about the humans on planet Bev that could turn a little unpleasant. You don't mind do you."

This didn't diminish anybody's smile as Zem said, "Not at all." Mav said, "Obviously for us, humans are an interesting topic." I said to Zem as I took on a more solemn countenance, "You mentioned that crime was virtually unknown on planet Bev. Is there any homosexuality there?" Everybody's smiles started to change to solemn looks as Zem said, "Of course. Though we consider it to be a mental illness. So it is kept strictly in the closet. But those who have made the choice to pursue that lifestyle are sent to a more isolated, but comfortable community to live out their lives. Just as many gays in the U.S. do with San Francisco. It helps with eugenics." Sue said, "That kind of puzzles me. I would think that being gay, those people would be less likely to breed. Making homosexuality less likely to happen. But that doesn't appear to be the case." Mav said, "Being gay doesn't keep them from breeding that often." Zem said, "Also, being heterosexual is a little like being homosexual. When it comes to Bev, I can be a major lesbian." The girls all took on playfully shocked looks as Zem added with an amused tone to his thought, "You already heard how Mav and Til can be."

This caused us all to laugh. After some laughter, I reverted back to just a smile and said, "I'm glad homos on planet Bev are kept in the closet." Then I took on a bit more of a solemn countenance and said, "From what my uncle Bill told me, some gays are turned that way by incest with their fathers or uncles." My statement caused everybody else to take on more solemn looks as I added, "The thought of which disgusts me. And anywhere homosexuality is acceptable, pedophilia is sure to become acceptable too." Looking at Zem and Bev, I said, "As I mentioned to you guys just before Mav and Til contacted us, it happened with the Greeks and Romans. And it is still going on in at least some Muslim countries." Tal said, "May I say something." We all turned slight smiles to Tal and Sas. I said, "Of course." Tal said, "The disgusting social acceptance of sex between men and boys is called pederasty." I said, "Thank you. I didn't know the practice had an actual name." Tal said, "You're welcome. Of course, the practice isn't allowed at all on planet Bev." I said, "Planet Bev sounds better all the time."

Turning back to the others, I said, "There is a lot about being gay that

I don't like. For instance, on earth, guys who were friends sometimes turn against each other. It seems to me that if they were lovers, it would cause an added sense of betrayal. People just don't need those kinds of things to mess up an already messed up mind. Also, I found many people to be just plain assholes. I wouldn't want to take putting up with gay assholes. Another thing is that my uncle Bill used to be in the navy. Where homosexuality ran rampant. And that was before

244

they did that "don't ask, don't tell" thing. He told me some real horror stories. On his ship, they had both men and women. Who of course had their own sleeping areas. He said that it would have been easier to take if they had made the gays sleep in their own separate sleeping areas too. I know I wouldn't want to be living around guys who looked at me as an object of sexual desire." Zem said, "When it comes to things like that, it would seem that your country has just thrown in the towel. But it doesn't help when the Jew media bombards the public of being accepting of such things. Though anything that can weaken a society where the Jew ticks have dug themselves in, the better it is for the Jews."

Sue said, "What about prostitution. Does that happen on planet Bev too?" Zem looked at Tal and Sas and said, "Seeing how humans are more under your direct control," The rest of us smiled at Tal and Sas as Zem added, "I'll let one of you two take this one." Tal and Sas were circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles about eight feet up in the air and a couple feet forward of Sue and I. Pim and Mim were doing the same near Zem and Bev. San and Pam were doing the same near Mav and Til. Tal said with a bit of appreciation in his thought, "Thank you." Then Tal said to Sas with a slightly loving tone to his thought, "Why don't you take this one my love." They started to circle around each other's surfaces at a little faster speed as Sas said lovingly, "Ok darling." Then Sas said with a normal tone to her thought, "With humans being what they are, for the time being, some prostitution does happen on planet Bev. We don't control all of human behavior with an iron fist. But where it does happen, it is strictly controlled. You will find no pimps there. Though the main thing that makes it less prevalent is that men are able to support their families comfortably enough.

"But in capitalist, industrial societies on earth, far too often, both partners have to work. Which doesn't do a lot of good. Because the more money they have, the more money others will figure a way of taking from them. Leaving children to pointlessly go unsupervised while both parents work. Also, single women are given gainful employment if they need it. There is no need for them to sell sex for money." I said, "I was watching a show about prostitution once. They had these people going around trying to get prostitutes to give up the



lifestyle. Which doesn't work very well. Because the way the American economic system most often works, as you said, laborers don't earn enough to comfortably live on. Also, it most often seems that no matter how hard you work, it is never good enough. Please forgive me for being crude. But whatever else those prostitutes on earth would end up doing for a living, they would probably end up basically taking it up the ass anyway." Zem was the next to speak. We all looked at him as he said, "For the way things work on earth, I can see the necessity for those who work harder to have more than those who don't. But the way the poor are often treated is a shame. What you say is true. A greed based economic system makes whores of many."

Sue said to Bev, "Bev. I think I'll bother you this time with a scientific question." This again brought smiles to everybody's faces. Bev said, "Sure. What is it." Sue said, "What do you think is a silly scientific pursuit done by humans on earth." Bev said, "There are so many. But a good example is their

245

experimentation done with fusion. How anybody thinks they can replicate the fusion caused by gravity with the outside pressure of lasers and magnetism is beyond me. Which, if nothing else, I suppose could give them a better idea of what they can't do. Though given the large and intricate laboratory equipment they use, by human standards that is, it's a pretty expensive way to find that out." Sue and I both gave a nod in agreement. Then we turned back to where we were going. At this point, we were heading in the direction of the gazebo. We weren't very far away from it. The heart shaped clouds that Bev had made were beginning to break up. Also, the shadow of the house had just passed the end of the gazebo. Looking over at the houks and multa, the Nal that had been spraying water had stopped. Most had gone back over by the maketake.

The houks were laying on their stomachs on the beach. A few of which also rested their heads on the sand. The multa were also laying their heads and necks down. One of which had its head and neck laying on the back of a houk. Farther down the beach, most of the bartok were sitting on the beach. One of the bartok was making his way out of the water. Most of the multa near them were also laying their heads and necks down on the sand. The smaller multa that the two young bartok had been playing with was laying its head and neck on the sand too. The young female and the toddler were sitting next to its head and petting it. Mav said, "I have a fun idea." We all grinned at Mav. Our multa began to stop. Even though we hadn't quite gotten all the way back to the gazebo. Zem said, "What's that." Mav said, "A nice refreshing plunge into the water from up in the air." Bev said, "That does sound like fun." Mav then turned his grin to Sue and I and said, "Are you two up to it?" Sue said, "Just how far of a drop

did you have in mind." Mav said, "It won't be far." I said, "I hope we don't land on a multa." Til said, "Don't worry. We'll just think to them to move first." I said, "Ok! Let's do it!"

Sue and I grinned at each other and started to stand up. The others did too. Tal and Sas transformed themselves into bars that were just the perfect diameter for Sue and I to grip. Pim, Mim, San and Pam did the same thing for the others. Sas said verbally to Sue and I, "Just hang onto us." Sue and I held onto Tal and Sas. Tal said, "Hang on tight." Tal and Sas started to rise into the air. Taking Sue and I's arms with them. The surface of Tal was sponge like, but firm underneath. Our Nal lifted us all into the air. Sue said in a delighted manner, "Weeee!" We all chuckled as our Nal brought us couples a little closer together and a little closer to the end of the gazebo. At the same time, they also lifted us farther into the air. Panny and Lika scampered toward the front of their multa and watched us with interest. As we stopped about ten feet from each other, Sue said with an excited and nervous voice, "This is pretty high!" We were only about thirty feet above the water. Mav said, "You'll be ok." After I gave Sue a brief but thorough looking over, I turned my grin to Mav and said in a kidding around kind of voice, "Now I know why you wanted to do this. With our girls being so hot, you just wanted to see how extra nice it makes Til's breasts look." (The girls' extra firm nipples had of course subsided a while ago)

Everybody was grinning at me. But the girls grins were beaming. Til said to me, "Thank you!" Bev said, "You're such a dear!" Sue said, "Thank you

246

sweetheart!" Then Sue looked up at Sas and said, "Sas. Move me closer to my dear husband for a moment." Sas did as Sue asked. Sue and I beamed big grins at each other as our fronts came together. Then we gave each other a brief but loving kiss while we hung from Tal and Sas. Apparently, Pim, Mim, San and Pam didn't need to be asked. They moved Zem and Bev's fronts next to each other. Mav and Til's fronts were also brought next to each other's. Needless to say, Zem and Bev also gave each other a brief but loving kiss. As did Mav and Til. Then our Nal moved us back. We all smiled lovingly at our partners. Then Bev smiled at Pim and Mim and said, "Thank you. You guys are so thoughtful." Mim said, "Without being too helpful, we try." Then Mav smiled at Sue and I. Mav said, "The reason you stated for our plunge wasn't my purpose." We all grinned as Zem quickly added, "That's just an added bonus!" Us guys chuckled. Bev, Til and Sue giggled. Though there was a tiny bit of strain from hanging on in their giggles. After their giggling, the girls beamed happy grins.

Then Mav said, "When I count to three, we all let go." Bev, Til and Sue all said, "Ok!" Zem said, "I'm ready!" I said, "Me too!" We all took a quick glance down. A couple of the multa swam farther away.

Mav then looked around at us and said, "Ok! Get ready! One!.. Two!.. Three!" We all let go and dropped toward the water. To be on the safe side, Bev, Til and Sue all crossed their arms over their bikini tops. All of us gave off mostly varied exclamations of excitement. Then we plunged feet first into the water. As we did so, Panny and Lika also jumped into the water. They went underwater and started swimming our way. Slappy and the larger baby multa accompanied them. Once I was underwater, I opened my eyes. All of us were slowing down with a trail of bubbles above us.

Once we were stopped, all of us had happy, excited expressions on our faces. The multa again started heading toward us. Giving off seemingly happy sounds as they did so. We then began to swim up to the surface. Once we were at the surface, we all quickly wiped water off our faces and took a few deep breaths. Sue and I of course had to wipe a little wet hair back too as we did so. We were all grinning as Bev said, "That was fun!" Mav said, "That's why I suggested it!"

I said with a wry voice, "Maybe! But I still have my doubts!" We all laughed as we all came together with our partners. Then we all gave our partners a brief but loving kiss. After parting, multa heads arrived. We all started petting them as they made happy multa sounds. Panny and Lika surfaced nearby holding into the larger baby multa's head and neck. They both had happy little falik expressions on their faces. I turned my grin to the others and said, "It still amazes me how much like dolphins these multa sound." Zem said, "Though their brains are a little different, their vocalizations are another of the varied examples of convergent evolution to be found throughout the universe." Sue said, "Like what made Erik wonder if the Larkin and humans had a common ancestry." Bev said, "And it's what makes us similar to you in so many ways." I said, "I noticed the similarities." This made everybody chuckle a bit. Afterwards, I said, "To a human like me, it's no wonder why you guys are so much in love." Mav looked lovingly at Til. This caused Til to look at Mav in the same way. Responding to what I had said, Mav said to Til, "Til knows that for me, my life would be worthless without her."

247

An anguished look of loving emotion came over Til's face as she looked at Mav. Til wrapped herself around Mav and said tearfully with her head next to his, "Life would be meaningless without you either darling!" Mav answered in an emotional voice, "My darling love!" Mav and Til started to raise out of the water. Apparently without the help of a Nal. That they had the ability to do so was no surprise. As Mav and Til did so, the multa head they had been petting also raised up farther out of the water. The sounds it made seemed to be tinged with disappointment at Mav and Til's departure. Til had her arms and legs wrapped around Mav. Mav also had a good hold of Til. Pim, Mim, San,

Pam, Tal and Sas had all reverted back into their normal shape. Though they had lowered from where we let go of them. They were now about ten feet above the water. Each Nal couple circled around the surface of their partners at differing angles. The rest of us turned sentimental smiles from Mav and Til to our partners. Which caused these sentimental looks to turn loving. As Sue and I looked at each other lovingly, our expressions began to turn more emotional too. The same thing was happening between Zem and Bev.

Mav and Til started to move toward the gazebo. I said to Sue with a voice just dripping with love, "My love flame!" As Sue and I embraced each other, Sue said with an emotional, loving voice as she wrapped her arms and legs around me, "Oh darling! You're my love flame too!" At about the same time, Zem said to Bev with a highly loving voice, "Your love is my life darling!" No doubt Bev gave Zem an emotional, loving reply. But I didn't hear it as Sue and I slipped below the waters surface. Though I didn't know it at the time, as Zem and Bev held each other in a tight, emotional embrace, Pim began to take Zem and Bev out of the water. No doubt to move them onto the gazebo too. Apparently Pim felt like doing it himself. The multa they had been petting moved its head up out of the water more as Zem and Bev rose into the air. Because of Zem and Bev's departure, it too seemed to have a little disappointment in the sounds it made. At the same time, there was a multa making noises and rubbing its muzzle lightly against Sue and I. But Sue and I were too enraptured at this moment with each other to pay it much attention.

Sas said to Sue and I with a sentimental thought, "I'll put you on the gazebo." As Sue and I started to raise out of the water, Sue said with an emotional, loving thought because of the emotions she was experiencing, "Thank you Sas." At this point, Mav and Til were kissing each other passionately on the end of the deck on the bartok side. Til still had her arms and legs wrapped around Mav.

Zem and Bev had started kissing each other passionately as they were being set down on the end of the deck on the other side. As Sue and I were raised out of the water, a couple multa near us raised their heads farther out of the water too. The higher Sue and I were raised, the higher the multa heads raised. As the others had done, the multa near Sue and I seemed to have a bit of disappointment in their vocalizations. Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately as we were brought over to the gazebo. Though I didn't know it at the time, Mim retrieved Panny and Lika. When they were clear of the water, the Pim and Mim bands came off of Panny and Lika's necks. These reformed into small spheres. Mim's small sphere remerged with her. The other headed in the

248

direction of Pim. I didn't mind at all that our swim was over. Having fun with the multa was wonderful. But it was nothing compared to

having my wonderful, loving wife in my arms as we kissed passionately.

It wasn't too long before Sas sat my feet on the gazebo deck. She had placed us in the middle of the gazebo about six feet back from where the other's stood. While this was going on, Mim had sat Panny and Lika on the railing. She apparently dried them on the way over. Sas slowly let Sue and I be taken over by gravity. As she did so, I put my forearm and hand on Sue's wonderful bottom to support her. After Sas completely let us go, I continued to hold Sue like this as we continued to kiss each other passionately. I could hear that many of the multa had returned around the gazebo. But we were all too involved with our partners at the moment to bother with them. Pim and Mim were circling around each other. San and Pam were doing the same. So were Tal and Sas. As I held my dear sweet love in my arms, Sue moved her arms from one position to another as she caressed me. After a few moments, I parted my kiss from Sue and we fully embraced each other.

As we nuzzled the sides of our heads together, we both had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. Though I hardly took any notice, I could hear the multa moving away. I didn't know it at the time, but some of the spare Nal were leading the multa away with the baskets of food that were on the deck and the baskets of food that the girls had in the beach. As Sue and I embraced, a loving smile came across my face. I said with a loving voice, "Not that I'm complaining my love. But you're like an Octopus." This caused Sue to chuckle a bit. We parted enough to smile lovingly at each other. Zem and Bev and Mav and Til must have overheard what I said. Because they broke off their kissing and laughed a little as they too embraced each other. Til still had her legs wrapped around Mav. Bev was still doing the same with Zem. Sue said, "I wish I was darling. Then I would have more appendages to hold you with." We both took on more loving looks. I said with my voice just dripping with loving happiness, "My sweet darling octopus!" As Sue brought her lips toward mine, Sue said in a quick but loving voice, "Oh darling!"

We kissed each other passionately again. Sue also squeezed her legs on me a little. Giving me more of the octopus treatment. As far as I was concerned, Sue could do so with me all she wanted to. I didn't know about the other guys, but I had an erection. Which had expanded into an uncomfortable position. Trying to be nonchalant, as I kissed Sue, I turned us around so that my back faced the others. (I knew that the others were probably preoccupied with their own octopus fun) As I did so, I moved my hand and forearm from under Sue's butt and pushed down on Sue's thigh slightly. While we continued to kiss, Sue released her legs and stood on the deck. Being as unobvious as I could, I quickly slid a hand down between Sue and I. Slipping my hand into my swimming trunks, I straightened myself out a little and pulled my hand back out. Then I caressed it back around Sue's back. Knowing what I had done and why, Sue

pressed her hips a little more firmly against mine and moved them slightly from side to side a few times. No doubt to feel my firmness against her. Which only turned my erection into a raging one. Sue and I both moaned a little with

249

pleasure as we caressed our tongues together a little more. After about a minute, us couples began to slowly break off our kisses. I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We both smiled lovingly at each other.

After a couple moments, I grinned. Sue grinned too as I said, "You're such a foul temptress." Sue laughed a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Having heard me, the others laughed a little too. Sue and I turned our grins to the others. Bev no longer had her legs around Zem and Til no longer had her legs around Mav. But we all still held our partners in a somewhat loose embrace. They were all grinning at Sue and I. Zem said, "I have one of those too!" Mav quickly added, "Me too!" We all laughed and shared in each other's laughter for a few moments. Afterwards, the girls all laid their cheeks on the shoulders of their guys and embraced us a little more. As they did so, the girls exchanged happy grins with each other. Us guys also exchanged happy grins for a moment. Then we returned our attention to our girls. They also took their cheeks off our shoulders and returned their attention to their guys. I said to Sue, "May I dip you darling?"

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all turned grins back to me. Sue smiled lovingly at me. Knowing what I was talking about, Sue said lovingly, "If you like darling." I then took Sue in a loose embrace and flung her over to where her head was facing toward the bartok side of the gazebo. Sue's upper body was arched back a little at an angle with her back toward the deck. Sue's wet, but beautiful platinum blond hair hung back from her head. I was also leaning over Sue a little. If I had let Sue go, she would have fallen down. We both grinned at each other. Then a highly loving look came over my face. Sue took on a solemn look of love. I said, "I like, my life." (Referring to Sue of course as my life) Sue's eyes glazed over with love. As did mine. It was just like something off the cover of a romance novel. And what a picture it would have made for a Nal floating a little above the table. Mav and Til at this moment were smiling sentimentally at Sue and I from the left side of the gazebo as they embraced. San with his red color and Pam with her blue color were near them up by the ceiling and circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Zem and Bev were smiling sentimentally at Sue and I as they embraced on the right side of the gazebo.

Pim with his orange color and Mim with her yellow color were similarly nearby them. Tal with his green color and Sas with her purple color were doing the same thing up by the ceiling near Sue and I. Panny and Lika were embracing each other a little as they laid on the railing top.

They were looking out at the multa. In the lake out from the end and sides of the gazebo, there were the multa being led away with treats from the baskets the Nal were levitating. Some had their heads and necks higher out of the water, and some not. Beyond was the forested hill. Most of the leaves of which were green. But as I said before, the leaves of some of these alien trees had vibrant, fall like colors. Even though this wasn't a fall season. Beyond those were the snow capped mountains. Sue and I began to kiss each other with all the loving tenderness we could muster. Apparently, this also gave Zem and Mav the same idea. Mav dipped Til in a similar manner. Zem did the same with Bev. I heard Til say to Mav in a loving voice, "Oh darling!" At about the same time, Bev said to Zem in a highly loving

250

voice, "Oh my love!" Mav said to Til with a highly loving voice, "I love you so much darling!"

At about the same time, Zem said to Bev with a highly loving voice, "You belong in my arms my darling!" Then all I heard of them were more slight moans of pleasure while they kissed. That is when it wasn't being drowned out by Sue and I's moans of pleasure. My life that I held in my arms lovingly caressed me as I supported my dear sweet love in my arms. Sue lovingly submitted in my embrace and let my arms support her as we kissed. My love's soft, wonderful, loving lips were, as always, a dream. Though it wasn't too long before some tongue came into play. Which caused Sue and I to give off more moans of pleasure. While this was going on, though I didn't know it at the time, what we were doing caused our Nal to do the same thing. Tal and Sas were up toward the ceiling with loving tendrils over each other's surfaces. They were at a steep angle with Tal closest to the ceiling. Tal seemed to be supporting Sas with some of his tendrils. Others slowly undulated from side to side in waves across Sas's surface. All of Sas's tendrils undulated over Tal's surface. Pim and Mim were doing the same. As were San and Pam.

All of this loving caused Panny and Lika to jump onto the deck. I heard them chattering happily as they scampered toward the dock. With all of us setting the example we were, I wouldn't doubt it if they were off to find a nice secluded spot to have a sexual encounter. After about a minute, Sue and I's kiss began to diminish to a normal, loving kiss. A few extended moments later, I heard Til speak to Mav. Her voice was soft, yet full of love and seemed to be on the verge of being orgasmic. Til said, "Oh my darling!" Mav said with a highly loving voice, "Til darling! My everything!" I raised Sue up as we continued to kiss. When we were again standing upright, we broke off our kiss and fully embraced each other. Sue said to me with an almost equally passionate voice as Til's, "I love you so much darling!" We both of course had our eyes lightly closed with passionate expressions on our faces. At the same time, we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads

together and caressed each other. I said with a voice dripping with loving tenderness, "My dearest darling!"

As Sue and I began to bring our lips together, I heard Bev speak to Zem. Bev's voice too was soft, and yet seemed to have a hint of an orgasmic quality to it. Bev said to Zem, "My sweet darling love!" As Sue and I were kissing again, Zem said to Bev with a tender voice just dripping with loving adoration, "My dearest sweet love!" It didn't take long for them to start kissing each other again. Just as Sue and I were doing. And as Mav and Til were of course doing. Every now and then, one of us couples would embrace their partners again and exchange loving comments. Which sometimes resulted in increased loving embracing, then kissing. Though most times such comments ended in more kissing while lovingly caressing each other. After about five more minutes of this, I heard Bev say with an appreciative, tender voice, "Thank you Mim." This caused Sue and I to slowly part our kiss as Zem said, "Thank you Pim." Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other. Tal and Sas were a little off to my right levitating a couple of towels near Sue and I. Sue and I turned our heads to see Zem and Bev unfurling a couple fairly large, plush towels.

251

Mav and Til were smiling lovingly at each other as San and Pam were hovering near them with a couple more neatly folded towels. Some of the spare Nal had our multa about three hundred feet out into the lake. They were levitating treats to the multa as they slowly led them farther out into the lake. Sue and I turned to Tal and Sas. I smiled back at Sue and said, "Oh well. My lips were getting a little tired anyway." Everybody chuckled. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Zem said with the same kind of grin we were all wearing as Mav reached for some towels, "But it's such a wonderful workout." Mav said to San and Pam, "Thank you San. Thank you Pam." Responding to Zem, I said, "It certainly is." Sue and I gave each other a quick peck on the lips and I turned a little to grab the towels Tal and Sas had near us. Til said to Mav, "Thank you honey." I took Tal's towel and said, "Thank you Tal." Sue took one from Sas and said, "Thank you Sas." Sue and I unfurled our towels. Luckily, that embarrassing thing that happened to me earlier had subsided. Sue and I both started drying ourselves off too.

Zem and Bev finished drying themselves off first. They draped their towels over their shoulders and smiled at each other lovingly. Then they held each other from the side and smiled at each other for a few moments as we dried ourselves. Having finished drying ourselves, Mav, Til, Sue and I draped our towels over our shoulders. We all exchanged smiles. Tal and Sas came down in front of Sue and I. Tal made a comb materialize below him and Sas made a brush materialize below her. Mav and Til put an arm around each other's lower backs



and looked at the animals and bartok. Zem and Bev did too. Sue and I both reached for the things Tal and Sas had. I said, "Thank you Tal." As the other's smiled at us, Sue said, "Thank you Sas." They both said verbally at the same time, "You're welcome." The others returned their attention to the animals. Tal and Sas floated up toward the ceiling. They started circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Just as San was doing with Pam and Pim was doing with Mim. Sue and I did our hair as we looked over at the houks, multa's and bartok.

At this point, the houks and the multa near them were still relaxing on the beach. All of the houks were laying their heads on the sand. The one multa still had its head and neck on the back of a houk. Farther down, a male and female bartok were back at their picnic area. They were sitting next to each other and eating something. The other bartok were still on the beach. A few of them were laying down. One of which was the young female. She was laying on the beach with her feet toward the water. The baby multa had its neck laying between the young females legs. It had its head on the young female's chest as she petted its head. The toddler was near her petting the multa's neck. I said, "If these bartok were a little skittish of the multa, I would definitely say they aren't anymore." Everybody grinned at me as I spoke. Zem said to me, "I think we cured you of your skittishness too." I looked at Zem with an openmouthed look of surprise. Which made every chuckle. As I lowered my comb, I said with a slightly plaintive edge to my voice, "I wasn't afraid!" This made everybody laugh a little. I grinned. After the laughter, I added, "Well, at least not much."

This caused a little more laughter as Sue finished with her hair. I of course

252

quickly joined in on the laughter. After this bit of laughter, Sue said, "Being so big, they scared me a little too darling. What might seem like play to them could injure us." Mav said, "You needn't have worried with the Nal around." Sue said, "I know. But as humans, we're just not as use to such things." Zem said to Bev, "How about you, Til and Sue go get dressed honey so we can too." Bev gave Zem a slight smile and said, "Ok darling." They gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Mav and Til also smiled at each other and gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Sue held out her hand for my comb and said, "I'll take that darling." Bev went over toward Til as I handed Sue my comb. Zem gave Bev a little slap on her butt. Bev turned quickly with a grin on her face and said to Zem with a slightly plaintive edge to her voice, "Zem!" Sue and I were just parting from a quick peck on the lips and grinned over at them. Mav also gave Til a little slap on the butt. Til said with a grin to Mav, "Don't you be naughty too!" We all laughed a little. Sue stuck the comb into the bristles of her brush.

Then Sue grinned at me and said, "You may as well be one of the

boys too." I said, "Thank you darling." Then I gave Sue a little slap on the butt too. Sue made a cute sort of surprised little "Eee!" sound. This caused us to laugh a little. The girls stepped next to each other. Til held Bev's arm on her right and Sue held Bev's arm on her left. The girls started to make their way over toward the dock. Mim, Pam and Sas went with them. Sue briefly glanced at Zem, Mav and I's clothing. Which was now neatly folded, stacked and sitting on the table top in three piles. Our shoes were sitting on the deck near a chair with the socks folded and laying on them. One of the spare Nal probably did it when we were out on the lake. Then Sue briefly glanced at their beach blanket. The girls' clothing was sitting on the beach blanket similarly folded neatly. Sue turned her grin to Bev and Til and said, "It was nice of the Nal to fold our clothes." Mim said, "I had some spare Nal dispose of your old clothes and get you new ones." The girls were all smiling at Mim.

Zem, Mav and I watched the girls go with grins on our faces. Sue said, "That was nice of you." Pam said, "We like to be helpful." The girls continued chatting as they headed down the dock. Zem, Mav and I briefly grinned at each other before turning our attention back to the girls as they walked away and happily chatted with each other. The girls were so adorable. And with all three having wonderfully rounded, fit butts, it just added to how adorable they were. I said to Mav and Zem in a low voice so the girls wouldn't over hear me, "I think we're some pretty lucky guys." Zem said, "I know what you mean." Mav added, "They are wonderful." We all looked back at them. Our grins turned to sentimental smiles as we watched the girls make their way over to the patio table. Panny and Lika had emerged from wherever they had gone to and were now scampering toward the patio table. I turned and said to Mav with a smile, "We probably would have still had fun. But I'm so glad you and Til joined us. Your arrival was especially amazing and wonderful." Mav and Zem were both smiling at me. An appreciative look accompanied my smile as I added, "I don't have words to say how glad I am you both decided to join us."

Sentimental looks accompanied Mav and Zem's smiles. Mav stepped over to me and gave me a couple pats on the shoulder and shook my shoulder a little

253

after the third pat. Mav then said, "Til and I have been more than happy to meet you and Sue too." Mav took his hand off my shoulder and turned to Zem and said with a slight smile, "In fact, I'm a little mad that you didn't get a hold of us earlier." Zem just smiled and shrugged his shoulders apologetically a little. Then Zem said with a slight smile, "Better late than never." I said to Zem, "I think things turned out well anyway." Zem grinned at Mav and I. Which made us grin too. I then said to Mav, "You and Til may have bailed on us on the forlix. But even that turned out really well. Zem and Bev may be

wonderful too, but you and Til have been perfect hosts.” Then Zem said to me with a kidding around kind of voice, “I told you he was a showoff.” Mav looked at Zem with a surprised look and said, “Oh you!” Mav then went after Zem. They playfully wrestled around a bit and playfully punched each other a little around the midsection.

Alternating between laughs, grunts and growls. The towels they had draped over their shoulders fell off them as they wrestled around.

This carried on for a few moments as I laughed heartily. At the same time, girls were looking at them and laughing too. After a bit of laughter, I could hear Bev’s amused thoughts saying, “Don’t you guys get all worked up over there!” I grinned over at the girls, who were grinning back at us. Panny and Lika were up on the table. The girls were standing next to it. Apparently, Til had been using Sue’s brush to brush out Lika. Bev had been using my comb to comb out Panny. But the laughter interrupted the process. Zem and Mav broke up their playful tussle and grinned at the girls too. Both Zem and Mav were breathing a little heavily with an arm around each other’s necks. Til’s thoughts quickly followed Bev’s as she added, “Ya. If you guys need a workout, we’ll give you a workout.” We all laughed at what Til said. Mav thought to Til. Which we could all also hear. Mav said, “Is that a promise?” Til said, “Just wait and see.” Zem and Mav grinned at each other. They turned their grins back to the girls. Both of them thought at the same time, “We’re not waiting!”

They let go of each other and took off after the girls. Pim, San and Tal also took after Mim, Pam and Sas as they extruded a number of glowing appendages in front of them. They were the usual length, but snaked menacingly in front of them. Surprisingly, Pim, San and Tal weren’t moving much faster than Zem and Mav. I yanked off my towel and ran after them. The girls got expressions that were a mixture of happy surprise and fright. Bev dropped her comb on the table and Til dropped her brush on the table too. They all gave out slight, high pitched screams and took off to the left. Even Mim, Pam and Sas did so verbally. Though they didn’t move much faster than the girls. Panny and Lika jumped off the table and playfully scampered off after them. Sas yelled out, “You’re limiting our speed! That’s not fair!” I kind of had the impression that if the Nal girls really wanted to get away more quickly, they could have overcome whatever limiting factor their guys were using on them. The girls split up as their towels fell off them. Sue took off to the right. Bev took off more in the direction of the beach. Til headed toward our spaceships. Tal yelled out, “We’d catch you anyway!”

As we tore after them, I yelled out a little menacingly, “Wait until we catch you!” Zem quickly added, “Are you going to get it!” The girls turned briefly as we ran after them. They, along with Mim, Pam and Sas gave off slight screams again.

Mim went forward and upward at a fairly steep angle. Pam took off at a less acute upward angle to the right. Sas did basically the same in the general direction Bev was going. Though they were going a little faster than the girls. So Pim, San and Tal passed the girls Zem, Mav and I were chasing. Mav then quickly yelled to Til, "I'm going to tickle you until you pee!" Us guys had mischievous, menacing grins on our faces. Though it was at a bit more of a distance, I could hear Mim yell out, "We didn't do anything!" Pim yelled out, "You're going to get it anyway!" Bev, Til and Sue tried their best to get away. Frequently looking back at us with a mixture of fright and delight on their faces. This often was accompanied by more screams. Or laughing, yet frightened pleas to stop. These fell on deaf ears.

We were gaining on them. Which caused the girls to laugh, scream or make more brief pleas to stop. Probably like the other guys, I wasn't that determined to catch my girl as quickly as possible. Til tried to keep one of the ships between her and Mav. Though at one point, Til stopped briefly and peeked around the far corner of one and screamed playfully, "Stay away!" When Til saw that her plea wasn't having much of an effect, Til screamed a little again and tried to put more ship between her and Mav. Bev was still heading toward the lake shore. Sue was heading in the direction of the grassy field. The Nal couples were getting farther away. As we ran after our girls, they gave out more laughs, slight screams or pleas to stop the closer we got. But it didn't do any good. We all started catching our quarry. Til tried to duck into one of the spaceships. But that only trapped her. As I nearly got to Sue, I could hear Til giving off laughing screams of being tickled from inside the spaceship where she had gone. I knew that Mav had got her. Out of the corner of my eye, about a quarter of a mile away and a few hundred feet up in the air, I could see a fairly intense glow.

Apparently San got Pam. Zem caught Bev and I caught Sue at about the same time. As we did so, I could hear Til loudly pleading in between laughs and high pitched yells for Mav to stop. I grabbed Sue and brought her to the ground. Though I did it so Sue landed on top of me. Sue and Bev screamed and laughed as they were brought down and tickled. Sue and I ended up in the taller grass just at the edge of the shorter grass. Our feet were almost all the way onto the shorter grass. After having given Sue the treatment, we both laughed between deep breaths. After we laughed, we both grinned widely at each other as we continued to breathe heavily. As our breathing slowed down, I said, "It's no wonder you weren't already engaged or something. You're hard to catch!" This made Sue laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. After our laughter, Sue's expression began to change to one of solemn love. I took on the same sort of look as Sue gently caressed my cheek. Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "I'm so happy that it was you who caught me my love." My eyes glazed over with love. Sue's did too as I said with a voice full of loving conviction, "Oh my everything!" We kissed each other passionately.

Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as I tried my best to transmit the love I felt for Sue from my lips and tongue to hers. Along with my loving caresses. Some of which included one of Sue's wonderful breasts. Just like when I had done so on the multa, it didn't matter a lot that they were covered by a bikini top.

255

Sue was also trying to communicate her love for me through her wonderful, soft loving lips and slippery tongue. Along with Sue's loving caresses. As we kissed, I again became fully aroused. But even though we were mostly out of the sight of the others in this high grass, I knew that there wasn't anything we could do about it. After about thirty seconds of passionate kissing, I kissed my way to Sue's ear and gave it some loving kisses. As usual, caressing bits of Sue's ear between my lips or running my tongue around in it. Both Sue and I of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. Though because of what I was doing, there was a bit more of a look of ecstasy on Sue's face. What I was doing also caused Sue to give off some breathy, slight moans of pleasure as she lovingly caressed me. At the same time, Sue also caressed my lips back a little with her ear.

My sweet darling love was such a dream, I could barely stand it. After about a minute of pleasuring Sue's ear, I said softly, but with loving conviction, "My darling wife! How can you be so wonderful!" Sue grasped me even more firmly. Which made me embrace Sue a little more firmly. Sue said in a similar manner, "My darling husband! You're the one who's wonderful!" We quickly started kissing each other passionately again. As we did so, Sue rolled me onto my back. I of course took this opportunity to caress more of Sue. After about a minute, Sue started to kiss her way toward my ear. Sue caressed the back of my head with one of her hands as she gave my ear some love. This time, my expression was the most pleased. I gave off a soft moan of pleasure. Then I said softly with a voice just dripping with love, "Ohhh. My dream love." Sue responded to me by giving my ear a little extra tongue. Which caused me to give off a slight sighing moan of pleasure. What Sue was doing caused me to give one of Sue's butt cheeks some extra kneading caresses. After doing this a little, Sue ran her hand down into my swimming trunks and loving caressed my testicles and stiffened penis.

Then Sue parted enough from me for us to look into each other's passionate faces. As Sue held onto my penis, Sue said with a passionate voice, "It's too bad the others are about darling. I could really go for this right now." I said with a passionate voice, "I know my darling love. But we have to be strong." Sue released my penis and caressed her hand up my side. As Sue did so, Sue said, "You're right darling. But oh how I love you." My eyes glazed over with love. Sue's did too. I said with a passionate, loving voice, "My wife." Sue

said with a passionate, loving voice, "My husband." Sue and I went back to kissing each other passionately. As we did so, I rolled Sue back onto her back. Sue and I kissed each other for about another minute. Then I slowly began to transform my passionate kiss into a tender, loving one. After about twenty seconds, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue's. Once our kiss was parted, we slowly opened our eyes and looked at each other with solemn love splashed across our faces. We lovingly looked deeply onto each other's loving eyes. I softly stroked the side of Sue's face with the palm of my hand. Trying my best to transmit my undying love through the gentle, tender caress of my hand.

Sue lightly closed her eyes and stroked the palm of my hand back with her cheek. After a few moments, Sue turned her beautiful face back toward me,

256

slowly opened her eyes and looked lovingly deep into mine. As I caressed my hand away from Sue's cheek, Sue tenderly and lovingly caressed my cheek with the palm of her hand. I gently caressed the hand Sue had on my cheek with the hand that I removed from her cheek. As I did so, I lightly closed my eyes and caressed Sue's palm back with my cheek. At the same time, using the hand I had on hers to press it a little more firmly into my cheek. After a few moments, I turned my face back toward Sue's and slowly opened my eyes. I looked deeply and lovingly into Sue's eyes again. Then I said with a tender, loving voice as I caressed my hand from Sue's and down her arm, "I love you so much darling." Sue said with the same kind of gentle, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." With a highly loving look on her face, Sue fairly quickly stuck the tip of her tongue out so that it was just visible between her lips. This briefly caused a surprised, loving look to come over my face. I said, "Oh darling!"

We then brought our lips together. I then sucked Sue's tongue in past my lips. We then began to french kiss each other passionately as our tongues caressed each other's. After about a minute of this, we slowly parted our kiss. As we lovingly looked again into each other's eyes, I said in a tender, loving voice that was tinged with a little disappointment, "I suppose we should be getting back to the others darling." Sue gave me a loving look with a slight smile. A similar look came over my face too. Sue said with a tender, loving voice, "I suppose we should my love." We kept our loving eyes locked on each other's with loving smiles on our faces as I sat up on my knees. At this point, the top of my shoulders and head would have been visible to the others. Sue and I took each other's hands and I helped Sue sit up. We continued to lovingly smile and look into each other's eyes as I stood up. Then helped Sue stand up.

Once Sue was standing, as we continued to look lovingly into each other's eyes, I brought Sue's left hand up to my lips. Then I gave Sue's

rings a light kiss. Sue's beautiful eyes glazed over with love. My eyes glazed over with love too. I lowered Sue's hand and Sue brought my left hand up to her lips. Then Sue gave my wedding ring a kiss. After Sue lowered my hand, we let go of each other's hands and embraced each other. Then we began to kiss passionately again. After about forty seconds or so of this, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I said, "I love you darling." Sue said, "I love you too darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, we smiled lovingly at each other. Sue and I put an arm around each other's lower backs as we continued to smile lovingly at each other. Then we stepped out onto the short grass. Sue and I stopped and looked around. Mav and Til were standing on the back right end of the ramp of their ship. They were embracing and kissing each other.

Zem and Bev were over on the beach, off a ways to the right of where the spaceships were parked. They were standing on the beach facing each other in a loose embrace and looking lovingly into each other's eyes. With the sun having gotten lower, the mountains behind Zem and Bev showed with a slight hint of a yellowish hue to them. Above and to the right a little of the mountain we had flown to earlier, the larger moon had mostly risen above it. Most of the smaller moon had risen too. The forest also looked nice. I could make out a tiny

257

speck of Tal and Sas out over the lake. They were circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. There were of course multa swimming about out in the lake. Everything was so amazing and beautiful. I looked off to the left. Sue did too. The shadow of the house was about fifteen feet past the gazebo. Miles off to the left in the sky I could see a thunder head building. There were other high wisps of clouds that went off to the left of it. The air where we were was pleasantly warm with a slight grassy smell around us. Looking to the left where the bartok were, a couple more of the bartok had returned to their picnic area. They were having a snack.

The other bartok were sitting near each other on the beach. All of the multa they were enjoying had swam a little way out into the lake. Where the houks were on the beach, I could see a few of them outside the glass. The others I could see through the glass walls. The multa near them had gone out into the water. Sue and I leaned the sides of our heads together. Both of us had a bit of a dreamy look accompanying our contented, loving expressions. Because of the love we were feeling for each other; the love our friends had for their partners; the amazing views; the amazing wildlife and the general wonderfulness of everything. As we looked around, I said to Sue with a loving, contented voice, "Just like Zem and Bev's island, this place is another paradise." Sue gave me an extra caress and said, "How wonderful it must be to be a Reall." Indeed, as Sue had said, how wonderful it must be to be a Reall. But, as humans, I supposed Sue

and I had no choice but be satisfied with being the limited beings we were. Though all that really mattered is that Sue was with me right now. I would have gladly exchanged the rest of my life on earth just to have spent these few days with Sue. Though considering what my life was there, I wouldn't have been giving up a whole lot.

That Zem and Bev decided to let us live our lives on planet Bev made me happier than I could say. Unfortunately, neither Sue or I could really do anything to repay them. Because they had everything they could possibly want. Though according to what Bev had said, basically, our being happy being around each other was enough for them. I just hoped that in my stupid human blundering way, I never accidentally would do anything that would disappoint them. After their being so kind to us and letting us experience such wonderful things, to do so would be a fate worse than death as far as I was concerned. Taking in the sights, Sue had apparently become a little emotional over the things we were looking at. Mav and Til slowly parted their kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Sue gave me a little extra bit of a hug and said with a loving voice, "Oh darling! Everything looks so wonderful!" I turned to face Sue and Sue turned to face me. We held each other in a loose embrace as some emotional love came over our faces. I said with a highly loving, gentle voice, "It's not half as wonderful as you are darling."

Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as I caressed and embraced Sue a little more. As I did so, I said with an even more loving voice, "How could I have ever guessed that someday I would be holding my very life in my arms." Tears started to well up in Sue's eyes. This caused tears to begin to well up in my eyes too as I moved one of my hands and gently caressed Sue's cheek. As I

258

did so, I said with an emphatic, slightly more emotional, loving voice, "If anything ever happened to you, I would have to try to pray to the Mind for a quick death!" Sue tried to say something to me. All Sue got out was, "Oh." Then Sue's eyes seemed to lose focus, roll back in her head a little and began to close. Sue collapsed in my embrace. I had to catch Sue as her body went limp. Sue's head fell back as her mouth fell open a little. Sue's eyes were only partially open and I could only see a little of her pupils below her eyelids. A look of terrified anguish came over my face. As I lowered Sue to the ground, I cried out in anguished terror, "Sue!!! Sue!!!" Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all looked over with surprise on their faces.

Probably before the sound of my first cry reached Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas, they almost instantaneously shot over to us from the different directions they had gone. They all started moving around different areas of Sue's head and upper body about five inches from her. Anguished tears fell from my eyes as I continued to lower Sue to the ground. With concerned looks on their faces, Zem, Bev, Mav and



Til parted. They began to run over to Sue and I as I cradled Sue's limp upper body in my arms. As I knelt next to Sue, with an anguished voice, I shook Sue slightly and cried out, "Sue!!! Oh Sue!!!" Unknown to me at the time, my initial cries had even reached the bartok. Which apparently alarmed them. The ones at the picnic area grabbed their weapons and stood up as the other bartok on the beach ran toward the others. The houk also looked over in our direction and seemed to give off calls of alarm. Panny and Lika were the first to reach Sue and I. They scampered around Sue. Touching her and making distressed whimpering sounds. Mav and Til quickly reached Sue and I after them.

Unknown to me at the time, three of the leading male bartok began to run toward Sue and I with their weapons in hand. The others stood in a circle next to their campsite with their backs to each other. They had their weapons facing in all directions to fend off any danger from any direction. The toddler was in the center of the group, nearer to the campfire. Years later, Sas showed Sue and I a playback of this event. It was astonishing how quickly the bartok running toward us could cover ground. Mav and Til dropped to their knees near Sue and I. Mav was on the side away from the house. Til was on the side closer to the house. Our Nal friends backed away. Mav put his hand on my shoulder and one on Sue's. Then Mav said, "Don't worry! Sue's just fainted!" Til put a hand on my shoulder and another on Sue's head. What Mav said brought me great relief. But I still had the adrenaline rush of terror lingering in me. As Mav and I turned our attention back to Sue, Til said with a voice full of compassion, "You poor dear!" In the short time that it took even Panny and Lika to reach us, our Nal had probably examined Sue to a far greater depth and at a faster speed than human science could imagine. This information they undoubtedly transmitted to the others.

The bartok running toward us startled the houks some. This caused them to run down the beach in the direction of the other bartok and launch themselves into the air as they continued to give out seemingly alarmed calls. This commotion also caused some of the nearby multa to raise their heads farther out

259

of the water to get a better look at what was going on. I briefly looked at Til with anguish and hope on my face. Though tears still ran from my eyes like rivers. At some level, I may have realized that Sue had just fainted. But seeing somebody who meant far more than my life to me in such a state drove most of any reasoning from me. Zem and Bev were the next to run up to Sue and I. I was already looking at Sue again with tears falling from my face. Sue was still out as Bev dropped to their knees next to Mav and Zem dropped to his knees next to Til. I said with a softer, yet anguished voice, "Sue my darling! Sue my love!" Zem and Bev also put hands on Sue. Both Zem and Bev were breathing a little heavily as Zem said to Sue with compassion in his

voice, "You poor sweet thing!" Bev said with a compassion filled voice, "You poor dear!"

Still with a softer, yet anguished voice, I said to Sue, "My darling! My darling!" Bev caressed my back and said with a soothing, compassion filled voice, "Don't worry Erik. Sue will be coming around in a moment." I briefly looked at Bev. My face was still wracked with tear filled anguish. But everybody's presence had caused the anguish to lessen quite a bit. As I cradled Sue in my arms, I could hear the fast, heavy footfalls of the three male bartok running our way at full speed. I realized that they must have heard my cries and were coming to add whatever assistance they could. As I looked at Sue, I said, "Sue darling! Sue my love!" I could hear the heavy footsteps of the approaching bartok slowing down. Sue started to come to. I could see the life returning to Sue's eyes. The bartok stopped about fifteen feet away. They were spread out a little as they aimed their weapons away from us toward any possible danger. Breathing a bit heavily, Laga said in a deep, bass filled voice, "Rega gutta?! Rega?!" Mav stood up and held up the palm of his hand to the bartok. As he started to walk over to the bartok, he said, "Nag rega Laga."

The bartok started to assume a more relaxed posture and stood their weapons on end as Mav lowered his hand. Sue focused on my crying face as Mav went over to the bartok. The bartok also went to stand closer to each other. Then Sue said, "What happened!" I said with a relieved, reassuring tone to my voice, "You fainted darling." Sue looked around at the tender, compassionate expressions of the others. Also, Sue saw the three bartok males nearby. They had started to breathe a little less heavily. Mav must have thought something to the bartok back at their picnic area. Because they all lowered their weapons and bowed to the ground in our direction. The three bartok dropped to their knees and bowed a little toward Mav. They had their weapons standing on end, but had turned the bladed ends away from Mav. Bev said with a soft, compassion filled voice as she caressed Sue's shoulder, "Are you alright dear?" A sorrowful, emotional look came over Sue's face. I heard Mav slap his hand onto Laga and say, "Ak Laga. Ak." This made the bartok bend over a little more in reverence. Then Sue said with a sorrowful, shamed voice, "I'm so sorry!"

Sue embraced me and scrunched up a little. Then Sue said, "I'm so ashamed!" Sue then started crying. Til said with a soft compassionate voice, "Don't worry dear. It could happen to anybody." At the same time, I heard Mav say, "Ak Gwean. Ak Heag. Lega, Gwean, Heag terat!" They replied and said, "Ak gutta Mav!" At about the same time, I said to Sue with a tear filled voice, "As long as

260

you're alright darling!" Zem, Bev and Til all exchanged compassionate, sentimental looks before returning them to Sue and I.

It was at this point that the houk started to fly over us at about fifty feet. They were still giving out alarmed calls. Some of the multa also were swimming toward the beach with their heads high out of the water as they continued to get a better look at what was going on. Zem looked up at the houks and seemed to thing something to them. Because they began to quite down. There were also some kopoz and kafkins heading in our direction. They too were giving out calls that seemed to convey some concern. Zem also looked around at the kopoz, kafkins and multa.

Apparently, Zem also transmitted mental reassurance to them also. Because they stopped heading toward us and assumed a more relaxed state. All this only took a few moments. Then Zem looked at Sue with compassion again. Sue and I, for our own reasons, cried in each other's embrace. Panny and Lika had their front paws on Sue. They still seemed concerned. But they weren't whimpering anymore. After I spoke to Sue, Mav briefly gestured to Sue. Then Mav said to Laga, Gwean and Heag, "Sue keem flig hoot glat, glat hayme." The bartok sat up some and nodded understandingly to each other a few times. As they did so, they said to each other, "Glat glat hayme. Glat glat hayme." I found out later what Mav had said. Mav had said, "Sue little sick from much, much love." Mav then held out his hands to Laga's weapon and said, "Swi heep." Lega handed Mav his weapon. I said to Sue with a relieved, but highly emotional voice, "You had me so scared darling!" Mav took Laga's weapon. Then looked at it with a bit of concentration on his face. No doubt, as thanks, Mav changed their weapons a little.

The parts that were metal changed to a mirrorlike finish. At the same time, the shaft became a darker, polished brown color. It also became engraved with ivory like decorative inlays that were flush with the shaft of the weapon. (Except some of these ivory like inlays, where necessary, had shallow embellishments carved into them) Some of these were vine like with small leaves and fruits here and there. In various places on the shaft, there were small engravings of a forlix, multa, houk, ruka, mluk, kafkin, kopoz, zutak and a few other creatures I didn't know of. Also on the shafts were inlaid pictures of Sue and I. These were done well enough to recognize it was Sue and I. I was kneeling on the ground as I held Sue's upper body in my arms. A little ways away on one side of this decoration, two bartok were facing in one direction with their weapons pointing away from Sue and I. Another bartok was on the other side doing the same thing. Above this scene, in Reall script, it had the name LEGA inlaid in the shaft. This caused all of the bartok to lower their faces to the ground. Gwean and Heag laid their weapons on the ground before they did so. They all said, "Guta Mav!"

Sue and I briefly released each other enough to look in their direction. It occurred to me how brave these bartok must be. Surely they must have known that anything that could cause a Reall problem, they wouldn't stand a chance against. Then Sue and I went back to

embracing each other. Sue said tearfully to me, "Oh darling!" I said, "I love you so much!" At the same time as this was going on, Mav said, "Lega, fi." Lega leaned up a little and looked at the weapon.

261

Mav ran his finger along the base of the Reall lettering and said, "Lega." As the houks began to land in the field off to the right of the spaceships, Mav handed Lega the weapon on end. Lega took the weapon with what must have been a mixture of happiness, humility, thanks, awe, pride and worship. No doubt this was going to make this weapon even more highly prized by Lega. Lega looked at it briefly and bent over again with the weapon in both hands. Lega said, "Ak gutta Mav!" Mav went over Gwean to do the same thing with his weapon. Sue and I were too caught up in our own thing to take much notice of all this. I was just so happy that my dear sweet love was ok.

Zem, Bev and Til smiled at Mav as he rewarded the bartok. I continued to embrace and comfort Sue with my caresses. As you can imagine, Mav received the same kind of thanks from Gwean after he did his weapon. As Mav did Heag's weapon, a Nal started heading in our direction with a stack of fresh towels. Another Nal was making the towels the girls dropped disappear. Bev said to Zem and I in a bit of a stern manner, "You guys have done enough damage for now. Go get dressed. We'll take care of Sue." Zem got up as Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. Zem said to Bev in a kidding around kind of voice, "Yes ma'am!" This made Sue and I give each other slight smiles. Though Sue still had a bit of an embarrassed look on her face. Neither of us had completely gotten over our emotional state yet. As Zem stood up, I said to Sue with a comforting voice, "I would ask you if you'll be ok darling. But it's a silly question with these guys around." What I said brought slightly bigger smiles to Bev and Til's faces. As Zem put his hand on my shoulder, Sue said with a bit of a sheepish look on her face, "Go on darling. I'll be ok."

Then Zem said, "Come on. We better go." I stood up and again looked at Sue with a bit of a concerned look on my face. Sue pulled her knees up farther and buried her face in them. Bev, Til, Panny and Lika continued to comfort Sue. At the same time, Mav said to Lega, Gween and Heag, "Zem, Erik, ta ya." The bartok looked at Mav with utter gratitude on their faces because of their new weapons. Mav then pointed over to the other bartok and said, "Fon, ohem, gias." Lega, Gween and Heag all got up but remained bowed down a bit. They held out their weapons vertically in front of them. Then they backed away as they continued bowing. They all gave various thanks to Mav. Along with some varied statements of reverence to the rest of us. Mav then came over to Zem and I. Mav gave me a couple pats on my shoulder as we all exchanged smiles. Then we headed back toward the gazebo. Pim, San and Tal accompanied us.

## Chapter Twelve

### After The Scare

Briefly, I turned back to Sue. I could see the maketake Nal that had been levitating the towels to the girls was now floating near them. Sue still had her face buried in her knees with Bev and Til kneeling next to her and comforting her. Til said, "I know fainting can be unpleasant dear." Bev then added, "But you'll be ok." Til had a hand on Sue's back. Bev had a hand on Sue's shoulder

262

and one on Sue's hands that Sue had on her knees. Panny was standing on the other side of Sue with his front paws on Sue's leg. Lika was doing the same with her front paws on Sue's arm. I turned to Zem and said with a more somber countenance, "I saw other people fainting on planet Bev. I had even heard of women fainting around rock stars. But it didn't really occur to me at first that was what happened to Sue. I never thought I could have that effect." Zem said, "You underestimate yourself." This again brought a smile to my face. Mav spoke to me next. I turned my smile to him as he did so. In my peripheral vision, I saw Lega, Gwean and Heag walking back toward the other bartok. All of their focus seemed to be toward their new weapons as they examined them. They seemed to be extremely happy with them.

Mav said, "I don't know what you said to Sue, but you're just going to have to face the fact that you have a talent for romance." This made me grin. Mav and Zem grinned too. I said to Mav, "Has Til ever done that with you." Mav's grin turned to a sentimental smile as he said, "A few times. It shouldn't surprise you that even a Reall can be overcome with love." Zem and I were both smiling sentimentally at Mav. Though I also had a bit of amazement on my face that a Reall woman could still be overtaken like that. I said, "It must have been some pretty fearsome love." Mav put his hand on my shoulder as I again smiled sentimentally. Answering my question, Mav said, "Not to any really extreme degree. They just sometimes allow themselves to be carried away with their emotions. The unfortunate thing is that if we're experiencing the other's emotions at the time, they nearly take us with them." Zem said, "Bev and I sometimes go through the same sort of thing too." I turned a sentimental smile to Zem as he spoke. Zem continued on, saying, "Fainting under such circumstances has something to do with the way your and our kind of female's brains are wired. Their sweet little hearts are so dear."

This brought a little bigger smile to my face. What Mav and Zem said was a great comfort. I said to Zem, "But Sue and I had shared even more loving moments than that. At least I thought we had. And she didn't do that then." Mav said, "You never know what might set them

off.” Looking at Mav, he added, “If we knew that, it would be a great temptation to be a little mean and do it to our girls too.” This caused us guys to grin. But I only did so briefly. I glanced back at the girls. They were standing now and were all wrapping towels around their waists. The Nal that had brought more towels was levitating near them with a few more. Sue glanced over and gave me a smile. I grinned, turned a little. Then I briefly kissed my fingertips and blew Sue a kiss. The others saw me do this as Sue and I grinned. Then they turned their grins to Sue. Sue pretended to grab the kiss out of the air and held it to her heart with both hands. Sue then moved one of her hands, planted a kiss on her fingertips and blew me a kiss. I turned around and walked backwards as I pretended to grab it out of the air. Then I held it to my heart with both hands as Sue and I grinned lovingly at each other.

At the same time, Bev took another towel and draped it over her shoulders. Mav thought to Til as he too turned around and walked backwards. Though we could all hear his thoughts. Mav said, “Til darling. I have one for you too.” Mav

263

then planted a kiss on his fingertips and blew Til a kiss. Then Til pretended to grab it out of the air and held it to her chest with both hands. Til also had a bit of a loving look accompany her grin. Then Til thought to Mav, “Thank you darling. Here’s one for you.” Til then blew Mav a kiss. But as Mav was just about ready to pretend grab it, Zem ran over and put his hand in front of Mav’s and closed his hand. Letting his momentum carry him a few steps farther. Zem turned briefly and said to Mav with a mischievous, excited grin as he held up his closed hand, “I’ve got Til’s kiss!” Mav had a surprised look on his face. Zem then took off running as a determined and slightly angry look came over Mav’s face. The rest of us cracked up laughing. Our Nal also emitted telepathic humor as Mav tore after Zem and yelled, “Give me Til’s kiss back!”

This caused the girls and I to laugh even harder. Our Nal’s telepathic humor also increased a little. Seeing Zem and Mav’s play, Panny and Lika scampered toward them as they chattered excitedly. After what had just happened to Sue and I, a little levity was welcome. Zem and Mav ran more or less a little ways toward the patio. Though Zem was zigging and zagging to throw Mav off. After a few moments, Zem made another dash to the side to throw Mav off. Panny and Lika playfully followed them. But not too close. Zem then said with a laughing grin, “Ok! Ok! I give up!” Zem turned and held up the palm of one hand and held out the closed fist of the other. Zem said with a laugh, “Take it! It’s yours!” They were both breathing a little heavily and laughed as Zem pretend handed Mav the pretend kiss. Mav pretended to take hold of it and looked over at Til with a big grin on his face. Mav held up his closed hand over his head and called over to Til,

"I have it!" Til happily jumped up and down a little as she clapped her hands a little. At the same time, Til called out, "Yay!" Bev and Sue were holding onto each other and laughing. Mav held the pretend kiss to his heart with both hands and grinned at Til.

Til clasped both her hands over her chest and looked at Mav with a grin accompanied with a loving look. Panny and Lika were scampering happily around Mav and Zem. After a few moments, Zem and Mav took hold of each other's shoulders and shook each other a little as they laughed. They then let go of each other. Zem then turned to Bev and thought, "I have a kiss for you too darling." We were all grinning as Zem blew Bev a kiss. But Bev's grin was a little bigger. Bev pretend grabbed it out of the air and held it to her chest with both hands. Bev thought, "Thank you darling. Here's one for you." Bev then blew Zem a kiss. Zem pretend grabbed it out of the air and held it to his chest with both hands. As he and Bev grinned lovingly at each other, Zem thought, "Thank you darling." After a couple moments, Zem moved his hands and started to turn. Panny and Lika were still scampering about a bit. Zem reached down an arm to Lika. Lika jumped on Zem's arm and Zem then held Lika in his arms. Mav did the same with Panny. I looked at the girls. They were sharing in each other's chuckling as they straightened up the towels on their shoulders a little.

Zem and Mav grinned at me and turned toward the gazebo. I ran up to catch up with them. As I got near them, I slowed to a walk again. I glanced back at the girls. They were walking toward the house. Bev and Sue had linked arms on one side. Til and Sue had linked arms on the other side. They all talked to each

264

other with sentimental smiles on their faces. All three of course had towels over their shoulders as well as those tied around their waists. As I caught up to Zem and Mav, they both turned and smiled at me. I put an arm on each of their outer shoulders as I grinned. Which caused them to grin again. I briefly pulled them next to me and said, "You guys kill me." Zem and Mav laughed a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Zem said with a grin, "Having fun is fun." I took my hands off their shoulders and said, "You guys certainly know how to do that." Both Zem and Mav moved over a little so I could walk between them. Mav said with a smile, "We try to when we have the chance. Sometimes, we can get quite caught up in whatever work we happen to be doing." I said with a slight smile too, "I could imagine. But then again, maybe I couldn't."

Then Zem added with a slight smile, "It can get awfully involved." We started walking across the dock at this point. Mav then added, "Fortunately, being immortal has given us the luxury of patience. So it isn't really that much of a burden to take time off for enjoyment." I said, "I know that your species is really old. Do you have any contact

with species even older than yours?" Mav said, "Yes we do. Though once a species reaches a certain level of being, technological difference aren't as acute." Mav put Panny down at this point and picked up his towel. Giving it a firm shake after he did so. Then Mav added as Zem put Lika down and picked up his towel, (Giving it a firm shake too) "On the other hand, we don't have many dealings with species that are much less technologically sophisticated than ourselves." I picked up my towel and gave it a shake as Mav added, "Even less so with the even more primitive species. Such as humans on earth. No offence." I grinned and said, "None taken." Mav and Zem grinned too. We all went to our clothes. I noticed that one of the Nal had apparently removed the glasses from the table. But left Mav and Til's mugs.

Zem said, "A few of the older species may be able to do certain things a little easier than our technology allows us to do." Having reached our clothes, Zem added as we dried ourselves, "But trying to derive such information from them would only deprive us of making those discoveries ourselves." Tal formed into a screen between us and the house. As Zem and I took off our trunks, Zem added, "Besides. They would probably be as unwilling to give up such information as the Mind is with us." Mav then added as he took off his trunks, "There are times when we may trade some scientific information. Just because a species is older and a little more advanced than ours, it doesn't mean that we may not have come up with something that they haven't." Zem and I had dried ourselves a little more. Then we sat down our towels and started to put on our underwear. Mav did the same thing a couple moments later. Panny and Lika were over by a railing and grooming each other. They seemed to enjoy digging around a little in each other's fur. But I doubt if either of them had ever experienced a parasite.

I said to Mav, "Who are the oldest beings you have ever come across." As Mav put on his underwear, he said, "Do you mean Zem or I personally, or our species." As we continued getting dressed, I said, "The Reall species." Mav said, "A being that was a member of a species called the Hovath once met one of our ships and spent some time there. Their species is older than this visible

265

universe by a few billion years." A surprised look came over my face and I said, "Wow." Mav said with a grin, "Wow indeed. Though no doubt there are even older species out there in the great infinity beyond." I said, "Zem told me a little about the Mind. What do the Hovath as a far older species think of the Mind." Mav said, "I have never heard of a highly advanced species that didn't hold the Mind in the utmost regard. Whatever most humans might imagine to be a god is nothing compared to the Mind." Zem and I were putting on our pants and tucking in our shirt tails at this point. I said to Mav, "It's



both wonderful and terrifying that such an entity exists.” Mav said, “Nobody has ever found anything but ultimate wisdom in communication with the Mind. There is great comfort to be found in that.”

As I sat down and started to put on my shoes and socks, I looked over in the direction of the bartok. They were all standing near their fire and admiring the weapons that Mav had modified for Laga, Gween and Heag. These three bartok were the only ones holding their weapons at this point. I said, “The bartok sure seem to admire the modifications you made to their weapons.” Mav and Zem smiled in that direction too. After looking for a few moments, Mav pulled out his chair and sat down. Mav said, “They were very brave. They deserve them.” I said, “What exactly did you do to them.” Mav gestured to the Tal screen and said, “Tal will show you.” I turned the chair I was in a little to look at Tal. An image of Lega’s weapon appeared on the screen. This side showing Sue, myself, Lega, Gween and Heag faced us. After a few moments, the image got smaller to show more of the shaft. It also began to rotate. Showing the other things on it. When the pictures of Sue and I with the defending bartok came up again, I turned to Mav with a sentimental look on my face and said, “They’re beautiful!” This made Mav and Zem grin as I added, “With images of Sue and I! I’m so honored! Thank you!”

Mav took on a sentimental smile and said, “It’s really the bartok you should be thanking.” Zem said, “They will prize them more highly than any medal would be prized by a soldier.” I grinned at Zem briefly and then looked back at the screen. Then I said in a kidding around kind of voice, “I’d kind of like to have one myself.” This made Zem and Mav chuckle. I turned toward them again and chuckled a bit myself. Zem said, “I don’t know what you would ever do with one.” This caused a little more chuckling. Afterwards, I said, “There isn’t a lot I could do with one.” This caused a bit more of a chuckle from us. A few moments later, I looked back at the bartok. Zem and Mav did too. I said, “They were brave. It occurred to me earlier that anything that could cause you a problem, they had to know that they wouldn’t stand a chance against. Can I thank them too?” Mav grinned. Which made Zem and I grin too. Then Mav said, “Sure. But hold on a second.” Tal transformed back into his normal shape as Mav seemed to think something. A few moments later, Mim, Pam and Sas arrived. Mim went to Pim and Pam went to San. Both of them circled around their partner’s surface at differing angles.

Sas went over near the railing and transformed herself into an image of Sue. She was wearing the same kind of beautiful garment she was when she and Tal went to the bartok earlier. Sas-Sue smiled at me as I stood up. I said to Sas-Sue, “You look beautiful!” Sas-Sue grinned and said with Sue’s voice, “Thank

you.” As Panny and Lika went over to set near Sas-Sue, Mav then said with a smile, “Let me contact Sue.” I could hear Mav’s thoughts as he said, “Sue.” Sue said, “Yes?” Mav said, “Erik wants to thank Lega, Gwean and Heag. Sas has made herself into your image to wave at them when they’re thanked. But the thoughts will be yours. You can have a maketake screen show you the image. When Sas tells you to, just think, Ak Lega. Ak Gwean. Ak Heag.” Sue thought back with happiness to her thoughts, “Ok!” Apparently, Bev and Til were listening in too. Because Til said, “That’s so sweet.” Mav thought for us all to hear as I walked over to Sas-Sue, “Their language is pretty simple. How’s this. You can just think to them, Brave Lega, Gween, Heag. Thanks from Sue, Erik.” I said, “That will work. How exactly do I say it in bartok.” Mav told me. Afterwards, I said, “Ok.” We all looked over at them. I thought, “Bartok.” They all stopped what they were doing, faced in our direction and bowed to the ground. Lega, Gwean and Heag held their weapons flat on the ground in front of them. I then thought, “Terat Lega, Gween, Heag. Ak hoot Sue, Erik.” Sas-Sue thought to Sue, “Your turn.” Sue thought as Sas-Sue waved at them, “Ak Lega. Ak Gween. Ak Heag.”

Lega, Gween and Heag all lifted up their bodies as they held their weapons in both hands and outstretched arms above them. Then they bowed down again. They kept doing this. Mav made it possible for their voices to be heard by us. As they bowed, each stated various statements of thanks and reverence. Among which were, “Ak gutta Erik. Ak gutta Sue.” After a little of these statements, Mav thought to them, “Ak bartok. Ohem. Ohem, gias.” The other bartok raised up their upper bodies and bowed again repeatedly as well. Sas-Sue turned back into Sas. Sas headed toward Tal as she thought to Sue, “As you saw and heard, your thanks was well received.” Tal and Sas started to circle around each other’s surfaces at differing angles as Sue thought back with a happy, sentimental tone to her thought, “Good. We’ll see you soon. By.” We were all smiling as Zem and Mav stood up. I looked to Zem and said verbally, “The sun appears to be getting low. Maybe we should have some refreshments on the top patio.” Zem said with a smile, “That’s a good idea.” Mav then said to me in a wry manner, “Are you reading my mind?”

I looked at Mav as we all laughed. As if a human could! After the laughter, I said to Mav with a grin, “If humans could do such thing, we would have probably have learned what Zem told me. Which is that basically, it would be an extremely impolite thing to do.” Mav said with a smile, “Zem’s right. It wouldn’t be a very nice thing to do.” I went over to Zem and put my hand on his far shoulder as we grinned at each other. Then I grinned back to Mav. I said, “Has anybody told you guys lately how wonderful you are?” Zem and Mav laughed a little. As Zem laughed, he put his hand on my far shoulder. Their grins got a little wider as Mav came over to Zem and I. Mav reached over and slapped his hand down on my other shoulder and gave it a brief, slight, affectionate shake. But left his hand there. Mav said, “I think you just

did.” My grin was replaced with a bit of an emotional look. I looked at Mav and then Zem. I said, “It’s true.”

At the same time, Zem and Mav’s grins turned to sentimental smiles as I added, “Sue and I are probably the most fortunate humans to have ever existed. Sue

267

and I would be as honored as the bartok to have met you all if there weren’t more personally affectionate feelings getting in the way.”

Mav and Zem briefly looked at each other with even a little more of a sentimental look. Then Zem said to me, “Don’t go getting all mushy. Or you’ll get me and Mav going too.” This caused us all to crack up laughing. We all shared in each other’s laughter as I gave Zem and Mav’s shoulders an affectionate, manly shake. After the laughter died down, we all released each other. Zem said, “Well let’s head on up and get the table ready for the girls.” Mav said, “Sounds like a good idea.” We all started heading toward the dock. Zem and I paused a little to let Mav step up parallel to us. We all then walked toward the dock. Panny and Lika followed us. Looking through the outer glass walls of the house, I didn’t see any of the girls anywhere. The other spare Nal were levitating near the ceiling by the maketake. As we walked, San and Pam separated. They each came down and levitated up a mug. Then they levitated them toward the maketake machine. I wasn’t paying attention at the time. But Pim, Mim, Tal and Sas went over to the table. They started to make our bathing trunks and towels disappear.

Briefly looking over at the beach where the girls had been, apparently one of the Nal had removed the girls’ clothing and blanket. I looked at each of the guys and said, “Somebody should tell Til, Bev and Sue that we’ll be up there.” Zem said, “I’ll take care of it.” We all walked along as Zem seemed to get preoccupied with thought. San and Pam at this point had the mugs sitting on the maketake machine. Pam was taking out what appeared to be a decorative, flowery centerpiece. San was nearby with a folded tablecloth. Mav and I briefly smile at Zem and then at each other before returning our attention back to walking. Having gotten off the dock, Panny and Lika scampered off to the left, toward the beach. After a few moments, Zem turned his attention to us and said with a smile, “They’ll meet us up there when they’re through getting ready.” Mav and I also smiled at Zem. As we did so, Pim and Mim each levitated a chair from the gazebo table. No doubt they were going to bring them up to the upper patio. I looked over at the houks out in the field to our left. A few were snacking on grass. A couple others were laying down.

Farther out in the field in front of us, there were the various groups of animals here and there. I said to Zem as we started to walk in the direction of the stairs that went up the side of the house, “I have another idea.” Mav stepped in and said, “What’s that.” Alternating my

smile between Mav and Zem, I said, "My idea is a romantic gesture I would like to do with Sue that you also might wish to do. I would like a big bouquet of fragrant, beautiful flowers. At some point I plan to say something to Sue about how I feel about her. Which no doubt is going cause us to kiss. As we kiss, I plan to press the flowers up against our faces a little so as to make it seem as we are kissing on a bed of flowers. Sue and I had many flowers and petals on our bed after our wedding. I hope it will remind Sue of it." Mav said, "Til and I have had flowers and flower petals on our bed many times. As have Zem and Bev. It will remind them of it too. You're just full of good ideas." This increased my grin a little as Mav turned his grin to Zem. Then Mav said, "I think we have a romantic genius here."

268

This caused a beaming grin to come over my face. Zem turned his grin to me and lightly slapped his hand down on my shoulder. Then Zem said, "That's my human!" This caused us all to laugh. After the laughter, we were approaching the stairs. Looking through the outer glass walls, I still didn't see any of the girls anywhere. I said to Zem, "How long do you think the girls will be." Zem smiled at me and said, "It's hard to say. But it shouldn't be too long." Mav looked at Zem and said, "If they're going to get all dolled up, we might find ourselves underdressed. I'll see what they're going to be doing." Mav also appeared to become preoccupied with thought as we neared the bottom of the steps. After a moment, Zem started going up the steps. As I turned to follow him, Mav said, "Til said we're fine dressed as we are." Having turned and smiled at Mav as I too climbed the stairs, I said, "That's good. I didn't really feel like wearing anything too formal." Mav said, "It might have been a good idea to anyway. Just to help show the girls how much we appreciate them. But then we would have run the risk of making the girls feel underdressed."

Zem turned to look at us as he continued going up the stairs and said, "That wouldn't be good." I said, "Sue could show up in a potato sack and I wouldn't care." This caused us all to chuckle. Zem briefly turned a little and said with a grin, "I know how you feel." As Zem reached the top of the stairs, Mav added with a grin, "Me too." Both Zem and I briefly turned our grins to Mav. With our girls being so wonderful, we were all definitely in agreement on that point. After a couple more steps, I too was at the top of the stairs with Mav a couple steps behind me. Zem was walking toward the other set of stairs. Turning in that direction, I followed. I could see into the bedroom up here. And the viewing lounge on the other side of the opaque area. But there was no sign of the girls up here either. Though it was possible that they could have been in the opaque area that I figured held the bathroom. I hadn't really taken a lot of notice the last time I was up here of the glass doorway below the top landing. This led to the near side of the

viewing lounge. As Mav reached the top of the stairs and turned on our direction, Zem was beginning to go up the other set of stairs.

Mav said with a smile, "It doesn't look like the girls are hanging around up here." Zem and I both turned our smiles to Mav. Zem said, "They're probably downstairs in one of the bathrooms or bedrooms getting ready." Mav said as I started up the steps too, "I know how Til and Bev are. And apparently Sue is the same way. Fastidious in their cleanliness." Zem said, "After swimming and rolling around on the ground, they probably are taking some extra time to clean up." I chuckled a little and grinned. Then I looked at Zem and said, "For all I care, along with a potato sack, Sue could be all muddy too." Both Zem and Mav laughed a little. Zem and Mav looked at each other and made happy faces with their eyebrows raised a little. They both said in unison, "All mud, all the time!" Then they laughed a bit. With a grin, I said as Zem got to the top platform, "What was that all about." Zem turned to us as he moved more onto the landing at the top of the stairs. As Zem did so, he said, "There is a Reall couple named Tol and Mil." As I neared the top landing, Zem added, "They have a planet with a large number of amusement areas. One of which is a mud themed amusement park."

269

As I stood on the top landing, I made room for Mav as Zem added, "These have not only has made them famous among the Reall, but many of the other highly advanced species. Every mud themed activity you could think of they probably have." Mav got to the top landing and said to me, "They have mud slides like water slides, mud skiing, falling mud glob obstacle courses and many other fun activities." We headed toward the table in the center of the top patio. I briefly glanced around. Zem and Mav did too. When I saw the patio from the air and the back of Grabby, the table was square with four chairs around it. Now it was transformed into a rectangle. There were two pairs of chairs on the other side and a pair of chairs in the middle on the near side. This was a good idea. Because us couples could look to the one side and see what was sure to be a beautiful sunset or look in the other direction and see the sunlit mountains. Along with the two moons that were now fully visible above them. I wondered who had thought of it. It could have been Zem, Mav, or one of our Nal.

At this point, there was a table cloth on the table and the centerpiece in the middle. San and Pam were about eight feet in the air and a few feet off to the far side of the table. Down the lakeshore in that direction, I could see the bartok sitting around their campfire. The toddler was in the lap of one of the females. The young female and the smaller male were snacking and looking at the others. At this distance, I couldn't really tell who was who. But being the largest, I could recognize Lega. The female with the toddler and Lega were

discussing something as Lega admired his weapon. Gween and Heag were admiring their weapons too. The other adult female was sitting nearer to either Gween or Heag and admiring his weapon too. Zem then said as we nearly reached the table, "We have been to the mud park many times together. Bev and Til get so wonderfully muddy." This made us all grin. We stopped near the table and Mav gestured to the chairs on the near side of the table and said, "You and Sue can set there."

Mav and Zem walked on to the other side of the table. As they did so, Mav smiled up at San and Pam and said, "The table looks nice. Thank you." San and Pam started to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles as they both said in unison, "You're welcome." At this point, Tal and Sas were heading our way with a tray. On it were six identical mugs and two smaller ones. Two of these mugs were no doubt Mav and Til's. The two smaller ones kind of looked the same. There was also a decorative, metallic and covered pitcher on the tray. Also on it were a folded stack of napkins. The other mugs were just like Mav and Til's. Almost like they were psychic, Panny and Lika also came up the steps to the upper patio. As they continued to come our way, Pim and Mim rose up above the back of the patio. Pim levitated a bouquet of flowers below him. Mim levitated two below her. The bouquets were made up of many different kinds of flowers. Around two thirds of the stems were wrapped a decorative, shiny white ribbon tying the stems together. We all smiled in their direction for a moment. Then I turned my smile to Zem.

Commenting on what Zem said concerning Bev and Til getting wonderfully muddy, I said, "The mud park sounds like a lot of fun." Both Zem and Mav were smiling at me too as Mav said, "Unlike our little chase here, there, it was easier

270

for them to give us the slip." We all chuckled some and shared in each other's amusement. I looked back over to Zem. Who was now standing near the pair of chairs to the right on the other side of the table. I said with a smile, "I hate to ask you. Because you've done so much already. But if you ever decide to go back, maybe you could take Sue and I along." Zem grinned. Which made me grin. Mav added with a grin, "And Til and I." I briefly grinned at Mav and then back to Zem. Zem said, "Sure. It'll be fun." My face got extra happy as I said, "Oh boy!" This made Zem and Mav chuckle a bit. I had a big ear to ear grin on my face. Tal stopped by the table and Sas continued on. Sas sat the tray near the centerpiece. Mav smiled at Sas and said, "Thank you." Sas answered and said verbally, "You're welcome."

I picked up one of Panny and Lika's mugs and looked at it as Sas went back over to Tal. Then I said, "These are so cute!" These only had two larger heart shaped outlines on them and one slightly smaller heart shaped outline. One held a portrait of Zem and Bev. The other held a

portrait of Panny and Lika. The third smaller heart that was in front held two heart shapes next to each other. One orange and the other yellow. Which were Pim and Mim. Below each portrait were the names of those in the portraits with a plus sign in between them. There were also a small number of smaller solid red hearts scattered about them. We all grinned as Mav said, "It was just a little something I thought up." I said, "The girls are sure to get a kick out of them." This made Mav's grin widen a bit. I sat the mug back down as Zem picked up some napkins. Mav picked up a couple. I did too. As we all sat them near where we would be sitting, Pim and Mim approached with the bouquets. Panny and Lika sat near the table. I said to Mav, "Do you have any mouthwash. I don't want to seem completely like a pig when the girls show up all fresh and clean as they are likely to be."

Mav was smiling as he said, "We have just the thing." Pim sat a bouquet on the table over on the other side of the centerpiece. Mim sat the other bouquets on the right side of the tray. As Pim and Mim rose up, small spheres came off of Pim, San and Tal. One of these each headed to Zem, Mav and myself. As they came, the little spheres transformed themselves into small, rounded rectangles about three sixteenths in an inch wide and an inch long. Mav said, "Just let the piece of Tal into your mouth and close your lips." I did as Mav said. Zem and Mav did the same. We all smiled as we let these flexible pieces of Nal moved around our teeth. I could feel a minty fresh taste in my mouth as the Tal bit cleaned inside my mouth. As they did so, I thought, "Is there any end to how useful you guys can be?" Tal answered telepathically and said, "I suppose it depends on what you need done." I said, "It's probably more than I'll ever need to ask." Zem then thought, "Happy is any Reall with a Nal." Pim said with a hint of sentimentality to his thought, "Thank you."

Pim and Mim started to circle each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam did the same. As of course did Tal and Sas. Pam said with a sentimental thought, "And happy is a Nal with a Reall." We all smiled at Pam and San. Mav said with some sentimentality to his thought, "Thank you Pam. You're such a dear." After a few moments, Tal said telepathically, "All done." I

271

could feel the small piece of Tal in my mouth reform into a small sphere. So I opened my mouth and the small sphere floated out of my mouth. It started to go back over to Tal as the other small spheres exited from Mav and Zem's mouths. I smacked my lips a couple of times and said verbally to Tal with a smile, "Thank you Tal." Mav also said, "Thank you San." Zem also said, "Thank you Pim." They all answered verbally at the same time and said, "You're welcome." The small Tal sphere remerged with Tal as he and Sas still circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Of course, the same thing happened with Pim and San. I picked up one of the

bouquets and smelled it. Zem and Mav picked up their bouquets did the same.

Afterwards, we lowered them and gave each other big smiles. I said, "The girls are just going to love these." This turned our big smiles into grins. Mav said to me, "No doubt just as we Reall guys feel for our girls, you feel that nothing is too good for Sue either." My grin turned to a sentimental smile. Zem and Mav smiled sentimentally too. I said, "As usual, you're exactly right." Zem turned his smile up at our Nal and said, "I already know Pim, San and Tal feel the same way about their girls." Mav and I smiled at them too. Pim, San and Tal started to glow with their chosen colors. Mim, Pam and Sas began to glow too with their chosen colors. They also started to more quickly circle around their partner's surfaces at differing angles. I suppose that was enough of an answer. It was a beautiful sight. We sat down our bouquets, pulled out the chairs near us and sat down in one of them. Panny and Lika, who had been hanging around under the table, hopped up onto my lap. Panny continued on to my shoulders and held onto my neck. We all chuckled as I did my best to pet both of them. Mav said with an amused voice, "Let me help." Mav then held out his hand a little and said, "Here Panny."

Panny jumped from my shoulder and happily scampered over the table to Mav. Then Panny jumped into Mav's arms as I petted Lika with both hands. Lika looked at me with her happy little falik face as Mav petted Panny. Mav said, "I think they were hungry for affection." Zem and I smiled at Mav. Zem said, "They're almost always hungry for that." We all chuckled a bit. The glow of Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas began to diminish. After our levity, I took a look around. The sun was getting a little lower to the horizon. The shadows of the animals out in the field were casting fairly long shadows. I then looked over at the bartok. Who were lounging around their campsite. Looking back in the direction of the mountains, the sunlight was illuminating them with a soft, slight yellow hue. The moons had risen slightly farther above them. They had taken on a bit less of a reddish gold hue. There were of course multa swimming out in the lake. Some were playing at the surface. A few of them with their heads and necks raised out of the water. The houks were still hanging around in the field off to the right of the spaceships.

Everything was so beautiful. I smiled at the guys and said to Zem, "I wonder what's keeping the girls." Zem said, "Let me see." Zem then seemed to think something. We all heard Bev's thoughts. Bev said with an amused thought, "We'll be having our revenge soon." Us guys all looked at each other with surprised looks as we sensed telepathic humor from Bev, Til and Sue. After a

272

few moments, Zem said as we all still wore slightly surprised looks, "What do you mean." Til answered and said, "You didn't think you



could chase us and give us a good tickling without there being any repercussions did you.” This caused us guys to laugh. After a couple moments, Sue said, “We’ll be ready in a few. So get ready. By.” We all looked at each other with big grins on our faces. Whatever the girls had planned, we weren’t worried about it. (Though as it turned out, we should have been) Zem said with a grin, “This can’t be good.” Mav said to Zem, “What do you think they’re going to do.” I said, “Whatever they have planned, you guys should remember that they have a savage, barbaric human helping them out.” Zem and Mav were on the verge of laughter as I added, “I think we should be worried!”

This caused us to laugh. After the laughter, Mav said with an amused voice, “I’m not worried about what such a cute hug monster could come up with.” This caused us to laugh a little more. I said to Tal and Sas, “Do you know what they’re up to?” Sas said, “Us girls do. But we won’t tell.” Us guys laughed a little. Our Nal emitted telepathic humor. After the laughter, Mim said, “Our guys are lucky that we won’t be taking part, much.” I picked up Lika and brought her face closer to mine. I said with a higher pitched, friendly voice, “You’ll protect me! Won’t you!” Zem and Mav laughed as Lika happily licked my nose. I quickly moved Lika farther away as I laughed too. As I petted Lika on my lap, I said with an amused, kidding around voice, “Oh, yuck! Now I have falik saliva on my nose!” This enlivened everybody’s laughter as Tal and Sas separated. Tal came down near my face. After a moment, he said verbally, “There ya go. All clean.” As Tal went back over toward Sas, I said to him with a grin, “Thank you.” Tal said, “My pleasure.” Tal and Sas didn’t make contact again. Pim and Mim also separated. As did San and Pam. Tal then added, “But I regret having to take part in your punishment.”

The whole upper floor began to rise up into the air. Us guys again looked at each other with surprised looks. All of us were curious about what the girls had planned. And a little anxious. Tal headed toward the field side of the patio. Sas, Pim, Mim, San and Pam headed toward the mountain end. Sas didn’t go very far. But Pim, Mim, San and Pam continued on as the upper part of the house shot upward. It stopped about three thousand feet up in the air. Sas transformed herself into a black wall between us and the rest of the patio. Tal transformed himself into a very large screen on the other side of the patio. He turned the sunlight into a diffuse, normal white hue of sunlight. By this time, Mav and I had put Panny and Lika on the deck. We turned in our chairs a little in the direction of the Sas wall. I could see Pim and San above the Sas screen. They were about twenty five feet up in the air and an equal distance beyond the back of the patio. I briefly looked over at Zem as he looked in that direction too. I saw Zem’s eyes widen and a highly surprised look on his face as his mouth dropped open. Mav had the same reaction. When I looked back to see what they saw, I had the same reaction.

Sas had transformed herself back into her normal shape and rose up a couple of feet above where the top end had been. Pim and San

transformed themselves into large, angled screens. These reflected a diffuse light in the

273

direction of the patio. There was a Nal platform on the other side of the railing. From the railing, there were a few Nal steps that went down to the patio. Standing on the Nal platform, from right to left, were Bev, Sue and Til. They stood about two feet apart as Sue held both their hands on either side. All three were grinning. Who I took to be Mim and Pam had broken up into hundreds of small, glittering pieces. These surrounded the girls. But they weren't between us guys and them. Bev, Sue and Til were all basically wearing the same thing. Sue had glowing white strands of something in her luxurious, silky smooth, platinum blond hair. Til and Bev were wearing some sort of fine, sparkling silvery jewelry on their heads that sort of mimicked hair. It had glowing white strands in it. This went across their foreheads in a straight line and tapered down to their shoulders in the back. Framing their faces beautifully.

Their makeup wasn't overly done. But it was done to perfection. They were all wearing white bikini like tops that didn't contain much material. These appeared to only be thick enough to mask different flesh tones. Around them they wore very sheer tops that didn't cover much of their shoulders or any of their ample cleavage. Especially Sue's. Sense Sue was slightly larger than the others up there. The bottoms of these outer sheer tops were tied together at about mid waist level. Around their lower waists, they wore shiny, silvery, necklace types of jewelry. They were all wearing tight fitting white spandex like pants. There were white, opaque stripes that went up them that were about an inch wide. Between them there were stripes of sheer, see through nylon kinds of material. The opaque stripes split off and merged around the upper parts of their thighs and hips. Covering enough to keep it from seeming too sluttish. The tightness of this garment showed well the wonderful little gap between their upper thighs on the inside. The opaque stripes got narrower the farther down their legs they got. With the see through nylon like material getting wider.

The white opaque strips ended in points just above their ankles. On their feet, they wore decorative, white slippers. Around their hips, they had tied extremely sheer, small sarongs that quickly tapered off to one side. These reached just below their knees. They looked like ethereal, angelic seductresses. Behind them, in the distance, were the mountains. They were illuminated a light yellowish color by the sun. The moons still had a slightly reddish, gold hue to them. There wasn't much of the lake behind the girls to be seen at this height. But it was still an amazing sight. To say the least. If Pim and San were taking pictures, which I imagined they were, it would be showing us guys in the background with our mouths open in astonishment. Which no

doubt at some future time the girls will look at again with a lot of mirth. Us guys quickly, but briefly, turned agog expressions toward each other before returning our gaze to our girls. The girls turned their grins toward each other and nodded. They let go of each other's hands. Bev and Til seductively turned and took a couple steps away from Sue.

They turned back forward and all three started slowly and seductively walking down the steps toward us. Replacing their grins with slight, seductive looks. The glittering pieces of Mim and Pam came with them. Zem, Mav and I quickly got up to make our way over toward our girls. I headed across from where Sue was.

274

Zem headed to the right, across from where Bev was and Mav went to the left to be across from where Til was. Panny and Lika also headed in the direction of the girls. We all heard the voice of Sas in our minds. She said, "Don't bump your heads. I've left a force field behind." It was now clear what form of revenge the girls intended to take. They meant to titillate and tantalize us! We all put out our hands and took a couple steps. All of us felt the force field. This was going to be much worse than I thought! Zem called out longingly to Bev as we all pressed our hands against it, "Bev, how could you!" Mav also called out longingly to Til, "You're monsters!" This made the girls grin briefly again as I called out longingly to Sue, "Sue! I have to hold you!"

The girls got to the bottom of the steps. All three of them in unison looked down slightly and to the side slightly with somewhat shy, innocent looks. Taking a step forward, they shot glaring glances at their particular men with a somewhat intense, determined look. This was like having a shockwave sent through us. Us guys faces had longing written all over them. The Nal that had made up the platform and the steps formed back into a normal shaped Nal. It moved farther back and higher into the air. Then it appeared to fade out of existence. All of us guys were making longing, pleading comments to our particular girls. The girls took on longing expressions as they took another very slow step forward. All three of them then stopped and bent forward a little with their faces raised. They made circular, waving "come hither" types of motions with their arms. At the same time, they looked at their guys longingly. Showing off their cleavage to full effect as we continued to press our hands around force field. Us guys continued to make longing and pleading comments to our particular girls. Panny and Lika were also standing at the force field with their little paws on it. Looking at them with interest.

Then the girls raised themselves up and took a couple slow steps toward us with lust written on their faces. With each step, they thrust the sides of their hips toward us. Showing us the wonderful curvature of their bottoms. I think Zem and Mav must have been as painfully aroused as I was. The girls then again averted their gaze from us slowly and looked slightly down and to the side a little with innocent

looks on their faces. The longing I felt was pure torture! There was no doubt that Zem and Mav were feeling the same way. The way the girls were moving, one of the girls must have been telepathically directing their movements and expressions to the others. The girls then took on more of a lustful, but undirected look as they slid their hands up their bodies and over their breasts. Lifting them a little as they did so. Then they lifted their arms up over their heads. Entwining them near the top of their reach, they made their palms face each other from the opposite sides as they raised them to the full extent of their reach. Then they started to slowly turn around as they made numerous circles with their hips. This was a killer.

Zem, Mav and I dropped to our knees as we pleaded for mercy. The girls briefly grinned at each other, but continued their seductive approach. Once the girls were again facing us, they again looked down and away a little. Again with innocent expressions on their faces, they slid their hands down their bodies in much the same way as they had brought them up. They slid their hands, fingers

275

down, on either side of their belly buttons. Then down the fronts of their hips. Doing so seductively close to their lower, luscious lady bits. They continued this caress down the fronts of their thighs. Bending forward and using their upper arms to push their breasts together. This enhanced their already impressive cleavage even more. Then they slowly raised themselves up again in the same manner. With no pity, as they did so, they looked at their tormented partners with naughty looks. Then they seductively licked one of their fingers. After doing so, they turned to the side and stuck their butts and breasts out a little. After doing so, they brought the fingers they licked and placed them on their butts. They all made a "pssss" sound. Mimicking the sound it would make if somebody touched a wet finger to a piece of hot metal.

Us guys continued to make various statements of longing and pleading for the torture to stop. Then they took another couple slow steps toward us as they raised their arms above their heads again. As they did so, with innocent expressions on their faces, they again thrust their hips toward us. But in a slightly less pronounced manner than they had before. Then they stopped again as they seductively gyrated their hips again and turned in a circle. After doing so, the girls then took another couple slow steps toward us with their arms out a little from their sides. As they did so, they looked at their men seductively and thrust the sides of their hips toward their guys. As the girls took another step forward, I could feel the force field start to give way like it was made out of rubber. Us guys pushed our hands into the force field. But they didn't go very far. After the girls took another step, they turned their backs to each other. Then they arched their upper bodies back and took hold of each other's hands above their heads.

Then they walked in a circle. This posture showed a little under breast flesh along with their other wonderful attributes.

As the girls did this, they said in a singing like voice, "Oh. Oh. We need our men. We need our men." Us guys stood back up and made more pleas for mercy. Along with earnest statements of love and longing. Once the girls had made a circle, they broke off and Til headed toward Mav. But Sue and Bev grabbed Til around the waste to stop her. As Til bent forward to reach out to Mav, Til said with the same sort of singing voice and longing on her face, "I want my Mav. I want my Mav." Mav shoved his hands farther into the force field. Which had lessened in strength a little. But unfortunately for Mav, Til's hands remained maddeningly just out of reach as he pleaded more. As this happened, Sue and Bev said in a singing like voice and in unison, "You can't have him... you can't have him." Then the girls reformed onto a circle again. But from the side this time as they raised an arm between them and took hold of each other's hands. As they did a circle, they sang, "Oh. Oh. We need our men. We need our men."

When Sue came around, Sue tried to come to me. But was stopped as Bev and Til held her around her waist. As Sue leaned forward and reached out longingly, Sue sang, "Erik my love. Erik my love." I tried to reach farther into the force field. But Sue's hands too remained maddeningly just out of reach. I said, "Oh Darling! You're killing me!" As this was happening, Bev and Til said in a singing like voice and in unison, "You can't have him...You can't have him." The

276

girls then did what they did before. Singing as they walked in a circle, "Oh. Oh. We need our men. We need our men." This time, when Bev came around, she too tried to go to Zem. But Bev was held around her waist by Til and Sue. Bev leaned forward and reached out to Zem with longing on her face. Bev sang, "I need my Zem. I need my Zem." With pleas of love and longing, Zem too tried to reach Bev's hands through the force field. But Bev's hands remained maddeningly just out of reach. Again, as this was happening, Til and Sue sang in unison, "You can't have him...You can't have him." The girls then reformed onto a circle from the side as they held their raised arms between them and held hands. As they started to do another circle, Zem cried out to Bev, "My love! You're being so horrible!" Mav cried out to Til, "Darling! This is much worse than what I did to you!" I cried out to Sue, "Oh darling! I need you so bad!"

The girls came together and embraced each other as they grinned at us. Til said, "Have you guys learned your lesson?" We withdrew our hands from the force field as us guys made impassioned pleas of agreement. The girls grinned at each other. Til said to Bev and Sue, "Should we take pity on them?" Bev and Sue giggled. Which Til quickly joined in on. They all looked at each other as they shared in each other's amusement. Then Bev said, "Well... I suppose." Bev

looked at us and said, "Do you promise to behave yourselves? We don't want this to turn into an orgy." Us guys quickly agreed with looks of happy, relieved anticipation on our faces. Til said, "Ok. Wait a minute." The girls turned around as a Nal came up from the side of the upper story levitating three folded, mostly white garments below it. I assumed it must have been waiting just below for this moment. The small sparkling bits reformed into Mim and Pam. Sas went over to them, but left her force field in place. Bev said to them, "Thank you guys. You were just perfect." Mim, Pam and Sas began to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles as they all said in unison, "You're welcome." The girls took the garments and unfurled them with their backs to us. Which wasn't a lot of help for us guys. Because all three of our girls really had it going on in the butt department too.

They looked at their shirts. Bev and Til swapped theirs. Then the girls started to put their garments on with their backs to us. Bev, Til and Sue slipped on their garments. They were like T-shirts that went down to just above their knees. I could see that they had about six small, solid red hearts about five inches across scattered about their backs in a random pattern. These were also randomly tilted slightly off from their vertical axis. They were just like the design on our mugs. Us guys couldn't help but to give them sentimental, loving smiles. The girls turned around and grinned at their guys. This caused a bit more loving sentimentality to come across our faces. This was because on the fronts of the girls shirts, along with some smaller solid red hearts scattered about, was a red heart outline with a light blue background inside. This was about a foot across with pictures on the light blue background like were on the coco mugs. On Sue's there was a picture of Sue and I with the words, Erik + Sue below it. Bev's shirt had a picture of Zem and Bev with the words, Zem + Bev below it. Til's shirt had a picture of Mav and Til with the words, Mav + Til below it. The girls walked over and stopped a couple feet from the force field. Just across from their guys.

277

Zem, Mav and I all had our hands resting on the force field as a look of anticipation came over our faces. Bev said to Zem, Mav and I, "Remember. You promised to behave yourselves." Us guys all quickly agreed with looks of eager anticipation written across our loving faces. Pim, San and Tal transformed themselves into their normal shape and started heading toward their girls. Mim, Pam and Sas parted and headed for their guys. At the same time, the force field between us disappeared. Us guys literally leapt into action. We all embraced our partners and lifted them into the air. The girls gave out little, somewhat surprised but delighted, high pitched yells as we did so. Then they started to laugh as we spun them around in the air. The Nal

couples came together when they reached their particular partners. They all extruded loving tendrils over the surfaces of their partners as they all began to glow with their chosen color. Zem, Mav and I feverishly landed quick kisses on our girls around the cheeks, foreheads, ears and necks. Which caused the girls to giggle with delight. They all had their eyes lightly closed with beaming grins on their delighted faces as they were peppered with these quick kisses.

In between groupings of kisses, I made quick and impassioned proclamations of love, adoration and various compliments to Sue. They came too fast and in too great a variety to go into. Zem and Mav were no doubt saying the same sorts of things to their girls as they too peppered them in kisses. I couldn't understand what they were saying. Because they were speaking in their Reall language. Which given the loving excitement they were no doubt experiencing too at being reunited with their loved one, was no surprise. Bev, Til and Sue's grins turned to big, loving smiles. The girls gleefully soaked up this loving attention like a sponge. And I was more than happy to give Sue plenty of this attention to soak up. Panny and Lika also excitedly scampered around our feet. Grabbing one persons leg and swinging themselves around and doing the same thing with another's. Along with excitedly playing with each other. After this initial burst of enthusiasm, I sat Sue back on her feet and started kissing her enthusiastic passion. Sue kissed me back passionately too. In between my fervent caresses, I grabbed and squeezed Sue everywhere I thought I could get away with.

Sue didn't put up any fuss. Not that it mattered. Because Zem and Mav were preoccupied with doing the same things with their girls. And Bev and Til were preoccupied with absorbing the loving they were receiving from their spouses.

This carried on for at least a good minute before I started kissing my way back toward Sue's ear and neck. After giving those a good kissing, as I fully embraced Sue, I said with a bit of adoring plaintiveness to my voice, "How could you be so mean! I thought I was going to explode!" Sue giggled a little. Having heard what I said, Bev and Til giggled a little too. Mav said to Til, "You're so lucky that the others are around!" Zem said to Bev, "I thought I was going to die!" This caused the girls to giggle again. Then we all parted from our girls enough for us to look at them with loving adoration. The Nal couples retracted their tendrils from their partner's surfaces as their glow began to fade. Bev, Til and Sue were grinning delightedly. Bev said, "You guys had it coming."

The Nal couples started to circle around the surfaces of their partners at

278

differing angles. Zem said, "But you're too beautiful!" Bev looked at Zem more lovingly as Mav said to Til, "You know what you do to me as

it is!" At the same time, I said to Sue, "You're far too sexy darling!" Til said to Mav, "A little arousal never hurt anybody." What Til said caused Bev and Sue to turn to her and laugh. Til turned to them and laughed too. After they shared in each other's laughter, Mav said to Til with a grin, "You just wait until later. It's going to hurt you!" This time, we all laughed. All of us shared in each other's laughter. Afterwards, Zem said to Bev with a mirth filled voice, "After I get you alone, you're going to be walking funny for a week!" This caused more laughter. Afterwards, I looked around at the others and said, "That's no fair. I won't be able to pay Sue back before we go back to earth." Zem said, "Just be patient. You'll get your chance eventually." Sue then said to me with a loving voice, "Until then darling." Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. Then Sue stuck the tip of her tongue out enough for it to just be visible between her lips. The others seen Sue do this too. A more loving look came over my face as I said, "Oh darling!" I then brought my lips to Sue's. As I sucked Sue's tongue in past my lips, apparently Bev and Til did the same thing to their guys.

I heard Zem say to Bev, "Oh my love!" At about the same time, Mav said to Til, "Oh dearest love!" Needless to say, there were some slight moans of pleasure going on. As Sue and I kissed, I was overcome with love and the loving kiss that Sue was giving me. I felt a little weak in the knees. The feeling I was having must have been a little like what Sue must have experienced when she fainted. This caused me to break off our kiss and embraced Sue firmly. Again, it was amazing how much I loved my dear sweet love. I said with a voice that reflected my feelings and physical state, "Oh darling!" Sue embraced me back firmly and said softly but with some emotion in her voice, "My darling love!" This didn't help out my situation at all. So I just stood there and embraced Sue as I tried to compose myself. It probably took about twenty seconds before my strength fully returned to me. Sue was gently caressing my ear with her cheek. I started to caress Sue's cheek back with my ear. Sue brought her cheek back a little and rubbed it against mine. We slid our cheeks together in the direction of each other's lips and kissed with a loving tenderness that was extraordinary.

With Sue's sweet, loving lips and her wonderful embrace, at this moment, I again wondered how I could be so lucky. Just as far as Sue was concerned, winning the lottery back on earth couldn't have made me happier. We all continued to kiss and caress our partners. After about a minute, I again fully embraced Sue. We lovingly caressed and nuzzled each other with our eyes lightly closed and loving expressions on our faces. Zem and Bev were doing the same thing. As were Mav and Til. After about another minute of this, I parted from Sue enough to look at her beautiful face. We lovingly looked around each other's faces a little before again focusing on each other's loving eyes. I then smiled lovingly at Sue. Which made Sue do the same with me. I said, "Will you marry me darling?" Knowing I was only playing around, Sue grinned. Which made me grin too. Sue said with a loving voice, "But



we're already married darling."

The others overheard this and laughed a little. They turned their grinning faces

279

toward us. Zem was holding Bev in a somewhat loose embrace and Mav was also holding Til in a somewhat loose embrace. Sue and I glanced around at them as we all shared in each other's joy. Then I turned my grin back to Sue. Sue also turned her grin back to me. I got an extra happy expression on my face and said with a tone to my voice like I was recalling something, "Oh yeah!" Sue laughed. Which I and the others joined in on. I picked Sue up again and swung her around as I said, "How could I forget!" This added a little to everybody's laughter. As if I could forget our marriage! I brought Sue full circle and started to set her on her feet as we continued to laugh. After a bit of laughter, Sue said with a loving, mirth filled voice, "You're so silly darling." I sat Sue on her feet and we grinned widely at each other. We then kissed each other somewhere between tenderly and passionately. Zem and Bev took this opportunity to kiss each other again. As did Mav and Til. After a few extended moments of this, Bev parted her kiss from Zem and said, "I think our coco is getting cold darling." The rest of us parted our kiss from our partners and turned to Bev as we chuckled a little. Which Bev quickly joined in on. With the state of Reall technology, The pitcher the coco was in wouldn't let it get cold.

We all released our partners some and put an arm around our partner's lower backs. Zem and Bev held each other's forearms in front. Mav and Til placed a loving hand on the hand that they had around each other's waist. Sue and I did the same. As we headed toward the table, we all leaned the sides of our heads next to our partner's with loving smiles on our faces. As Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas continued to circle around their partner's surfaces, they levitated in that direction also. Panny and Lika walked on all fours next to each other as they followed us. They made bodily contact on their sides and nuzzled the sides of their heads together a little. At the same time, they fondled their prehensile tails together a little. Also at the same time, they made slight falik twittering sounds of affection.

### Chapter Thirteen Sunset On Planet Til

The sun of course had gotten nearer to the horizon. The clouds off to our right were showing a slightly orangish yellow color. At this height, I could still see some of the animals out in the field. There were all casting even longer shadows. It was an amazing sight. As we went toward the table, I thought to Zem and Mav, "Zem or Mav. Why didn't

you simply transport past the force field.” Zem thought back and said, “I knew the girls were just having fun. And with Sas being so naughty, (We could feel telepathic humor from our Nal as Zem added) it would have been very difficult to overcome her.” We had all stopped near our chairs at this point. Sas said verbally with a bit of amused and slightly plaintive edge to her voice, “It wasn’t my idea.” We all grinned up at Tal and Sas and chuckled a little. We could also feel a little more telepathic humor from our Nal. After the levity, Til picked up her bouquet and said to Mav with a big, loving smile, “You’re so thoughtful darling.” Sue and Bev also picked up their bouquets

280

as Til went to smell hers. They had taken on sentimental, loving smiles. Being happy that we had made our girls happy, us guys beamed grins.

After giving her flowers a smell, Til turned her pleased, sentimental smile to Mav and said, “Thank you darling.” Then they kissed each other lovingly. Bev said to Zem after smelling her flowers, “They’re beautiful darling. Thank you.” At the same time as Bev said, “Thank you” to Zem, Sue said to me, “You’re so sweet darling.” Sue and I began to kiss each other lovingly. Zem and Bev were already doing so. While this was going on, the upper portion of the house began to descend. After about thirty seconds or so, Mav and Til broke off their kiss and lovingly embraced each other. Soon after, Zem and Bev did the same. Sue and I also soon did the same. Mav and Til were the first to part their embrace. They smiled at each other lovingly for a moment. Then Mav moved their chairs. With three pairs of chairs around the table, the idea was probably for us all to sit next to our partners. But that plan went right out the window. Mav sat down as he and Til smiled at each other lovingly. Zem and Bev had parted at this point. Zem also moved their chairs a little.

Sue and I at this point were smiling at each other lovingly. Then Til sat across Mav’s lap, facing in the general direction of Zem and Bev. Til placed her flowers in one hand and put her arm around Mav’s shoulders. Zem sat down as I moved our chairs a little. I angled my chair a little toward the sunset direction. So that with Sue sitting across my lap, she would be facing more in the direction of Zem, Bev, Mav and Til. Bev sat across Zem’s lap, facing in the general direction of Mav and Til. Panny and Lika jumped up on the mountain side of the table as I sat down. Panny and Lika just sat at the end of the table. Though they eyed the tray of drinks with interest. Sue sat across my lap, facing in the general direction of the others. I took Sue’s bouquet as we smiled at each other lovingly. Then I took on more of a look of solemn love as Zem, Bev, Mav and Til smiled at us. I said to Sue with a voice of solemn love, “These flowers remind me of our bed at the island shack darling.” Sue’s eyes glazed over with love. Mind did too as I added, “My love for you will outlast time itself.” Then Sue took on

a look of emotional love. Sue said, "Oh darling!"

We began to kiss each other passionately. As we did so, I pressed the flowers lightly against the sides of our faces. From the way this made Sue kiss me, just as I had planned, it no doubt reminded her of our honeymoon bed too. Though I wasn't paying much attention at the moment to anything else but Sue, Mav said to Til with a loving voice, "You put to shame any flower darling." Til said with a highly loving voice, "Oh, my love!" They started kissing passionately too as Mav moved the flowers of Til's bouquet next to the sides of their faces. Zem and Bev were looking at each other with looks of solemn love. Zem said to Bev, "Your very being darling is more beautiful than a whole planet of flowers." Bev said, "Oh, my dearest darling!" They too started kissing each other passionately. Zem lightly pressed the flowers of Bev's bouquet against the sides of their faces. Sue and I gave off slight moans of pleasure as we caressed each other's tongues together. My dearest, sweet love caressed me every way she could with her hands. Sue also really gave it to me with her soft, loving lips. The intoxicating, wonderful smell of the soft flowers only added to the delight.

281

Unknown to me at the time, Tal and Sas also circled around each other's surfaces at a little faster speed. As Pim and Mim were doing with each other. San and Pam were also doing the same with each other. Also, the upper floor of the house settled back onto the lower floor. All of this loving carried on for a couple of minutes. Then I heard Til say softly to Mav with loving emotion, "Oh darling!" I pulled our flowers back a little, but still kept them raised. Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked lovingly into each other's eyes. I heard Mav say to Til with a loving voice, "Til my love!" I also heard Bev say to Zem with loving conviction in her voice, "I love you so much darling." Zem answered Bev and said to her in the same manner, "I love you so much too darling." Sue got a slight smile on her face. I gave Sue a slight smile too. Sue seemed to get a bit of a mischievous look on her face as her little smile quickly turned to a bigger one. I also quickly took on a bigger one. Sue then quickly went to a slight grin. I quickly did the same. Sue then quickly went to a bigger grin. I quickly matched Sue. Sue then quickly went to a really big grin. I quickly did the same. Sue then quickly raised her eyebrows and made a really happy face with a really big grin. I quickly did the same.

Sue then laughed. I laughed too as Sue put her head next to mine and said, "I love you so much darling!" I said, "I love you so much too my love!" As we hugged, I held Sue's bouquet around her back. After a few extended moments, Sue and I parted our hug and briefly looked at each other lovingly. Then we smiled at the others. I placed Sue's bouquet on the table so I could place that hand on Sue's thigh. Zem

and Bev were looking lovingly at each other. Mav had already placed Til's bouquet on the table and had his hand on Til's thigh. Both Til and Mav were grinning at us. Sue and I grinned at them too. Til said, "What were you two laughing about." Zem and Bev also grinned over at us. Zem sat Bev's bouquet on the table too. Sue said, "Just a little thing I did. It's really nothing. I will tell you and Bev. But not the guys. In case you want see how they will react if you do the same thing to them sometime." Sue then appeared to think to Til and Bev. Zem had his hand on Bev's thigh at this point. Afterwards, the girls chuckled a little. Sue then turned her grin to me and said, "I guess we're not all that original. But don't tell Zem or Mav anyway."

We were all grinning of course as I said, "I think we've learned our lesson as far as messing with you girls goes." This caused us all to laugh. Afterwards, Til said, "But sometimes we like being messed with." We all laughed again. After the levity, Bev said, "We weren't really mad at you for chasing us." Zem said to Bev, "I would hate to see what would happen if you got really mad." This made us all laugh again. Afterwards, Bev said to Zem, "Would you have preferred that we had not done it?" Zem said, "No way! You were a wonder!" As Zem and Bev hugged, Mav said to Til with a loving expression on his face, "You have to do that for me again when we're alone." This caused Til to giggle a little and then kiss Mav. At the same time as this was going on between Mav and Til, I said to Sue with a loving smile, "It was hard to believe you could be so sexy darling." This made Sue grin in a loving manner. Sue said sweetly, "Didn't I give you reason to believe it earlier my love." My eyes glazed over with love. I also had passion written on my face. Which caused Sue's expression to change to a

282

similar look. I said with a voice just dripping with love, "Oh, dearest darling! Did you ever!"

Then Sue and I kissed each other passionately. We all kissed our partners for a good minute before we went back to hugging our partners. With all of the usual caressing and nuzzling. After a bit of this, Sue and I turned happy smiles toward the others. Mav and Til were still hugging, caressing and nuzzling. Zem had a hand on Bev's cheek and Bev had a hand on Zem's. They were looking lovingly into each other's eyes. Zem leaned his cheek into Bev's palm while he slowly closed his eyes. Then Zem caressed Bev's palm with his cheek a little and then kissed Bev's wrist. Zem then brought his face toward Bev's again as he slowly opened his eyes and lovingly looked again into Bev's eyes. Bev started to do the same thing to Zem as I went and kissed Sue on the neck. Sue leaned her head back and to the side a little with a pleased look on her face. As Sue did so, Sue slid the hand she had on my shoulder up and caressed the back of my head. After a little kissing, I opened my mouth wider and kneaded with my

lips one of those strands of muscle that ran from the base of Sue's neck to the base of her skull.

This caused Sue to give out a short, soft, little, pleased moan as I did so. Sue also caressed a bit of my head with the bottom of her jaw as she continued to caress the back of my head with one hand. I continued doing what I was. Oh how I would have loved to be alone with Sue right now. After a few extended moments of this, I started kissing my way back up toward Sue's wonderful lips. Sue started kissing her way down toward mine. When our lips met, we kissed each other passionately. Both Sue and I oozed with happiness. (Though not literally) After close to a minute of kissing, I heard Mav say to Til, "Let me get rid of this darling." Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and smiled at Mav and Til. Mav was taking off Til's hair mimicking head jewelry. Zem said to Bev, "Can I remove yours too darling?" Bev was smiling sweetly at Zem as she said, "Sure darling." I said to Mav and Zem, "I think their head jewelry looks pretty nice." Mav had just set Til's jewelry on the table. Til was rubbing her cranium. Everybody smiled at me as Mav said, "It does look nice. But it kind of gets in the way." I said, "I hope I don't say anything to offend any of you. But all of you aren't naturally bald are you."

My question made everybody's smiles widen a bit as Bev rubbed her cranium too. Sue said to me, "No they aren't dear. But one of them can tell you why they're bald." Mav said, "As the Reall cranium expanded with evolution, our hair follicles became more widely spaced. It eventually became more fashionable to just shave it off." Til then said, "I don't know how much Bev or Zem told you, but everything we are came about through eugenics. Our kind stayed away from genetic manipulation. Breeding our kind to have more closely spaced follicles wasn't something our kind thought to be necessary." I smiled sweetly at Til and Bev as I said, "I can certainly see why." Everybody grinned at me. Though Bev and Til's grins were extra wide. Zem gave Bev a brief extra firm hug. Mav did the same with Til as Til said to me, "Oh! You're such a dear!" Bev said, "You're so sweet!" I said, "It's interesting that for beings as advanced as you are, your craniums aren't as unusually large as artists renderings I've seen of the Eban.

283

That humans as you know refer to as Grays. As far as your beauty goes, I'm just speaking the truth." Zem, Bev, Mav and Til gave me sentimental, appreciative smiles. Though Bev and Til's were slightly more appreciative.

Bev said with an appreciative, sentimental voice, "Oh! You've had it now!" Then Bev looked up at Pim and Mim and seemed to think something. Pim and Mim stopped circling each other and parted. San and Pam did the same. As did Tal and Sas. At the same time, they all emitted telepathic humor. Mim, Pam and Sas started to move toward me. As they did so, Mim said verbally, "Look out Sue!" We all laughed

as Mim, Pam and Sas all transformed themselves into Nal sized, smiling female lips. Sue backed away from me a little as they puckered up. Then they all started landing quick kisses around my face and head. They would back off about three inches and reposition themselves before coming in to land another quick smooch. They also made smooching sounds with each smooch. I had my eyes lightly closed with a big grin on my face. All this increased everybody's mirth. After each had landed about four kisses each, they backed away with grinning mouths as I opened my eyes. We all continued laughing a little more. The Nal continued to emit telepathic humor. Then Sue grinned at Pim, San and Tal. Sue said with a slightly plaintive voice, "I think Zem and Mav are handsome too."

Knowing what Sue was up to, we all laughed again. Pim, San and Tal all transformed themselves into smiling male lips. Then they headed toward Sue. They also puckered their lips and landed a number of quick kisses around Sue's head and face. Sue lightly closed her eyes and giggled with delight as Pim, San and Tal made male smooching sounds. After landing about four kisses each, they too backed away. Sue opened her eyes with a big grin on her face. Pim, San and Tal turned into grinning smiles. The rest of our laughter diminished into chuckles as Sue said to them, "You're all such dears!" The Tal and Sas's grins turned into kissing lips and they kissed each other. San and Pam did the same. So did Pim and Mim, at first. Looking at the backs of their lips, it kind of looked like featureless skin. Pim turned so the back of Mim faced us. Then Pim started kissing Mim a little more fully. The back of the Mim lips bulged out a little. The bulge also moved a little. Like Pim was giving Mim some tongue! Which he probably was. Though it was clear that he was doing it just to be amusing. All of us, except for Zem, busted up laughing. Zem managed to say quickly, "Pim! You're so naughty!" Then Zem busted up laughing too.

The Nal all separated and turned their grinning mouth shapes toward us all. Then they laughed verbally as their mouth shapes also formed laughing shapes. After the laughter, Sue said, "You guys are so cute." Then Sue looked at Tal and Sas and said, "I have an idea. But let's keep it secret for now." Then Sue thought to me, "Do what I do honey." Sue then turned to Tal and Sas and thought, "Let us place your mouths over ours." Tal and Sas emitted telepathic humor as they came down to Sue and I. Sue and I released each other. Sue took hold of Sas and I took hold of Tal. We placed them over our smiling lips. Though they didn't follow the contours of our faces. Then Sue and I turned to the others. Everybody busted up laughing as Sue and I put an arm back around each other. Pim, Mim, San and Pam's lips again took on a laughing shape as

284

they laughed verbally. The laughter and Sue and I's appearance

caused Panny and Lika to chatter excitedly. They excitedly scampered over to the table and hopped on Sue's lap. Sue and I offhandedly petted them as we looked at the others.

Sas and Tal's grinning mouths were of course much larger than Sue and I's. I knew that it had to look funny. Which judging from everybody's reaction, it was. Tal, Sas, Sue and I emitted telepathic humor at everybody's reaction. Then Sue and I briefly looked at each other. This caused us to emit more telepathic humor. Sue and I then looked up at Pim, Mim, San and Pam. Then we looked at the others. Sue and I were enjoying their laughter. Til managed to get out between laughs, "That's so cute!" After causing a little more laughter, Sue and I again turned to each other. Sue said with a mirthful thought, "Thanks guys. That's enough." Sue and I then brought our faces closer to each others. Tal and Sas kissed. Then Sue and I backed our faces away from them and grinned widely. They rose up into the air and transformed themselves into their normal shape. Then they started to circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles and at a little faster speed than normal. Pim and Mim did the same. As did San and Pam. Sue and I then turned to the others. We were all grinning as Bev said, "We're going to have to add that to your picture album!"

Zem said to Sue with a bit of an amused, appreciative voice, "In all the time I have been around, I have only seen a situation arise a few times where somebody did that. You're so clever!" Sue and I gave each other a brief, extra hug with the arms we had around each other. Panny and Lika, who were laying on Sue's lap by this time, also received an extra pet. Mav then added, "But seeing somebody do it after such a long time is just as funny!" We all laughed a little again. Then Sue said to everybody with a beaming grin, "I suppose after all the millions of years you guys have been around, there isn't a lot you haven't seen." Bev said, "There probably isn't much. But I don't think any of us have seen anybody use their faces to make the Nal lips kiss afterwards. That was so adorable!" Sue said, "Well part of that was Tal and Sas knowing how to play along." We all then grinned up at them. All the Nal by this point weren't circling each other as fast. But Sue's sharing Bev's complement with them made them speed up a little again. We all then turned grins back to each other. Then Mav turned his grin to Til and said, "Speaking of something original, whose idea was your little show."

We all grinned at Til to hear her answer. Though Bev and Sue obviously already knew the answer. Til said to Mav, "Sue came up with the plan. We collaborated on everything else." Zem looked at Sue and said in a joking around manner, "You humans are diabolical!" We all laughed. Though it obviously wasn't because of what Zem said, our Nal began to diminish the speed at which they circled each other. After the laughter, Mav said, "Erik was right. You are a foul temptress!" This caused even more laughter. Afterwards, Zem said, "Not that our girls need the help, I couldn't be happier that you help

Bev be that way a little more.” Zem then looked at Bev and added, “You were a dream!” Zem’s expression turned more loving. Bev looked at Zem in the same way as Zem added, “And you always will be darling.” Bev looked at Zem with an emotional

285

look of love and said, “Oh Zem!” This got them kissing passionately again. Mav, Til, Sue and I smiled sentimentally at them for a few moments. Then Mav and Til turned their sentimental smiles to Sue and I. Sue and I smiled sentimentally at them too. Mav said, “The idea of your show has shown me again that you two are well worth having around.”

Til smiled sweetly at Sue and I as she said, “I just hope you can handle having us for friends too.” What Til said caused the insides of Sue and I’s eyebrows to arch upwards with emotion. Sue and I looked at each other as our faces became overtaken with more emotion. Sue said, “Oh darling! It’s too wonderful!” Sue and I firmly embraced each other. I said to Sue with some emotion in my voice, “I know!” For a few moments, Zem, Bev, Mav and Til enjoyed Sue and I’s joy with sentimental smiles on their faces. Then Sue and I heard Zem say to Til and Mav in a kind of joking around manner, “Just don’t forget whose humans they are.” Zem, Bev and Mav laughed a bit. Sue and I turned to look at them with our expressions still showing happy emotion. Til was looking at Zem with a big, mock, pouty look. This caused Sue and I to laugh. Til also started laughing. We all share in each other’s laughter for about forty seconds or so. The expression Til made was so adorable! And the reason for it especially pleased Sue and I. After laughter, Sue got a surprised look on her face. Sue said in a kidding around manner, “Oh no! It’s happening again!”

We all started laughing again. All of us knew what was going on. It was the return of the hug monster! Sue took on a mock, wild eyed look. Then Sue took hold of Panny and Lika and sat them on the table. Sue then started making hug monster sounds as she quickly stood up. Then Sue started to run around the back of our chair toward the field side of the table. As Sue did so, Sue held her arms out in a hug monster way. This excitement caused Panny and Lika to jump off the table and excitedly follow Sue. When Sue got to Zem and Bev, Sue stuck her head in between Zem and Bev’s and gave them both a hug monster hug. Rocking both of them from side to side a little in their sitting position. Which increased Zem and Bev’s laughter. After giving them a good hug monster hug, Sue stood erect and turned her attention to Mav and Til. Then Sue hug monstered her way over to them as Panny and Lika playfully scampered about Sue’s feet. Sue then gave Mav and Til the hug monster treatment. Rocking them back and forth a little too. Which also increased their laughter a little. Sue gave them this treatment for a few moments. Then Sue just hugged them with her eyes lightly closed and a happy expression on her face.



Our laughter faded away after a few extended moments as we looked at the scene with sentimental smiles on our faces. Sue said, "You're both so wonderful!" Mav and Til hugged Sue back to what extent they could. Til said with a sentimental voice, "Thank you. You're so sweet." Mav said with the same kind of voice, "Zem and Bev were lucky to have found you both." Sue gave them both a brief, extra hug. Then Sue gave Til and Mav a quick peck on the cheek. Sue then stood erect and grinned at Zem and Bev. Speaking to Mav and Til while she grinned at Zem and Bev, Sue said with a kidding around voice, "If Zem is going to be stingy and not share us, maybe Erik and I should run away and come stay with you guys." This causes a little more laughter. We all looked

286

around to each other to share in each other's laughter. After this bit of laughter, Bev took on a mock annoyed look and shook her finger at Sue. At the same time, Bev said with a kidding around, scolding voice, "You're a naughty, naughty human!" This caused us all to bust up laughing again. But to a little greater degree than before. Our Nal also emitted telepathic humor. Sue went back toward Zem and Bev as we all laughed.

Then Sue hugged Zem and Bev again when she got to them. After some laughter, Sue said, "You're both way too wonderful! Erik and I could never run away from you!" All of us had extra happy grins on our faces. After giving Zem and Bev a good hug, Sue gave Bev and Zem a quick kiss on their cheeks. Sue then stood erect as she, Zem and Bev exchanged grins. Then Sue made her way back over to me. I stood up at Sue's approach. As Sue came over, we were grinning at each other as I said, "If you were any sweeter darling, you would give us all diabetes." This made everybody chuckle. Which I quickly joined in on. I could also sense a little amusement from our Nal. Then Sue said, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting our kiss, we smiled at each other lovingly. Til said, "Speaking of sweet. How about some coco?" We all exchanged big smiles as Bev said, "Good idea." Sue and I let go of each other and turned toward them with big smiles still on our faces. I said, "That sounds good." Sue and I went to our chair. Bev and Til stood up as Sue stepped closer to the tray. Us guys smiled at our girls as they stood at the table.

Til picked up one of the small mugs and looked at it with a grin. Sue did the same with the other small mug. Seeing what was going on, Panny and Lika jumped up on the field end of the table and sat down with looks of anticipation on their faces. Til said, "These are just adorable." Sue said, "They're so cute!" Then Til glanced around at Zem and Mav and me as she said, "Who thought of these." Mav said with a beaming grin, "It was me." Til said, "You're such a dear!" Then Til leaned over briefly to give Mav a brief but loving kiss. Til then stood

and handed the small mug to Bev. Bev also admired it with a big grin. Zem also took this opportunity to look at it a little closer. Then Bev said to Mav, "They're so sweet! Thank you." Mav was still beaming a grin as he said, "You're welcome." Then Til picked up a couple mugs from the tray and set them near Bev. Til then reached for a couple other mugs and sat them near her. As Sue sat one of the small mugs near Til, apparently Sue figured that a couple of the larger mugs were the ones that she had made for Mav and Til. But didn't know which were which. Because Sue said to Til with a smile, "Which are the ones I had made for you and Mav?"

Bev sat the smaller mug near the one Sue sat down. As Til reached for the pitcher, Til said, "The ones I took." Sue said, "How can you tell them apart." Til said, "Without getting all technical, let's just say that we can sense the auras you imprinted on them." For a couple of moments, Sue and I gave each other slightly surprised, happy looks as Til poured coco. Then Sue turned back and said to Til, "You guys are constantly amazing." Til briefly smiled at Sue as she poured. Responding to what Sue said, Zem gave the same response that Bev had back on planet Bev when I told them that they were wonderful. Zem said, "It's a dirty job. But somebody has to do it." This made us all laugh. Til had to

287

stop pouring. After the laughter, Til said to Zem with an amused but slightly plaintive voice, "Stop it! You're going to make me spill!" This caused a little more laughter. Til then continued pouring with a little more of a look of concentration on her face. Sue picked up a couple mugs and sat these closer to herself. Til sat a mug near Mav, close to her bouquet. As Til started to pour coco into the other mug, Sue turned her grin to the bartok for a moment.

Then Sue smiled at Mav and said, "The bartok were so brave and sweet to come to our assistance. Would there be anything wrong with sending them some chocolate drink too?" Mav said to Sue with a kidding around voice, "Are you trying to spoil my bartok too?" We all laughed. Til then said as she sat her other mug near Mav's, "Don't pay any attention to him. I would have thought up an added reward if Mav hadn't. But to be fair, let's let Pam decide." Mav said, "You know what dear softies the Nal girls are." We all turned our grins to Pam and San. At this moment, our Nal were about four feet above the table. Pim and Mim were nearest to the sunset end of the table and circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Tal and Sas were above the middle of the table and doing the same. San and Pam were closer to the mountain end of the table and doing the same. What Mav said caused all of the Nal couples to start circling around their partners at a little faster speed. Pam said to Mav, "Thank you!" Mim said, "You're so sweet!" Sas said, "You're such a dear!" This made everybody's grins a little bigger.

Then Sue said to Pam, "Well Pam. Whaddya think." Pam said with a hint of happiness to her voice, "San and I will be glad to take care of it." Pam and San shot off in the direction of the maketake machine as they continued to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles. We all grinned at them for a moment as they went. Then Til poured out some coco into Panny and Lika's little mugs. I said to Mav, "Do you have any cocoa trees here?" Til handed her pitcher over to Bev. Mav said, "Actually, they're called cacao trees." Til began to levitate the small mugs over to Panny and Lika as Bev took the pitcher. At the same time, Mav added, "But we don't have any here. Though creating some would be easy enough. Someday, the bartok should learn how to roast them and mix them with one of the sweet plant extracts." Panny and Lika at this point were holding their little mugs and beginning to take a drink. Til sat down across Mav's lap. Bev poured out coco for Zem and herself. As Mav and Til gave each other a brief but loving kiss, Zem said to Sue and I, "We have them on planet Bev. Which the humans there were happy to find out."

Sue said, "No doubt it was just one of the many things they were happy to find out." We all grinned at Sue. Though Bev only did so briefly as she finished pouring. At this point, San and Pam were heading in the direction of the bartok. San levitated a fairly good sized black kettle below him. It also had a loop of metal across the top and there appeared to be some sort of utensil leaning next to the inside rim. Pam levitated a number of dark gray, metal looking, fairly tall mugs below her. One for each bartok. Bev finished pouring and handed the pitcher over to Sue. I said as Bev sat their mugs nearer to where they were sitting, "I think the bartok are going to like their coco." We all smiled in that direction as Bev sat across Zem's lap. The bartok also saw what was heading in

288

their direction. Til smiled back at Sue and said, "I think you should tell them why they're receiving it." Sue said to Til with an extra happy expression on her face, "What should I say." We all grinned at Sue and Til as Til said, "To say, Drink for brave bartok from Sue, think "Wal ga terat bartok hoot Sue." Sue sat the pitched down and said happily, "Ok!"

We all looked back in that direction. The bartok were bowing to San and Pam with their faces to the ground. San sat the kettle right next to the bartok's fire. Pam sat the mugs on the ground near one of the baskets. Sue then thought to them. We could hear Sue's thoughts. San or Pam probably transmitted them verbally to the bartok. Then our Nal emitted their voices for us to hear as they repeatedly bowed on our direction. Their statements mainly consisted of, "Ak gutta Sue!" Sue was just beaming a wide grin. Our Nal stopped transmitting their voices to us. Sue picked up the pitcher again and started pouring coco into our mugs. Though Sue frequently glanced over at the bartok as

she did so. Pam levitated one of the mugs to the kettle. Probably because of instruction from Pam, the bartok stopped what they were doing, sat up and looked at Pam and San as San levitated a ladle out of the kettle and poured coco into the mug. As Pam levitated the now filled mug handle first over to Lega, I said to the others, "They may think it looks like mud until they take a drink." Everybody briefly grinned at me before turning back to the bartok. Lega humbly took the mug and took a small sip. The other bartok looked at him with expectant glances.

Even at this distance, I could see Lega's face light up as he nodded approvingly at the others and said something to them. San and Pam began to levitate back in our direction. The other bartok started going for mugs themselves. Sue sat the pitcher back on the tray and said, "They like it. I'm so glad." We all smiled at Sue. Til said, as Sue moved our mugs closer to me, "How could they not." Sue sat across my lap as we briefly smiled at each other. Then I glanced from Bev to Til and said, "Speaking of mud, do these words hold any significance for you. All mud, all the time!" Everybody was grinning at me. Bev and Til's grins were a little wider. Bev said with a happy tone to her voice, "Yes it does!" Sue took on a look of happy curiosity as she looked at Bev and Til. Sue said, "What's that all about." Bev said, "It's a mud themed theme park on the planet of another Reall couple. They have many other amusement parks on their planet. But the mud one has many messy but fun activities." San and Pam arrived. Pam said, "I cautioned them that it was hot and to drink it slowly." We all had our grins turned toward them. San said, "I cautioned them not to drink too much if their bellies were very full."

Sue said, "Thank you. You're both so sweet and thoughtful." San and Pam began to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Mav picked up his mug and said, "Luckily for us, we all know our way around a mug of coco." We all picked up our mugs and took a drink. Once we had sat our mugs back down, I said to Sue, "Zem promised to take us to the mud park someday." Sue was looking at me with a look of excited surprise as I added, "And Mav said that he and Til would join us." Sue turned her look of excited surprise to the others and said, "Oh boy! I can't wait!" Sue's "I can't wait" statement made us all

289

chuckle. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the chuckling, I said to Zem, "You know who I think would like such a park." Then Zem said, "Would it involve a couple who are already kind of slippery?" Zem guessed it! We all chuckled a bit more. Sue said, "I know! Your friends Keekay and Fillok!" Zem said, "That's right." Bev said, "Many Firume have visited there. Though they have similar places of enjoyment themselves." Til said to Sue, "Millions of us Reall couples also have Firume friends we visit with from time to time. Or they with

us. They are very kind and witty beings. Much like yourselves.”

This made Sue and I beam grins as Til added, “But of course, I’m afraid that they are much more intelligent than humans. But the more you learn the difference between what is truly right and wrong, it goes a long way in making up for a lack of mental ability and technical knowledge.” Sue and I both took on appreciative, sentimental smiles as Sue said, “That’s one of the many things we have to thank you all for.” Bev said, “Science is fun and interesting. But there isn’t a lot of room for levity in it. Though it isn’t something we dwell on a lot with the species advanced enough for us to have contact with. So you can see that technical knowledge isn’t that important to us when it comes down to just having fun.” I said, “Lucky us.” This caused everybody to chuckle. After the levity, we all took another sip of our coco. After setting the mugs back down, I smiled at the others and said, “Even though as couples, you probably know each other to an extent I couldn’t imagine. But no doubt you still have the ability to ask each other fairly basic questions about each other.” Everybody grinned at me. Which made me grin too. Sue’s grin was a little wider. Probably because Sue knew what I was talking about.

Til said, “Of course.” I said, “Though I guess it doesn’t really matter what kinds of questions you ask. But Sue and I came up with a fun little game. You may want to try it yourself sometime, if you haven’t already.” Then Bev said, “Sue told Til and I about your question asking game. It was just beautiful.” Til said, “It was a new one on us. But you can tell Mav and Zem about it.” I said to Mav and Zem, “The point of the game is that when you place a petal on your partner, you get to ask a question of them. When your partner places a petal on you, they get to answer the question. Though it works best when you’re in a bed covered with flowers, loose flower petals and are nude.” Zem, Bev, Mav and Til were giving me sentimental smiles at this point. Sue was giving me a loving smile. I then said, “Allow me to demonstrate.” I reached over to Sue’s bouquet and picked off a petal off from one of the flowers. Then I gave it a little lick and stuck it to Sue’s forearm. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. I said with a loving tone to my voice, “Did I explain it well enough darling?”

Sue turned her attention to her bouquet and picked off a petal herself. Then Sue turned back to me and gave it a little lick. Seeing Sue use her tongue was quite sexy. Sue then stuck the petal to the side and base of my neck. Then Sue said to me with a gentle, loving voice, “Yes you did darling.” We gave each a brief but loving kiss. Then we turned back to the others. We all smiled sentimentally at each other as Sue laid her cheek against my head. I said to Mav and Zem, “As you can imagine, Sue and I ended up with quite a few petals stuck to us.” Zem said with a sentimental tone to his voice, “That does sound

like a fun game.” Mav reached over for a petal from Til’s bouquet. Zem reached for one from Bev’s bouquet. Us couples smiled lovingly at our partners. Sue and I then kissed each other lovingly. As we did so, I heard Mav say to Til with a loving voice, “Are you as eager to give it a try as I am darling?” At about the same time, Zem said to Bev with a loving voice, “Do you really like flower petals darling?” It wasn’t long before I heard Til say to Mav with a loving voice, “Yes I am my love.” At about the same time, I heard Bev say to Zem with a loving voice, “The more, the merrier darling.”

No doubt all of them had a flower petal stuck to them. After their exchange, Sue slipped me a little tongue. Our kiss then started to turn more passionate. Though I didn’t know at the time, there was little doubt that the other couples were kissing their partners in the same way. This went on for about a minute before we started to break off our kisses and lovingly embrace and nuzzle our partners. Mav said in an emotional voice to Til as they did so, “I love you more every second darling.” Til said in a bit of a teary voice, “You know I feel the same way my darling love!” At this point, Zem was busy kissing Bev’s ear. Of course, they both had their eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on their faces. I said to Sue in a soft emotional voice, “I know exactly how Mav feels my wife.” Sue embraced me a little more firmly and said in a soft, emotional voice, “I know! I feel the same way about you my husband!” Sue and I slid our cheeks toward each other’s lips. We brought our lips together and kissed each other passionately again. All of us must have given our partners love for about another two minutes.

Then, as I gave Sue’s ear some love, I stopped and whispered extra quietly into Sue’s ear so nobody else could hear, “You make me so hard darling!” Sue brought her lips to my ear as she gave off a little moan of pleasure. Then Sue whispered very quietly into my ear, “I want your dick so bad darling!” Sue then started giving my ear some loving kisses as she shifted her weight a little on my lap a couple times. I caressed Sue a little more as I let Sue’s love penetrate my being. After about forty seconds or so, we went back to nuzzling and caressing. About thirty seconds or so later, Sue and I parted our embrace enough to look at each other lovingly. After a few extended moments, we gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we placed the sides of our heads together as we looked at the others with sentimental smiles on our faces. At this point, Zem and Bev were looking lovingly into each other’s eyes. Zem had a flower petal stuck near the base of his neck. Bev had one stuck to the side of her elbow. Mav and Til were embracing, caressing and nuzzling each other. Both of course with their eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on their faces.

Zem and Bev turned to face us as they leaned the sides of their heads together. Both of them smiled sentimentally at us. Zem said to Sue and I with a sentimental tone to his voice, “Are your lips getting a little tired?” Then Zem grinned. Bev, Sue and I grinned too. Mav and

Til parted their embrace a little and leaned the sides of their heads together. Mav had a flower petal stuck on the front base of his neck. Til had one stuck to her forearm too. They smiled sentimentally at Sue and I. Though at seeing our grins, they grinned too. Sue said, "We just thought we should take a break before they fuse." This made

291

everybody laugh as we all parted our heads from our partner's. We shared in our partner's laugh as well as each other's. After the laughter, Bev said with some mirth still in her voice, "That would make drinking coco a little difficult!" This caused us to laugh some more. After the laughter, I said, "Well before that happens." I then reached for my mug. Everybody else did the same. We all took a drink of coco. Everybody was wearing big smiles as we sat our mugs back down. I said to Mav, "Apart from stopping kissing to keep lips from fusing, you know what would be a big help?"

Everybody was grinning again as Mav said, "What's that." I said, "If you had anything that was the opposite of viagra." Apparently, Zem, Bev, Mav and Til knew what I was talking about. Because they started laughing. Sue looked at me with an open mouthed, surprised, but slightly amused expression on her face. Sue said with a slightly embarrassed edge to her voice, "Erik!" This only increased everybody's laughter. Sue turned her surprised look to the others. Then Sue started laughing too. After the laughter, Mav said to me with a mirth filled voice as he briefly held Til a little more firmly, "I know what you mean!" Zem quickly added as he briefly held Bev a little more firmly, "I feel your pain!" This caused a little more laughter. Afterwards, Sue said to me with mirth in her voice, "Now who's the naughty, naughty human!" This got everybody laughing again. We were all having such a good time! After the laughter, we all grinned at each other for a couple moments and shared in each other's happiness. Then I smiled at Zem. Everybody else's grins faded to a smile as I said to Zem, "Zem. None of these flower petals are poisonous at all are they." Zem said, "No. But even if they were, the pills Bev gave you earlier would take care of it."

I said, "Good." Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other as I said, "Would you feed me the flower petal you put on me darling and give me a sip of your love to wash it down?" Sue said with a loving voice, "Sure darling." The others gave Sue and I sentimental smiles. Sue took the flower petal from off the base of my neck. Then Sue gave it a light kiss and brought it to my lips. I stuck out my tongue a little as the others looked at their partners lovingly. Sue placed it on my tongue. The petal wasn't very big. I took it in as Zem said to Bev, "I would like the same darling." As Sue reached for a mug, Mav said to Til with a loving voice, "I would like that too my love." Bev said to Zem with a loving voice, "Of course darling." As Sue brought the mug toward my lips, Til said to Mav with a loving voice, "Sure my love." Sue gave me a

sip of her love as Bev lightly kissed the petal she removed from Zem. I looked at Sue lovingly as she gave me a sip of her love. Sue was concentrating more on what she was doing. Bev placed her petal on Zem's tongue as they looked at each other lovingly. Til lightly kissed the petal she removed from Mav and placed it on his tongue too as Bev reached for a mug.

After I had taken a good sip and washed Sue's petal down, Sue removed the mug from my lips. After setting the mug down, Sue and I looked at each other lovingly again. I said to Sue with a loving voice, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, I went to take the petal off Sue's arm. Zem said lovingly to Bev, "Thank you my love." As they kissed, I lightly kissed the petal I had taken off of Sue and placed it on her tongue. Sue looked

292

even more sexy doing this than when she licked it. Mav said to Til with a loving voice, "Thank you darling." As I reached for a mug, Zem was getting ready to lightly kiss the petal he removed from Bev. Mav and Til were giving each other a brief but loving kiss. As I brought my mug up to Sue's lips, Zem was getting ready to place the petal he had lightly kissed onto Bev's tongue. No doubt he found it as sexy as I found doing so with Sue to be. Sue looked at me lovingly as I gave her a sip of my love. Though I too was concentrating a little more on what I was doing. While all of this was going on, Pim and Mim were hovering next to each other with loving tendrils slowly undulating from side to side a little over each other's surfaces. San and Pam were doing the same. As were Tal and Sas.

While Zem reached for his mug, Mav lightly kissed the petal he had removed from Til's forearm. After I figured that Sue had taken enough of a sip to wash her petal down, I removed the mug from her lips and sat it down. When Sue and I were again looking at each other lovingly, Sue said to me with a loving voice, "Thank you darling." We then began to kiss each other passionately. The chocolatey taste of each other's love added to the enjoyment of our kiss. Both of us gave off brief moans of pleasure. Sue and I also lovingly caressed each other. It wasn't too long before I heard Bev say lovingly to Zem, "Thank you darling." From the slight moans of pleasure I soon heard coming from them, no doubt they were giving each other a passionate kiss too. Not long after, I heard Til say lovingly to Mav, "Thank you my love." A moment later, I heard slight moans of pleasure coming from them too as they passionately kissed. No doubt they all were enjoying the chocolatey taste of their partner's love as well. After close to a minute or so, Sue and I were the first to part our kiss and more fully embrace each other.

We had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. As we lovingly caressed each other to what extent we could, I lovingly nuzzled my cheek into Sue's neck. Sue lovingly nuzzled her cheek



near the top and side of my head. I said to Sue with a voice just dripping with love, "I love having your love inside me so much darling!" Sue just said with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!" We began to kiss each other passionately again. Sue's lips and tongue were, as usual, a dream. As we kissed, I didn't hear anything from the others. Except for the occasional slight moan of pleasure while they kissed their partners. Though I wouldn't have been surprised if they were also thinking highly loving thoughts to their partners. This make out session lasted a little over another two minutes. Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked lovingly at each other. Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas were again circling around the surfaces of their partners at differing angles. Panny and Lika had finish their drinks and were eyeing ours. No doubt they wanted more. Zem and Bev were embracing, caressing and nuzzling each other. Of course, they both had their eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on their faces.

Mav and Til were looking lovingly into each other's eyes as they caressed each other a bit. My loving look to Sue turned into a loving smile. Sue smiled lovingly at me too. I said, "How are your lips doing darling." What I said caused Mav and Til to grin at us as they leaned the sides of their heads together. Zem and Bev

293

parted enough to smile lovingly at each other. Sue answered me and said, "Just fine darling." We gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Zem and Bev grinned at us too as they leaned the sides of their heads together. When Sue and I parted our kiss, we turned and smiled at the others. But seeing them grinning caused Sue and I to grin too. We also leaned the sides of our heads together. Mav said to me, "Maybe I'm being a naughty, naughty Reall. But maybe your idea about anti-viagra wasn't such a bad idea." Bev and Sue lifted their heads and looked at Mav with open mouthed looks of surprise, mixed with a little amusement. Til lifted her head from Mav and looked at him in the same way. Though there was also a slight hint of embarrassment on Til's face. Everybody except Til cracked up laughing as Til slapped Mav's back a little. As Til did so, she said with a hint of embarrassment to her voice, "Mav!" A moment later, Til joined in on the laughter.

After a bit of laughter, Mav grinned at Til and said, "I'm sorry darling." To help Mav out, I said to Til, "I'm sorry Til." Everybody grinned at me as I added, "I think I may just be having a bad influence on Mav." Til again leaned her cheek near the top and side of Mav's head. Til said, "I doubt it. Mav just likes being naughty sometimes." Mav then said, "Til knows me so well." We all chuckled as Til lifted her head off from Mav's. After the levity, Mav said to me, "Though part of it is your fault. Putting that petal on Til's tongue was wonderful." Then Mav and Til turned toward each other and gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then they turned and smiled contentedly at the rest of us. After a

moment, Bev said, "I think Panny and Lika want more coco." We all smiled over at them. They perked up at the attention being payed to them. Sue briefly smiled at the others and said, "I'll take care of it." Then Sue released me and turned in my lap a little. Sue said to them in a higher pitched, friendly voice, "Bring me your mugs!" Zem, Bev, Mav and Til also took this opportunity to reach for their mugs. Panny and Lika happily picked up their mugs and walked on two feet toward Sue. They were so cute.

Sue picked up the pitcher with one hand and smiled at them. Then Sue pointed at a spot on the table near her and said in the same higher pitched, friendly voice, "Set them down here!" As the others took a drink of their coco, Sue said, "You're both so adorable!" They sat their little mugs down where Sue directed and sat down themselves near them. Then Sue poured out some coco into both their mugs. Panny and Lika were of course happy about this too. Then Panny and Lika looked over at Bev. Bev was probably giving them some telepathic command to make sure they behaved themselves. When Sue was through pouring, Sue held the pitcher in one hand as she gave them both a quick pet. Afterwards, Sue said, "There ya go!" Panny and Lika didn't waste much time in picking up their mugs and sipping more. Then Sue poured a bit more into our mugs. Afterwards, Sue said to the others, "More coco?" They all had their mugs sat down at this point. Zem said, "Sure." Mim came down to Sue and said verbally, "Can I help." Sue smiled at Mim as she raised the pitcher a little to her. Sue said, "Sure." Mim levitated the pitcher out of Sue's hands. Then Sue sat a bit more across my lap and we put an arm around each other again.

As Mim poured out coco into Til's mug, Sue said to Til, "Before I met Zem and

294

Bev, I did some waitressing from time to time. These guys would sure have came in handy." Til said, "If that was your occupation, you would find the Nal a little less helpful. Unless you really needed the help. Though they very easily could, they don't do everything for us." Pim said, "We can't have our Reall getting lazy." We all chuckled a little. The Nal also emitted some telepathic humor. Afterwards, Sue said to Pim, "I know. Even in that, you guys are helpful." I said to the others, "On earth, if we had human versions of maketakes and maketake Nal, I bet they would still find a way to keep rich people rich and poor people poor." Mav said, "Without knowing any better, they probably would." Mim finished pouring the coco by this time. Zem said, "Thank you Mim." As Mim began to levitate the pitcher back to the tray, Mim said, "You're welcome." We all then picked up our mugs and took a drink. After taking a drink, we started setting our mugs down.

Sue started to look around and a grin came over her face. Seeing Sue do so caused grins to spread to the rest of us as we looked around

a little too. The sun was about double its diameter above the horizon. The animals out in the field were casting even longer shadows. Off to the right a little and high up in the air, there were thin rows of clouds that thinned out the closer they got to above where the sun was. Then I looked over in the direction of the bartok. At this moment, four of them were near the beach collecting firewood. It looked like Lega and Weem. Also, the young female and the toddler were with them. Who I took to be Lega held his weapon in one hand and what I took to be Weem's weapon in the other. The toddler had his toy weapon. Weem and young female were carrying a couple baskets by the handles that the Nal left behind. I could make out a few broken branches in them. By the campfire, the other adults were sitting around the fire. The fire had burned down some. Near the fire sat four of their mugs. An adult male and female sat next to each other on one blanket. They were both holding mugs.

Another adult male and female sat on another blanket next to each other. They had their mugs sitting on the blankets next to them. That male was holding his weapon. He and the female were looking at it. The larger adolescent male sat on his own blanket. Apparently the other adult male was letting him examine one of the weapons that Mav modified. No doubt the adolescent was envious. About a third of the animal that was roasting on the spit had been eaten. I could still see food items in the other baskets. Off farther to the right, past the second mountain in that direction, the clouds had puffed up higher in the air. It appeared to be raining below them. Looking in the direction of the lake, there were still some multa about. Others were swimming out in a few groups farther out into the lake. Looking at the mountain we had flown to, it and the other mountains were bathed in a more yellowish light. The two moons had risen a little higher in the sky. The smaller one was beginning to emerge from the right, lower side of the larger moon. After taking in the majesty for about twenty seconds, Sue spoke with a highly sentimental voice and a little heightened sincerity as she continued to look around.

Sue said, "Oh! Everything is just so beautiful!" We all turned grins to Sue. Though Mav and Til's grins were slightly wider. No doubt they were a little proud

295

of their planet. Til said with a little added appreciation in her voice, "Thank you." We all turned our grins to them. Then Mav said with a little added appreciation in his voice, "We're glad you like it." I said to Mav and Til and said, "As you know, earth's moon doesn't spin. It's interesting that both of your moons do." Everybody of course smiled at me as I began speaking. Til said, "Thank you. But it was just the sensible way to make their orbit more stable." Mav said, "Unlike the constant view from earth of one side of the moon, it makes things a little more interesting." Zem was the next to speak. We all smiled at

Zem as he said to Sue and I, "Mav and Til have a knack for planetary dynamics." Mav said to Sue and I, "Zem and Bev's knowledge of ecological dynamics is unsurpassed amongst the Reall." Bev said to Sue and I, "Til and Mav's studies into the fragmentation of multidimensional singularities was groundbreaking." Til said, "Even more groundbreaking was Bev and Zem's studies into the anomalies of hyper harmonic, trans-dimensional fluctuations."

Both Sue and I were grinning of course. Though neither Sue or I had the slightest clue as to the depth of the science they were talking about. Sue and I turned our grins to each other and chuckled a little as Zem, Bev, Mav and Til grinned at us. We turned back to the others. Sue said with an amused voice, "We can barely understand what you're talking about!" This caused the others to laugh a little. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Bev said, "Sorry about that. But we're understandably proud of the achievements of our friends." Zem then said to Sue and I, "Science aside, you both know you have made us proud of you both as a couple and in your own ways." Sue and I hugged each other a little more as we looked at Zem and Bev with solemn, sentimental and appreciative looks on our faces. This made Zem, Bev, Mav and Til smile sentimentally at us too. Sue said with some solemn emotion in her voice, "You know so much. No doubt you know how much we appreciate your feelings." Bev gave Zem a brief extra firm hug as she said with a sentimental voice, "We know."

Feeling like spreading the love around, I said, "If you can be proud of us, I could imagine how you feel about your Nal." We all smiled sentimentally up at them. They all circled around the surfaces of their partners at a little faster speed. Til said, "They know we love them." Apparently, this sentiment was more than they could take. They all became furry. Pim, Mim and Sas headed for Zem and Bev. San, Pam and Tal headed for Mav and Til. As they went, I said, "I don't blame you." Pim, Mim and Sas cuddled between and in front of Zem and Bev's necks. San, Pam and Tal did the same with Mav and Til. They all had their eyes lightly closed with sentimental smiles on their faces as they cuddled their Nal. As Sue and I continued to lean the sides together and smile sentimentally at this touching sight, Pam said telepathically, "You're all such biological dears!" Pim said telepathically, "We couldn't be happier with any other Reall!" After a few moments of this lovefest, Sue said to me while we continued to take in this touching sight, "When we go to live on planet Bev," Zem, Bev, Mav and Til opened their eyes and smiled sentimentally at Sue as Sue added, "I hope Sas and Tal won't mind being loved on a little more personal level than other humans."

foot from Sue and I as we broke into grins. Sas said verbally, "When you come to planet Bev, you're going to be our extra special humans." Sue and I took on extra happy expressions tinged with emotion as I reached out for Sas and Sue reached out for Tal. We pulled them in and cuddled them against our cheeks. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with sentimental smiles on our faces as we did so. Apart from making themselves furry, Sas and Tal had also made themselves a little squishy. Which Sue and I took full advantage of. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til looked at us with sentimental smiles. Pim, Mim, San and Pam were probably doing the same in their own technologically enigmatic way. (Enigmatic to humans that is) If Tal and Sas had Nal versions of expressions, they were probably showing the same kind of expressions as Sue and I. Sue said with a delighted, sentimental voice, "That would be just wonderful!" I said with a delighted and sentimental voice, "I hope we won't be a bother to you!" Sas said with a sentimental telepathic voice as I cuddled her, "Even if you were, with our helpful advice, you wouldn't be long."

I said with the same happy, sentimental voice, "I'm sure of it." I Sue held Tal out a little and said him, "Though I would feel a little guilty if you treated us any better than other humans there." By now, I was holding Sas out a little. Sas said to Sue, "You'll get over it." This made us all laugh a little as Sue and I cuddled Tal and Sas against our cheeks again. Afterwards, Zem said with kindness in his voice, "For the time being, just remember what I said about open displays of affection. It is a small thing, but important." Both Sue and I opened our eyes as we cuddled Tal and Sas and smiled at Zem. I said with a voice tinged with sentimentality and appreciation, "Ok." Sue said in the same sort of way, "Whatever you say." Bev said, "After about ten years or so, it won't be that big of a deal." Sue said, "That's a relief." Then I held Sas out a little again and smiled at her. Sue also held Tal out and smiled at him. Sue said to Tal, "Until then, once we're behind closed doors, don't be surprised if this happens." Then Sue gave Tal a peck of a kiss. I said to Sas, "Or you." Then I gave Sas a peck of a kiss too. Pim and Mim rose out of Zem and Bev's hands and started to circle around each other's surfaces at differing angles as they retracted their fur. San and Pam rose out of Mav and Til's hands and did the same.

Sue said to Tal, "Excuse me Tal, but I have a little job for Sas." Tal rose up out of Sue's hand and started to retract his fur. Sue held out her hand to Sas. Sas remained furry as she left my hand and settled into Sue's hand. Zem, Bev, Mav, Til and I all grinned at Sue. But there was also a bit of curiosity on our faces as we all wondered what the job was that Sue had planned for Sas. Sue cuddled Sas against her cheek as she smiled sentimentally and appreciatively at Zem, Bev, Mav and Til. Then Sue said to them, "I may not be very smart compared to you, or useful like these dear Nal. But at least I can make up for it with a heartfelt gesture." Then Sue said to Mav and Til, "Erik's mugs were very nice. But you both have been so wonderful too, I would like to give you something of my own design. Though I doubt it will be

anything as nice as the surprise that you two said that you had planned for us.” Mav and Til briefly looked at each other with excited looks. Zem and Bev looked at each other with extra happy

297

looks. Then they turned these looks back to Sue. Sue then said, “What I have to think to Sas is only for her and the other Nal to hear.”

Mav and Til again briefly looked at each other with excited looks. Zem and Bev again briefly gave each other extra happy looks as Sue held Sas out in front of her a little and thought to her. Sue smiled sweetly at Sas as she did so. As we all happily paid attention to Sas and Sue, Sas and the other Nal began to glow. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til saw this. They all turned excited looks to each other. Til said with a bit of excitement in her voice, “It must be something good!” Sue took her arm from my back and held Sas with both hands. As Sue grinned, Sue brought Sas to her lips and gave her a peck of a kiss. Sue grinned again afterwards and moved Sas back away and up in the air a little. Then Sue let Sas rise from her hands. Sue put an arm back around my shoulders as Sas began to retract her fur. Then Sas and Tal circled around each other’s surfaces at differing angles. They then began to move toward the back of the house. No doubt going to the patio maketake machine. Then we all turned our grins to each other. The glow of Pim, Mim, San and Pam began to fade as Til said with an excited voice, “I so love surprises!” Bev said, “I can’t wait to see what it is!”

Sue said, “I did a little speed thinking with Sas. It may not be quite as advanced as what your technology is capable of. But I think you’ll like it.” Til briefly held Mav a little closer and gave out an excited, “Eee!” sound. I grinned at Sue and said with a kidding around, exacerbad voice, “Are you going to make me proud of you “again” darling?” Everybody was grinning at me as I finished speaking. Then Sue smiled lovingly at me. Mav gave Til some extra caresses and said, “Til’s always doing that to me.” As Sue and I turned sentimental smiles to them, Til turned to Mav with loving appreciation on her face. Zem gave Bev some extra caresses and said to the rest of us, “Bev has quite a knack for it herself.” Bev looked at Zem with a look of loving appreciation on her face. Til and Mav also turned sentimental smiles to them. At this point, I saw out of the corner of my eye that San and Pam were embracing each other with loving tendrils. As were Pim and Mim. I smiled sentimentally at them. Then I said, “It looks like San and Pim feel the same way.”

As we all turned sentimental smiles to them, Pim and San began to softly glow. As we all leaned the sides of our heads next to our partners and looked at them, we all heard San say in our minds with a loving tone to his thought, “We sure do.” Pam began to softly glow too. Pim said with a loving thought, “Our girls just can’t help it.” Mim began to softly glow too. All of us took in this beautiful sight for a

couple moments. Then we turned loving looks to our partners. Some kissing was in order. But before us guys could partake in the heaven of our girl's appreciative, loving lips, we heard Sas in our minds. She said with a sentimental tone to her thought, "Everybody close your eyes. You too Sue." This brought wide smiles to everybody's faces. We all gave our partners a brief but loving kiss. Then we closed our eyes and turned anticipatory grins toward the table. At the same time, Pim, Mim, San and Pam withdrew their tendrils and started to stop glowing. A few moments later, Sas thought with the same sentimental tone to her thought, "You can open your eyes now."

We opened our eyes as we looked at what was sitting on the table in front of

298

Mav and Til. Either Tal or Sas must have moved Mav and Til's mugs and bouquet over a bit. All the Nal couples were circling around their partners surfaces at differing angles. Though a little closer to the table. Mav and Til's grins turned to open mouthed, surprised grins. Til exclaimed, "It's so wonderful!" Mav said, "Oh!" Zem, Bev and I beamed grins. Mav and Til's reaction caused Sue to beam an extra happy grin at Mav and Til. As Til went to pick the object up, Sue got up and started walking around the table toward Mav and Til. I got up and followed Sue. Bev and Zem got up too and went over to Mav and Til to get a better look at what Til was holding. Panny and Lika at this point were laying on their stomachs next to each other near their little mugs. They both had their heads raised as they looked at us with interest. Both Til and Mav had happy surprise splashed across their faces. Bev put an arm around Mav's shoulders and Zem put an arm around Bev as they leaned in to look a little closer. Both of them had happy expressions still on their faces. Sue went over and put a hand on Til's opposite shoulder and I put an arm around Sue as we leaned in to look a little closer too. Sue said with an extra happy tone to her voice, "It turned out even better than I thought!"

Mav and Til grinned at Sue with appreciative, delighted looks. Bev said, "It's beautiful!" This made Mav and Til turn their happy looks to Bev and Zem. Then we went back to admiring what Til held. What Til was holding was a snow globe. The sphere of it was about six inches across and sat on a gold, decorative base about an inch thick. The "glass" of the globe was very thin. A bit of the sphere that sat on the base was flat. Around the outside top of the base was a lighted ring about a quarter inch wide. This beamed light at the globe. A little across the base of the globe on the inside was a lighted, snowy base. On it stood small statues of Mav and Til. The statues looked like porcelain, but were done so well they almost looked lifelike. They were both grinning with an arm around each other's lower backs. Above them a little were red and blue replicas of San and Pam. Except their surfaces were a little shinier. They glowed a little as they circled

around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Til was dressed in the outfit all the girls wore under their shirts. Though Til wasn't wearing the decorative, hair mimicking head jewelry she and Bev wore when they did their dance. Mav was wearing a pair of swimming trunks just like the ones he had on when we went swimming with the multa.

The snowflakes were a mixture of snowflakes and small white hearts. On closer examination, I could see that the snowflakes were as intricate as real snowflakes. Just smaller. In the center of the hearts and flakes, there was a small speck of a reflective surface. These would glint when the light from the outside base hit them just right. These flakes weren't quite as numerous as I had seen in other freshly shaken snow globes. Which made it easier to see the figures of Mav and Til. Somehow, the snow that landed would slowly move toward the outer edge and sides of the globe. Then it was blown back up in the clear liquid inside. The eddies and currents caused by the San and Pam replicas helped the flakes dance around a little as they drifted down. Sue had outdone my mugs by a mile. I was so proud of her. We all happily looked at the snow globe for about a minute. Then Sue turned her sentimental smile to Mav. Sue

299

said to Mav with a sentimental voice, "Your snow globe analogy earlier gave me the idea. Sas tells me that these flakes will never settle."

We were all grinning at Sue with sentimental looks on our faces at this point. Though there was more appreciation and heightened sentimentality showing on Mav and Til's faces. Sue then added, "If you ever feel your flakes of love settling, hopefully you can look at this and get them all fluffed up again." Tears started to well up in Til's eyes as more emotion came over her face. Zem, Mav and I had heightened sentimental looks come over our faces. Til's emotion caused Bev and Sue to have tears well up in their eyes also. The Nal couples started to circle around their partner's surfaces at a little faster speed. Til sat the globe down and turned toward Sue on Mav's lap. Zem, Bev, Sue and I also stood erect as Til did so. Til said with emotion in her voice, "Oh you dear!" Til got up and embraced Sue. Sue embraced Til also. That is, until Bev got there. Then they included Bev in their embrace and cried tears of joy at the beauty of the sentiment and the present. It didn't seem to me to be something so great as to bring about such emotion. Especially for women who had been around for hundreds of millions of years. I suppose girls sometimes just liked to get emotional.

Though I wasn't crying, I of course was emotional too as I put my arms around the girls and hugged them. With our girls in such a state, Zem came over as Mav stood up and turned to us. Us guys put our arms around our inner group of girls and held them in an emotional group hug. Though Zem and Mav didn't cry either. Us guys were happy to let the girls have their wonderful, little cry. It only made them more adorable to us. After about a minute of crying, the girls



started to part their heads. Us guys lifted our heads from them too and smiled at them with extra sentimental smiles on our faces. The girls all looked at each other with sentimental smiles on their moist faces. Til gave Sue a kiss on her cheek and backed off a little. Til said to Sue with a little happy emotion still in her voice, "Your present is just as dear as any we have ever received. Which for how long we have been around, is really saying something." We all slightly backed away from each other more as Sue said with some appreciative emotion to her voice, "Oh! Thank you!"

Mav smiled sentimentally at Zem and gave him a couple light taps on the shoulder. It was clear what Mav wanted. So Zem stepped back from Bev and Sue with a sentimental smile on his face. The girls released each other as Mav went over and put a hand on Sue's opposite shoulder. Mav said to Sue with a sentimental tone to his voice, "We'll treasure your present always." Then Mav gave Sue a kiss on her cheek. This brought a sentimental grin to Sue's face. The rest of us grinned sentimentally too as Sue said to Mav with a sentimental, appreciative tone to her voice, "I'm so glad!" Then Mav turned his sentimental smile to me and said, "Sue has indeed given you reason to be proud of her again." Zem then added, "Bev and I think so too." Sue and I briefly looked at them all as our expressions again became overtaken with emotion. I held out my arms to Sue as tears started to well up in our eyes. I said to Sue, "Oh darling!" Sue quickly came to me. We embraced each other fully and tightly.

Bev went over to Zem as everybody looked at us with the same heightened,  
300

sentimental looks on their faces as they had. Then Mav went to Til. Zem and Bev held each other from the side a bit as they looked at the rest of us. Mav and Til held each other in a bit of a loose embrace facing each other as they looked lovingly at each other. Then Mav lovingly caressed Til's cheek and said with a gentle, highly loving voice, "My flakes of love will never settle with you darling." Til's eyes glazed over with love. Mav's did too. Til said with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!" They embraced each other more fully as they began to kiss each other passionately. It seemed that they were doing so with a little extra firmness. All of this love also caused the Nal couples to stop circling their partners and extruded loving tendrils over their partner's surfaces and caressed each other with them. Zem and Bev faced each other as they held each other in a slightly loose embrace. They also looked at each other lovingly. Zem said to Bev with a gentle, loving voice, "My flakes of love will always be fluffy for you darling." Bev's eyes glazed over with love. Zem's did too. Bev said with a highly loving voice, "Oh my love!" They too embraced each other more fully as they kissed passionately. Both of them gave off slight moans of pleasure.

After about thirty seconds or so, I said to Sue with a highly loving voice as we lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, "Is there no end to how wonderful you are darling?" As Sue slid the side of her lips across my cheek to bring her loving lips to mine, Sue said fairly quickly and with a highly loving voice, "Oh my husband!" Then Sue and I started kissing each other passionately too. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. Of course, all of us couples were giving our partners loving caresses too. As usual, along with the occasional kneading fingers here and there. We all must have kissed our partners for a couple of minutes. Afterwards, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked lovingly at each other. In my peripheral vision, I could see that Mav and Til were fully embracing each other and lovingly nuzzling the sides of their heads together as they caressed each other. Zem and Bev had parted enough to look into each other's loving eyes.

In reference to Sue's present, I said lovingly to my dear sweet wife, "Let's go sit down my snow angel." Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "Alright my snow dream." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and held each other's forearms in front as we made our way back to our seat. At the same time, we leaned the sides of our heads together with loving, contented looks on our faces. Zem saw Sue and I going to our seat. He said lovingly to Bev as Mav and Til parted enough to look into each other's loving eyes, "Let's sit down angel face." Bev said lovingly to Zem, "Ok lovie brain." They gave each other a brief but loving kiss. As Sue and I went to sit down, Mav said lovingly to Til, "Tell me what you want to do darling." Til gently caressed Mav's cheek and said with a gentle, loving voice, "Let's go sit down my dream love." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue was sitting on my lap at this point. We both of course had an arm around each other. I had a hand resting on Sue's thigh and Sue caressed that arm a little. We both had the sides of our heads leaning together with contented, loving smiles on our faces as we looked at the others.

Panny and Lika were still laying on their stomachs next to each other near their

301

mugs. They were both nuzzling their heads a little and caressing each other's tails together. The Nal couples had stopped embracing each other by this time and were again circling around their partner's surfaces at differing angles. Zem sat down and Bev sat across his lap as they put an arm around each other. They looked at each other lovingly as they did so. Mav and Til looked at each other lovingly as they went to their seat. They held onto each other from the side as they went. Sue and I then turned our smiles to each other. We gave each other a tender, loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then we

turned to the others.

Mav at this point was sitting with Til sitting across his lap. They both of course had an arm around each other and held each other's forearms with their other arms. At this moment, they were both smiling with pleased, sentimental looks on their faces as they looked at Sue's present. Zem and Bev were also smiling at them with a bit of sentimentality on their faces. Mav and Til's appreciation of Sue's present brought a little bigger smile to Sue and I's faces.

Then Mav and Til took notice of Sue and I's smiles and smiled appreciatively at us. Zem and Bev did too as Til said, "Your present is so sweet. I'm glad Mav brought up the snow globe analogy." This made Sue and I briefly take a little more firm hold of each other. Then Sue said with a sentimental, appreciative tone to her voice, "Sas said that there didn't need to be a globe. But she liked the idea of keeping it like a human snow globe. Sas also agreed with my idea to not make the figures completely lifelike." Bev said, "They kind of remind me a little of the figures I had made for your wedding cake." We were all grinning at Bev as Til said, "They were adorable!" This made Bev's grin widen a bit. Somewhere, either in the house or on the beach, Bev must have shown Til a picture of it. Mav turned his grin from Til and back to Bev. Then Mav said, "I have to see it!" This made the rest of our grins widen a bit. Mim said verbally, "Allow me." We all grinned at Mim as she went over and came down about a foot from the mountain side end of the table. Mim transformed into a three by three foot screen. On it appeared part of the top layer of our wedding cake and the figures Bev had made for it.

As you should remember from the first book, it had figures of Sue and I in our wedding clothes. Sue's figure was grinning and my figure had a slightly worried look on its face. Because a little ways behind us, there were figures of Zem, Bev and Panny dressed in their hillbilly outfits. Bev's "Maw" figure had her arms crossed over her chest with a stern look on her face. Zem's "Paw" figure had a stern look on his face too. Panny stood on the other side of Bev. Zem had his shotgun pointed at me and Panny had his little shotgun pointed at me too. When Mav saw the picture, he cracked up laughing. The rest of us laughed too. Even the Nal emitted telepathic humor. With the rest of us having already seen it, seeing Mav's amusement caused a lot of our laughter. We must have laughed for about thirty seconds as we either looked at the picture, or looked at each other to share in each other's laughter. Even Panny and Lika had lifted their heads a little and chattered a little with excitement. After the laughter, Mav briefly grinned at Sue and I before turning his grin to Bev.

Mav said to Bev with a mirth filled voice, "They're so cute!" Bev said with some

302

mirth in her voice too, "Thank you!" Zem gave Bev a brief extra hug

and said, "That's my girl!" Zem and Bev then grinned at each other. Bev said, "Thank you darling." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Which seemed like a good idea. So Mav and Til did so too. As did Sue and I. Mim transformed back into her normal shape and went back to join Pim. Us couples went back to grinning at each other. I said to Mav and Til, "As far as making figures of you goes, you're lucky that Sue and I weren't Asian Indians from a few hundred years ago or so." We all laughed a little. Apparently even Sue knew what I was talking about. Where such people apparently thought it was acceptable to have pictures drawn of them having sex. Even showing a penis partially inside a vagina. Afterwards, Zem said, "They didn't have snow globes back then. Though we wouldn't have treated such humans like we treated you. But even if we had, they would have probably found out that it would be bad taste to present us with a picture or image of us copulating." Mav said, "And if not us, either the Nal or maketake would have."

I said to Zem, "You would have been even worse off with an Eskimo couple. Because he would have thought it polite for you to "laugh - make love" with his wife. He might have even expected you to offer the same." Bev said with an amused tone to her voice, "That wouldn't have happened!" This caused us all to chuckle a little. Bev then looked at the snow globe again with a smile on her face. Mav and Til did too. Then Zem, Sue and I did too. After a few moments, Bev said, "I just love the snow globe. Zem and I are going to have to have one made for us with our images." Sue got a bit of a surprised look on her face. Then Sue took on a slightly disappointed look. Sue said, "You spoiled the surprise!" I grinned at Sue as Zem and Bev looked at each other with extra happy looks on their faces. Mav, Til and I turned big grins to them. Then Zem, Bev, Mav, Til and I turned big grins back to Sue. Sue was grinning too at this point. Bev said, "You had one made for us!" Sue looked up at Tal and Sas and said happily, "You can tell them Sas." We all turned our grins up to them too as Sue spoke.

Sas said, "You will find one on your night stand when you get back to the Pol- Wim." Bev said, "Oh goodie!" Zem, Bev, Sue and I grinned at each other. Mav and Til grinned at Sue and I too. Bev said, "Thank you! You're so sweet!" After a brief pause, Bev added, "But with what you did with the mugs, I kind of suspected that you might have one made for Zem and I." Sue said, "When we go to live on your planet, I asked Sas if she could make one of Erik and me. Though we would need her and Tal in it too. Sas said that she could make one of a lesser technology that would last as long as we would need it." Zem said with a sentimental tone to his voice, "I'm sure you will treasure it as much as we all will treasure ours." I said with a sentimental smile, "I'm sure we will." Then I looked up at Tal and Sas and said, "Thank you Sas." Sas said, "You're welcome."

Mav then said to Til with a loving voice, "Would you like a sip of my love my snow queen?" Til said lovingly to Mav, "Yes please my snow king." As Mav went for a mug, Zem said to Bev with a loving voice,

"Would you like a sip of my love darling?" Bev said, "Of course my love." As Mav started giving Til a sip, I said

303

lovingly to Sue, "Can I give you a sip of my love too darling?" Zem started giving Bev a sip from his mug as Sue said to me with a loving voice, "Yes please darling." I picked up a mug and started giving Sue a sip as Mav sat his mug down. Til picked up her mug and said with a loving voice, "And here's one for you darling." After Mav had taken a sip, Til sat their mug down. Then Mav and Til gave each other a loving kiss. The same sort of thing happened after Bev had offered Zem a sip of love too. It also happened after Sue offered me a sip of love too. After everybody had received a kiss from their partners, we all smiled at each other again. Then Sue said to the others, "About those scientific achievements you were talking about. Are you guys any smarter than the other Reall?"

Bev answered and said, "Not really. But interestingly enough, extra extraordinary scientific creativity seems to come in waves for each individual. These could be separated by hundreds of years, or tens of thousands." Sue and I gave a slight nod of understanding. Then I posed a question to Mav and Til. I said, "For your fields of inquiry that you are involved in at any time, are there many Reall that work on the same question at the same time?" Mav said, "Sometimes there could be a few hundred and sometimes only a few. Though whatever we may be doing, the Nal help keep us from replicating experiments too often. This helps our research move in a productive direction." Til said, "There are times that we are given tasks that aren't centered around scientific research. But even then, our minds are usually buzzing around various problems. Some great advancements have been thought of even when people weren't directly involved in that field of inquiry." I said, "It sounds pretty tiring." Mav said, "Not really. It's just how we Reall bred ourselves to be. And a lot of these things are ideas that, as a human would say, you have floating around in the back of your minds."

Sue said, "It must be wonderful having minds like yours. For my dad, it seems like he is always studying." Zem said, "I had heard one human say that collage students forget about ninety percent of what they learned by the time they graduate. Which I suppose is to be expected. Because one of the points of school is to train minds to absorb large amounts of information." I said to Zem, "It hardly seems fair. Though I know one of the biggest mistakes for a human to make is to expect life to be fair. But as far as what Sue said, I wonder if humans are training a class of techno-slaves." Bev said, "Well luckily, in the case of Sue's father, he is pretty well compensated for his efforts. Though such things work out pretty well even in less developed countries." Sue said, "How do you mean." Bev said, "It just depends on what is required to be happy. But that brings up a topic

that you may not want to hear. And it would take up time from the wonderful sunset.” Sue said, “I’m always interested in hearing anything any of you have to say. Would it be ok if we looked at some scenery while we speed think to each other?” Everybody had smiles on their faces as Bev said, “Sure. That would be fine.”

Mav and Til turned a little in their chair. We all chose the direction of the mountains to look at. All of us leaned the sides of our heads next to our partners and got all snuggly with contented smiles on our faces. I could also see some

304

multa swimming around in the lake. Sue said, “I’m ready.” The multa appeared to stop moving. From my peripheral vision, I could see that Pim, Mim, Sam, Pam, Tal and Sas all stopped moving. Though no doubt their mental processes were speeded up too. Bev said, “There was a study done on earth. They would take a child that is about three years old and set them at a table. On the table in front of the child was something like a large checkerboard that was divided into four sections. Near the child on the left, there were some things set on the squares that the child would value.” I thought, “I don’t mean to interrupt, but I just wanted to say that this is something that Zem mentioned to me earlier. Please continue.” Bev said, “Ok.” Then Bev said, “Across from the child, there were none. To the right of the child, there were even more of the things that the child valued. Across from those, there were only a few. The child was told that whatever section it chose on either the left or right, some other child would receive what was across from it.

“For the vast majority of instances, the child would choose the fewer items. As long as it meant that some other child would receive none at all. Now if it was a matter of greed, the children would have chosen the section with a greater number of things. But status was the most important consideration. This is a tendency that goes away some as the children’s minds mature and they learn the importance of social cooperation. But it is a tendency that is always there. It’s there because it increases human evolutionary success. This has gone on since humans have had tails. The same thing is almost universal throughout infinity. That is, until creatures evolve their way out of it.” Sue said, “That does deal a bit of a blow to the idea of altruism among humans.” Zem said, “Altruism does have its place. But it isn’t as great of a factor as some humans think. One human even did a mathematical equation that supposedly showed altruism had a central role to play in human evolution. But it was largely just a bunch of hogwash.

“There are just too many variables in overall human behavior. Though it is true that in an indirect way, the best way to help yourself is to help others too. As far as the mathematical equation I spoke of, as Mav said earlier, humans put too much faith in mathematics.

Mathematics has a logic of it's own that doesn't always mesh well with reality. That's all I have to say at this moment." Sue said, "That's all very interesting." I said, "While we're on the topic of the shortcomings of humanity, you know that the American capitalist system hasn't treated me very well. Would one of you give me some further views on it?" Sue said, "If you don't mind." Zem said, "I would be glad to. As you have some small knowledge of, the unfortunate aspects of the capitalist system are legion. Not that any other system that humans have come up with are any better. You know Erik, as we talked about earlier, there is no guarantee that under the right circumstances, you yourself wouldn't have turned out to be as bad as any industrialist. I'm sorry to say this Sue, not that I'm accusing you of anything, but humans who have grown up in a privileged environment are less honest than poor people."

Sue said, "Good. Now Erik knows that I don't deserve him!" I said with a loving thought, "I'm sorry darling. But I could never think that." Sue said with a loving thought, "Thank you darling." Then Sue said, "I know that as humans, we're

305

messed up. But luckily, we have all you dears to show us the right path. And best of all, why it is the right path. Bev said, "And helping you will be fun." Zem then said, "Mav and Til are at least as knowledgeable about humanity as Bev and I are. I'll let one of you guys say something." Til said to Mav, "I'll let you go ahead darling." Mav said, "Ok sweetness." Then Mav said, "When it comes to the whole poverty thing, Americans like to credit their capitalist system for their high standard of living. But that's just a load of crap. The reason Americans have a higher standard of living than most other countries is simply because they live in a country rich in natural resources and arable land. Also, I remember Andrew Carnegie. In his twisted mind, he tried to justify the poor working conditions he subjected his employees to as "survival of the fittest." As if he was actually doing the human species a favor.

"He was just doing what most other wealthy people do. Which is to become as rich as possible. No matter who has to suffer for it. Chinese emperors used to have a pretty self centered way to spend such wealth. They would have embroidered silk undergarments made that were worth more than their weight in gold. These they only wore once, then discarded." Sue said, "That's pretty disgustingly wasteful. Even if there was some trickle down effect where their servants would take them out of the trash, clean and resell them." Mav said, "Maybe. But they would have been taking quite a chance. Because anybody found selling or wearing the emperors discarded clothing would have been executed." Til said, "All of that is almost as bad as the American people being suckered into accepting the wealthy paying less taxes than they do. Varying amounts of that money they can then turn

around and give to fund the political parties that will help keep the wealthy wealthy. This has had an exponential effect on politics. Much like the exponential effect humans will find to their sorrow methane release and global warming will have. That is why Americans no longer live in a democracy, but a plutocracy."

I said, "Boy. Am I going to be glad when I can put the earth behind me." Sue added with some enthusiasm, "Me too." I said, "Can we end this now. I know you Zem and you Mav are as eager to give your girls a kiss as I am to give Sue one." Mav said, "You're getting to know us pretty well." The multa and our Nal started moving again. They hadn't moved much during the time we were thinking to each other. We all grinned at our partners. Though Mav and Til did so as they turned back in our direction. Though Zem and Bev didn't waist any time lovingly kissing each other. Neither did Sue and I. Mav and Til were soon doing the same. As usual, Sue's soft, loving lips were a dream. After a few moments, we were all kissing our partners more passionately. There were of course slight moans of pleasure that were exchanged between couples here and there. Along with the usual loving caresses. These, as was usually the case when we were around others, avoided naughty areas. We all must have kissed our partners for about a minute and a half. Then I heard Bev verbally say to Zem with a loving voice, "I love you darling." Sue and I began to slowly part our kiss as Zem said to Bev, "I love you too darling."

Sue and I gave each other loving smiles. Then we leaned the sides of our heads together as we smiled sentimentally at the others. Zem and Bev were just

306

parting from an embrace. Mav and Til were parting from their kiss. Panny and Lika were still laying next to each other. They had their heads resting on the table as they entwined and caresses their prehensile tails together. Our Nal friends were circling around the surfaces of their partners at differing angles. Zem and Bev parted a little more and they briefly smiled at Sue and I. Sue and I of course smiled back at them. Then they turned their attention to their coco mugs and reached for them. Sue and I raised the sides of our heads off from each other and reached for our mugs too. Mav and Til briefly gave us all sentimental smiles and reached for their mugs. We all took a drink. After setting our mugs down, we all looked around some more. Sue and I looked in the direction of the sun. It was about half of its diameter above the horizon. The wisps of clouds near it were more of a slight reddish orange color.

Out in the field, the animals were mostly in shade. Except the upper parts of the forlix. The heads and upper necks of some of the ruka still had sunlight shining on them. Looking over more to my right, the high clouds off in the distance also showed with a reddish orange color. Lega, Weem and the two youngsters were back at their campsite. The



two children were on a blanket laying next to each other on their stomachs. They were leaning up on their elbows and looking at the fire with their mugs near them. Weem sat next to Lega with an arm around his shoulders as they both looked at his weapon. Their mugs were near them. The other adult males and females were similarly comfortable. Though two held their mugs. The adolescent had given the adult male his weapon back. He was now sitting with his legs toward the fire. His mug was setting next to him. The adolescent male was also leaning back a bit and holding himself up with his arms. Out in the lake, there were still about seven multa swimming about. Looking at the mountains, they looked beautiful in the lessening sunlight.

The two moons had risen a little farther up in the sky. Because of their orbit around each other, the smaller one appeared to be next to the larger one. Sue looked back over to the houks. I did too. They were all laying down on their stomachs in the higher grass. One was sitting up with its front legs still extended. Probably to keep watch. One of the males and the pregnant female were nuzzling their heads together. Sue turned to the others. I did too. Sue said to Til and Mav, "I never did ask you," Everybody was at this point smiling at Sue as Sue added, "when is the pregnant female houk due." Til said, "Oh. You mean Sue?" Sue's face lit up like a Christmas tree with a slightly open mouthed, ear to ear grin. The rest of us grinned too. Though seeing Sue's reaction, everybody's grin soon became slightly wider than normal. Sue said happily and excitedly, "When did you decide to call her that!" Til said, "Just now. Do you like it?" Sue gave me a brief extra firm hug and said with a delighted, sentimental and appreciative tone to her voice, "Do I ever! Thank you!" After sharing in each other's delight for a few moments, Til said, "Probably in about four to eight days. I'm sorry you'll miss the actual birth. But someday, if you wish, you can experience it in virtual reality."

Sue's grin faded to a smile. We all did the same as Sue said, "Maybe. But somehow it wouldn't feel the same if it isn't the actual event." Mav said, "She will

307

get pregnant at least a few times more in her life. So there will be other opportunities for you to be present for a birth." This caused Sue and I to grin again. The others did too as Sue said, "That would be wonderful!" We all exchanged grins for a moment. Then we grinned at our partners. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Zem and Bev did the same. As did Mav and Til. When Sue and I parted our kiss, we smiled lovingly at each other. After smiling at each other for a couple moments, we turned our smiles to the others. Soon, they too smiled at Sue and I. Then Sue said to Mav, "I told Til about an interesting question I asked Bev and Zem once. Zem's response was interesting." Bev and Til took on sentimental smiles as Sue added, "It

would be interesting to hear your response.” Til said to Sue, “You’re so sweet!” Mav said with a sentimental tone to his voice, “Are you going to make Til and I disappear again?” This caused everybody to laugh. Then Sue said with a little mirth in her voice, “No. But whatever happens happens.”

This caused a little more chuckling as Mav and Til briefly gave each other some extra caresses. Then Mav said, “I can’t wait to hear it.” Sue said, “What is it that you most like about Til.” This caused sentimental smiles to come over the rest of our faces. Mav said, “That’s a difficult question.” Pim and Mim began to circle each other at a faster rate. San and Pam did the same. As did Tal and Sas. Mav and Til looked lovingly at each other. An emotional look then came over Mav’s face. Til took on the same kind of look. Mav then started to lovingly caress around the side and top of Til’s cranium with one hand as tears started to well up in his eyes. Til’s eyes also started to well up with tears as Mav said with a highly loving voice, “I would have to say my darling’s brain. Her sweet, lovable, luscious brain.” Tal and Sas were the first to stop circling each other. They extruded loving tendrils over each other’s surfaces. Pim and Mim soon did the same. As did San and Pam. Til said tearfully to Mav, “Oh darling!” They began to kiss each other passionately as Mav continued to lovingly caress Til’s cranium. Til moved one of her hands to caress Mav’s cranium too. Mav and Til both gave off a few slight moans of emotion as they kissed.

While this was going on, Zem and Bev looked at each other with highly loving looks. Sue and I looked at each other with highly loving looks too. Zem began to lovingly caress around Bev’s cranium with one hand. Bev did the same with Zem. Sue and I caressed a hand around each other’s craniums a little. Having hair, we couldn’t do it as well as the others. Zem and Bev took on emotional looks of love too as Zem said to Bev with a highly loving voice, “I love your brain so much darling!” Bev said to Zem with a highly loving voice, “I love your brain so much too darling!” They began to kiss each other passionately. They too gave off moans of emotion as they started doing so. At the same time as Zem and Bev began their exchange, Sue said to me with a highly loving voice, “Your brain is so wonderful darling.” An emotional look of love came over my face. A similar look came over Sue’s face. I said to Sue with a highly loving voice, “Your brain is a dream darling!” Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately too. Both of us also gave off slight moans of emotion as we both continued to caress each other’s cranium a little. By this time, Mav and Til were lovingly caressing each other’s bodies with both hands.

308

It wasn’t too long before us other couples were doing the same with our partners. Panny and Lika were by this time embracing and nuzzling each other.

While Sue and I kissed, here and there, I would let a hand stray to caress the side of one of Sue's breasts. I knew it was ok, because the others were preoccupied. And if I were to guess, Zem and Mav were probably doing the same with their girls. To what extent we could in our positions, we were all certainly lovingly caressing the hell out of our partners. As usual, having Sue in my arms was heavenly. As was the feel of Sue's soft, wonderful, loving lips. The caresses of our tongues together was also a dream. As was apparently the case with the other couples, our tongue caress would occasionally cause us to give off slight moans of pleasure. Sue and I both knew exactly what to do to give each other the most pleasure in this way. We must have kissed our partners for about the next two minutes. But I felt like I could have done so for an eternity. I heard Mav say to Til with a loving voice, "You're such a dream darling." Apparently they had parted their kiss for an embrace and some nuzzling.

Sue and I parted our kiss and embraced each other more fully. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces as we began to nuzzle the sides of our heads together. We also lovingly caressed each other more. Til answered Mav with a loving voice and said, "So are you my darling." Then they started kissing passionately again. I said to Sue lovingly, "You are always going to be my dream darling." This caused Sue to caress her cheek up and down a little as she brought her lips back toward mine. As Sue did so, Sue said with a highly loving voice, "And you'll always be mine darling." At about the same time, I heard Zem say to Bev with a highly loving voice, "How can you be so wonderful darling." Sue and I started kissing each other passionately again. Bev answered Zem with a highly loving voice and said, "If I am, it's because of you darling." Then they started kissing each other passionately again too. We all kissed our partners for about another two minutes. One by one, us couples began to break off our kisses and fully embrace our partners again. As usual, we would have our eyes lightly closed with pleased, loving looks on our faces. All of us couples also nuzzled the sides of our heads together as we lovingly caressed our partners.

For me, the embrace, loving caress and nuzzling with my life in my arms was almost as good as her kiss. No doubt, everybody else felt the same way with their partners. We all showed love for our partners in this way for about another minute. Then Sue and I parted a little and looked at each other lovingly. Zem and Bev at this point were leaning the sides of their heads together and looking toward the mountains with contented smiles on their faces. Mav and Til were looking lovingly into each other's eyes. Pim and Mim were back to circling each other's surfaces at differing angles. San and Pam were doing the same. As were Tal and Sas. Sue and I parted a little more and looked around. Just about an eighth of the sun was still above the horizon. The farther away from the sun that the clouds were, the deeper shade of red they were. The base of the high clouds off in the distance were a deeper red than near the tops. Looking toward the

bartok, at this moment, the two children were sitting on their blanket and eating a piece of meat. The adolescent male was standing near the animal on

309

the spit and cutting off a piece of meat with his spear point. One of the adult males and female had taken a blanket off a bit into the deeper grass.

I couldn't really tell, but they seemed to be laying on the blanket and fornicating. But I wasn't about to bring it to anybody's attention. The other adult couples were leaning back on their blankets next to their partners. They had themselves propped up on their elbows as they looked at the children and adolescent male. I then looked at the mountains. They had taken on more of a reddish color. The moons had a bit of a yellowish color to them. The smaller moon cast a bit of a shadow in the edge of the larger moon. Mav and Til turned to smile contentedly at Sue and I. Then I said to Mav, "The sunset is wonderful. Do you think we should be mad at our girls for outdoing the beauty of it with their dance?" Sue smiled lovingly at me. Bev and Til grinned at me with appreciative looks on their faces. Mav and Zem smiled sentimentally at me. Mav then spoke with a sentimental tone to his voice. Everybody turned to Mav as he did so. Sue leaned her cheek near the top and side of my head as she held me a little more firmly.

Mav said, "If I could have gotten mad at Til for such a thing, we would have probably been divorced the next day after our marriage." Then Mav turned to look lovingly at Til. The rest of us turned to look at our partners lovingly too. Til lovingly said to Mav, "You make me so happy darling!" Then they began to kiss each other passionately. At the same time, Sue lovingly said to me, "Oh my love!" Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately too. Also at the same time, Zem said lovingly to Bev, "You were more beautiful than a thousand sunsets my life." Bev's eyes glazed over with love. As did Zem's. Bev said with a highly loving voice, "Oh my darling!" They too began to kiss each other passionately. We must have kissed our girls for at least another minute. Then we began to break off our kisses and fully embrace our partners. As each couple did so, we all of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. Also, we would lovingly nuzzle the sides of our heads together as we lovingly caressed each other more. After about a minute, Sue and I parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly.

Then we turned our heads and leaned the sides of them together with contented, loving smiles on our faces. Both of us looked at the amazing panorama. Zem and Bev were doing the same. As were Mav and Til. Though they every now and then would also look at Sue's present. Sue and I looked at the mountains too. A little less of the sun showed above the horizon. The light on the mountains had become even more beautiful. The two moons in the sky also made it more

beautiful. As did the reflection of the mountains on the lake. Even though that was obscured a little by waves on the lake. Rather than move from Sue's wonderful embrace as we took in this beautiful sight, I thought to the others and said, "I don't want to interrupt the viewing. Though I have a suggestion to make that may do that anyway." This made Sue give me a brief extra caress and nuzzle of her cheek. At the same time, Sue thought, "I'm sure it will be wonderful darling." Zem thought to me and said, "We have seen many more sunsets than we have heard Erik suggestions. What is it."

I thought back to Zem and said, "Would it be ok for me to select some human

310

music to listen too while we take in the view." Zem said, "Sure." Til thought, "Though we don't expect you to be entertaining, you both have far from disappointed us so far. I think that would be nice too." All our Nal were in pairs about six feet above the table. I said, "I don't imagine it matters which of you wonderful Nal I ask." This made them circle around their partners at a slightly faster speed as I added, "I would imagine that you have a record of every human song ever played." San said, "Yes we have. But I think we'll let our dear Sas take care of you." Sas said, "Thank you." I thought, "Sas. I want to keep my selections secret from the others." This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to take their eyes off the view for a few moments and smile more sentimentally at me. They all knew that whatever kind of surprise I had in mind, it would cause more of the love that we all enjoyed so much. Sue took her head away from mine and gave me a loving smile. I gave Sue a loving smile too as Sue tenderly thought to me, "I can't wait to hear what they are darling." Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Then I turned back toward the scenery. Sue placed her cheek against my head as she gently caressed me and looked again at the scenery too. I thought privately to Sas and made a selection. My first selection was "In Your Eyes" by Peter Gabriel. The sound seemed to emanate from all around us. Different instruments and the vocals seemed to come mostly from different areas. The song of course brought up more caressing and nuzzling with our partners. It also eventually took our attention off of the scenery as we looked lovingly into our partner's eyes. This of course also led to more kissing. Even though they didn't have eyes as humans understand them, this song also apparently had an effect on the Nal. Each Nal couple extruded loving tendrils over the surface of their partners. As usual, these slowly undulated a little from side to side. Sending caressing waves of love along the tendrils towards themselves. The next song I had the Sas play was "Save Your Love" by Great White. Needless to say, this caused us all to express more love toward our partners. After that, I selected "Dream Weaver" by Gary Wright.

This of course brought on more loving caressing and nuzzling with our partners. My next selection was "Lady" by Styx. Between our partners, this song caused even more loving looks, caress filled hugs and kissing. Which of course took our attention off the scenery again. Though after the song, we all soon went back to looking at the scenery. There wasn't much sunlight showing on the mountain tops by this point. The light showing on the mountaintops had an even darker reddish hue to it. I thought to the others, "Parts of this next song should help you Zem and Mav to appreciate Bev and Til a little more." The next song I had the Nal play was "Great Gig In The Sky" by Pink Floyd. When it got to the part where the vocalist was expressing pain, all us guys looked at our girls with empathetic, loving looks as tears welled up in our eyes. I know that for me and no doubt the other guys, the thought of our girls in pain caused us pain. Seeing this, the girls all broke into tears and threw themselves into the arms of their guys. I said to Sue tearfully, "I couldn't bear to see you in pain darling!" Sue said tearfully, "I couldn't stand to see you in pain either darling!"

Not hearing such statements to their partners from the others, no doubt they

311

were doing so telepathically. Needless to say, these expressions of love quickly turned to passionate kissing. Which, because of the music, soon turned to more tender kissing. This continued after the song was through. Though once the main part of the song had finished, while I kissed Sue, I thought to Sas to slowly fade the song out. I never did really care much for the way they ended it. After about a minute of kissing and loving our partners, Zem and Bev parted their kiss and looked at each other with some sadness showing on their faces. Zem and Bev turned these expressions to Sue and I. Soon, Sue and I parted our kiss and more fully embraced each other. With our eyes lightly closed and loving looks on our faces, neither of us saw how Zem and Bev were looking at us. Zem said with some sadness in his voice, "I have some bad news for you two." Sue and I parted enough to look at each other with distressed looks. I think we both knew what was coming. Mav and Til glanced at Zem and Bev with some sadness written on their faces. Probably because they too knew what was coming.

Then Mav and Til turned their sad expressions to Sue and I. At the same time, Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas stopped circling around their partners and hovered next to their partners. Sue and I turned our distressed looks to Zem and Bev. Zem said, "I didn't want you two doing a mental countdown in your minds. But I'm afraid the time has come for us to be on our way." Sue and I turned our distressed looks back to each other. Then Sue and I embraced each other tightly. Sue said, "Oh Erik!" I said, "Oh Sue!" Sue said tearfully, "I don't want to go back!" I said with my voice wracked with emotion, "But we have to

darling! You know we have to!" We were both crying at this point. Panny and Lika started to come toward Sue and I. But Bev looked at them and apparently told them to stop. No doubt to let Sue and I share our distress without being interrupted by Panny and Lika climbing on us and trying to comfort us. Panny and Lika stopped briefly. Then Panny went over to Zem and Bev and hopped on Bev's lap. Lika went over to Mav and Til and hopped on Til's lap. Panny and Lika received pets as the others looked at Sue and I with slightly sad, compassionate expressions on their faces.

After about twenty seconds, Sue said tearfully with her face buried in my shoulder, "I saw the picture of how Zem found you! I can't stand the thought of you going back to that!" I said tearfully, "I'll be all right darling! I'm used to it!"

As Sue and I had this last little exchange, Zem and Bev looked at each other with compassion on their faces. Mav and Til did the same. Then both couples briefly exchanged compassionate glances before turning back to Sue and I. After a few extended moments, Bev said to Sue with a compassionate voice, "You forget Sue dear. You and Erik are under our care now. Everything will be fine." Sue and I parted a little and looked at Bev and Zem with teary, hopeful expressions on our faces. Then Sue said, "What are you going to do!" A bit of a smile came over Bev's compassionate face as she said, "You know that it wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." Compassionate smiles came over Zem, Mav and Til's faces too. Sue and I embraced again. Then Sue said with a bit of a kidding around tinge in her teary voice, "Bev! You meanie!" This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to chuckle a little.

After a few moments, Sue and I parted a little and looked at the others with a

312

little sadness still on our faces. Sue said, "Do we have time for one more song?" Zem said, "As long as it isn't an opera." This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to chuckle a little. Sue and I did too, despite the circumstances. Afterwards, Sue said, "Somebody along the way changed the lyrics at the end to something unfortunate. But parts of still show how I feel." Then Sue looked up at Sas and seemed to think something to her. Sas started playing a song that I later found out was called, "Johnny Has Gone For A Soldier." Which I took to be an old timey way to mean, "Johnny has gone to be a soldier." It was a very sad song about parting. Maybe forever. After the song was over, Sue and I were again fully embracing and crying. As we did so, Sue made a reference to the song through her tears and said, "If anything happened to you darling, no amount of time could heal my woe!" I said between sobs to Sue, "How can I live without you!" Which made Sue cry all the harder and somehow grasp more firmly than she had been. The sad song of love Sue selected also made Zem and Bev

tearfully embrace each other. It had the same effect on Mav and Til.

About a minute or so of this loving passed by. Then Zem and Bev parted their embrace and turned compassionate looks to Sue and I. Zem said to Sue and I in a voice full of compassion, "You don't need to worry. If things work out as we plan, and they will, you won't be parted for too long." A few moments later, Sue and I parted enough to look into each other's distressed, tear moistened faces. We then turned to Zem and Bev. By this time, Mav and Til were also looking at us with compassionate looks on their faces. Sue said to Zem and Bev, "But Erik and I couldn't love each other on earth as much as we do here." Bev said, "That may or may not be the case. But when it comes time for us to bring you back, as far as how you feel about each other right now, your feelings for each other now will come back to you."

## Chapter Fourteen Time To Leave

Sue and I looked at each other with hopeful, but sad expressions. Then Sue briefly glanced over in the direction of our spaceships. I did too and saw our ship rising up into the air. Sue and I fully embraced each other again. Bev sat Panny on the table. Then Bev got up as Til sat Lika on the table. Panny and Lika came together and embraced each other a little as Zem got up too. As Zem and Bev came around the table, Til and Mav got up too. Then they came around the other side of the table. Sas went over to Pim and Mim. They all circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Tal went over to San and Pan and did the same thing. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til stopped near the ends of the table. Then Zem said in a joking around, but kind manner, "Would you prefer walking, or kicking and screaming." This made us all laugh as Sue and I parted a little. Afterwards, Sue and I looked at each other with amused expressions that were tinged with a little bit of sadness. Sue got up reluctantly and then stepped over to Til. They embraced each other.

Then Sue said, "I'm going to miss you so much!" Bev also stepped over to

313

them as I stood up. Til said, "We're going to miss you too!" Bev put an arm on the both of them. Sue and Til put an arm around Bev and brought her into the hug. They all had their eyes tightly closed with slightly emotional looks on their faces. Zem and Mav looked at them with sentimental smiles on their faces. I had a bit of a sentimental look on my face. Though it was tinged with a little sadness at the thought of parting. After a few moments, Bev said, "Til and I will come visit you. But you won't know we're there." They all parted their hug



enough to smile sentimentally at each other. Though their looks were still tinged a little with sadness at the thought of parting. Sue then hugged Bev a little and said in an emotional voice, "That would be wonderful! But I wish I could know!" They hugged for a few moments. Bev and Sue then parted a little. They all looked at each other with slight smiles and slightly sad expressions. Bev said, "You will at least learn about it later. Because there will be one visit where Zem and I will reveal ourselves."

Bev then grinned. The rest of us grinned too as Bev then said, "I can't wait to see the expressions on your faces!" Sue said with a bit more happiness in her voice, "I can't wait either!" This caused a bit of a chuckle. Afterwards, as we all grinned, Til said, "I want to see it too!" Mav's grin turned to a smile as he said to Til, "If Zem and Bev want us along. Erik and Sue are after all Zem and Bev's humans." Til's grin turned to just a smile too as Bev smiled at Mav and said, "You two have to be there now too." Mav and Til grinned. Which made Bev grin too. Sue and I's grins got a little bigger. Sue then gave Til a kiss on the cheek and Til then gave Sue a kiss on the cheek. Then they hugged again. As they did so, Til said, "Thank you again for your presents." After they parted, Zem stepped over to me and put a hand on my shoulder. Sas parted from Pim and Mim. Tal parted from San and Pam. Tal and Sas came together a few feet from their parents. Zem said with a slight smile and a compassionate look on his face, "Time to say goodbye." At this point, the back of our spaceship was on the other side of the railing. The back ramp had come down and formed into steps that led from the deck to the spaceship. The interior was of course illuminated.

Then Bev and Sue took a step back from Til. Pim and Mim came down to the table. Pim started to levitate up all the cups. Except for Mav and Til's. Mim levitated up all three bouquets. Til looked at them and then over to Bev. Til said, "Can I keep Panny and Lika's mugs? They're so cute!" We all grinned as Bev said, "Sure." Pim levitated Panny and Lika's little mugs back onto the table. I stepped over to Til and gave her a hug. I said, "I'm going to miss you guys!" As we hugged, Til said, "We're going to miss you guys too!" We parted after a couple moments. Then I gave Til a kiss on her cheek. Til then gave me a kiss on my cheek. As I held Til's shoulders, I briefly looked from Til to Mav and nodded my head over to him. Then I said to Til, "You make sure you take care of that big lug." We all laughed a little. Mav and Til took on big grins and Til said, "Oh. I will." I then stepped over to Mav and said with a grin as we shook hands, "Thank you again for everything." Mav said, "It's been our pleasure. Til and I have never been around anybody who so often made Til and I want to disappear to someplace more private." This caused us all to laugh. Afterwards, Mav and I shook hands a couple more times.

While I continued to hold Mav's hand, I said with a grin, "And you be nice to Til. Or you're going to have me to deal with." Sue quickly added, "Both of us." With Sue and I's powers being like a worm's compared to a Reall's, I expected the idea of I and then Sue making a threat to any of these gods to invoke laughter. Which I of course was ready to quickly join in on. But instead, Mav got a sentimental look on his face. Which quickly spread to all of us. Mav and I gave each other one of those man hugs as we continued to hold each other's hand. Sue and Til also hugged again. Mav and I parted and released each other's hand. Then Mav put a hand on my shoulder and said, "No need to worry. Til's happiness is always my main concern." Mav let go of my shoulder and Sue stepped over to him. Sue gave Mav a hug and said, "Thank you for everything! You've been wonderful!" Mav hugged Sue back and said, "You've both been great too." Then Sue gave Mav a kiss on the cheek and they parted. Taking a couple steps back, Sue came to stand by me and we put an arm around each other's lower backs. Til stepped over to Mav and they put an arm around each other's lower backs too.

As Bev went over to Zem, Mim levitated Til's bouquet to her and Sue's to her. Til released Mav and Sue released me. They took their bouquets as us guys put an arm around our girls' shoulders. Mim also brought Bev's bouquet over to her as Til and Sue briefly smelled their bouquets. Bev took her bouquet, then looked over at Panny and Lika. They jumped off the table and made their way toward the ship. After briefly giving her bouquet a smell, Bev said gently to Sue and I with a look of sentimental compassion on her face, "Come on you two. We need to go." We both briefly glanced at Bev and then back to Mav and Til. We all had sentimental looks on our faces that were tinged with a little sadness. Zem and Bev started toward the ship. Panny and Lika were sitting at the top of the ramp with a bit of a melancholy countenance to them. Sue said with some sadness in her voice, "Goodby." With some sadness in my voice too, I just said, "By." Mav said, "Goodby." Til said, "Till we meet again." Sue looked up at San and Pam and said, "Goodby." I said to them, "It's been wonderful." San said, "Goodby." Pam added, "For now."

Then Sue and I turned to Tal and Sas. I said to them, "By you two." Sue said, "You're both dears." Tal said, "Thank you. By for now." Sas said, "Goodby dears." Sue and I turned and made our way toward the ship too. With our faces looking somewhat downward. Sue and I briefly turned our saddened expressions to each other as we went. Both of us knew that soon, for a time, we would be parting. This caused us to walk up the steps almost like we were making our way toward a guillotine or hangman's noose. I would have liked to have had one more intimate encounter with Sue before we went back to earth. But I guess it just wasn't meant to be. Zem and Bev had stopped when they got a step into the ship and turned around. Both of them were closer to the maketake machine. Pim and Mim went toward

the instrument panel of the ship. With Pim levitating the mugs below him. Zem and Bev had compassion and a little bit of sadness on their faces as they watched Sue and I come aboard with downtrodden faces.

When Sue and I stepped into the ship, we forced a slight smile to Zem and

315

Bev. They gave us slight smiles too, with compassion still on their faces. Sue and I turned around and gave saddened smiles to Mav, Til, San, Pam, Tal and Sas. Then Sue briefly glanced at the bartok in the distance. Seeing Sue do so, I did too. The bartok were all relaxing around their campfire. They had started five smaller fires on the inside edge of the original larger one. Not being completely dark, this cast some light on them. Lega, Gwean and Heag were admiring their weapons. A few of the others were at this moment holding mugs. The light was fading at the horizon. We could still make out some multa out in the lake. There was a faint purplish light showing on the mountain peaks. The moons had risen a little higher in the sky. They showed with more of a whitish color. There were of course some stars showing in the sky. Sue looked back at Mav and Til with a slight smile and a sentimental look on her face. Then Sue said to them with a slightly louder than normal voice, "Tell the bartok I said goodbye."

This brought smiles to everybody's faces as we all looked at Sue. Zem thought to Sue and said, "You can tell them yourself. There's time." Sue and I had turned our smiles to Zem as he thought to us. Til thought too and said, "I'm sure they will appreciate it." As we looked back at Mav and Til, this made Sue and I's smiles a little bigger. Sue thought to Til, "What should I say." Til said, "Just think to them, 'bartok.'" Once you have gotten their attention, think, "Ubly bartok." You can wave too." Sue said, "Ok." Then we all turned our attention to the bartok. Sue said, "Bartok." All the bartok turned in our direction. Those holding things sat them down. Some of them moved a little to make room to bow in our direction. Sue said, "Ubly bartok." As Sue held her bouquet in one arm, Sue waved at them. They raised themselves to look at us as I waved at them too and said, "Ubly bartok." Seeing us waving, they waved too. One of the Nal made their voices audible to us. With humble, grateful and sincere sounding bartok voices, they said things like, "Ubly gutta Sue! Ubly gutta Erik!"

After getting some of these phrases out, Zem and Bev gave them a wave too. Bev said, "Ubly bartok." Zem also said, "Ubly bartok." This of course caused more humble, grateful and sincere statements of goodbye to Bev and Zem. They also threw in some extra bows. Then the audio went out and Mav and Til turned back to us. Sue's expression again turned to one of sentimental sadness at having to say goodbye. The rest of us took on similar looks. Though Zem and Bev turned theirs to Sue and I as Sue raised her bouquet and gave it a brief sniff as she looked at Til and Mav. I caressed Sue's back and gave the

bouquet a sniff too as I looked at them also. Smelling the sweet fragrance of the flowers Til held, Mav and Til did the same. Then the girls lowered their flowers a little and we waved at each other. Mav and Til wore slight smiles with compassion and a little sadness on their faces. The ramp started to go up and straighten out. Panny and Lika jumped up on one of the couches. Sue waved at Mav and Til and said with some sentimental sadness, "Goodby." I also waved at them and said with sentimental sadness in my voice, "Goodby." Mav and Til waved too.

Mav said with a sentimental voice, "By." With slightly less sadness in her voice as Sue and I had, Til said, "By dears." Then Zem and Bev gave one last wave before the ramp blocked our view. Zem and Bev then turned to Sue and I. We

316

turned to Zem and Bev also. Figuring that Sue and I would prefer to spend as much time together as possible, Zem said to Sue and I with a gentle, compassionate voice, "You can take a seat on a sofa." Then Zem and Bev headed toward the front. Pim and Mim had turned black again and were sitting in their depressions on the front instrument panel. The mugs Pim brought aboard were sitting on top of the instrument panel. Sue and I looked at each other with sadness again fully on our faces and we then again lowered our faces. Then we took hold of each other and went toward the couch on the right. We sat down near the middle. Sue sat her bouquet aside as we looked at each other with sadness on our faces. We took hold of each other's forearms and held each other a little closer. Then we again turned our saddened faces toward the floor and leaned the sides of our heads together.

As Zem and Bev sat down, Bev sat her bouquet on the instrument panel. Panny and Lika came over and sat on our laps. This caused slight smiles to come over our faces. Sue and I let go of our forearms and petted Panny and Lika. But our sadness was such that not even the attention of Panny and Lika could really cheer us up much. Zem looked back and said to Sue and I, "We're going to stop for a bit at planet Bev to get your things. We'll bring them back to the ship with us." Sue and I looked at them. They were both looking at us with somewhat somber looks on their faces. Bev said, "Maybe we should have grabbed them before, but this won't take long." I said, "I don't mind waiting for the blade to come down. But why don't you just have a Nal transport them or something. Zem said, "You know how we are. We prefer to do as much as we can by ourselves." Zem and Bev then gave each other somber looks for a moment. Then they turned back toward the front. A holographic image of stars appeared near the instrument panel. But rather than look at what they were doing, I looked through the front "window" and saw that we were speeding into space.

Off to the left I could see the two moons. After a few extended moments, they quickly faded out of existence. We would no doubt be at planet Bev in a moment. After a few seconds, planet Bev quickly faded into existence. But all the lights inside the ship and on the instrument panel went dark. The pictures of the outside that the side panels showed also went dark. The view to the outside through the front windows was all that remained. Quickly, a blinding flash came in through the windows that lasted a couple of seconds. When the flash subsided, there was a large, light gray ship over ours. From what I could see of it out the front windows, it appeared to be circular. It also seemed to be a little larger than the Pol-Wim. I would guess it was about a third of a mile in diameter. Our ship abruptly jolted like it had been grabbed by something. Sue and I had highly concerned looks on our faces as Sue said, "What is it!" At the same time, Sue and I held Panny and Lika a little more firmly. Zem and Bev were furiously trying to manipulate the control panel in an attempt to get some response from it. Zem glanced quickly back at us with an angry expression on his face and said, "Gitak!"

Then Zem quickly turned his attention back to the control panel. Being incredulous that the Gitak would dare mess with the Reall, I said, "This isn't

317

another virtual reality thing is it!?" While still trying to get some response from the control panel, Zem just said angrily without looking back, "I wish it was!" I could see that the ship that had grabbed us started to move toward planet Bev. After a little more trying to get some response from the control panel, Zem angrily struck it with the bottom of his fist and said, "They have to be fucking insane!" Zem and Bev both glanced at Pim and Mim for a moment. They rose from their places in the control panel and hovered near the ceiling above them. Bev turned to us with a worried look on her face. This of course frightened Sue and I. Because anything that could cause a Reall to be worried had to be really bad. Zem shot an angry glare at Panny and Lika. Though he of course wasn't angry at them. After a moment, they jumped from Sue and I. They scampered to the space between the ends of the couches and the back of our ship. They appeared to be hiding.

Zem looked at Sue and I in the same manner. I got an angry look on my face too. Simply because whatever made Zem angry made me angry too. Though Sue still looked frightened. Zem thought to Sue and I with an imperative edge to his thought. Though it seemed somehow muted. Zem said fairly quickly with an imperative edge to his thought, "If you can hear me, nod." Sue and I gave Zem a nod. Then Zem said with the same imperative thought, "I don't know what they want. But it could get messy. Don't do anything until you see Panny and Lika attack. Then do the same. It will be the only chance

we have.” Zem and Bev went back to trying to get some response to the control panel. Some lights came on briefly, but went dark again. I could see that we were getting closer to planet Bev. Then I stood up and brought Sue up with me. As we moved toward the back of the ship, I looked at Sue with a determined, angry look. Sue looked back at me with a frightened look. Which caused anger at what was frightening Sue to surge through my entire body. I knew I would die before I let any harm come to Sue.

At that moment, a circular area about three and a half feet across blasted open in the middle of the ceiling. I shoved Sue behind me as she screamed and buried her face into my back. Sue also held onto me tightly from behind. Pieces of the ship came crashing to the floor in shards of various sizes. The hole it left behind was clean around the edges. As Zem and Bev stood up and took hold of each other, who I took to be Pim shot toward the opening. As he went into the opening, he fell back out. Though this time he was light gray in color and a little over a foot across. He fell to the floor, bounced once about six inches and rolled a little after he landed again. Immediately, five other spheres light gray in color and about nine inches across came down through the opening. I shoved Sue against the back of the ship with my body and stood in front of her. Three of these different kinds of Nal headed toward the front of the ship. Before they got very far, Mim headed toward them. One of the three other Nal blasted to pieces. Another one of them collided with our Mim and enveloped her. Mim fell to the floor. Enveloped like Pim was.

While this was going on, the other two larger, light gray Nal came and stopped a couple feet from Sue and I at head level. If these could do what I just saw them do, Sue and I didn't stand a chance. And if these Nal meant to kill us, at

318

least I would die first. But these Nal didn't do anything. Zem and Bev backed against the lower edge of the control panel as the other Nal approached them. Bev still looked worried and Zem still looked angry. This other Nal stopped about two and a half feet from Zem and Bev. Probably because it knew that Sue and I were no threat, one of the Nal near Sue and I went forward to join the other one. Then a figure came falling feet first through the hole. I couldn't see it very well because it was largely transparent. Except for the bottoms of its feet, palms of its hands and face. Which looked pretty much like a Reall face with an angry, determined look. It seemed to slow just before it touched the floor. Viewed from above, the bottoms of the feet became largely transparent. The Gitak turned toward Zem and Bev. More of its face became transparent when viewed from behind. It was pointing what I assumed to be a largely transparent weapon with both its hands at Zem and Bev.

It stepped aside and forward a bit as another largely transparent

figure come down. This one appeared to be pointing a weapon at Sue and I. As it touched down, it stepped a little toward the back and off to the side. Two more came down in the same way. One went toward the front a little and the other moved toward the back a little. Then, what I took to be an officer of some type came through the opening as well. He wasn't largely transparent. This one came down a little more slowly than the others. I could tell that they indeed looked like Reall. Though his cranium didn't appear to be quite as large as a Reall's. He had short, thin, stubby black hair. This officer wore a beret style hat that was black and had four thin gold bands that went around the base. There were four fairly small and thin six pointed stars across the front. This, along with his jacket and pants were made of a slightly shiny material. He had similar gold bands and stars near his cuffs. The jacket he wore was a dark grey Nehru style with a thin collar. It was a decorative, military type of jacket. There were gold and embroidered epaulets on the shoulders. The collar also had four small gold stars on each side near the front that angled slightly downward.

Under this garment he wore a light gray shirt with a collar that sat a little higher than the collar of his jacket. The hemmed fabric joined in the middle. But I couldn't tell how. This was made of a more cotton like material. The pants were dark gray and nearly pressed. There were four closely spaced, thin gold stripes that went down along the sides. His shoes were black, shiny and appeared to be leather. He wore a somewhat ceremonial belt around his waist. On which hung a ceremonial type of decorative sheathed dagger on one side and a similarly decorative, sheathed, slightly curved sword on the other. With the two handed handle, it reminded me a lot of a Samurai sword. This Gitak was clearly somebody of considerable rank. Though all in all, the uniform seemed a little overly garish to me. When this officer touched the deck, the other soldiers became visible. All of them appeared to be just as tall as Zem. They were holding rifles of some sort that were thin in profile and with no visible magazines. The butts were of a simple folded wire design like I have seen on some human machine guns. Though the wire was a bit thicker. These weapons also had fairly thin straps on them. Which I figured was for carrying these weapons over their shoulders. They wore helmets that resembled the kinds we use, but fit a

319

little closer to their heads. Off the backs of which were cloths something like I had seen the French Foreign Legion use in movies. Except these had a jungle camouflaged pattern on them. Similar to the type that I had seen soldier on earth use. Their shirts, pants and boots were all of a type of camouflage pattern. Around their waists, they wore belts of the same pattern. On which hung utilitarian looking daggers and swords, along with a couple other small pouches. He looked at the soldiers and said something to them in a language that

didn't seem to be like the bits of Reall language I had heard. Two went up to Zem and Bev and two came up to Sue and I. They pulled Zem and Bev apart, as they did with Sue and I. They said something in a language again that I couldn't understand. But from the commanding tone, the meaning was clear.

Zem and I put up some resistance. Their Nal that was near me gave me a bit of a shock a little like Pim had done to me on earth. I said to the one that took hold of Sue's arm, "If you hurt her I'll rip your fucking heart out!" Sue gave me a frightened look as she tried to hold onto my arm. As Sue did so, Sue said, "Oh Erik! What are they going to do!" There were verbal exclamations made by Zem and Bev in their language. Bev's seemed defiant instead of frightened. Which gave me a little more hope. The soldiers stood behind Zem, Bev, Sue and I and stuck the muzzles of their guns in our backs. I wanted to strike one of these bastards so bad. But according to what Zem said, this wasn't the time. As the officer went over toward Zem and Bev, Zem and Bev both said something to this officer in their language. The officer answered them in broken English. He said, "You don't know why we're here?" Zem and Bev both gave the officer somewhat incredulous looks. Zem glanced and nodded once toward Sue and I as he spoke. Zem said, "You're committing suicide because of them!?" The officer said in a defiant manner, "We're not afraid of your technology."

Then Zem said with his voice and expression seething in anger, "I have to admit your sneaking up on us was a pretty good trick. But I can't believe that you would waste your one and only chance to use it was because of them." (Nodding again to Sue and I as he referred to us) Then Zem said, "Before you die, I want to hear from your own lips why." The officer seemed to be taken a little aback by Zem's defiance. Quickly recovering himself, the officer pulled out his sword. Holding the hilt with one hand, he held the tip to Bev's throat. He said, "You want to know why? Because you slapped our kind in the face by bringing humans here and instilling in them the same kind of racist filth you showed to our kind. Which we were willing to let go because you snatched them out of the jaws of death. But now you dare to do the same with other humans?"

Bev said defiantly, "What you call racism we call patriotism! Along with the way the universe works. You Gitak are even more stupid than I thought!" Zem then added, "What we do is none of your business! You're being here only demonstrates again that our kind were right in separating ourselves from you Gitak."

The officer lowered his sword and stepped over to Zem. Then the officer gave Zem a hard, backhanded slap across the face. This made every muscle in my body flinch with anger. The Gitak solder poked Zem in the back with the muzzle of his weapon. Noticing my flinch, the Gitak soldier behind me also poked me in



the back with the muzzle of his weapon. After the officer struck Zem, he said, "Don't call us that! We're Reall damm you!" Zem said, "You may have managed to make yourselves look more like our kind on the outside, but all this shows is that you're still pure Gitak on the inside!" The officer said something to the soldiers behind Zem and Bev. They quickly slung their weapons over their shoulders. The soldier behind Zem grabbed both of Zem's wrists and bent his forearms up behind him. The soldier behind Bev bent one of her forearms behind her and held Bev around the throat with his other arm. The officer then took his sword and brought it to Zem's ear. At the same time the officer grabbed Zem's ear and pulled it out a little. It was clear that he planned to cut it off.

Bev cried out some sort of expletive words to the officer in their language. Which caused the soldier holding Bev to painfully apply force to her arm. This made Bev grunt with pain. Then Sue yelled out, "Stop it you Gitak nigger fucks!" Sue probably wanted to deflect the officers actions away from Zem. Both Sue and I received a good shock from their Nal. Despite the pain, I managed to get out, "If we're the problem, come after us!" The officer gave us a quick glance like we were worms. Then he turned his attention back to Zem and sliced off Zem's ear. Zem face contorted with agony and he growled with pain as he clenched his teeth. But Zem didn't cry out. Bev tried struggling a little more. But she was held tighter by the soldier. Then the officer held up Zem's severed ear to near his mouth and spoke into it. He said, "I don't care what you say!" Then the officer tossed Zem's ear aside. He quickly wiped the blood on his sword off on Zem's sleeve with a quick up and down stroke and expertly put it back into its sheath. The soldier holding Zem released one of Zem's arms and held Zem around the throat with his arm.

Growling through the pain, Zem said, "I'm going to wipe out your whole filthy species and see that you personally suffer eternal torment!" The officer seemed again to be taken aback by Zem's defiance. Then the officer said, "The Mind won't let you do that." Zem said, "You don't know the Mind as well as you think you do!" The officer briefly took on a look of someone who opened a can of whoop ass they would have been better off not having messed with. The officer then took out his dagger. He then stepped over to Bev and put the edge along her cheek. He said to Zem with a determined look, "Maybe I'll just have to make you swear not to try such a thing." Clearly thinking that if he tortured Bev enough, he could make Zem swear to not seek revenge. Zem said, "You can kill our bodies, but not our souls! We will reform ourselves into physical beings elsewhere! And we will come after you! Like it or not, dying is going to be the easy part for you!" Then Zem called out in a way that I could hear both verbally and in my mind. Zem said, "Pim! Mim! Destroy their ship!"

Pim and Mim came spraying out of a hole they apparently forced open in the Gitak Nal that encased them. They quickly expanded out like smoke. It was black in color and some of it covered the other

Gitak Nal like soot. The ones that were hovering fell to the floor. They were encased and rendered useless by the Pim and Mim soot. As all this was going on, the officer and the soldiers got shocked looks on their faces. I don't know if it was because the Pim and Mim were unconcerned with the rest, or if they were simply following orders. But the

321

rest of the Nal smoke quickly retreated through the hole in the ceiling. One by one, the encased Gitak Nal disappeared. A second later, in quick succession, flashes showed in the windows. These were followed by sharp explosions. That was no doubt the end of the Gitak Nal. The officer looked at Zem angrily and said quickly as he pressed the blade he had to Bev's cheek down harder, "Call off your Nal!" Zem said, "They're not our Nal any more than we're their Reall. And you've made them angry." The officer took the dagger from Bev's cheek. He then grasped one of Bev's breasts and shoved the blade through it sideways. Bev grunted in agony as her face contorted with pain.

As he did so, the officer quickly said to Bev, "Call off your Nal!" He appeared to twist the blade some as he said this. Bev screamed out something at the Gitak officer in Reall. From Bev's tone, I could tell that it must have been something of a highly insulting nature. At the same time, Sue screamed out, "You bastard!" I was just dying for Zem to give the word to go into action. Then an explosion violently rocked their ship. Shooting a short but intense bluish flame down through the hole in the ceiling. The blast stunned me a little as the jolt our ship received threw us all off balance. Panny and Lika leapt out of their hiding spots and in a flash were on the shoulders of the shoulders behind Sue and I. They dug their front paws into the eyes of each soldier from behind and ripped savagely at their ears with their teeth. Both the soldiers cried out in pain. At the same time, Zem shoved himself backward into the soldier behind him. Then Zem delivered a kick to the soldier that was behind Bev. Sue and I also went on the attack. I spun around and knocked the barrel of the gun the soldier that had been behind me to the side. Then I delivered a crushing blow to his face that sent Panny flying. The soldier that was behind Sue had time to grab Lika. He flung her with great force toward the front of the cabin.

At the same time, Sue turned quickly, took hold of the barrel of the weapon and shoved it aside. Then Sue struck the soldier that was behind her in the face. A couple projectiles hit the wall near me that had come from the front of our ship as I grabbed for the weapon of the soldier I had hit. He was out like a light. I quickly retrieved the gun as another two projectiles just missed me. Quickly looking forward, Zem was grappling with one of the soldiers. He had apparently been able to get free and gain enough control of his soldier's weapon to shoot the soldier that was behind Bev. Bev had managed to pull the dagger out

of her breast. She and the officer were fighting over it. The officer appeared to be winning in their struggle. And Zem didn't appear to be doing all that great himself. There was a trigger on the weapon I had. Hopefully it would work. I didn't have time to help Sue because the situation up front looked pretty dire. I aimed it as best I could. Which was quite difficult now as our ship started to fall away from the other. This momentarily caused us to lose gravity.

It was a good thing that we were now in the atmosphere of planet Bev. Otherwise we would be breathing vacuum. Maybe that's what seemed to be holding up Zem's decision to act. I shot the officer. He became paralyzed from the agony of the blow. I could see the round that went through his chest hit the front window with a good amount of blood. As Bev started to right herself, a round hit her from the weapon Zem and the other soldier were fighting over. I

322

quickly aimed at the soldiers head and pulled the trigger. Part of the soldiers head was blown off. At the same time, Sue and the soldier she was fighting with were fighting for control of his weapon. A couple shots went off. One of which hit Zem. I turned quickly in Sue direction. At the same time, the soldier's weapon went off a few more times. A couple of these rounds hit Sue. I shot about twenty rounds into the soldier Sue was fighting with as Sue fell to the floor. Panny was again attacking the unconscious face of the soldier I had fought. I quickly put a few rounds into the soldier's chest, dropped the weapon and leapt over to Sue. Then I grabbed Sue and looked at her.

A little of the side of Sue's forehead and a good section of the side of her head was hanging down like a slab of meat. Under part of which, I could see some brain. I screamed out "Sue!!!" Tears started flowing from my eyes as I took the flesh and laid it back against Sue's head. There was blood coming out of Sue's mouth. Sue seemed to focus on me and pulled me in. Then Sue said with much difficulty, "Did we get'em!?" I looked at Sue with tears streaming down my face and said, "Yes. We got'em!" Then Sue tried to say something else, but her eyes lost focus and she went limp. Sue was clearly dead. I screamed with rage and anguish. Then I laid Sue back down and started punching the face of the dead soldier who shot her. My sanity had almost completely left me in my overpowering grief and rage. After a few blows, his face and most of his head was completely caved in. I heard Panny giving out some screeching howl types of sounds. He had gone over to Sue and was holding up the flap of flesh and bone that had fallen back from the side of her head.

Having run out of something solid to punch, with the strength of rage, I plunged my fingers into the mess that had been his face and ripped out a large section of it. Then I tossed the flesh that I held in my hand against the back ramp. I was getting ready to rip out more flesh when I heard Zem call out with a lot of pain in his voice, "Erik! Please help

Bev!" I looked forward with a wild, rage filled look on my face. Zem was sitting in his seat. He was trying to work the controls while he supported himself with his other hand on the control panel. I began to form the thoughts in my shattered mind, "Must. Help. Bev." Then I got up and hurried toward the front. Panny followed me. Bev was laying between the seats, breathing heavily. Half of her side was a bloody mess. Bev held out her arm to me with agony written all over her face. Lika was laying limp on the floor between the front and back seat on the left. Panny went to her. Apparently Lika was dead. Because Panny gave out more screeching howl types of sounds as he tried in vain to revive her.

The officer didn't appear to be completely dead. His body laid across Bev's lower body. Bev said weakly with a lot of agony in her voice, "Erik! Help me!" Bev's plea brought more sanity to me. The dagger they had been fighting over laid nearby. I quickly grabbed it and buried it into the officer's skull. Pinning his beret to his skull. Then I picked him up and tossed him toward the rear of the ship. I then picked up the upper half of Bev as I cradled her head in my arm. Bev said through what was obviously a lot of pain, "Sue's dead. Isn't she." As Bev said this, a bright flash, soon followed by a thunderous shockwave, hit our ship. Rocking it severely. No doubt that was the end of the ship that most of

323

Pim and Mim attacked. I was streaming tears as I said in a guttural voice of anguish, "Yes!" Some concern showed on Bev's pain wracked face as she said, "It isn't too late to help her. We need to get to the government building." What Bev said gave me some hope. It also helped restore some more of my sanity. Bev then added, "Put me in my seat." I said, "Are you sure! I don't know if I should move you!" Bev smiled slightly with her pained expression and said, "Who's the superior being here."

Just like Bev had shown in the virtual reality game, she sure had guts. Unfortunately, she now appeared to have had a bit of them on her outside, under her shirt. There was also some blood from Bev's stabbed breast. I picked Bev up as gently as I could and went to set her in her seat. Sharing Bev's seat with her, I held onto her. I looked over at Zem. He was bleeding all down one side. Then I looked out the window. Our ship was spinning to the right a bit and rocking a little from side to side as we descended toward the ground. I said, "Are we going to crash!?" Zem said with a pained voice, "No. I've recovered enough of our controls. But I need to make it look like we're going to crash for as long as possible. Otherwise we might get shot down. Luckily, we're not that far from where we need to go." Zem's pained, yet controlled manner brought me more into sanity. Looking out the window, I could see that we weren't all that far from the city. There appeared to be intensive firefights going on all over. In the air, a

Gitak ships would appear here and there, fire an incandescent deep purple laser like blast and disappear again. The burning hulks of the human aircraft carrier types of ships were on the ground.

I said, "How can humans here fight the Gitak!" Zem said, "They can't. Not enough to save themselves." I said, "Where are Pim and Mim!" Zem briefly glanced at me before going back to what he was doing. Then Zem said, "They're physically destroyed. And these Gitak could be emitting a field that could delay them from reforming into physical form elsewhere. We can't count on them bringing help in time." I said, "I wish Tal and Sas were here." Zem said with quite a bit of difficulty, "No doubt they've left other Nal here to take their place before they left." Looking out of the window, I could see that we were fast approaching the ground near the outskirts of Zem City. We were going to have a ways to go to reach the government building in the center of the building groups. All of the buildings had smoke rising from various parts of them. At the speed we were going, it looked like it was going to be a bumpy ride. Bev gave out a bit of a sound of pain. I tried to hold onto Bev firmly but gently. Just as it looked like we were going to crash into the trees, our ship righted itself and started heading in between one of the building groups.

In an impressive amount of speed, our ship shot toward the government building. It slowed abruptly and approached it. I could make out a faint hint of a force field that extended about a hundred yards from the building on all sides. These Gitak may have been able to sneak up on us. But they apparently they didn't completely sneak up on the Nal. There were large numbers of Gitak soldiers fighting hand to hand with human soldiers and civilians around the building. I assumed that energy weapons didn't work inside the force field. It appeared as though this force field could also keep out outside projectiles. But

324

not bodies. Probably because the Nal didn't want to seal off any access for human soldiers or civilian refugees. The humans were in a smaller parameter and fighting with various weapons. Things weren't looking good for the humans. When we passed through the force field, large explosions happened in the air just behind and above us. Apparently they were being stopped by the force field. Just after these explosions, I could see flashes of a few other explosions.

At the same time, what I took to be a Nal voice came into our minds. It said in a matter of fact kind of thought, "Power reserves are down, but holding. All control and communication outside the force field is being blocked by Gitak forces." Zem brought the ship down just above the ground and plowed through the mass of Gitak soldiers just near the front line. Our ship shook as the front window went dark from blood and gore smashing against the window. It was like bugs hitting a windshield. These sounds and the din of battle came through the hole

in the ceiling. As well as a little blood and gore. Zem turned his attention to a screen on the control panel that showed a clear view of what was going on outside. Our ship also turned sideways. I could see masses of Gitak soldiers trying to get out of the way. Which did them no good. Our ship began to pass through the line of Gitak soldiers around the building. There was a bit of jostling going on from the impacts. This made Bev groan with agony. As we continued to fly around the building through the line of Gitak soldiers, I tried to shield Bev from the jostling.

I said to Bev in a comforting tone, "Can't you heal yourself?" Bev said, "I tried. But the injuries are too extensive and painful. We need help." By this time, our ship had nearly made a complete circuit around the building. Though we were arching out a little farther. Because our maneuver had put the Gitak to flight. Fairly quickly, we were back where we started. Zem brought the ship up and over to the building off near the right side of the building that we were closest to. Then Zem turned the ship to face away from the building and sat it down. After Zem had the ship down, Zem turned to me and said with a pained voice, "Help me over to the maketake." Then I let go of Bev. As I stood up, I said to Bev, "Are you going to be ok?" With pain on her face and in her voice, Bev said, "Just hurry!" I went over to Zem and helped him stand up. Then I put an arm around Zem's back from his good side. There was a bit of blood coming out of Zem's mouth. Zem coughed a little, which made a little more blood come out. It also made him wince and groan with pain. I brought Zem over to the maketake machine. On the way, I saw what looked like part of a large intestine hanging down through the opening in the ceiling.

Seeing Sue's dead body again filled me with rage. Zem looked at Sue too. Then Zem looked at me with a grim countenance and said, "Don't worry. Once help arrives, we can repair her. But time is running out." As we stepped over Sue's dead body, Zem said, "Unless you would like us to just make her a new body." As Zem put his hand onto the maketake machine, I said, "No! I want my Sue back!" Zem reached his hand into the maketake machine and said, "Then try not to waste any time." Zem caused part of the back of the maketake machine to drop open. Then Zem looked in and said, "Just as I thought." Zem looked at me and said, "Give me one of their daggers." I hurriedly retrieved one

325

of the daggers from the Gitak that killed Sue and handed it to Zem. Zem took the point and stuck it into the machine. Then Zem then hit the end of the dagger a couple of times. Zem did the same thing in three other spots. Setting the dagger down, Zem reached in and yanked a little. Zem pulled out a metallic rectangular object. It was about eight inches long, about six inches wide and about two inches thick. One side was black, the other side was white. At the corners of

each end there were two square loops of tubes.

In all, they were about an inch and a half wide. The tubes themselves were about a quarter inch in diameter. Two tubes on one side were white and the other two were black. Zem looked at me and said, "You know where the maketake machine is that we have in our quarters here." I said, "Yes!" Zem said, "This is very important. So pay attention." Sue's bloody and lifeless body near my feet made it difficult for me to suppress my overpowering, bloodthirsty rage. Though I tried as Zem held up the device. Then Zem pointed to the tube on my right and said, "With the white side up, break the white right front tube off with a sword hilt or something. Turn it around and again with the white side facing you, break the black right tube off. Then toss it into the maketake machine quickly. It will disappear and provide some power to it. Tell the maketake machine to make a Kortik amplifier. Say it." I said, "Kortik amplifier." Zem said, "You have to return it to me. Then I can break through the Gitak interference and call for help." Zem handed me the device. It was surprisingly light. I stuck it into my shirt.

Zem then said, "Do you remember our battle creatures on the coffee table?" I said, "I remember them." Zem said, "The remaining power won't be enough to make a Nal. Tell the maketake machine to make as many life sized coffee table fighters as it can and set to kill Gitak. The machine will understand what you're talking about. Leave as soon as the first one appears. Others will follow. That way you're sure to make it back in one piece." I said hurriedly, "Kortik amplifier! Make as many life sized coffee table warriors as it can, set to kill Gitak!" Then Zem said, "Get a sword." I retrieved a sword from the Gitak that killed Sue. I then looked at Sue again. Which again brought in me a rage filled, seething, murderous hatred for these Gitak. Zem said, "Have you ever used a sword before?" I said, "No!" Zem said, "If it happens, try not to get hung up in a sword fight. Make a fighting retreat to your objective. Unless you have a clear kill blow, go for the hands that hold their weapons. Disable them first, then kill them." Zem looked toward the front and said, "Panny!" Then Zem looked at me and said, "Panny can help provide some distraction if necessary." Panny came running toward us. Making his way around Sue's body. Zem looked at Panny and seemed to be giving him some instructions.

Then Zem took the dagger near him and handed it to Panny hilt first. Bending over a little caused Zem a little more pain. Panny grasped it with his tail. Then Panny quickly passed the dagger from his tail to his hands. Holding the hilt with both of his front hands, as he stood on his back legs, Panny gave it a test thrust forward. If there had been a Gitak leg there, it certainly would provide some distraction. Panny then quickly passed it back to his tail. Then Panny looked at Zem and made some growling, barking like sounds. Zem pressed a part of the

wall that had a barely perceptible rectangular outline. This small section of wall popped open on a hinge. Zem said, "Pull the lever inside. And good luck." Then Zem started walking toward the front of the ship with some difficulty. I pulled the lever that was inside the opening. The back started to slowly open. I knelt next to Sue on one knee and daubed some of her blood from her shirt on the sword. Again filled with rage and my eyes welling up with tears, I said to Sue, "I'll give them a message from you darling!" I then leaned over and gave Sue a brief kiss on the lips.

Glancing back toward the front, I saw Zem retrieving a sword from the dead officer. Bev was leaned forward in her seat a little. Zem then cut off the officer's head. I stood up and looked at ramp. It was about a third of the way down by now. I heard Zem grunt with pain a little. I quickly glanced back as Zem picked up the head. Using the dagger hilt as a handle, Zem tossed the head outside. The head went flying out of the opening. I gave Zem a determined look as I heard some of the soldiers and probably some of the civilians on the outside cheering. No doubt they were overjoyed to see the head of a dead Gitak officer. Then Zem gave me a bit of a pained grin as he helped hold himself up using the sword as a cane. I looked back toward the ramp. It was about half way down as a few of the soldiers and civilians started to make their way onto the ramp. As Panny and I made our way out, I quickly said to the others, "Zem and Bev are hurt! Help them!" The ramp still wasn't completely down as Panny and I dashed outside. We headed toward the left to the front doors. I could see that there was fighting going on at the now expanded human parameter.

The humans had picked up many of the Gitak swords and now appeared to be holding their ground. How I wished I could have joined the fighters! But I was on a mission! One of the humans near the ship was one of the ornamental door guards. He had taken the head of the Gitak officer and stuck it on the spear point of his ornamental spear. He was moving toward the line of human fighters to use it as encouragement for our side and intimidation for the Gitak side. It looked like our side could use the help. Because I could also see a few more Gitak ships about fifty feet outside of the force field disgorging more Gitak soldiers. Near the front doors, there were some other soldiers, officers and civilians standing around in another defensive parameter. Quite a few of the civilians were women. They all appeared to be ready for battle. An older civilian male was holding one of the ornamental spears. Panny scampered behind me as I ran for the front entrance. One of the door defenders beat on the door with the back of his fist and yelled out, "Open for lord Erik!"

I was kind of disappointed that there were no Gitak in the way. But the quicker I got help, the more chance there was to save Sue! The front door parameter made way for me as Panny and I dashed for the front doors. The doors opened as I reached them. There was barely enough room for me as I dashed inside. A couple more of the ornamental guards were opening the doors. As I ran toward the back, I



could see two Nal sitting in the palms of the statues of Zem and Bev. They were probably preoccupied with keeping up the force field and other things like keeping energy weapons from working within it. Around the base of the statues, there were a couple dozen children of various ages huddled around it.

327

They all looked scared. About a third of them were crying. But my appearance caused a bit of hope to show on most of their faces. I quickly yelled to them as I ran, "Stay where you are! And don't be scared!" Panny and I ran to the back doors. When we reached them, I quickly opened them and ran off to the right inside. Still moving fast, I ran over toward the large table near the large maketake machine. I stopped over at the table near it and quickly pulled out the device Zem gave me.

Then I set it on the edge of the table and broke off the white right front tube with the hilt of my sword. Then I turned the other end to face me. I did the same with the black right tube. After I did this, I set my sword on the table, grabbed the device and tossed it over to the maketake machine. But it slipped in my hands. It flew over and hit the floor. Causing it to catch one of the edges and bounce. Knocking it off its trajectory just enough to hit the outside edge of the maketake alcove and land outside of it. I yelled out "Fuck!" and went after it as it started giving off white arks of electricity from end to end. Panny was closer to it. He released the dagger from his tail and dashed to it first. Then Panny grabbed a hold of it. Panny gave out a scream as he and the device went into the maketake machine. I yelled out "Panny!" as they both disappeared. I broke my forward momentum on the wall on my side of the maketake machine. Then I hit the bottom of my fist on the wall next to the maketake machine and called out in anguish, "Panny!" Panny then reappeared in the maketake alcove. I cried out happily, "Panny!"

I bent over for Panny as he quickly walked over to me holding out his front paws. They appeared to have gotten burned a little. I knelt on one knee, grabbed Panny and held him to my neck. I said, "Panny! You're a hero!" I kneaded and stroked Panny as Panny chattered excitedly. Though there seemed to be a little bit of pain in his chatter. I held Panny out a little and said, "You gave me such a scare!" Panny continued his excited chatter. I would liked to have petted and congratulated Panny some more. But I was on a mission! So I stood up and hurriedly went over to the table. Then I sat Panny on it. I picked up my sword with my right hand and pointed a finger at Panny with my left hand. I said sternly, "Stay!" I then turned to the large maketake alcove and said quickly as I quickly walked over to it, "Maketake! Make a Kortik amplifier!" An almost horseshoe like ring appeared on the floor of the maketake alcove. It was large enough to fit around a persons neck. I bent over, reached down and picked it up

with my left. Then I stepped to the side and said hurriedly again, "Maketake! Make our coffee table warriors life sized and set to kill Gitak. As many sets as you can!"

The bipedal insect like warrior that I had used in our coffee table fight appeared life sized in the large maketake alcove with its spear at its side. This creature was called a Pentas. It was menacing looking and slightly taller than me. This creature had a shiny black exoskeleton. It looked at me and picked up its spear with both hands. As it did so, it exclaimed words of some sort that were both a little high pitched and guttural. It then held its spear at a mostly vertical angle with the bottom sickle like blade pointing forward. The Gitak were about to meet hell! Neither were they going to like the Kolors or Folats. But the Gosens were

328

sure to make them shit themselves! Holding my sword upright by the handle with my right hand, I made a sweeping, following gesture to the Pentas with it. I said with a determined war face, "Follow!" Then I turned and started running for the doors. The Pentas creature ran out to follow me. As I approached the door, I heard a menacing roar coming from the maketake machine and more running footsteps.

I briefly turned to see a heavily muscled Gosen running after us. With its blade studded buckler, fearsome flail and tight fitting Mohawk spiked helmet, I sure wouldn't want to be its opponent. Before I turned back, I saw a Folat form in the maketake alcove. I ran through the doors and ran toward the front doors. Looking out the front doors, I could see some people standing guard. Farther out, there was still a line of combatants fighting. Though the humans had been pushed back a ways, despite the ones Zem had killed with our ship. But the worm was about to turn! Farther out, through a lot of smoke, I could see that the buildings were really taking a beating. A couple had been nearly blown apart. I ran to the front door and yelled out, "Make way!" Outside, I moved off to the left a little and stopped. The Pentas continued to dash toward the fray. There was a human officer and a couple soldiers near me. All of the humans looked at the Pentas with astonishment. I looked at the officer ferociously as the Gosen also dashed pass. Then I held out the ring and said, "Soldier!" The officer and the other soldiers nearby tore away their astonished looks from the creatures that ran by me and the others that were following.

Then the officer stood at attention. The other soldiers did the same. I handed the ring forward to the officer and said with urgency in my voice, "Give this device to Zem or Bev! Everything depends on it!" The officer seemed to start to give me a salute. But apparently thought better of it. Instead, he took the ring from me and said to me fairly quickly, "Yes sir! I'll see to it personally!" They all took on even more intense looks of fierce determination. I took off toward the fighting. Above the din of the battle, I could barely hear the officer

barking out a couple quick orders to some of the others. With the picture of Sue's dead body raging in my mind, I went crazy. I was determined to personally send as many of these Gitak motherfuckers to hell as I could! Seeing the creatures that were heading toward them, the Gitak started to turn and run. But they couldn't move very fast because of other soldiers in their way. The Pentas jumped into the fray with a screeching, guttural yell. Bringing down the sickle end of his spear into the side of the neck of one of a fleeing Gitak. Hearing the roar of the Gosen, a couple of the human defenders stepped aside to let it into the fray.

It plowed into the Gitak. Knocking down a number of them as it skewered one with the spike on its buckler. As it brought down its flail to smash another Gitak, the Folat entered the fray. It jumped into the Gitak. But off to the right a bit. Bringing both of its short, wide and slightly curved swords into two of the Gitak.

More of the humans stepped aside to let these fighters at the Gitak. I continued to run toward the line with a war roar. Slowly overtaking another Gosen that was heading into battle. The other creatures delivered savage blows as I jumped between a couple of the human defenders. I delivered a forceful, downward slice into the side of the neck of one of the fleeing Gitak. Burying my sword

329

halfway down into his body. Quickly pulling it out and stepping over the falling Gitak, I delivered a blow nearly as forceful to another. Slicing his body clean through from the side of his neck on one side to just below his arm on the other side. As the upper part of his body fell away. I raised my sword to strike another Gitak with my face contorted with rage and a vengeful scream coming out of me.

All of a sudden, I found myself in a large white, horizonless space. Only the floor had substance. My arms were still raised. But there was no sword in my hands. Zem and Bev were standing about eight feet from me. I cut off my yell and took a step forward. This caused me to quickly adjust my stance because of loss of momentum. Zem and Bev were looking at me with a bit of concern for me on their faces. There was no blood anymore on any of us. I said, "Were we rescued!" Zem said, "I'm afraid there was no battle to rescue us from." My face became contorted with anguish. I said, "That was all virtual reality?!!!" Bev said with a bit of sadness coming over her face, "I'm afraid it was necessary." I fell to my knees with tears streaming down my face. Then I buried my face into my hands and lowered my upper body toward the floor. I cried piteously, "Why did you do it!" Zem and Bev walked over to me. They knelt on either side of me and put their arms on me to comfort me. Bev said gently, "We're sorry Erik. But you will understand our reasons."

I looked up at Zem and said in a heart broken voice and tears streaming down my face, "You lied to me! You said it wasn't a virtual

reality thing!” Zem said with compassion in his voice and on his face, “It was misleading. But it wasn’t actually a lie.” I said, “How do you figure!” Zem said, “You asked if it was a virtual reality thing. I said I wished it was. But there is no law that says you can’t wish for something that is actually happening.” I said with a lot of anguished emotion still in my voice, “That was a dirty trick!” Zem said, “Yes it was. But you will understand why we did it later.” I looked at Bev and said, “Did Mav and Til know you planned this?” Bev said, “No. They’re our dearest friends. But we’re not joined at the hip.” I said with some heartbroken anguish still in my voice and on my face, “Take me to Sue!” Zem said, “Sure. Right away.” This scene faded out to black. I could tell that I was back in my body on our ship. Happily, I felt Sue’s arms about me. I opened my eyes and looked over at Sue as a highly emotional look came over my face.

We were both sitting on the couch next to each other. Panny and Lika sat on the other side of Sue. Sue was looking at me with tear moistened cheeks and an emotional look on her face. I took hold of Sue and said “Sue!” Squeezing Sue tightly, I stood up and brought Sue with me. At the same time, Zem and Bev started laughing. For them to be laughing after what Sue and I had just been through made me angry. I parted from Sue enough to turn an angry look toward them. Zem was pointing at Bev and he said, “Meanie!” Sue was giving them a little less angry look as Bev was pointing at Zem too. Bev said, “Stinker!” (I also saw out the front window that planet Bev was where it was before the lights in the ship went out) Sue had apparently written these words on their foreheads with an eyeliner pencil or something. This greatly lessened my anger. I turned back to Sue and started peppering Sue all around her face with quick pecking kisses. Sue did the same to me as Zem and Bev continued laughing.

330

Zem and Bev’s laughter soon lessened to chuckles. Sue and I stopped peppering each other with kisses and hugged each other firmly.

I said, “Are you ok darling!” Sue said, “I am now darling!” I said in an emotional tearful voice, “I thought I lost you!” Sue said in a tearful manner also, “I was so scared!” As we firmly hugged each other, Zem said to one of the Nal in a joking around manner, “I’m surprised you let Sue do this.” Pim answered in an audible voice and said, “If you want us to blast a moon to pieces or turn the surface of a planet into lava, fine.” Pim then added with a little more mirth in his voice, “But if you expect us to tangle with Sue, you’re on your own!” This caused Sue and I to laugh a little and cry. Zem and Bev laughed a little. Pim and Mim laughed verbally too. Afterwards, Mim said with mirth in her voice, “Besides! It was so funny!” This caused Zem and Bev to laugh a little more. Pim and Mim did so again too. Sue and I turned to look at Mim. On our faces we wore a combination of a little amusement, a little anguish and relief. After Zem, Bev, Pim and Mim’s laughter died

down, Zem and Bev looked at us with grins on their faces.

Seeing "STINKER!" written on Zem's forehead and "MEANIE!" written on Bev's forehead caused Sue and I to laugh a little. Though there was still a bit of a look of various emotions showing on our faces. Zem and Bev turned their grins to each other. Again seeing and the words written on each other's foreheads, they laughed a bit more. After their laughter died down, Sue looked sternly at Zem and Bev and said in a somewhat stern voice, "Mim said you had a good reason for doing what you did. But I'm still doubtful. You've probably scarred us for life!" I looked at Zem and Bev in a stern manner too as Sue spoke. I said, "How could you put us through that!" Zem and Bev turned in their seats and looked at each other with slight smiles on their faces. Then they looked back at us with some compassion written on their faces. Bev said, "As far as being scarred goes, don't worry. We can fix anything." Then Zem said, "As to why we did it, we'll explain everything to you." Sue and I turned to each other and shared in each other's stern looks. Zem and Bev stood up. Zem said to Bev with a grin, "Let's go meanie." Bev said to Zem with a grin, "Ok stinker."

Zem and Bev's punishment caused Sue and I's stern looks to be replaced with relieved, loving looks. Zem and Bev made their way toward the back. When they got to us, they paused and Bev put a hand on my shoulder. Bev said with a compassionate voice, "Just have a seat. We'll be right back." Sue and I both looked at them. The words "Meanie" and "Stinker" written on their foreheads brought slight smiles to Sue and I's faces. They continued on to the maketake machine. Sue and I sat down and embraced each other again. Both of us tightly closed our eyes as relieved, loving looks again came over our faces. I said with an emotional voice, "Oh my love!" Sue said with an emotional voice, "Oh my darling!" Still with an emotional voice, I said to Sue, "I love you so much! I went crazy when I thought you died!" Sue answered with an emotional voice too and said, "I saw what happened on the side viewing panel! It ripped my heart out seeing you in such pain!" Zem and Bev retrieved a couple small towels from the maketake machine. Then Zem started wiping Sue's message off of Bev's forehead.

331

Zem said to Bev, "You're such a beautiful meanie." Zem and Bev smiled lovingly at each other. Bev said to Zem, "And you're such a handsome stinker." Zem paused wiping off Bev's forehead long enough for them to give each other a brief but loving kiss. As Sue and I embraced, Panny and Lika hopped up onto Sue's lap. They both put their front paws on Sue as Panny made slight whimpering sounds. Sue and I parted our embrace and looked at them compassionately. I picked Lika up, held her and started petting her. Sue cradled Panny in her arms. As Sue petted Panny, Sue said with a comforting tone to her

voice, "Isn't Zem a stinker? But I'm ok now. And you were so brave!" Zem finished with Bev and they both smiled at Sue and I with compassionate looks on their faces. Then they turned these to each other. Bev then started wiping Sue's message off Zem's forehead. Sue and I's attention to Panny and Lika did comfort them. Sue said to me, "What Panny did with that device at the maketake machine. I didn't think he had it in him. But Lika was awfully brave too." Knowing they were being talked about perked Panny and Lika up.

After a few extended moments, Bev finished with Zem. Zem looked over at us and said, "You were all brave. We're proud of you all." Sue and I looked at Zem and Bev with slight smiles. Though we were both still a little traumatized. Then Sue and I turned our slight smiles to each other. At the same time, Zem and Bev tossed their towels into the maketake alcove. As Zem and Bev came toward Sue and I, Zem said with a consoling tone to his voice, "You needn't worry. We won't put you through anything like that again." This was a relief to me and no doubt Sue as Zem sat next to Sue and Bev sat next to me. Zem sat Sue's bouquet on the back of the couch and said to Sue with a smile and a kind tone to his voice, "Give me Panny." Bev said to me with a smile and a kind tone to her voice, "And I'll take Lika." Sue and I released each other handed them over. Zem placed his hand on Panny's head and closed his eyes. Panny closed his eyes too. Bev did the same with Lika. Sue and I held hands. After a few moments, Zem and Panny opened their eyes. As Zem petted Panny, Panny seemed like his usual self. At the same time, Bev and Lika opened their eyes. As Bev petted Lika, Lika also seemed like nothing bad had happened.

Zem said to Sue and I with a smile, "They no longer remember what happened." Bev then said, "We won't make you completely forget though. But we can take some of the sting out of your memories." Zem handed Panny back to Sue and Bev handed Lika back to me. Bev said with a gentle, kind voice as she brought her hand up to my head, "Just close your eyes. This won't hurt a bit." Zem said with a gentle and kind voice to Sue as he brought his hand toward Sue's head, "Let's make some of that bad memory go away." As Zem spoke, Bev had her hand placed on the upper part of my forehead with her eyes closed too. No doubt Zem was going to do the same with Sue. A lot of the emotional connection I had with the memory of the battle started to lessen. Almost like it had happened to someone else. The intensity of the memory of the battle also faded quite a bit. Bev then opened her eyes and removed her hand. I opened my eyes too. Bev said with a slight smile, "How's that." I said with a slight smile, "Just fine. Thank you." Zem opened his eyes and removed his hand from Sue's head. Sue opened her eyes too as Zem said with a slight smile, "Is that better?"

Then Sue said with a slight smile, "Much better." Sue then added with a tinge of scolding in her voice, "But I still think that you and Bev are a couple naughty, naughty Reall." This made Zem and Bev laugh. Which to a little lesser degree, Sue and I joined in on. Afterwards, Zem went from a grin to a smile. The rest of us did the same. Then Zem said, "Well let's see if we can take some of the sting out of that too. These are the reasons why we did what we did. You know how much of the human subconscious governs human behavior. As well as the heavy price the original humans paid to be here. A small number of them suffered even worse than you. Even on a subconscious level, we want humans here to know that you paid a heavy price to be here too." Understanding looks accompanied Sue and I's smiles as Zem continued on, saying, "Just so they will know that you truly belong. Even though we knew what was happening and you didn't, you can also mention to them that Bev and I also paid a painful price for you to experience what you did. Along as the reason for it. Every culture needs its heroes." This made Sue and I grin. Because Sue and I knew that it was us who Zem was referring to as being heroes to the humans here.

Zem continued on, saying, "But as Bev told you before, there is a price to be paid for everything. It is clear that one of the problems with American culture is that a lot of sports hero worship has been subverted by the nigger subspecies of human. Along with the non-White entertainment end of the equation promoted by the Jewish dominated media in American. You know what kinds of problems that caused. One of the stupid things is the way a lot of White people now wear their pants low like many niggers do and show their underwear. I don't know why they don't do away with pants completely and wear chaps. It should be clear as to how having you two as heroes would be helpful. Which like it or not, you now are." Sue and I briefly grinned happily at each other after Zem said this. Then we grinned again at Zem.

Bev then spoke. Sue and I of course turned our grins to Bev as Bev said, "During your lifetimes, we plan to make you two an added connection between the humans on planet Bev and ourselves. Though it will be largely a ceremonial post. Apart from that, you will be able to do whatever else you like. Also, you know how the humans here feel about us. We decided that they should have a reason to like you two for your own sakes. Which is best achieved by a heroic action on your behalf. Finding out that you fought courageously on our and their behalf, it should eliminate any possible jealousy some humans may have on even a subconscious level for your association with us. What happened will give you your own celebrity status separate from what you receive just from association with us. I'm sorry about what you two went through, but to achieve these ends, it was necessary." Zem said to Sue, "We're especially sorry that you were so nearly brought to the point of death, even if it was only in a virtual sense, before your consciousness was returned here. Though we all took the same

chance. It wasn't pleasant. But you have to take the good with the bad. So. What do you think of our reasons."

Sue turned in her seat a little and gave Zem a hug. Panny jumped from Sue's lap to the floor. Lika jumped off my lap. Zem hugged Sue back a little as Sue said, "It isn't possible for anybody to stay mad at you! Is it!" Panny and Lika

333

scampered over to the other couch. I turned to Bev and hugged her too. Bev hugged me back a little as I said to Bev, "It was so difficult seeing you in pain too!" As I hugged Bev, Zem said to Sue, "It is probably pretty difficult." At the same time, Bev said to me with a bit more sentiment to her voice, "Thank you. You're such a dear." After a few extended moments of heartfelt affection, we all parted and smiled sentimentally at the people we just hugged. Sue and I turned a little back toward each other and took each other's hands. Then Zem said, "Well let's get back to what we started out to do." Zem then stood up and turned to Pim and Mim. Panny and Lika looked on as they laid on the other couch. Zem said as he went over to Bev, "You can begin to bring us in. But there's no hurry." We were all looking in that direction too. I could barely make out that we started to move toward planet Bev.

Then Zem sat on the other side of Bev. They put an arm around each other's backs, held each other's forearms in front and gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue and I put an arm around each other's lower backs and held hands. We all turned a little to face each other with smiles on our faces. Bev said, "When you come to live here, I think I'll build a holiday around you two." Zem, Sue and I grinned at Bev. Which made Bev grin too. Bev then said, "It will help promote the kind of society we want." Sue said with a bit of excitement in her voice, "What did you have in mind!" Bev said, "I think I'll call it "Equality Day." Arranging it can be one of your first duties. You can arrange a pretend crowning ceremony for both of you. But with much of the usual pomp and circumstance. You can have thrones temporarily placed in front of Zem and I's statues. Just below and between where Sas and Tal set would be best. After two of the randomly selected council members place crowns on your heads, you will stand up and cast them to the ground. That can commence the festivities." Both Sue and I were beaming grins at this point.

Zem said to Bev, "That's a wonderful idea darling." Zem and Bev gave each other a brief but loving kiss. At the same time, Sue and I turned our beaming grins to each other and made happy "Eee!" sounds. Then we turned our grins back to Zem and Bev. I said, "That reminds me of another Genesis song my uncle Bill turned me on to." Zem said, "What's that." We all reverted to smiles as I said, "The title of the song is rather nonsensical. It's called, "Can-Utility And The Coastliners." It is based on a legend surrounding an old English king



named Canute. In order to dissuade his subjects of his greatness, he was said to have had his throne brought to the edge of the sea. In the song, he orders the rising tide to retreat. Which does no good. Despite this, in the song it says, "Those who love our majesty show themselves! All bent their knee." Then it says, "But he forced a smile, even though his hopes lay dashed where offerings fell." Bev said, "That's a very apt metaphor." Sue briefly smiled at me with pride in her face as Bev added, "No good can come from a desire to be led. Either by a god or king."

Sue said to Bev and Zem, "That's a bit of a paradox. Because with you two, a lot of good can come from being led." Zem said, "That may be true. But someday humans here are going to have to learn to do without us or Tal and Sas. With less of a desire to be led by us, the separation will be easier to take."

334

Sue and I gave a nod of understanding. I could see some light coming through the front window. So I looked toward it. The other's did too. We were pretty close to planet Bev by now. We all turned back and smiled at each other. Zem said, "Your memories of our battle are lessened. But if you had a choice between going through what you went through or everything else, what would you have chosen." Sue and I grinned at Zem and Bev. They grinned too. I said, "Sue was the one who came closest to death. She can answer that the best." We all grinned at Sue. Sue looked at me with a solemn look of love. I looked at Sue in the same way as Sue said, "I would go through a million deaths to be with you darling." An emotional look of love came over both of our faces as I said, "Oh darling!" Sue and I embraced more and started kissing each other passionately.

Zem and Bev looked at us with sentimental smiles on their faces. Then Bev turned to Zem and they looked at each other with looks of solemn love. Bev said to Zem with loving tenderness, "I feel the same way about you darling." Zem got a look of emotional love on his face. Which Bev did too. Zem said to Bev with a voice just dripping with love, "Oh my love!" They too started kissing each other passionately. While I kissed Sue's soft, loving lips, it almost seemed as though the love I was feeling would melt me into a puddle of love. After about forty seconds or so, the thought came back into my mind that Sue and I probably wouldn't be together for too much longer. Even if it was going to only be for a short time.

I broke off my kiss with Sue and we fully embraced each other. Then I said to Sue with a voice just dripping with emotional love, "I love you so much darling!" Sue briefly grabbed me a little harder as he said in a bit of a teary voice, "My husband!" I briefly hugged Sue a little harder too as I said with the same emotional, loving voice, "My wife!" Sue and I started to caress and nuzzle each other with a little more firmness as we embraced. After about a minute, the back ramp

started to open. Sue and I parted a little and looked in that direction. Then we turned back to Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev parted from an embrace they were giving each other and looked at the opening ramp too. Sue and I again looked at each other with some sadness. Then we firmly embraced each other firmly again. Knowing that the end of our time together, for the time being, was drawing ever closer.

## Chapter Fifteen Getting Our Things, Then Back To Earth

Zem and Bev got up. Then Zem went toward the front of the ship. Panny and Lika scampered across the couch toward the ramp. Pim and Mim rose up from their places. Zem picked up the pad of paper with my love letter. It was sitting on the back right seat. Where Sas apparently left it. Pim levitated up what I took to be my mug from the top of the instrument panel. Mim levitated up what I took to be Sue's mug. They followed Zem as he went back over to Bev. Zem and Bev gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then they put an arm around each

335

other's lower backs and came nearer to Sue and I. Zem said, "Come on you two. Don't make us do all the work." Sue and I parted our embrace and gave them slight smiles because of Zem's little joke. Because Zem's carrying the pad of paper was no burden. And the possibility of Bev carrying Sue's bouquet wouldn't have been any burden either. Zem and Bev were both smiling kindly at Sue and I. Sue and I released each other enough for Sue to turn a little and take her bouquet. Then Sue and I stood up. We both put an arm around each other's lower backs. Zem said, "Let's go get the rest of your things."

Sue and I looked at each other with slight smiles. But our faces changed again to having a little look of sadness. We all turned and started walking toward the ramp. I held the hand that Sue held her bouquet with. It was dark outside. The back of our ship was facing Sue and I's shack. The lights inside were lit. Panny and Lika by this time were out on the beach. Sue and I again took on a downtrodden look as we walked. We walked in silence over to the door that led into the kitchen. Then we went inside. Sue and I walked to the left a little over to the end of the counter near the bedroom door. Zem and Bev went over toward the end of the counter on the right. Sue and I stopped when we got to the end of the counter. I released Sue's hand and Sue sat her bouquet on the counter top. Pim and Mim sat our mugs down on the counter. Then Sue and I looked at the others with some sadness. Pim and Mim headed back toward the door. Sue said to Zem and Bev with a bit of sadness in her voice, "We'll be right

back.” Then Sue and I walked to the opening that led into the bedroom.

All of our things were sitting on the top of the dresser. Our wedding clothes were all neatly folded. Sue’s wedding veil was folded and sitting on her wedding dress with the flowery head wreath sitting on it. I said to Sue with a reminiscing, loving smile on my face, “Where’s your other, sexy outfit darling.” Sue and I held each other in a loose embrace as Sue smiled lovingly at me too. Then Sue said, “I disposed of it when Bev and I got flippers the other day. Bev said that when we went to live on planet Bev, I could just ask Sas to make me another outfit.” I said with a more solemn look of love on my face, “One for every day of the week I hope darling.” Sue was looking at me with a more solemn look of love too as Sue said, “Oh darling!” We then began to kiss each other passionately as we embraced each other more. After about thirty seconds, I broke off my kiss and we fully embraced. I said to Sue with a highly loving voice, “I love you so much darling!” Sue said with a highly loving voice, “I love you so much too darling!”

After about thirty seconds, we parted our embrace and looked at each other with some sadness on our loving faces. Then we let each other go. I turned to the dresser and picked up Sue’s wedding bouquet. I sat it on our wedding album. Sue picked up her wedding dress and sat it on my folded wedding suit. I picked up the wedding album and bouquet and held them in one arm. With my other hand, I grabbed the inside heels of Sue’s wedding slippers and my wedding shoes. Sue had picked up our wedding clothes by this point. We both again looked at each other with some sadness. Then we headed back into the kitchen. There was a box sitting on the counter top. Along with a stack of some folded, thin, white wrapping paper. Also setting on the counter top was the top inedible tier of Sue and I’s wedding cake. Which of course had the amusing

336

figures on it. Also on the counter were Sue and I’s other mugs. Pim and Mim were up in the air nearby. But just levitating near each other. Zem and Bev of course saw Sue and I’s sad expressions.

Bev said to Sue in a somewhat compassionate voice, “Somebody would think you two were going to a funeral.” Sue answered Bev as we sat our things on the counter top and said, “That’s what it feels like.” Bev said still in a compassionate voice as she went over to Sue, “You poor thing.” Bev and Sue then gave each other a hug. Zem looked at us all with a sentimental, compassionate look on his face as he said with a compassionate tone to his voice, “You two don’t need to worry. As we said, you two won’t be on earth for too long.” Bev let go of Sue as they both smiled at Zem. Though Bev’s smile was bigger than Sue’s. I too was looking at Zem. Still with a somewhat sad expression, I said, “I just wish I knew what “too long” meant for

somebody hundreds of millions of years old.” Zem grinned. Which made Bev grin at me too. The best Sue and I could do is a slight smile. Bev said, “I suppose you’ll just have to wait to see.” Then Bev went back over to Zem. Sue and I gave each other forced, slight smiles. I picked up our wedding album and slid it over to Sue. Which caused us both to look at each other with sentimental, loving smiles. Sue opened it as I stood next to Sue and put an arm around her. Zem and Bev gave each other sentimental smiles.

Sue and I looked at the first picture, which nearly took up the whole page. It was of Sue and I standing together in our wedding clothes. We were grinning with the binary planets Erik and Sue in the sky behind us. Sue and I briefly looked at each other as tears started to well up in our eyes. Sue put an arm around me and we turned our attention back to the wedding album. Sue said, “Oh darling! It’s so beautiful!” I gave Sue a brief, firmer hug with my arm. Sue turned the page and there was a picture of Zem and Bev on one side and a picture of us all standing together on the other side. Both of these took up nearly a whole page on each side. Bev peeled off the sheet that had my love letter written on it. Then Bev stepped over to Sue and I and said, “You’ll be needing this.” Sue and I both smiled at Bev with somewhat sad, sentimental looks on our faces. Bev turned the page of the wedding album back to the first page. Then Bev placed the love letter over Sue and I’s picture and closed the wedding album. Bev then smiled sentimentally at Sue and I and said with a kind voice, “Ok. Pack up.”

Bev took a step back as Sue and I did as Bev said. I slid the box closer to Sue and I. It was gray in color. There were two flaps meant to be folded over the top. On the sides, there were two indents for handles. I folded back the top flaps as Bev stepped back over to Zem. They put an arm around each other’s lower backs. I picked up our wedding shoes and put them into one side of the box. Sue picked up one of the folded sheets of paper, unfolded it and placed it over our shoes. Then Sue picked up our wedding clothes and put them into the box. Zem and Bev slightly smiled at Sue and I with somewhat melancholy looks on their faces. Sue then unfolded another sheet of wrapping paper and placed it over the clothes. Then Sue picked up more wrapping paper and started wrapping up our mugs. After doing the first one, Sue handed it to me and said with a slightly sad voice, “Here ya go darling.” I took it and placed it into the box.

337

Sue wrapped up the other mugs and handed them to me. I put them into the box too. When Sue picked up our cake decoration, it briefly brought a bit of a smile to our faces.

Sue then wrapped it up too and handed it to me. I put it in the box also. Then Sue unfolded more wrapping paper and wrapped her bouquet with it. I put our wedding album into the box. After wrapping

the bouquet, Sue put that into the box. I picked up Sue's smaller wedding bouquet and held it up as I said with a melancholy, loving, slight smile on my face, "One last sniff for now darling?" Both Sue and I held hands and put our noses to it. Sue and I lightly closed our eyes as we breathed in deeply. Zem and Bev leaned the sides of their heads together and smiled sentimentally at us. Sue and I backed away from the bouquet and opened our eyes. We looked at each other lovingly. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Let's wrap it together darling." Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "Ok darling." I held the bouquet as Sue took another piece of paper and unfolded it. Sue and I then wrapped the bouquet. We mostly looked at each other lovingly as we did so. When we were through, I placed the fingers of one of Sue's hands around the base. Then, with the fingers of one hand still around Sue's, we both placed the bouquet into the box. Sue and I released the bouquet.

After removing our hands, Sue then looked at me with a sad look again. We took hold of each other's hands again as I took on a sad but emotional look. Sue took on an emotional look too. We then let go of each other's hands. Then we fully and firmly embraced each other and shut our eyes tightly. I said with an emotional voice, "Oh my wife!" Sue said, "Oh my husband!" Zem and Bev parted their heads and looked at each other with sentimental, compassionate looks on their faces. Then they fully embraced each other too. After about a minute, they parted their embrace and looked at each other lovingly. Then they released each other. Zem stepped over to the counter and slid the box over to him. Sue and I heard this and parted our embrace enough to look at each other with sad, slightly emotional looks. Zem then closed the top of the box. The joins on the box fused together. Then Zem said with a compassionate tone to his voice as he slid the box over toward us, "Come on you two. Time to go." Sue and I let go of each other and briefly looked at Zem and Bev with slightly sad looks. I then slid the box nearer to me and picked it up. Zem went over to Bev. They took each other's hand and started to head toward the other end of the counter. Sue took hold of my arm and we headed toward the other end of the counter. Briefly glancing toward the ocean, Panny and Lika were a few feet in front of the shack and digging around in the sand. Zem and Bev waited for us on the other side of the counter with slight smiles on their faces. Sue and I took on slight smiles too as we went over to them. Then Sue said to them as we did so, "It's too bad that the flowers will eventually wilt." This made Zem and Bev take on bigger smiles. They briefly turned these to each other. Sue and I stopped as Bev said, "They will eventually from examination. But once the box is closed, nothing inside will age." Sue and I briefly took on surprised looks. Which made Zem and Bev grin. Sue and I then grinned too. Then Sue said, "You guys are constantly amazing!" I turned a loving look to Sue and said, "My love for you

darling is in such a box too. Because it will never wilt either.” Sue at this point was looking at me lovingly. Then Sue said with a loving voice, “My love for you will never wilt either darling.”

We then kissed each other lovingly as I held the box. Zem and Bev smiled sentimentally at each other. Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss. They parted and smiled lovingly at each other again. Then they looked at Sue and I. Zem and Bev again looked at us with sentimental smiles as Sue and I parted our kiss. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly for a few moments. Then we turned these looks to Zem and Bev as we took on slight smiles with slightly sad expressions on our faces. Zem gave us a slight nod. Then Zem and Bev started heading toward the door. They held each other’s hand with their fingers intertwined. Sue and I went with Zem and Bev. Pim and Mim went to the door first. It opened as they approached it. When Zem and Bev got outside, they stepped aside a little to let Sue and I catch up. For Sue and I, it again was a little like we were walking toward our execution. Zem and Bev started walking beside us as we exited. Panny and Lika scampered over by us. Pim and Mim were nearly inside the ship. Zem said to Sue and I, “When you two come to live here,” Sue and I turned slight smiles to Zem and Bev as Zem added, “I hope Bev’s idea of a crown rejection ceremony isn’t too difficult for you.”

Bev said, “As Zem pointed out before, adulation can be difficult to overcome.” This caused Sue and I’s smiles to widen further. (Which, looking back on our conversation, it probably had the effect Zem and Bev were looking for. To lift Sue and I out of our gloomy mood) Zem said as we stepped up onto the ramp, “Despite the symbolic rejection of your crowns, I’m afraid that the people there will view you two as a king and queen anyway.” This made Sue and I grin. Zem and Bev grinned too. Sue said to Zem, “Like you said, being aware of it is half the battle.” We paused inside the ship as the ramp rose. Panny and Lika were by now up on the couch to the left. Pim and Mim were in their places in the control panel. Bev’s grin diminished to a smile. The rest of our grins did too. Bev said, “You two can go ahead and take a seat. We’ll be back at the Pol-Wim in no time.” Sue released me and said, “Ok.” I went over and sat the box on the couch on the right. Sue came with me as Zem and Bev went to the front of the ship. I sat down and took Sue’s hand. We smiled at each other lovingly as Sue sat across my lap.

After Sue was seated, Sue lovingly caressed my cheek and said with a loving voice, “No matter what darling. You’ll always be my king.” My eyes glazed over with love. Sue’s did too as I said lovingly, “And you’ll always be my queen darling!” We then started to kiss each other passionately. Zem and Bev briefly smiled sentimentally at us. These sentimental smiles they then turned to each other as they turned forward in their seats. Our ship started to rise up into the sky as Zem went through their usual procedure. Such as showing various star

formations in the holographic sphere in front of the instrument panel. Sue and I of course were caressing each other's tongues together while we kissed. Along with all of the usual, wonderful, loving caresses. After about a minute, Sue parted her kiss from me and we firmly embraced. Then Sue said with loving emotion and some sadness in her voice, "I love you so much darling!" I said with

339

the same loving, emotional voice tinged with sadness, "I love you so much too my darling love!" A couple moments later, I heard the ramp begin to open. Apparently we were back in the Pol-Wim. Zem and Bev turned in their seats and looked at us compassionately.

Sue and I embraced each other more firmly as tears began to run down our cheeks. Zem said with some compassion in his voice, "We're here." I didn't know how I could handle being without Sue! Even if it was only going to be for a short time. The way I felt, it would have almost been kinder for Zem and Bev to have ended our lives. I said to Sue with a hint of desperation in my tearful voice, "Zem and Bev might be able to make me forget! But my love has to live on!" We held each other even more firmly as I added, "It has to!" Zem and Bev looked at us with sentimental compassion. Then Zem stood up and said with a compassionate voice, "Time to go." Sue and I parted enough to look at each other with tearful sadness. Bev stood up and said to Zem in a kind of kidding around manner, "I don't want them to go either!" Zem looked at Bev and grinned. Which caused Bev to grin too. Zem said, "Am I going to have trouble with you too?" Sue and I turned to Zem and Bev with slight smiles on our slightly saddened faces.

Then Zem turned Bev around and grabbed her from behind. Holding Bev under her arms, he started dragging her. This caused Sue and I to laugh. Bev started kicking and screaming in a joking manner, saying, "I don't want to go!..." Bev was also waving her arms around a bit. This turned Sue and I's laughter into hearty laughter. Panny and Lika excitedly scampered around them as they chattered excitedly. Bev said again, "I don't want to go!... No!... No!... No!..." Zem had a kidding around expression on his face as if he was having great difficulty moving Bev. After dragging Bev past us, Zem began to stand Bev up as they started laughing heartily too. We all roared with laughter. Panny and Lika's excited state began to taper off. Zem and Bev sure knew how to turn the mood around. After a good minute of laughing, the laughing started to taper off into chuckling. Sue said to them with a little chuckle still coming out of her, "You guys kill me!" Which caused a little more laughter. After it died down, I said with some mirth still in my voice, "You guys are only making it harder for us to leave!" We all grinned at each other.

Zem said, "What must be must be. Let's get going." Sue and I grinned at each other. Though our expressions again turned to slight smiles, tinged with a little sadness. Sue and I stood up. I picked up

our box and held it with both hands. Turning toward the back, Sue took hold of my arm as we looked at each other with the same slight smiles and the same tinge of sadness on our faces. Then we went over near Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev turned around, put an arm around each other's lower backs and made their way off our ship. Sue and I went with them. Pim levitated up Zem and Bev's planet Til mugs. Mim levitated up Bev's bouquet and brought it forward as Pim followed us.

The ship beyond was basically the same as it was before. Though I noticed that a few of the hexagonal crates had been moved. Mim brought Bev's bouquet to her. We all smiled as Bev took it and said, "Thank you Mim." As Sue and I walked toward the elevator, our smiles faded to slight smiles as a tinge of

340

sadness again came over our faces. Sue held onto my arm with both her arms wrapped around it as she leaned her head against my shoulder. Zem and Bev walked up to the elevator doors and they opened. They walked inside along with Pim, Mim, Panny and Lika. Sue lifted her head from my shoulder and we followed. Pim and Mim levitated above and between us couples with the mugs. Zem and Bev turned around and smiled as we entered the elevator. Sue and I both tried to put on a brave face and smiled back at them as the door closed behind us. I said to Zem and Bev, "According to what Pim said, I take it that the virtual reality scenario with the Gitak wasn't very plausible." Bev said, "No. It wasn't. They gave up even trying to secretly spy on our kind long before Zem and I were born."

Zem said, "Our kind even told those who had contact with them to have no contact with us. This was to keep the Gitak from pumping them for information about our kind." (The door to the elevator opened behind Zem and Bev. Panny and Lika scampered out into the hallway as Zem added) "The ancient Reall had the same saying that they have on earth. Which is that the enemy of my enemy is my friend. Though we also had a saying that the friend of my enemy is my enemy." Sue and I gave them understand nods with slight smiles on our faces. Zem and Bev let go of each other, turned and walked out into the hallway. Pim and Mim, with the mugs below Pim, followed them. Sue and I followed too. Zem and Bev turned back toward us when they were in the hallway. They took each other's hand and waited for us. We were all smiling at each other as Bev said, "You really know so little about us, you were remarkably easy to fool." Zem and Bev didn't continue down the hallway. Apparently they were content to just chat a bit. Sue and I were certainly in no hurry.

Then Zem said, "In reality, even in the state we were in, we could have repaired ourselves. You know that we can regenerate ourselves upon death. But if we wanted to, (Zem then released Bev) we could have repaired our bodies (Zem then brought his hands up a little and wiggled his fingers in a spooky manner as he added in a spooky voice)



from beyond the grave.” We all busted up laughing. Sharing in each other’s laughter only added to the humor. We must have laughed for about twenty seconds. After the laughter, Zem then said, “As much fun as it is to see you make this face,” Then Zem briefly showed an open mouthed look of astonishment. This caused Bev, Sue and I to laugh a little. Zem then added with a grin, “I would prefer to not tell you how unlikely it was.” Sue and I, half kidding around, made such a facial gesture to Zem and Bev. Bev said, “That’s the look!” We all started laughing again. Pim and Mim also emitted telepathic humor. We all briefly turned to them to share our laughter with them.

After the laughter, Zem said, “If the Gitak ever tried to do anything like that, I could indeed destroy them all. Even if it took some time to do so. But there would be too many Reall that would want to take vengeance too. Not only that, we have many highly advanced friends who would be forever grateful to us for letting them join in on the sport. Some of them are even older and a little more advanced than we are. After all that, I’m afraid I wouldn’t have all that many Gitak to eliminate.” Zem and Bev then turned to their right and held each other’s hand. We started walking slowly down the hallway. Pim and Mim came with us

341

a little above our heads. Panny and Lika playfully walked in front of us. All of this interesting talk was taking my and no doubt Sue’s minds off our coming separation. Responding to what Zem said, Sue said to Zem and Bev, “I’m glad you’re on our side!” This made us all laugh a little. Afterwards, as we all grinned at each other, Sue said, “I have to say, your acting in the virtual battle was impeccable.” This made Zem and Bev’s grins widen a bit. I said, “I’m surprised that you were willing to put yourselves through such pain.”

All our grins reverted to big smiles as Bev said, “We had to do what we had to do.” Zem said, “As I said after our virtual reality game, there are some weirdo masochists on earth who might enjoy such things. (This was one of the things that came up as we talked after our virtual reality game on the Pol-Wim) But we aren’t that way. We’ve just become use to it.” Then adding something neither he or Bev said during that discussion, Zem added, “Just as a young child on earth is likely to put up more of a fuss from stubbing their toe or something than an adult would, we have simply learned to take our lumps.” I said to Bev, “Sue’s virtual death was fairly quick, but you must have been suffering terribly.” Bev said with a slight smile, “It wasn’t very pleasant, to say the least. At least I didn’t have to act when it came to the pain. But knowing that the whole thing wasn’t really real helped.” We started to approach the door that led to the bedroom. Sue said, “Real or not, I don’t think I could ever get used to such a thing.” We walked up to the door and it opened. Panny and Lika went inside.

Zem and Bev started going inside as Bev turned a little and said,

“Eventually, you would learn to take your lumps too.” Pim and Mim went into the bedroom after Sue and I. Zem and Bev went a little way into the bedroom and off to the left a bit. Then they stopped and turned a little more toward us. As Sue and I came up near them, Bev held up her bouquet to Mim and said, “Would you put this on the coffee table for me?” Pim continued on to the livingroom with the mugs. As Mim levitated the bouquet out of Bev’s hand, Zem said to me, “You can set that down anywhere.” The door opened for Pim. Panny scampered toward the livingroom with Lika close behind. Mim continued on toward the other room. Sue released my arm and I sat our box next to the small table with the two chairs. Zem and Bev then moved on toward the other room. Sue and I looked at each other with sad expressions back on our faces. We put an arm around each other’s lower backs and held each other’s forearms in the front as we went toward the other room. In the room beyond, I saw Panny and Lika climbing around on Panny’s tree and enjoying themselves.

We all went into the next room. It was pretty much as we left it. Pim and Mim had deposited the two mugs and bouquet on the coffee table. They were hovering up in the air nearby. Zem and Bev went to the other door. They stopped near it and turned toward Sue and I. Zem and Bev both had slightly saddened, compassionate looks on their faces as Bev said, “You may as well say goodbye to Panny and Lika.” Sue and I’s expression turned even sadder as we stepped up to the tree and held out our hands for Panny and Lika. Sue called for Lika and I called for Panny. They jumped out of their tree and into our hands. We both brought them up next to our necks and petted them. Then Sue said with a higher pitched, sad voice, “I’m going to miss you Lika, you little dear!”

342

I said to Panny with a higher pitched sad voice, “And I’m going to miss you, you little hero!” Sensing our sadness, both Panny and Lika started to whimper a little. Sue and I stepped to face each other and we petted the loveable little critters the other held. I said to Lika, “Don’t you cause any problems for Zem and Bev.” Sue said to Panny, “You make sure you love Lika with all your little heart.”

I gave Panny one last hug and Sue gave Lika one last hug. We both turned and placed them on their tree. They took hold of it, but looked at us and continued to make slight whimpering sounds. Bev seemed to think something to them. Sue and I turned sad expressions to Zem and Bev as we put an arm around each other’s lower backs. Zem and Bev looked at us with slightly sad, compassionate looks. Then Zem said with some sadness in his voice, “Let’s go you two.” Zem and Bev briefly looked at each other. Then they turned and walked to the door. It opened as Sue and I briefly looked at each other with sadness still on our faces. Then we followed Zem and Bev. Zem and Bev turned to the right. Sue and I followed behind them. Again, it seemed to me like we

were heading toward our doom. And judging from Sue's countenance, Sue felt the same way. Pim and Mim were following a little way behind Sue and I. We walked a few steps as we saw another Reall couple come into view around the curvature of the hallway. They were walking with an arm around each other's lower backs. A little above and behind them, they had a couple Nal following them.

They grinned as they saw us. Then they turned to each other and started to talk to each other. Sue and I saw them too. Sue said with a slight smile, "Isn't that Wes and Tea?" Bev turned briefly with a smile and said, "Yes it is." Wes was wearing a maroon colored long sleeve shirt that was fairly tight fitting. It had a bit of an extended collar that gave it a bit of an appearance of a turtle neck. It was tucked into his pants. Which were a very dark blue color. They appeared to be neatly pressed. His shoes were black. Tea was wearing a short sleeve cream colored shirt that had a weave pattern in it. The pattern had diagonal lines crossing with diamond shaped patches; The collar was V necked and the tail of the shirt hung down to her hips. Her pants were white, slightly shiny and neatly pressed too. She was wearing rather normal looking but decorative white slippers. As with Bev, Til and the other Reall women I had seen, along with being fit looking and pretty, she certainly wasn't lacking in the breast department. I turned to Sue and said with a smile, "That's one of the couples you and Bev stopped by to talk to in the pool and lounge area. Isn't it." Sue was already smiling at me as she said, "Yes. That's one of em. The other nice couple were named Vin and Mar." (Mar was pronounced Mare) Wes and Tea were grinning at each other and talking as the distance between us closed a little. Then they both turned their grins to us all and waved. We waved back. Though seeing how we didn't know them as well, Sue and I's wave was a little less pronounced. Their Nal came forward fairly quickly and Pim and Mim flew over to meet them. They seemed to greet each other in the same way as Pim, Mim, San and Pam had greeted each other on planet Til. First they all touched. Then who I assumed was Pim and the opposite corner Nal backed off a little as Mim and the Nal on the opposite corner touched. Then they backed off a little as Pim and the

343

other Nal touched. After doing so, they backed away from each other a little. Pim and Mim started to circle around each other's surface at differing angles. The other Nal couple did the same. Sue said, "Who are those Nal."

Zem and Bev turned to smile at us. Then Zem said, Wes and Tea will enjoy introducing them themselves. We all turned back to them. Zem, Bev, Wes and Tea grinned at each other as we approached the spot where the Nal had met. It seemed evident that they wanted to talk to Zem and Bev. Sue and I just smiled widely. Tea said to Bev and Sue as they got closer, "I just love your shirts." Her English was very good.

Tea's statement made Sue and I grin. Though Bev and Sue's grins were a little bigger. Bev said, "Thank you. There's an interesting story behind them." Sue and I briefly turned grins toward each other. Wes and Tea stopped near us. Wes said, "What's that." Bev said, "Maybe someday Til, Tea and I could let you in on it." Zem said to Wes, "You would find it unbelievable." Wes said, "Now I have to know!" We all laughed a little. Bev then said, "It wouldn't be as much fun if we just told you." This caused a little more laughter. Afterwards, Zem said, "Sue was wondering who your Nal were." Just as Zem had said, Wes and Tea seemed to appreciate the inquiry. They both grinned at Sue and I. Sue and I were grinning too as the Nal separated.

Tea gestured to one and said, "This is Fen." Then Tea gestured to the other and said, "And this is Lil." Fen said with a male Nal voice similar to the others, "Pleased to meet you Sue. Pleased to meet you Erik." Lil said in a female Nal voice, "We're very pleased to meet you both." Sue said, "Pleased to meet you." I said, "We're always glad to meet new Nal." Fen and Lil split themselves and formed four smaller spheres. These separated a little more and backed away from us as they spread out a little. Wes said, "We have a little secret for you guys too." Zem, Bev, Sue and I all briefly exchanged surprised, happy looks. Then we turned these to Wes and Tea as our grins became a bit wider. Tea said, "Mav mentioned to you all something about a little surprise he and Til planed." Bev said rather excitedly, "Yes he did! What is it!" Sue and I's grins were just beaming with happy expressions. Wes and Tea briefly grinned at each other before turning their grins back to us. Tea then said to Sue and I, "Sue, Erik. You're both famous!"

Sue and I's mouths dropped open in astonishment. Zem and Bev took on surprised looks as their mouths dropped open too. Then Zem and Bev turned these expressions to each other as Tea added, "And your fame is spreading." The sight of Zem, Bev, Sue and I's surprise caused Wes and Tea to laugh. At the same time, Pim, Mim, Fen and Lil also emitted telepathic humor. Though Pim and Mim's humor was more pronounced. They also circled each other's surfaces at a little faster speed. Apparently, Mav and Til had indeed somehow kept the surprise they cooked up secret from them too. Then Zem and Bev started laughing too. Zem and Bev took hold of each other and leaned up against the wall to keep from falling over with laughter. Sue and I were still in an open mouthed, yet happy, state of astonishment. Sue and I turned these expressions to each other. After a few moments, Sue and I turned these expressions back to the others. Sue and I couldn't help from laughing too as we held onto each other a little more.

344

After about a minute of laughter, Zem and Bev stopped leaning against the wall and held onto each other from the side as their

laughter diminished into chuckles. One of the smaller Lil spheres came a little nearer and turned into a screen about three feet high and four feet across. At the same time, the two smaller Fen spheres came together and formed into a single Nal. The smaller Lil sphere went over to Fen and circled around him at differing angles. A picture of Mav and Til, from just below their shoulders up, appeared on the Lil screen. They were both wearing big grins and embracing each other from the side. Also, there seemed to be a little extra glow of love about them. Which was no surprise. Both of them were wearing what I took to be matching, attractive robes. No doubt, they had been notified of our arrival on the ship. Hopefully they weren't in the middle of anything really intimate when the notification came. They were apparently standing in the kitchen, between the counter and the maketake. I could see San and Pam circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles just behind and above them. Behind them, I could see that it was of course dark outside.

Mav said with a mirth filled voice, "The look on your faces!" A small picture appeared in the lower right hand of the screen that was about eight inches square. It showed a picture of Zem, Bev, Sue and I from about mid body up. All of our mouths were dropped open with surprised looks on our faces. Til said, "It's a keeper!" This caused even more laughter. After some laughter, Tea walked up to Sue and I and gave us both a quick kiss on the cheek. As she backed away, Tea said, "You dear sweet things!" Sue and I released each other as we grinned at her. Though we were both still puzzled about what we could have done to make ourselves famous. Wes stepped over and shook both Sue and I's hands. He said, "You two are wonderful." Zem said to Mav and Til with a big grin on his face, "What did you two kooky guys do!" At the same time, Wes stepped back over next to Tea. What Zem said caused a little more laughter as Wes and Tea held each other from the side. Then Til said, "You'll find out." The smaller picture of Zem, Bev, Sue and I disappeared.

Wes said to Sue and I, "One could almost think that you two were alien plants sent to temporarily paralyze the Reall." We were all grinning at Wes. From the screen, Mav and Til did too. Then I turned to Mav and Til. Sue did too. As I grinned at them, a bit more appreciation and sentimentality showed on my face. I said, "When you guys surprise somebody, you sure don't fool around!" The others turned grins to Mav and Til. Sue had a similar expression as mine as she said to them, "You're both such dears! But you said your surprise was only going to be a little thing!" (Everybody briefly smiled at Sue as she spoke) As Mav grinned at Sue, he said, "Maybe I did understate things a bit." Til then said to Sue and I, "But don't worry about it. Like flakes in a snow globe, (More sentimental looks came over Sue and I's faces as Til continued on, saying) it won't be long before the flakes of your fame settle down a bit." I said to them with a sentimental, appreciative voice, "You're both so wonderful." Sue said, "Too wonderful." Everybody was smiling sentimentally at Sue and I. Til said

with a sentimental voice to Sue and I, "Thank you." Mav said, "Thank you."

After a couple moments, Mav turned to Wes and Tea as a grin came over his

345

face. Mav said, "Thanks a lot you guys. You were great!" This got the rest of us grinning. Tea said to them, "It was our pleasure!" Wes said, "Thanks for including us!" Til said, "It was our pleasure." Til and Mav then looked over to Sue and I. Til said as a sentimental look came over her face, "Of the songs you selected for us all to listen to, Mav and I read whatever lyrics there were and watched whatever videos were associated with them." Mav was smiling sentimentally too as Til laid her head on Mav's shoulder and added with a more sentimental look on her face and tone to her voice, "Though one was basically just a slide show, it was very beautiful. Thank you both again." Mav laid his cheek on Til's head and said to Sue and I with a sentimental tone to his voice, "We'll be going now. We can't wait to see you both again." Then they smiled at Zem and Bev. Til said with a sentimental tone to her voice, "We'll talk to you tomorrow. By."

We all said things like, "By" or "See ya." Their picture disappeared and the screen turned back into a smaller Lil sphere. As this sphere headed toward Fen, Zem and Bev both grinned at Wes and Tea. Zem said, "What exactly did Mav and Til do." Tea said, "Just bring up Mav's video when you get the chance. It will explain everything." Then Tea turned to Sue and I and said, "What were these music videos Til spoke of." I told them the names of the songs. Sue told them the name of the song she selected. But cautioned them that the ending was rather unfortunate. Wes said, "We'll have to check them out." Tea said to Sue and I, "I know that you're going back to earth for a bit." More somber looks came over Zem, Bev, Sue and I's faces as Tea then said, "From what Til and Mav said, it won't be for too long. So you guys keep your chins up." This brought smiles to Zem and Bev's faces. But only slight smiles and a little more appreciation to Sue and I's faces. Wes then looked at Zem and Bev and said, "We'll walk with you to the medical room." We all started walking with our partners down the corridor. Tea turned to Sue and I and said with a grin, "I take it you two had a good time on planet Til."

Tea's grin made Sue and I grin too. Sue said, "It was wonderful!" I said, "It was incredible!" Wes said, "Knowing Mav and Til, and their planet, it couldn't have been otherwise. Though no doubt you enjoyed planet Bev too." Sue said to Wes and Tea, "Did we ever! We can't wait to go back!" Tea said, "I know that you two haven't been able to spend a lot of time having fun. But when you get back, no doubt Bev and Zem will give you time to really enjoy a proper honeymoon." Wes then said to Sue and I, "Maybe you will even be able to give our planet a visit." I said, "That would be wonderful." Sue then added, "I can't

wait!." This caused Zem and Bev to chuckle. Which Sue and I quickly joined in on. Then Zem said to Wes and Tea, "There's a lot Sue can't wait to do." This made Wes and Tea chuckle. Which the rest of us quickly joined in on. Then Tea said, "I have no doubt." Then Sue said, "But most of all, we can't wait to be with Bev and Zem again." Zem, Bev, Sue and I exchanged sentimental smiles as Wes said, "Being as wonderful as they are, that's completely understandable." Zem and Bev turned their sentimental smiles to Wes and Tea. Which caused them to take on the same kind of expression.

Bev said, "We think you're wonderful too." This caused a little bit more

346

sentimentality to come over their expressions. We came up to the door to the medical room and the door slid open. Then we all stopped and Tea said to Bev, "We'll have to get together later and you can tell us all about the fun you guys had." Wes then added, "Though being famous yourselves for having found these wonderful humans, (Wes gestured his head to Sue and I as he said this. It also made big grins appear Zem, Bev, Sue and I's faces) there's no telling who all else may want to show up too." Zem said, "Thanks for the warning." This caused us all to chuckle a little. Then Wes and Tea started to walk down the corridor. Though before they completely turned away, they gave a little wave to us and Tea said, "See ya!" Wes said, "By!" Zem, Bev, Sue and I also gave them a bit of a wave. Bev said, "See ya later!" Sue said, "Thank you both!" I added, "Thank you!" Wes and Tea turned forward and put an arm around each other's lower backs. Then they gave each other a brief extra firm sideways hug as they walked. Fen and Lil followed after them.

Zem and Bev turned to go into the room. Sue and I briefly smiled at each other and followed them. Pim and Mim followed us. Mav and Til's surprise had, at least temporarily, taken Sue and I's minds off of the sadness of our impending departure. I wouldn't doubt if they planned it to be that way. Everything inside was pretty much the way it was when we last seen it. Near where the examination tables had been before, there were two examination tables about six feet from each other end to end. There was a Nal screen between them. Near each were a couple shiny metal carts with shelves. On each there were various devices and instruments. The one on the left had what I recognized as my backpack and clothing I wore when Zem found me. On the one on the right, it had the clothing Sue wore when they found her. The male Reall doctor and the bipedal, somewhat praying mantis appearing Trelin doctor were standing on the other side of the table on the left. A little above and to the side of the Reall, there was a Nal.

Near the Trelin, there was another Nal. Except this one appeared to be a bit larger. It had swirling, various colors that moved around its surface. Though these colors didn't glow. On the other side of the

table on the right, there was the female Reall doctor and a female Trelin. The Trelin female had more feminine features than the male. She was a little smaller than the male and somehow appeared to be pretty. There was a Reall and Trelin Nal near them too. Except for the Nal of course, they all wore white lab types of coats. As we walked toward them, Sue and I's expressions again turned to somber, slightly sad expressions. Zem and Bev stopped about eight feet from the tables. Then Zem and Bev seemed to think something to the Reall and Trelin doctors. They all gave Zem and Bev a nod. The Trelin male and the female Reall doctor turned and started walking to the other tables. Their Nal accompanied them. Zem and Bev then turned to Sue and I with slight smiles on their faces. Zem said, "Before we get started, you're probably dying to see what Mav and Til did as much as Bev and I."

This caused slight smiles to come over Sue and I's faces. Mim moved back toward the door about six feet. Pim moved a little closer to Zem and Bev. Then Mim formed into a single screen about eight feet wide and six feet high. We all

347

looked at the screen. On it, a picture of Mav and Til from mid thigh up appeared on the screen. They were both wearing an attractive housecoat. Though these weren't the same design. They were both grinning and standing in front of the window of their bedroom on the upper deck. Both of them had an arm around each other's lower backs. Through the window behind them, I could see various groups of animals in the large expanse of grass beyond. To the left of Mav and Til, off in the distance, I could see Grabby. I knew it was him because there was a Nal screen on its back. Behind it of course were Sue and I. Even though the outside view was obviously more illuminated than the inside, Mav and Til were illuminated very well. I guess they knew a thing or two about photography as well. Mav started to speak in Reall language. But the words came through in my mind in English.

Mav said, "Dear Reall friends. Along with those who are not yet friends. And those other beings whom we Reall associate with and share a male and female relationship as we do. I have a present for you. But this message is for couples only. Please do not view this message without your counterpart present." The screen went blank except for a couple words. The upper one was written in Reall script. Below it, in smaller writing, it said, "Continue." Zem and Bev briefly turned their grins to each other. Sue and I briefly grinned at each other too. Then we turned our attention to the Mim screen. Mav and Til appeared again on it. Til said, "Our friends, Zem and Bev of the Tenat, introduced us to a human couple named Sue and Erik. Despite being human, they are very sweet beings." Mav then said, "The video I would like you to see is pretty short. But at the end, Erik posed a question to Zem and I." At this point, both Sue and I knew what was



going on. Sue and I briefly shot each other beaming grins, tinged with excitement, before returning our attention back to the screen. Mav continued on, saying, "It is not an unknown question. But you are sure to enjoy it anyway. For our fellow males out there, it is a question that you should discuss with your ladies. Here it is."

The scene switched to a vantage point behind Zem, Bev, Mav and Til. We were all riding on Grabby's back. Sue and I were of course sitting next to each other. We were holding onto each other with one arm as we faced them. (To make things easier, I will just recount what the video showed) I started speaking. Though my words were over dubbed into Reall language, it came through in my mind as my voice. This clip started out with my smiling at Mav and saying, "I have a question to ask." Sue smiled at me too as I added, "But I'm afraid it is going to have an adverse yet wonderful effect on you and Zem. And if I know them, Pim, San and Tal too." I smiled around at everybody as Mav said, "I can't wait to hear it." I said, "Sue is so beautiful." Sue let go of my forearm at this point and held me in both arms as she looked at me with a look of solemn love. I continued on and said, "From minute to minute, it's hard for me to believe that my dearest is real." Sue's look became more emotional as she laid her head on my shoulder and said, "Oh darling!" Tears started to well up in my eyes. Which caused everybody to look at me with highly sentimental looks. (Though from the angle of the video, this couldn't be seen)

Then I continued on, saying, "It may be just a trait of your species, but Bev," I

348

smiled at Bev as I said her name. Then I smiled at Til and said, "and Til. You're both so very sweet and beautiful too." Both Bev and Til had a bit of appreciative emotion come over their faces as Bev said, "Thank you!" Til quickly added, "You're so sweet!" I glanced at them briefly. Then at Zem and Mav. Who were smiling at me with highly appreciative, sentimental looks on their faces. A more serious, slightly questioning look came over my face as I said, "As guys like me, (I briefly glanced at Zem and then back to Mav as I added) do you think we deserve to have the love of such wonderful beings?" The picture showed Sue looking at me with a slightly open mouthed, emotional look of love. This picture was replaced by a picture of what looked like a wedding photo of Mav and Til from the waste up. It showed them from the side and there was a colorful nebula in the sky behind them. They had their hands on each other's lower backs and they were staring lovingly into each other's eyes with somewhat emotional looks on their faces. Below it there were some words written in Reall script. Below it in smaller script was the English translation. It said, "How do you men answer."

The screen went dark. The male and female Reall doctors started kissing each other passionately. Their Nal extruded loving tendrils

over each other's surfaces. The male and female Trelin also started to kiss each other passionately. The Terlin didn't have a whole lot in the way of lips. But they did pretty well for themselves. Their Nal circled around each other's surfaces at differing angles. Though they appeared to become soft as they did so. It kind of reminded me of a couple blobs interacting in a lava lamp. Though the color patterns on them moved around a little more quickly. (Though I didn't know it at the time or take much notice of it, all of this love was despite these beings having already seen this video) At the same time, Mim reverted to her normal shape. Pim shot over to her. They extruded loving tendrils over each other's surfaces. Also at the same time, Zem and Bev looked at each other with loving emotion splashed across their faces. Sue and I did the same with each other. Zem said, "How can I ever believe that I deserve you darling!"

Bev's face became contorted with teary, loving emotion and she threw herself into Zem's arms. Bev said with a teary voice, "How can I deserve you my love!" While this was going on, I said to Sue with loving emotion on my face and tears welling up in my eyes, "How could I ever deserve you my everything!" Sue's face also became contorted with teary, loving emotion. Sue and I fully and firmly embraced each other. Sue said through tears, "Oh Erik!.. My darling husband!.. It's me who doesn't deserve you!" No doubt whoever saw this message had similar reactions with their mates. Not only for the Reall and apparently Trelin, but who knows who else. I said with some desperation in my voice, "Sue! My darling wife!" We began to kiss each other passionately with slightly uncomfortable firmness. After about thirty seconds, Sue and I's kiss lessened in firmness and we began to caress each other more. About a minute and a half later, Sue and I heard Bev say with a soft, compassionate voice, "It's time to say goodbye to us." Sue and I parted our kiss and turned to Zem and Bev with teary sadness. They looked at Sue and I with compassionate sadness.

Sue and I released each other and stepped over to Zem and Bev. We all then firmly hugged each other in a group hug. Sue said with sad emotion in her voice,

349

"Oh Bev! Oh Zem!" I said, "Sue and I love you both so much!" Zem and Bev had their eyes fairly lightly closed with sad emotion on their faces. Though Sue and I's expressions were a little more sad and our eyes were closed a little more tightly. Zem said with a comforting tone to his voice, "Don't worry. It isn't going to be forever." Bev said with a little more emotion to her voice, "It's going to be so wonderful when we come for you two!" These statements made me, and no doubt Sue, feel better. After about thirty seconds, we parted our embrace. All of us wore sentimental, sad expressions. The other couples were holding their partners from the side as they looked at us with the sides of their

heads touching. Zem and Bev took a few steps back from us. Pim and Mim came down a bit lower. Sue and I looked at them as Sue said, "We're going to miss you guys too." Mim said in our minds, "We will miss you too. But we're not quite through with you yet." Sue and I looked at each other with a little bit of curiosity added to our sad expressions.

Zem said with a compassionate voice, "But you can say goodbye to each other. For now." We briefly looked at Zem, Bev, Pim and Mim. Then Sue and I turned to face each other and we held each other in a loose embrace. Tears began to flow again from our eyes. I said, "I would rather be dead than be parted from you!" Sue jumped on me as we held each other in a full and firm embrace. At the same time, Sue firmly wrapped her legs around my lower hips. Sue said, "Oh my husband! My darling husband!" Both of us had our eyes tightly closed with anguished expressions on our faces. After a few moments, Zem and Bev came up to us. Zem placed a comforting hand on my back and Bev placed a comforting hand on Sue's back. After a few moments, Zem said, "Goodbye. For now." Sue and I grasped each other a little more firmly. At the thought of being parted from Sue, I gritted my teeth and made a slight, anguished "Geee!" sound. I had to try hard not to squeeze Sue too firmly. With a female voice, Sue also made a similar utterance of anguish. Then everything went black.

A few moments later, Sue and I faded into existence fairly quickly. Sue and I found ourselves as mostly white, glowing balls of energy. Pim and Mim were in a similar form not far away. We were floating somewhere out in deep space. Because there was no earth or ship near us. Also, we were about a couple hundred thousand light years above a barred, spiral galaxy. Somehow, I knew that it was the Milky Way. The stars all looked brilliant. On Sue and I, here and there, were some fairly thin, multicolored arcs that came off us a short distance. These moved in what seemed to be a kind of slow motion before they reabsorbed back into us. Others just tapered off a little way from us. It was a tiny bit like the way the electric arcs came off the inner sphere of a plasma ball. But just much smaller. On our glowing surfaces, there were areas of energy that would well up from below our surfaces before being reabsorbed again around the edges. Other small patterns of pale, shimmering colors moved over us. Some were geometric in shape, others to a less advanced mind would seem chaotic. Despite all this, there was a sort of unique, set appearance to us.

Sue and Mim were a bit more colorful than Pim and I. Also, their arcs of energy seemed more delicate and graceful. Though this form was new to me, both Sue and Mim were stunningly beautiful. Even though there was no major difference

350

between them, Sue seemed to be slightly more beautiful to me. Though it was just my love for Sue that made me feel this way. Within

this form, I could feel pulses of energy that were both geometric and “chaotic.” My consciousness seemed to be everywhere and localized. Except that it seemed much of this was being blocked from Sue. As they were from Pim and Mim. Every thought I had in my mind became much more vivid. I could instantly access even the most trivial thing from my past with a detail that was beyond photographic. Though I could easily pass over these memories like any other memory I had in my human form. Even though the memories and experience of a Nal had to be vastly beyond what humans had, no doubt they could do the same. I looked again at Pim and Mim. Though the term “look” was beyond what human eyes were capable of. They were both majestic. But again, Sue looked even more so to me.

Mim thought to us, “Being the thoughtful dears that they are, Bev and Zem asked us if we would like to do something nice for you before you left. Which we of course wanted to do.” Pim said, “Bev suggested that we do this. This is a small example of what Nal consciousness can be. But before we unleash you two on each other, there is something we need to do.” Pim and Mim came toward Sue and I. Then Pim enveloped me. No doubt Mim did the same with Sue. Pim said to me, “Our thoughts are private now.” I said in a half kidding around manner, “How can I ever go back to being human!” Pim said with a bit of amusement in his thought, “Don’t worry. Once you are human again and these memories return to the extent they are able to do for a human, you will be quite satisfied with being human.”

Then with a more normal thought, Pim added, “Someday, it will be ok for you to discuss with Sue the conversation you and Zem had before you proposed to Sue. But I think that for now, Zem would prefer that I make you temporarily forget it. Also, all of your memories are part of what makes you what you are. Even so, as a human, there may be some memories you may want to get rid of. Or not want Sue to know of. But don’t worry. Nothing is irreversible. I will temporarily delete from you the memories you just don’t want Sue to know about. Don’t be ashamed of anything you tell me. I am far beyond being shocked by anything a human can do. I won’t think ill of you.” As is probably the case with most humans, there were a couple things in my past that I chose to delete. Though they weren’t anything really bad. They were more embarrassing than anything. Pim said, “Anything else?” Then I brought up some other memories that I wanted to temporarily forget about. These involved the kissing, heavy petting and sex acts I had done with other girls. Sue didn’t need to know about them. And as I told Sue before, I didn’t want to know about what guys she had been with.

After that, I said to Pim, “As for everything else, it doesn’t matter if Sue knows about them.” Pim said in a kidding around kind of thought, “I was hoping for something more interesting.” This caused us to emit telepathic humor. After the humor, Pim released me and moved away a bit. A few moments later, (though time seemed to be meaningless) Mim released Sue and moved away from her. Sue and I sensed each

came together. Pim and Mim also came together and quickly moved farther away. Sue and I's spheres of consciousness began to rotate around each other's "surfaces" at differing angles. The loops of multicolored energy that emitted from us instead absorbed into each other. The shorter ones moved around our surfaces. Though a few would also enter into each other. Just the tactile sensation of this was beyond what humans were capable of. It was a good thing that kissing and making love to Sue in our physical bodies was so wonderful. Or all of this would dull our physical lives together. Sue and I instantly knew just about everything about each other.

The love we were feeling toward each other grew exponentially. Unbound by the mental and physical limitations of being human, it quickly grew beyond what Sue and I experienced when I asked Pim to make an emotional mental connection between Sue and I back on the Pol-Wim. The consciousness of it seemed not only to emanate from us, but in an extradimensional way, many millions of light years away from us and back toward us. Reaching into the depths of each other's beings. Both Sue and I began to glow with a love that fed off each other's. What we were feeling was of course beyond mere human love. The sensations began to move beyond mere human orgasm.

I could sense that to a lesser extent than Sue, I could feel every feminine sensation that Sue was feeling. No doubt, in the same way, Sue could probably feel every masculine sensation that I was feeling. Our glow began to become so brilliant that no human could have looked at it. Though somehow, it didn't effect Sue and I's perception of each other. I thought to Sue with a loving emotion that deeply penetrated her being, "Oh my darling everything!" Sue thought back in the same deeply penetrating way, "My darling! My everything! You can never doubt my love again!" Sue and I's beings began to expand farther outward. Then everything went black.

## Chapter Sixteen A New Day

I started to wake up. Somehow, I didn't feel as bad as this cardboard usually made me feel. (When the time came for Zem and Bev to reveal themselves again. I was astonished at how completely they made me temporarily forget what happened to me) Opening my eyes, I saw that the sun was getting ready to rise. I didn't see any clouds in the sky. Which meant that today was probably going to be as hot as yesterday was. If not hotter. I thought to myself, "Fuck!" Looking around, I saw a really nasty, hairy spider on the ground diagonally about a foot and a half from my head. I threw my blanket off of me

and sat up. Swinging my feet around, I smashed it with my left heel. My foot made a bit of noise as it kicked into the ground. I said in a fairly normal voice, "Fucker." I could hear Stevo and Swarm rustle a little from the noise I made. Then I looked over at them. There was nothing out of the ordinary. They were in the spots they normally slept. Stevo had an empty bottle of wine near him. I went back to looking at the depression I made on the ground.

352

Now that I was fully awake, I scratched my cheek. Feeling the usual stubble. But somehow, my clothes felt slightly different. Looking at them, they looked the same. But somehow, they just felt different. Somehow cleaner. Though I still smelled pretty bad. I felt an unfamiliar bulge in my right pant's pocket. So I reached in and felt something unusual as a surprised and puzzled expression came over my face. Pulling it out, an open mouthed look of shocked surprise came over my face. It was a stack of crisp hundred dollar bills! There was a band on it that said, "\$10,000!" I said, "What the fuck!" I ripped off the paper binding band and flipped the bills over to see if they all looked as real on the back as they did on the front. I fanned them out a little to see if all the backs and fronts were the same. At that moment, I heard a bottle breaking over in the area away from beneath the overpass. I looked in that direction to see what was going on. At the same time I could barely hear a little movement behind me. I started to look back in time to see Stevo swinging his hefty stick that he kept near his bed down onto my head.

I could feel my head jar a bit and the loud crack of the stick hitting me. Then it was lights out for me. (It was only later when Sue and I were discussing our return to earth with Zem and Bev that we were shown what happened next) Unknown to either Stevo, Swarm or myself, Pim was near the underside of the overpass and invisible. Swarm looked over and saw me slumping over after Stevo hit me. The bills I was holding fell from my hands and scattered a little. Swarm said, "What the fuck!" as Stevo started picking up the bills. Swarm shot up. Grabbing what he liked to call his nigger beater, he rushed over to us. Seeing the money, Swarm raised his hefty stick in a menacing manner to Stevo and said quickly, "I hope you know we're splitting that!" No doubt both of them had visions of whisky and beer bottles floating around in their heads. At that moment, Zem appeared about six feet from them with an angry look on his face. Pim became visible and swooped down near him. Zem was wearing a hoodie like he had when I first seen him. Stevo and Swarm looked at him in open mouthed shock and disbelief. Then Stevo dropped the money and his club as if his hands received a shock. Which no doubt they did.

Swarm must have received a shock too. Because his hand recoiled in pain as he dropped his hefty stick. Zem said angrily to both of them,

"You've just fucked with the wrong person. But I'm a sporting alien. I'll give you a chance to run for your lives." They both were too stunned and astonished to move. Pim gave both Stevo and Swarm another painful shock that seemed to effect their whole bodies. Zem expression became even more angry and he yelled, "Now!" Stevo and Swarm turned and took off running in the other direction as fast as they could go. Pim split up into fourteen small, round spheres near me and moved them into two parallel rows of spheres. Seven on one side and seven on the other. Forming a square pattern about ten foot per side. From these, I found out later that the Pim spheres formed a microscopic latticework of vertical and diagonal invisible energy beams between the two rows of Pim spheres. The Pim spheres shot so fast to the other side of Stevo and Swarm that, looking at it, it appeared that they just blinked out of existence in one spot and reappeared just as abruptly about ten feet in front of them.

353

Stevo and Swarm fell to the ground in pieces. Their momentum causing their pieces to scatter in the direction they had been running when they hit the ground. The Pim spheres started to go over the chunks and blood. Making them disappear. At the same time as the Pim spheres were cleaning up the mess, Zem walked over to me, knelt down and smiled. Bev thought to Zem and said, "Is Erik all right?" Zem thought back and said, "For now. But he isn't going to like the lump I'm going to have to give him." (As it turned out, Pim had only allowed Stevo's club to hit me hard enough to make me believe that I had been knocked out. It was Pim who made me go unconscious like I had been hit) Zem thought back to Bev and said, "How's Sue doing." Bev said, "So far so good. I'll talk to you later. By." Zem gave me a slight smile and said, "Sorry about this, but it's better me than a club." Then Zem started making circles with his finger on the slight abrasion I had on my scalp. The area underneath became inflamed. Then a small cut appeared on top of it. Even though I of course still couldn't hear Zem, he said, "Don't worry. It will heal in no time. But I think you'll be a little more careful from now on."

While this was going on, the Pim spheres reformed into Pim's normal shape and he moved back over near Zem and I. Pim caused the bills to reform into a stack. Then Pim levitated the stack over to Zem. Zem took it and said, "Thank you." Then Zem folded the money in half and stuck it back into my pocket. Zem then patted me on the shoulder a couple of times and said with a grin, "Are you going to have an interesting story to tell." Then Zem stood up and looked around a bit as his grin faded to a smile. Zem then turned his smile to me and disappeared. Pim became invisible and rose up back to where he had been. About five seconds later, I started to come too. I was dazed and didn't really know what happened as I sat up. (It was Pim causing this

dazed feeling too)

After a few seconds, the realization came to me that I Stevo hit me. I abruptly looked around, but there was nobody there. The realization then came to me that I had been holding a lot of money. I looked down and saw the paper binding that had been holding the bills together. Then I quickly looked around, but the money was gone! Though I did feel something in my pocket.

I reached in and felt what felt like a folded stack of bills. This got my hopes up as I pulled it out. It was the money! I felt such relief. But how did it get back into my pocket! Stevo's reason for hitting me must have been to take it! I shot up and looked around. Though I still didn't see anybody. I stuck the money quickly back into my pocket. Then I reached down for my hefty stick. As I picked it up, I noticed both Stevo's and Swarm's weapons nearby. This struck me as odd. But right now I was concerned with preventing myself from getting attacked again. I held up my weapon in a ready to strike position and carefully surveyed the area. Then I looked on the other side of the low wall that formed the footing to the pillars that held up this end of the overpass. There was nobody around. My senses continued to come back to me more fully. And my head ached. I touched the top of my head and felt a painful lump there. Taking my hand away, there was a little blood on it. I walked back around to the other side of the low wall.

Still seeing nobody, I touched my pocket again to make sure I wasn't dreaming

354

or something. I could still feel the wad of bills in my pocket. Safe and sound.

Then I looked again at Stevo's and Swarm's hefty sticks laying on the ground with a puzzled look on my face. Apparently whoever gave me the money to begin with had retrieved it and put it back into my pocket. I knew Swarm would have taken the money too. Not put it back into my pocket. Whoever gave me the money also apparently chased Stevo and Swarm off. Maybe it was just a good samaritan who wasn't interested in the money. But if so, where was he. Or if it was who gave me the money to begin with, maybe they had been watching me to make sure something like what happened, didn't. It could also mean that they were still watching me. I looked around carefully. But I didn't see anything out of the ordinary. I didn't see any cameras. Though I knew that they could conceal them so well that you could be right next to one and not see it unless you were looking for it. If there were any camouflaged people in the grassy areas or near any bushes, I couldn't see them. But if they were there and wanted to be hidden, I wasn't about to go looking for them. Besides, as the old saying went, I wasn't going to look a gift horse in the mouth. But it just didn't make any sense.



The thought occurred to me that I would have liked to see Stevo and Swarm again. Even without my hefty stick and they with theirs, I could disarm them and beat the both of them to a pulp. And they deserved some payback. I picked up my backpack. But something didn't feel right about it. I opened the zipper and looked inside. An open mouthed look of shocked astonishment came over my face. There was more money inside! I dug around in my backpack and counted seven more packets of ten thousand dollars! Then I dug around through my other things in that compartment. But there was no more money. I just couldn't believe it! Then I looked around the area some more with an astonished look on my face. Whoever gave me the money still had to be watching! I scrutinized the area all around. Looking for any little thing that might seem out of place. Here and there in the distance, there were a couple parked trucks and a few cars near some buildings. But I didn't see people or anything that looked like cameras in them. Neither did I see anybody hiding and observing me. Then I closed my backpack and slung the straps over my left shoulder.

As I continued to look around, I placed my hefty stick under my left armpit. Then I pulled the money out of my pocket. Holding it close to me and trying to conceal it as good as I could, I looked at the money again. It certainly looked real. Once I was satisfied with that, I folded it over again and put it back into my pocket as I continued to look around. Then I took my hefty stick in my right hand and started to walk in the general direction of the city. I still had some amazement written on my face. The sun was just starting to rise behind me. It caused me to cast a long shadow down the tracks. As I walked, I kept looking around. Looking for anything that could be a threat or anybody who could be watching me. But I still didn't see anything out of the ordinary. I wondered more to myself about who had given me the money. Eighty thousand dollars was quite a chunk of change! All types of scenarios ran through my head as to where this money could have possibly come from. And why they would they have given it to me! Maybe I had a guardian angel.

355

My butt hole felt perfectly fine. So it wasn't as if some rich homo slipped me a "roofie" and had his way with me. Leaving me a wad of cash for payment as gratitude for being able to tap such a fine virgin man butt. Besides, the last thing I remembered was going to sleep. About a half mile away or so, I could see the arches of a McDonalds. I could give this money the spend test. If that worked, I could get something to eat and see if I could sort this whole thing out. As I walked in that direction, I kept thinking of reasons why somebody would give me this money. And how they did it. If somebody had tried to give me the money while I was asleep, it probably would have woken me up. Unless they silently sprayed me with a gas to knock me

out further. Though they would have had to do that to Stevo and Swarm too. Just in case. But why would they give me money and not them. Maybe Stevo and Swarm weren't chased off, but were paid to leave. But that didn't make any sense either. Why would some rich person give some homeless people a lot of money. Also, anybody with that kind of money probably had the means to just force them to leave with a gun. Or if we all received money as some sort of new reality show, why make them leave.

The reality show scenario didn't make any sense either. Though just in case, I again tried to spot some evidence of my being followed on camera. I still didn't see anything. If there were cameras out there, they were well hidden. Then I looked around up in the sky. Maybe there was a distant helicopter, plane or some sort of drone observing me. But all I saw were a few birds and a jet flying way too high up and distant to be watching me. Even though my head was feeling much better, trying to come up with reasons for the money was giving me a headache. I started heading more off to the right to leave the rail yard. After walking about another seventy feet or so, I started to walk past a building. When I passed it, I started to approach a road. So I decided to drop my stick. I didn't want any cops seeing me carrying it as I walked down the road. They could stop to question me. And if they found the money, they probably wouldn't believe me as to how I came to have it. I wouldn't have believed me either. As I walked down the street, I again thought of how the money could have gotten into my pocket without my knowing.

Maybe I had been abducted by aliens and they put it there. But why would aliens have done such a thing. Besides, I had heard stories about various alien abductions. But I had never heard of anybody receiving anything from them but amnesia or maybe an implant. Though just in case, silly as the idea was, I did look around in the sky. But I still didn't see anything. My guardian angel theory seemed to be as good as any. But there had to be an actual reason! As I walked, I tried to come up with other various scenarios. But nothing made any sense. After about five minutes of walking deep in thought and still looking around a bit, I started to near the McDonalds. I would find out pretty soon if this money was real and not just counterfeit. If it did turn out to be counterfeit, I probably wouldn't be sleeping on cardboard tonight. Then I went up to the McDonalds. (Though I didn't know it at the time, it was at this point that the invisible Pim shot upwards toward space)

When I got inside, I made my way toward the bathroom. What I took to be the manager behind the counter gave me a bit of an unpleasant look. Whether or

356

not if I bought something, he probably didn't like people like me using their bathrooms. I also needed to do something with the money I had.

Because I couldn't walk up to the counter and pull out a thick wad of hundreds. That would really raise suspicions. It would be hard enough for someone like me to try to cash a hundred. When I got into the bathroom, I took off my backpack. Then I looked at myself in the mirror. I didn't look too bad. Then I examined the lump on my head. It was pretty painful and I could see a little dried blood. I looked around for some paper towels. But all they had was one of those fucking blow dry machines on the wall. The thought entered my mind, as it had many times before, that whoever invented those things can blow me. I went over to the toilet stall and grabbed a bunch of toilet paper. Then I went back to the sink and tried to clean myself up as well as I could. After I was through with that, I grabbed my backpack and went into the stall and closed the door. Then I sat my backpack on the floor and pulled the money out of my pocket. I then started taking hundreds and sticking them into various pockets. Then I pulled out my wallet and put some in there.

After putting my wallet back in my pocket, I sat down on the toilet and opened my backpack again. I looked at the money inside with bewilderment and astonishment on my face. Then I wondered if there were any clues elsewhere in my backpack. There was a zipper on the back that opened to a smaller, thin pocket. It was just slightly unzipped. Which wasn't the way I remembered it having been. I opened it. A surprised look came over my face as I saw a folded over piece of paper. I knew that I hadn't put it there! I eagerly pulled the paper out. There was something inside the paper that was held with a paperclip. I unfolded the paper and looked at it. The paperclip held a photograph to the paper. I looked at it with astonishment as my mouth dropped open and thought, "No fucking way!" If I thought I had a mystery before, the photograph only made it worse! The photograph showed me and an extremely attractive girl standing amongst some woods. The girl was wearing camouflage patterned clothing and had on a camouflage patterned cap. I was wearing the same kind of clothing. We were both holding rifles of a design I hadn't seen before. Though I knew that there were all different types of them out there. I looked at the picture in astonishment for about twenty seconds.

Though what struck me as much as anything else was how beautiful the girl was. It also caused me feelings of desire. Ignoring for the moment, I focused on the writing on the paper without reading it. Then I lifted the bottom of the picture and saw that there was writing on the back. So I removed the picture from the paperclip and flipped it over. On the back, somebody had written the name, Susan Richards. Below it was an address in Branson Missouri and a phone number below that. I was already in St. Louis. So it couldn't be that far away. Then I moved the picture behind the paper and read it. There was a type written message on it. It said, "Mr. Neilsen, You will have no memory of this photograph. And I am breaking all sorts of rules in telling you this. So you must destroy this letter when you are through reading it and speak of it to no one. Except to the woman in the

photograph. No doubt you know the value of money and how hard it is to come by. So if you wish to help earn the money you now  
357

have, you will do as I say. You have been on a secret government mission. You may not believe that we have the ability to erase certain parts of people's memories. But believe it.

"You and this woman were randomly selected for a secret government mission. About that, I can't tell you any more. Except to say that you have earned part of the money you now have. I felt guilty for putting Ms. Richards in danger. But it was pretty much the luck of the draw. For obvious reasons, I would have felt extremely guilty if anything had happened to her. Which is the reason for this letter and the money. You two seem to have made a connection in the brief time that you spent together. So I have given you her name, address and phone number. Ms. Richards has no knowledge of this time either. But like you, she too has been made aware of it. I would advise you not to seek out the answers. Or you may lose everything. But you and she can at least share in this mystery together. Good luck." I read the letter over again a few more times. Taking time between readings to look at the picture. When I did so, I couldn't get over the feeling that I had feelings for her. I wondered if she felt the same way about me. But if I had told her that I was a homeless guy, she probably wouldn't have developed any feelings towards me.

As the letter said, I did indeed know the value of money and how hard it is to come by. And I was extremely glad to have it. To say the least. So I did as the letter said. First, I sat the picture on my backpack, then I tore up the letter and tossed it in the toilet. I then picked up the picture and looked at it again. It was just incredible how beautiful she was! I kept trying to recall her. But I came up with nothing. I had heard about the government experimenting with things like mind control back in the fifties and sixties. Unbelievable as it was, apparently they had learned more than what was revealed. And had probably learned a few things more since then. I had no idea I was so clueless as to what our technology was capable of. The only reason I could think of for the government to go through such pains was to keep such missions secret. They probably even had some sort of way to make me forget if I had been captured. Like a radio controlled capsule that released some sort of drug. But if they had something like that, it seemed to me that they would just make it lethal. Again, nothing really made any sense. I took one last good look at the girl, Susan. Though I still couldn't remember her. But now that I was no longer a bum, there was no doubt that there was going to be a reacquaintance. It was also reassuring that there was no ring on her finger.

I put the picture back into the smaller backpack pouch and closed the zipper. Then I zipped up the main compartment of the backpack and

stood up. I then turned to flush the toilet. Watching to make sure all the scraps of paper went down. Then I made my way back out of the bathroom. After leaving the bathroom, I went over to the counter and ordered a burger, shake and fries. I pulled out a hundred and handed it to the cashier. The cashier used one of those markers they use to check the authenticity of money. It passed the test. Which was a relief to me. Then the cashier started to make change. After I took the change, I asked the cashier what the date was. From what she told me, apparently I was missing three days. I had to suppress the urge to look

358

surprised. Then I said, "Ok. Thanks." After I got my food, I went over to a secluded table and ate. Afterwards, I put my backpack on my lap and unzipped the top a little to look inside. The sight of the money inside reassured me. Then I closed that section and opened the smaller pouch.

I took out the picture again and looked at it. It made me wonder where it was taken. Then I looked again at the rifles we were holding. I thought I pretty much knew all the different types of assault rifles there were. But apparently I didn't. Unless these were some sort of custom jobs. Then I looked at Susan again. I knew what the person who wrote the letter was talking about. It would have been an epic tragedy if anything had happened to her. It made me wonder why they just didn't get some worthless nigger or spick. I guess it was just as the letter said. The luck of the draw. Another thought came into my mind. I wondered how many of those people claiming to have been abducted by aliens were actually recalling implanted memories. Put there to sow doubt in the minds of possible enemies. Though I had seen UFO's before. So I knew they existed. But for the government to have done such a thing was still a possibility. Though whatever the case, I had time to think about it later. Right now, I had things to do. I looked at the back of the photograph. Seeing the girl's name, address and phone number. I couldn't wait to meet her.

Then I put the photo back into my backpack and carefully zipped it up. I then got up and went to dispose of the refuse. Keeping a good grip on my backpack as I did so. I then went back up to the counter and asked them if they had a telephone and a phonebook I could use. They gave them to me and I used them to call a cab. I kept the loops of my backpack over my arm. When I was through, I put the phonebook and phone back on the counter. Then I thanked the person who gave them to me. Afterwards, I went outside to wait for the cab. It only took about five minutes. I gave the driver a slight wave as he pulled up. Then I walked over to it and went in the back. The driver looked into the rear view mirror and said, "Where ya gowin." I said, "Take me to the nearest mall." The driver said, "Ok." We then drove off. After about a block, the driver tried to initiate some idol chit chat.

Trying to be polite, I gave short, curt answers. The way that somebody does to give someone else the idea that they didn't really want to talk. The driver took the hint.

In about five minutes, we pulled into a parking lot and up to the front entrance. The driver told me what I owed. I gave the driver some money. There was only about a couple bucks difference. So I told him, "Keep the change." The driver said, "Thanks. Have a good day." I got out and went into the mall. It was time to do some shopping. The first thing I did was go up to the sign that gave directions. After that, I headed into the mall. I went and got a decent cell phone with all of the top accessories. They helped me get it set up. After doing all that, I found a clothing store. Susan was really hot. I intended to be well dressed. So I asked one of the employees to help me pick out some good clothing. He told me that I looked like I could use them. I just told him that I had a relative leave me a bit of money. Along with making a comment about my good fortune, we chatted a bit as I picked out some clothes. I got two casual dress suits. One dark blue and the other more of a dark grey color. I also got a couple shirts, etc.

359

When I was through there, I made my way to one of the large chain stores. I got some underwear and socks.

Then I went to get another pair of shoes. The most attractive I could find. The ones at the clothing store seemed a little too pricy. After that, I got a belt. I then went looking around and found a suitcase. Then I went over to the pharmacy and got some toiletries. After that, I made my way over to the checkout lane and purchased my things. Then I went over to their customer service desk and asked for a phonebook. Using my fancy new smart phone, I then called a cab from a different cab company. Just in case I called the same one and got the same driver. I didn't want to raise any suspicions. After I went somewhere to get cleaned up, the need to call a cab was another inconvenience I was going to dispense with. I pushed my cart outside and waited for a cab. While I waited, I put the things I bought into the suitcase. I kept a good hold on my backpack as I went over to a trash can and disposed of the bags and the box the shoes came in. It took about ten minutes for the cab to get there. I had the driver take me to the nearest decent motel. Along the way, the driver tried the usual chit chat. I again gave a polite response, but gave the impression that I wasn't really interested in talking.

It only took about five minutes for us to get to a motel. After paying the driver, I got out and went to get a room. Having done that, I went to my room and made sure the door was locked. I then cranked up the air conditioning all the way. After that, I put the suitcase on the bed. Then I checked the money in my backpack again. It was safe and sound. Then I opened the suitcase and removed the clothes and other things I bought. I then removed the money from my backpack and put

it in my suitcase. Taking out a little time to fondle it a little. However I came about having this money, I was of course still glad to have it! A few of the bundles of money I put into the back pouch on the inside. Then I took out the photograph and looked at it again for a few extended moments. It was still unbelievable. Then I sat it on the bed. Taking the clothes I didn't intend to wear, I folded them neatly and used them to cover up the money. After doing that, I then took the money I had on me and put most of it into the suitcase too. Some of the change and bills I just put on the bed. My smart phone I put into the back pouch of the suitcase. Then I closed the suitcase.

I picked up the photograph again. It made me wish I could at least remember Susan. Maybe it was just because that she was beautiful, but the realization came over me that I did indeed love her. The letter said that we seemed to have made a connection. I wondered how much of a connection it was. Even though I knew that I was easily attractive enough to be with such a girl, I couldn't dare to hope that she felt the same way. Then I carefully sat the photograph on the bed as I continued to look at her image. I then picked up the toiletries and brought them into the bathroom. Then I came back out, took my backpack and tossed it over on the floor on the other side of the bed. I did have a few extra items of clothing in there. But I wasn't going to be needing those any more. I then started to undress. Tossing my clothing over to the backpack. Room service could dispose of that lot. Near the front window, there was a small table with a couple table types of chairs.

360

I picked up the suitcase and went over to take one of the chairs. I picked it up and brought into the bathroom with me. Closing and locking the door, I placed the chair under the doorknob with the suitcase balanced on the seat. So that if the chair became level, the suitcase would tip off. Its hitting the floor would alert me. This may have been being a little too careful. But now that I had the money, I didn't plan on giving anybody another chance to steal it. Then I went over to the sink and started opening up the toiletries I bought. I was glad that buying the shampoo reminded me to get a comb too. The first thing I did was brush my teeth. When I was through with that, I shaved. After doing that, I used the toilet. When I was through, I grabbed my soap and shampoo. Then I went over to the shower, placed the things in there and turned on the shower. While showering, I had to be careful of the painful lump on my head. When I was through showering, I also had to be careful of it when I dried off and combed out my hair. After I was through, I wrapped up the toiletries I decided to keep in a hand towel and removed my precautions from the door. Then I carried the chair and my suitcase back into the bedroom. I put the chair back at the table. Then I went over to the bed and

placed my suitcase on it.

I opened the package of underwear and started to get dressed. The shirts I got were white and stylish long sleeve button up shirts. There were two pockets on the chest that had flaps of fabric over the top with buttons. I had gotten a couple different ties. They were pretty expensive. I intended to make this money last as long as possible. But I wanted to look nice. Picking up a tie, I went back into the bathroom and looked at myself in the mirror as I put it on. I had asked the guy in the clothing store to show me how to tie one. When I was through tying my tie, I went back into the bedroom and finished getting dressed. I decided to put on the dark blue suit. Afterwards, I opened the suitcase again and took out a couple bundles of ten thousand. One I placed in my right jacket pocket. The other I placed in my front left pant's pocket. I didn't know what kind of car I would buy. But I didn't plan on spending any more than that. Then I took out my phone and sat it on the bed. After redistributing the money a little in the suitcase, I used my spare underwear to cover what was in the back, inside pouch. I placed my wrapped up toiletries in the back compartment too and closed the suitcase.

Then I picked up the picture of Susan and I and looked at it again. I then placed it into the inside pocket of my jacket. In the bottom compartment of the night stand, I found a phonebook. I sat on the bed with it and looked up the number for different local cab company. Then I picked up my smart phone and called them. After I was finished with that, I put the phone in my left jacket pocket and took the phonebook back over to the night stand. After putting it back in, I pulled some money out of my pocket. I then placed a twenty dollar bill on the night stand and put the rest of the money back into my pocket. It sure felt strange to have money again. Especially this much! Then I went over to the window and opened the curtain. I then sat at the table to look out the window and watch for the cab. As I did so, I thought about what kind of car I should buy. I planned to drive to Branson right away. But I didn't want to get pulled over. And I knew that all I would have is a dealer tag. I tried to think of what kind of inexpensive car would be the least likely to get pulled over with a dealer's tag on

361

it. Even though I could now afford a fairly expensive car, I didn't want to burn through my money like that.

I thought about a pickup truck. But though it might come in handy, that type of vehicle probably wasn't unobtrusive enough. It seemed to me that a mini van would be pretty inconspicuous. And practical. All sorts of other thoughts ran through my head as I waited. I also tried some more to remember what I apparently was meant to forget. Though I still didn't have any luck. When the cab arrived, I picked up my suitcase and left the room. With my suitcase in hand, I gave the



driver a wave and then held up a finger to let him know that I would be a minute yet. Then I took my key back to the office. As I did this, the cab pulled in and turned around. I told the person there that all I needed to do was get cleaned up. After exchanging the usual customary pleasantries, I left the office and went over to the cab. After getting in, the driver turned and said, "Where ya headed." I said, "Take me to the nearest large American auto dealership. But drop me off next door and I'll walk over. I don't want them to see me getting dropped off by a cab and think that they have a sure deal."

As the taxi pulled up to the street, the driver looked at me in the rear view mirror and said, "I guess that means we're going to be losing a customer." I didn't want to let on that I had quite a bit of money. So I just said, "Maybe. It just depends on what their prices for used cars are." The driver turned onto the street to the left and headed down the road. Thankfully, this driver wasn't the chatty type. After about five minutes, the driver turned into a restaurant near a Chrysler dealership. I paid the driver and said, "Thanks." The driver took the money and said, "Good luck." I said "thanks" again and got out of the cab. Then, with suitcase in hand, I started walking over to the dealership. As I did so, I looked at some of the prices as I walked up. My eyes nearly bugged out of my head. I wasn't quite sure why the U.S. quit making thousand dollar bills. But with prices like these, maybe it was time for them to start doing so again. The cab driver had said, "Good luck." Seeing some of the prices, I was going to need it.

I hoped that the prices they had for used vehicles were cheaper. On the other hand, having a piece of shit for a car was a large part of what caused me to end up homeless. So maybe paying a little extra for something with some warranty still left to it would be a good investment. Also, I didn't want Susan to see that I was driving some beat up heap. I went toward the doors of the dealership. It wouldn't have surprised me if there were dealers inside looking at me and hoping that my suitcase was full of money. I went through the doors and was almost immediately met by a dealer. He grinned and said, "Can I help you find something?" I said, "I'm looking for a good used mini van." Then I held up my suitcase up a little and said, "This thing isn't full of money." As I lowered it, I added, "So I'm looking for something that doesn't cost a lot." The dealer said, "What kind of price range are you interested in." I said, "Show me something, a couple years old and we can talk about it." This perked the dealer up a bit. Which wasn't a good sign. The dealer gestured toward the door and said, "Let me show you what we have out in the lot." I nodded at him with a slight smile and said, "Ok."

The dealer went to the door and held it open for me. I headed out of the door.

362

The dealer told me his name. Being polite, I told him my name and

said, "Nice to meet you." The dealer said, "Is it ok if I call you Erik?" I didn't really care to be given the chummy treatment. But I said "ok" anyway. Then I said to him as we walked out into the lot, "Do your models that are two or three years older come with any sort of warrantee?" The dealer started talking about what kind of warrantee they came with. Afterwards, I said, "I'm going to be leaving for Branson right away. How would your warrantee here help me there." The dealer said that it would be no problem to transfer the warrantee to one of their dealerships in that area. Then the dealer started pointing out various vehicles of the type I wanted. I didn't see much difference as I would have liked between the price of the new vehicles and the slightly used ones. It didn't take too long to settle on a Town & Country mini van. It was dark blue in color and pretty nice inside. I thought that it would have been nice to live in rather than live in the way I had been living. It had fairly low milage and the miles per gallon looked acceptable.

They wanted \$21,500 for it. I decided to play a little hard ball. So I said, "I'll give you twenty thousand cash. Otherwise, I'll go elsewhere." The dealer gave me the usual story about how it was a good deal. He then said, "Can you do twenty thousand five hundred." I thought about it for a minute. That was a thousand less. Which would cover some of the tax and stuff. I said, "Ok." The dealer grinned and put out his hand for me to shake. So I gave him a slight smile and shook his hand. I really didn't want to spend so much. But, oh well. Then the dealer gestured toward the doors of the dealership and said, "Let's go in and get everything set up." I gave him another nod and a slight smile. The dealer gave me the expected chit chat about what a good vehicle it was as we walked back toward the dealership. I tried to keep up with the polite conversation as we walked. We went inside and into the dealers office. Then we did the usual paperwork. As we did so, the dealer tried to sell me on some extras. But I wasn't interested.

When everything was set up, I pulled a stack of ten thousand out of my pants pocket and placed it on the desk in front of him. Needless to say, this made the dealer look a bit happier. Then I reached into my jacket pocket and took out another bundle of ten thousand and sat it on the other. Then I reached for my wallet and pulled out a little more money. The dealer sat the money in front of him and said cheerfully, "I'll have somebody bring your vehicle around to the front." He then got on the phone and talked to somebody in the garage. He told them what vehicle to get, to gas it up and bring it up front. After hanging up, he picked up the money, stood up and said, "I'll be right back." Then he took the money out of the office. He wasn't gone long before he came back in. He again said in a cheerful manner, "I'll make you a dealer tag. And then you'll be all set." He sat down at his desk, opened a drawer and pulled out a blank dealer tag. As he closed the drawer and opened the top drawer, I said, "Do you have any maps of Missouri?" The dealer said as he retrieved a thick black marker and a

roll of scotch tape, "We sure do. I'll get you one. You said you were going to Branson, right?"

I said, "Yes" as he closed his top drawer. The dealer said with a smile, "That's

363

easy." He then started pointing out directions on how to get to the interstate. After doing that, the dealer finished making out the dealer tag. When he was finished with that, he put the marker back into the top drawer. Then the dealer stood up and said with a grin, "We should be all set." I grinned back at him and stood up with my papers in hand. The dealer walked over to the door of his office as I picked up my suitcase. Then the dealer gestured out the door and said, "Right this way Erik. I'm sure you're going to love your almost new Town & Country mini van. You've made a wonderful choice." I couldn't help but grin too. It was a nicer car than I had ever owned. And fully paid for! We walked over to the next office and stopped in front of it. The dealer said, "Let me get you that map." He went into the office and asked the person there for a map. The person smiled, opened a drawer and pulled out a map. They exchanged some brief pleasantries as he handed the dealer the map. The dealer told the person, "Thank you." They both smiled at me as he came back out of the office. Then the dealer said, "Right this way Erik."

As we walked toward the doors, the car drove up to the front. As we walked out of the dealership, the dealer said, "There's a lot of beautiful country between here and Branson. I'm sure you'll love it." I said, "I wouldn't doubt it." Being outside, it felt like it was starting to get pretty warm out. So I said, "I hope the air conditioning works good." The dealer grinned at me and said, "There may be times when you think it works too good. But it is totally adjustable to suit your comfort." We walked over to the car as one of the staff from the back was standing near the car holding a folded piece of paper. He had apparently put on the drivers seat to keep him from getting it dirty as he brought it around. The staff person said with a smile, "All ready to go." The dealer said to him, "Thanks Frank." Both the back hatch and the drivers door were open. Though the engine was turned off. The staff person handed the dealer the keys and headed toward the back of the dealership. Then the dealer said about my suitcase, "You can just toss that back here. There's plenty of room as you can see." I put my suitcase in back. Then the dealer handed me the map and said, "Here ya go." I took it and said, "Thanks."

The dealer then taped the dealer tag to the inside corner of the back window. After the dealer was through, he said, "There. All street legal." The dealer reached up to prepare to close the back hatch. I stepped back and he closed it. The dealer then said, "Let me go to the passenger side and I'll show you how everything works." He went to the passenger door. I went to the drivers door and sat inside. This did

appear to be a nice vehicle. The dealer opened the passenger door and sat inside with his door opened. With the usual chit chat, the dealer opened one of the compartments for me to put my papers in. After that, starting with the remote on the key chain, he explained all of the functions. One of the functions on the key chain he started the car with. After explaining things such as the climate control and stereo, the dealer grinned at me and said, "Do you have any other questions?" I was grinning too as I said, "No. I think you've covered about everything." The dealer held out his hand for me to shake. I shook his hand and he said, "Thank you for choosing Chrysler. You won't be disappointed."

364

It was certainly a nice car. Much better than anything I was use to. He got out of the car and bent over a little to face into the car. Then he said with a grin, "You have my number. If you have any questions, feel free to call me. Have a good day. And drive safely." I said, "Thank you. I will." He closed his door and I closed mine. I put my seatbelt on and put the car in gear. The dealer waved at me a little. I gave him a bit of a wave back. Then I slowly started to pull away. I pulled up to the street and waited for the traffic to clear. Then I turned onto the street and I was on my way. I took the directions the dealer gave me to the freeway. As I went, I turned on the air conditioning and then found a good rock and roll station I knew of. I turned the station up pretty loud and adjusted the balance, bass and treble. It sounded pretty good. I was never a fan of those supper bass stereos. But the bass in this sounded really good. The feeling of cruising in style and knowing that I had a lot of money was thrilling. Along with being clean, well dressed and smelling good, I was on top of the world. And I still had nearly sixty thousand dollars left! That was enough to put a down payment on a house and furnish it. I wondered about who had contacted me and Susan. Did he give her a bunch of money too?

Obviously, whoever arranged all of this had to be some sort of government big wig with access to a lot of money. Maybe even confiscated, secret drug money. He was probably some sort of general or something in charge of a secret government organization. As I made my way to the freeway, it occurred to me that I didn't even know if Susan was single. Just because she wasn't wearing a ring didn't mean that she wasn't in a relationship. It could just mean that she wasn't in a serious relationship for that long. This caused my heart to sink. She was a super fine ultra goddess. There wasn't much chance that somebody like that was single! I said aloud, "Fuck! She probably isn't single!" I turned the radio off. Suddenly, I wasn't in any mood for music. I thought to myself that I may be going on a fools errand. Then I thought of the person who wrote the letter and gave me the picture. He had suggested that I seek her out. And he or his

operatives had probably learned more about her than I now know. If she had told me anything about her relationship status, I didn't remember it any more. The letter said that us two seemed to have made a connection. If we did once, there's a good chance that we would again. Especially since we now shared a mystery. This made me feel a lot better.

I was really scared there for a minute. Boyfriend or no boyfriend, if she decided that she preferred me, any boyfriend was in for a rough road if he didn't willingly bow out of the picture. After I got onto the freeway, I pulled the picture out of my jacket pocket and looked at it again. I thought again about how absolutely beautiful this Susan girl was. The whole story still seemed incredible as to why she and I were taken. Somebody must have indeed been nuts to have put such a girl in danger. One of the many thoughts that ran through my mind back in the hotel room was whether or not I should call her. I again considered it. But I decided again that I would wait until I got to Branson. Maybe I was just being a chicken. But I had suffered so much disappointment in my life, I wasn't eager to find out too soon that she was indeed in a relationship. The less time I had to deal with that kind of disappointment, the better. I looked at her picture and said

365

aloud to it, "Please be single." Then I propped the picture up on the dashboard so I could still look at it as I drove. I then again said to the picture after I did so, "Please be single."

It was likely that Susan had received a picture like I had. It made me wonder what she thought about me. I knew that I was good looking. But what if she was in a relationship with somebody that she not only was already in love with, but was equally good looking and had a lot of money. Or worse yet, was a rock star or some sort of celebrity. She was certainly good looking enough that anybody would feel themselves lucky to be with her. It was maddening that I couldn't remember anything about her or the mission we were apparently on together. I again thought it incredible that the government had the kind of technology that made it possible for them to so completely erase somebody's memory like this. Maybe when this picture was taken, we were already under some sort of mind control. It seemed to me that if that were the case, it would have made it easier for them to erase the whole event from our conscious memory. If that was the case, the person who wrote the letter may have not known himself about her relationship status. Which would mean that his suggestion that I seek her out would have been pretty much a shot in the dark.

Seeing how both she and I were blond and would make an exceptional pair, he may have thought it was worth the effort to try. I again found myself hoping that she wasn't in a relationship. But I didn't want to get my hopes up too high. Just in case. As I drove

along, I had many thoughts run through my head. One of which was how I would react when I finally met Susan. I decided that I would try to play it cool. Looking at her picture, I thought the first thing I would like to do was come on to her. But that would probably only scare her off. So whatever happened, I had to play it cool! After a while, I turned the radio back on. All of the questions I had running around in my head were getting me nowhere. The music helped me take my mind off of it a little. About forty minutes or so later, the radio played "Radar Love." It made me think of Susan of course. I had a terrible urge to speed up. But I was already driving as fast as the speed limit would allow. The last thing I needed to have happen was to get pulled over for speeding.

If for some reason the police were suspicious and decided to look into my suitcase, I would have a difficult time explaining all of the cash in there. They would probably assume it was drug money. Which would require some good lies and probably involve a long process to get it back. The rest of the drive was pretty uneventful. Except at one point. I saw a state trooper car slowly catch up to me. The police car slowed down behind me for a few moments. Then it moved into the other lane. As it began to pass me, I looked over at the cop inside and smiled. At the same time, I gave him a slight nod. The cop looked at me too with a slight smile and gave me a slight nod back. Then we both turned back to the road. The cop car slowly pulled away. It took me about three hours to reach Branson. When I got there, I pulled into a gas station and pulled up to a pump. I turned the car off, went out and filled the car up. Afterwards, I went inside and paid for the gas and a pen I picked up. Then I left and went back to my car. I drove over to an empty area of the gas station's lot and parked again.

366

Then I took out my phone and turned the photo over. I had, as the saying goes, "Butterflies in my stomach." Then I thought to myself, "Here goes nothing!" I called the number on the back. A girl answered and said with a highly inquisitive voice, "Is this Erik Neilsen!" Apparently, my name had appeared on her phone. I said, "Yes it is." She said, "We need to talk! Where are you!" I said, "Yes. I think we do need to talk." I then told Susan where I was. Then I said, "Do you know the place?" She said in a less urgent manner, "Yes I do." I said, "How do I get from where I am to where you are." My phone had one of those GPS functions to it. But when I bought the phone, I didn't want to waste time having those kinds of functions explained to me. She told me the directions to her apartment. I wrote them down on some paper I had from the purchase of my car. Then I said, "Ok. I'll be there as soon as I can." With a bit of relief in her voice, she said, "Ok. I'll be waiting." I said, "Bye" and hung up the phone. Then I put the phone back in my jacket pocket. I took the photo of Susan and I and put it back into my inner jacket pocket. Then I then started the

car and pulled out. I was on my way.

Needless to say, I was both nervous and excited. Following the directions, they eventually took me to a rather decent looking apartment complex a little ways outside of town. I pulled in and parked. After releasing the latch to the back hatch, I got out of the car. I went to the back, got out my suitcase and closed the hatch. Then I pressed the lock key on my key chain. It made the sound it makes when you do that. I then headed toward Susan's apartment. Feeling both trepidation about Susan's relationship status and excitement over meeting her. Susan's apartment was on the second floor and at the end of a hallway that was at the top of the stairs. I went up to her door and knocked. A moment later, the door opened. I saw Susan and she saw me. We both looked at each other with a bit of a surprised look. Though for my part, it was because Susan was even more beautiful in person. I don't know why. Maybe it was because of the shared mystery or something. But as soon as I saw her here in the flesh, I knew that I loved her.

It was somehow beyond something just like an instant physical attraction. Maybe they hadn't been able to completely get rid of the connection the letter said we had made. If so, I really wished I could remember. Susan was wearing a little makeup. But not much. She had the type of beautiful face that didn't really need makeup. Susan was wearing a white, slightly worn looking and slightly baggy T-shirt with a smiley face logo on the front. Under which there were some impressive breasts. The shirt hung a little down over an average looking pair of gray sweat pants. She was also wearing a pair of white socks. Before I had a chance to say anything, Susan said, "It's you!" Most of the surprised expression passed from our faces as I said, "You must be Susan Richards." She grabbed me by the arm and pulled me inside. As she did so, she said, "And you must be Erik Neilsen!" While she went to close and lock the door, I gave the well lit interior a quick glance as I sat down my suitcase.

Most of the area was a light beige color. The carpeting was a light, greenish blue color. To the left, there was a round dining room table with four chairs. Susan's purse sat on the table. In the middle of it there was a somewhat small

367

sculpture of three dolphins. Also on the table there was a plugged in laptop with a cup of coffee and smart phone nearby. The chair near them was pulled out a little. Beyond that a few feet, there was a sliding glass door. It had a couple blue curtains on either side that were pulled back in the middle. Behind them there were thinner, white and lacy curtains that were pulled back also. Outside the glass doors, there was a wooden balcony with metal railings. To the right of the glass doors, there was an open kitchen area with a counter top on two sides on the outside. The one on the table side was shorter. It

overhung the cabinet below a little and had a couple padded bar stools next to it. There was a counter with a double sink on the far wall. Above the sinks, there was a fairly small, sliding window with frilly, light blue and white curtains. These were decoratively pulled back in the middle too.

Above that counter and on the far side, there were cabinets on the wall. There was a refrigerator on the far wall at the entrance to this kitchen area. It had a couple small cabinets above it. On the far interior wall, there was a stove with an exhaust hood above it. There were a couple smaller cabinets above the hood. To the right there was a built in microwave and a couple cabinets above and below it. Just about directly across from where we were on the other side of the room, there was a hallway. There were two doors on either side near the ends. At the end of the hallway were two slatted doors that came together in the middle. To the right of the room there was a fairly large picture on the wall that showed a mountain, lake and meadow scene. In this end of the room, there was a light brown couch with two matching chairs. There was a decorative wooden coffee table in front of the couch. On which sat a small vase with flowers in it. That sat in a diamond shaped, decorative, lacy doily. Near the couch side of it, there was some folded paper and what looked like a turned over photograph with a TV remote sitting on them.

About seven feet from it sat a fairly large, flat screen TV. That sat on a decorative, black, multi shelved stand. There was a receiver and cable box below it. In the corners there were a couple speakers. About the whole tasteful apartment, there were also a few other pictures on the walls and some artistic knickknacks. With the door locked, Susan again took hold of my arm and pulled me over toward the couch. We looked at each other with somewhat puzzled, mystified looks on our faces. Getting closer to the coffee table on the other side of the couch, on it I could see that what I thought was a folded piece of paper was in fact two sheets of folded paper. Susan let go of me in front of the couch. Then Susan reached for the picture and pulled it out from under the remote. As she did so, I noticed her nicely done, pale pink fingernails. Susan then stood erect again and held up the picture facing me. It was just like the one I had.

Susan then said, "I don't suppose you remember this!" I took the picture and briefly looked at it. Flipping it over, it had written on the back, "The name of the person with you is Erik Neilsen." Then I looked at Susan and said, "I don't remember anything."

I pulled out the picture I had from my jacket pocket. Then I handed it to Susan and said, "This is the picture I received." As Susan took it and looked at it, I added, "Believe me. I was just as surprised as you no doubt were." Susan

368

looked at the back of the photograph and saw her name, address and



phone number. Then Susan looked at me and said, "By the way. Everybody calls me Sue." Sue and I gave each other slight smiles. Though we both still had somewhat puzzled looks on our faces. Then I said, "Well Sue, I could see something like this happening to me. But not someone like you." We both looked at each other with the same slightly puzzled looks as Sue said, "Whaddya mean." I took on more of a somber look as I said, "There's no way to sugar coat it. Until all this happened, I was a homeless guy who slept under an overpass." Sue looked at me with more of a surprised look as she said, "You were homeless!" I said, "Yes. I have been for a few months. But it isn't as bad as you may think. I'm not an alcoholic, drug user or criminal." This seemed to bring a bit of a relieved look to Sue's face as I added, "I just ran into a little bad luck. Which with a poor person, tends to stick. And when you don't have a parent's basement to live in, that's sometimes what happens."

Sue looked at me with a compassionate look and said, "You poor thing." I said, "I have something to show you." Then I sat the picture down and went over to my suitcase. I grabbed it and brought it back over to Sue. Then I sat down on the couch and placed my suitcase on the coffee table. Sue sat down next to me and put her picture on the coffee table. I opened the suitcase and reached into the back compartment. As I did so, I said, "When I woke up today, I found one of these in my pocket. And I had no idea where it came from." I pulled out one of the \$10,000 dollar bundles of bills and sat it on the coffee table in front of Sue. Sue didn't seem as surprised to the degree as I thought she might. Then I said, "A little while later, I found this in a backpack I had with me." I pulled out the other five bundles of \$10,000 dollars. This brought more surprise to Sue's face. Then I said as I closed the suitcase, "I had eight of these in all. I spent a little over twenty thousand for a minivan in St. Louis." I sat the suitcase next to the coffee table. Then I said, "I figured that even with dealer tags, a minivan wouldn't be very conspicuous to a cop on the drive here. If I had gotten pulled over, I would have had a difficult time explaining the money. I had enough bad luck this morning."

Looking at me with a puzzled look, Sue said, "Why. What happened." I said, "When I woke up this morning and found the money in my pocket, I started examining it. One of the other two homeless guys who slept nearby must have woken up too and saw me. The sneaky bastard quietly tossed a bottle in the other direction to distract me. When I turned back, he was in the process of hitting me with a hefty stick. I didn't have time to react and got this." I tilted the top of my head toward Sue and showed her the lump on my head. Sue looked highly concerned as she examined it. Sue said, "Oh my god! Were you all right!" I looked back up at Sue and said, "I was knocked out." This caused a bit of a horrified look to come over Sue's face. Sue said, "You poor thing! But how did you manage to keep the money!" I said, "This is where the story gets even stranger." Sue's expression started to shift from a bit horrified to astonished as I told her. I said, "When I

came too, the money was folded and back in the pocket where I first found it. The other two guys that had been sleeping nearby were gone.” Sue’s astonished look became even more astonished.

369

Then Sue said with an astonished voice, “I wonder what happened.” I said, “The best explanation I could think of was that whoever gave me the money to begin with was watching from somewhere. Seeing what happened, they came to my aid and took the money back. Then they probably chased the other guys off before giving me the money back and leaving themselves.” Sue said, “It’s unbelievable!” We looked at each other with puzzled and amazed looks for a few moments. Then Sue looked at me with a bit of an intent look on her face. Sue then placed her hand on my forearm and said, “Just a minute.” Then Sue got up and walked into the hallway. I heard her open what sounded like one of the two slatted doors at the end of the hallway. A few moments later, Sue came back out carrying a small, blue velvet bag with a draw string at the top. As she did so, she said, “The last thing I remember was being pulled over by a cop.” As Sue sat down, she said, “The next thing I remembered was waking up in my car in a parking lot. When I went to look in my purse, along with a letter and the picture, I found these.” As Sue spoke, she opened the bag. Sue then dumped out a quantity old looking gold coins on the table. A surprised look came over my face.

Sue said, “There’s fifty of them. But what surprised me more was finding out that three days had disappeared. I looked up a few of the coins on the internet. Apparently they’re old Spanish doubloons. As far as I can tell, they’re worth about three thousand dollars each.” I said, “It looks like you did a little better than me. But I think I would have given you more money too.” This caused Sue to grin. Which caused me to grin too. Then my countenance again became a little more somber. With a hint of a puzzled look. Giving the papers on the table a quick glance, I said, “Is that the letter that came with it?” Sue said, “Yes.” As Sue reached for the letter, she said, “Apparently you are the only other person it’s ok to look at it.” Sue handed me the letter. I unfolded them and briefly looked at the first and second page. Then I read the first page. It was pretty much the same as mine. Except this one said that Sue could probably expect to be contacted soon by the person with her in the picture. The letter also said that because of the high probability of success in the mission, it was decided that Sue tell her employer that she was sick. And later that we provide a cover story to her friend Becky.

The letter said that on the second page was a transcript of what was said to help us maintain the fiction. Afterwards, both letters were to be destroyed. When I was through reading the transcript, I looked at Sue with a puzzled look of course and said, “I don’t remember any of this.”

Sue said, "Me either." I then set the letter back down and said, "I only received one letter." Then I told Sue what my letter had said. I then said to Sue, both of us with puzzled and slightly amazed looks on our faces, "Have you talked to your friend Becky yet?" A bit of an anxious look came over Sue's face as she said, "No. Becky's been calling from work. But I don't know what to tell her. I really hate lying." I said, "Please forgive me for asking. But do you have a boyfriend you're worried about upsetting?" A slight smile came over Sue's face as she said, "Not really." This knowledge was of course as wonderful as the money to me. It was quite difficult to keep myself from showing it. Remembering that I had to play it cool. I then

370

said, "Then for now, let's just play along. You go along with the story and I will pretend that I am the luckiest guy in the world."

This caused Sue to briefly grin before she turned her grin into a smile. I gave Sue a slight smile as I added, "Then later, you could just tell her that you had given me a ticket to dumpsville." This seemed to reassure Sue. I then looked again at the money. Sue did too. We then looked back at each other and I said, "It's all so incredible." Sue said, "I can't believe it either." I said, "I wish I could remember. I've been knocking my brains out trying to. But I couldn't come up with anything." Sue said, "Me either." We sat there for a while discussing various aspects of what happened and how it happened. I told Sue of the various scenarios I came up with as to what happened before I found the letter and photograph. We also discussed what we possibly might have done. Which caused us both a little extra concern. We also discussed with some incredulity that the government had the ability to do such a thing and that they apparently did such a thing to us. As Sue and I talked, even though we were still quite puzzled, we became more comfortable with each other. After talking for a while, I took a quick glance at Sue's coins.

Then I said to Sue, "I wonder why they gave you old gold coins and gave me money." Sue said, "Maybe they wanted to show what kind of influence the person who gave them had. But I wonder where they got them." I said, "I remember watching this episode of 'Unsolved Mysteries.'" Sue's face lit up a little as if she knew what I was talking about. I continued on, saying, "They talked about some treasure some people claimed to have found in a hollowed out mountain in the southwest." Sue jumped in and said, "I saw that too! After some betrayal between the people who claimed to have found the treasure, the government caught on and took the place over. Then declared everything top secret." I said, "That's it. I wonder if your coins could be part of that treasure." Sue said, "It's hard to say. But whoever did what they did could have had the influence to access to such treasure." My countenance became more solemn as I said, "You mentioned the betrayal that took place between the people who

supposedly found the treasure.” Sue’s countenance became more serious as I added with conviction on my face and in my voice, “I just thought you should know that, with my life, I wouldn’t allow anything to come between you and your money.”

This caused Sue to give me the sweetest, appreciative smile. Then Sue said, “Thank you. You’re so sweet. Somehow, I know I can trust you.” This caused me to smile at Sue with a kind expression too. I then said, “I was watching this one show about somebody who had found a sunken treasure. Apparently he thought the government wanted too big of a portion of it. He had himself filmed standing in a boat somewhere out to sea. The film showed him shoveling the treasure back into the sea.” This brought a surprised look to Sue’s face. I then said, “Whoever gave you this money probably didn’t mean for you to share it with the government. You are going to have to be careful about how you dispose of it. The first thing tomorrow, we (The word “we” made Sue smile. Which made me utterly happy. Though I tried not to show it) should probably go to a bank and get ourselves a safety deposit box. Which reminds me.” I picked up the

371

letters and held up the one that had the transcript of what was said when Sue called into work and our conversation with Becky. I said, “You don’t need this anymore do you?” Sue’s smile lessened a bit as she said, “No.” I then tore up both letters. Sue’s slight smile widened again a little as I did so. Then I said, “Where’s your bathroom.”

Sue apparently knew what I had in mind. Then Sue held out her hands together to me, forming a bowl of sorts. As Sue did so, she said, “It’s the second door on the right in the hallway. But I have a better idea.” We were of course smiling at each other. It was difficult to keep the affection I was feeling from slipping out. Then I handed her the pieces. Sue got up and went over to the kitchen. I smiled at Sue as she went. Admiring how fine she looked even in her sweatpants and baggy shirt. Sue put the pieces into the garbage disposal, turned on the water and then turned on the garbage disposal. When Sue was through, we smiled at each other as she came back over to the couch. After Sue sat down, I looked at her with a bit of concern showing on my face. Sue’s expression turned to a more solemn one. I said, “Neither one of us remembers anything. The letters said that we seemed to have made a connection. I doubt if we became physically involved. But tell me. Do you think you were sexually abused?” Sue said, “I thought about that too. But as far as I could tell, nothing was any different.”

I gave Sue a slight smile with a bit of a relieved look. Sue smiled back at me with a bit of gratitude on her face over my concern. My slight smile was replaced by a bigger one as I said, “There is something I would like to know about you if you don’t mind my asking.” Sue’s smile became a bit bigger too. Sue said, “Whaddya want to know.” I

said, "Everything." This caused Sue to grin. Which I did also. Sue started telling me all about herself. Which I listened to with an interest I couldn't mask. After Sue was through, I gave her a wry smile and said as if I didn't believe her, "Do you have any photographs to back up your story?" This caused Sue to laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Sue said with a grin, "Just a minute." Sue got up and made her way over to her purse. I grinned at Sue as I watched her go over there. We smiled widely at each other as Sue returned with her purse. Sue sat slightly closer to me and pulled out her wallet. It was wonderful having Sue so close to me. Sue opened her wallet and started showing me the pictures of her family and friends while she explained who was who. I made the usual polite comments here and there.

Afterwards, I said with a smile, "You have a wonderful family." This made Sue grin. I grinned too as Sue said, "Thank you." I then reduced my smile to a slight smile. Sue reduced her grin to a smile as I said, "I'm afraid that my family story isn't quite as pleasant as yours." Sue's smile went away as her face took on a bit of concern. Then Sue said, "I hope it isn't anything really bad." I kept my slight smile as I said, "No. It isn't anything really all that out of the ordinary." This caused a slight smile to appear on Sue's amazingly wonderful face. I told Sue all about myself and my family. Which Sue also listened to with great interest. But as I did so, Sue's cell phone rang. I stopped talking and we both looked over toward the table at it. Sue then turned back to me with a concerned look again. I took on a similar look. Sue said, "I'll bet that's Becky." Then Sue

372

got up and hurried over to the phone. Sue looked at it as she picked it up. Then Sue turned to me and said, "It is. Should I answer it?" I said, "You may as well. Just stick with the plan." Sue gave me a slight nod, answered the phone and said, "Whatcha doing?"

Sue held the phone a little ways away from her head for a moment as Becky blasted Sue with a barrage of urgent questions. As Sue started back toward the couch, she paid most of her attention to the conversation as she did so. When Sue got to the couch and sat down, she looked at me with a little worry still on her face as she tried to reassure Becky and answer her questions. Then Sue answered one of them and said, "Yes. Erik is here now." Sue looked at me and said with a bit of a nervous look on her face, "Ok." Then Sue handed me the phone and said, "Becky wants to talk to you." I had a bit of a worried look on my face too as I took the phone. Then I put the phone to my ear and said, "Hi Becky." Becky said, "I'm so happy for you both!" This made me grin as I said, "Thank you. I'm glad Sue has such a caring friend." This made Sue smile sweetly at me as she clasped her hands on her lap. Though I was paying most of my attention to the conversation. Then Becky said, "I'm sorry I told you the other day that

if you hurt Sue I'd cut your dick off and feed it to you."

I remembered Becky having said that from the transcript. Becky continued on, saying, "I should have known that Sue wouldn't have chosen to go off with someone who might hurt her. You said that you loved Sue. How much do you love her." I said, "I don't know if I should tell you. We've never even met yet." Becky said, "Don't be silly! I'm Sue's best friend and you've taken her away for over three days!" Then Becky added with a tinge of happy pleading to her voice, "I want to know how much you love her!" I looked at Sue with a bit of an embarrassed look to my face. Along with a hint of bashfulness. I turned away from Sue and said, "You know that one song by Styx where the lyric says, "My heart is in your hands." This caused Sue to bring her clasped hands up to her chest and look at me with a sentimental, loving look. Which being turned away from Sue, I couldn't see. I then said to Becky, "I love Sue more than life itself." After getting to know Sue more, this was in reality how I felt. But I couldn't let Sue know that. I then added, "Does that answer your question?" What I told Becky seemed to cheer her up. Becky said with a sentimental tone to her voice, "Yes it does! Put Sue back on!" I said, "Just a minute."

Sue quickly changed her expression from a loving one to just a sweet smile. With a slightly embarrassed and bashful look on my face, I handed the phone back to Sue. Though Sue's sweet smile made me smile too. Then Sue and Becky started talking again. Though Becky was doing most of the talking. Even though I didn't really need to go, I thought this would be a good time to use the bathroom. I then pointed to myself and then in the direction of the bathroom. Then I mostly mouthed the word, "Bathroom." Sue nodded at me with a slight smile. I stood up and made my way over to the bathroom. Sue and Becky chatted like you might expect a couple of girlfriends in such a situation to talk. Though I wished otherwise, I figured that most of what Sue had to say was a front. Going down the hallway, I saw the opened slatted door at the end of the hall. It showed a washer with the top up and a few cloths sitting off to the side.

373

Sue must have had her coins stashed in there. The second door on the left was Sue's bedroom.

The door was mostly open. I couldn't help giving Sue's bedroom a glance as I went by. It was the kind of nice, girly bedroom I would have expected her to have. Sue's bedroom was also fairly neat. The walls were painted a pleasing, soft shade of yellow. The carpeting was light blue and fairly thick. Next to the far wall, there was a white vanity with a lighted mirror. It had a matching chair that went with it. On it there were the usual things you would expect. Along with a few knickknacks. I could make out most of a good sized dresser to the left of the room. It had a lamp on the farther end of it. There were also a

couple dolls and a stuffed animal on it. Along with a few knickknacks. Near it on the far side of the room, there was a padded rocking chair with a raggedy ann doll on it. Near the chair there was a window with a couple sets of curtains. One set was white and lacy. The other set were blue and thicker. There were also blinds on the window. To the right of the room, there was a queen sized bed with a decorative bedspread on it.

Next to the wall at the head of the bed, there was a night stand on either side with small lamps on them. At the foot of the bed, there was a decorative cedar chest. This had a quilted pad laying across the top. There was a movie poster above the bed of an old romance movie. On the far wall there was another of an old pirate movie. There was a decorative ceiling fan with lights that was more or less above the cedar chest. The way the whole room reflected Sue's sweet personality brought a smile to my face. As I opened the bathroom door, apparently in response to a question, Sue started telling Becky how wonderful I was. If things turned out as I hoped, Sue would actually be thinking I was wonderful. Turning the bathroom light on, I noticed that like the rest of the apartment, it was quite nice. It was painted a light blue color. To the right of the door, there was another door. I took it this held towels and things. In the middle, upper portion of that wall, there was a decorative sheet brass sculpture of birds in flight. Across from the door there was a fairly large cabinet with a fairly large mirror above it.

Below the top of the cabinet, there were drawers and cabinet doors. Between the cabinet and the wall on the right, there was a wicker hamper with a lid. To the left of the mirror, there was a towel rack. It had a decorative hand towel on it. To the left of the cabinet, there was a toilet. It had those fuzzy accessories on it. To the left of that, there was a fairly good sized shower and tub. It had those frilly, decorative shower curtains on it. Along the inner wall to the left, there was a somewhat small, decorative padded bench with no back. To the left of it on the wall, there was a larger towel rack. This had a couple bath towels on it. The floor was tiled with white marble. In front of the cabinet, toilet and shower, there were fuzzy light blue rugs of various sizes. All of the decor was tasteful and pleasant. But Sue was foremost in my thoughts. As I closed the bathroom door behind me, I thought about how Sue did actually seem to like me. Even though Sue was so utterly beautiful, as I looked at myself in the bathroom mirror, I figured that I was easily handsome enough to be with such a girl.

Though I could still hear a little of Sue's conversation, I tried not to listen to it. I

374

knew that Sue had to throw Becky off from knowing the real truth. After all, Sue had been paid well enough to do so. I went to the toilet and lifted up the seat. Though the seat wouldn't stay up by itself. I

hated when girls did that. My sister used to do the same thing. Did she just not expect a guy to be using it? Or did she expect them to sit down too. I peed sideways into the bowl as I held up the lid with my knee. If we were going to end up spending time together, this was going to have to change. After I was through and all zipped back up, I lowered the toilet seat and flushed. Then I went over to the sink and washed my hands some. After drying them, I left the bathroom. Apparently Sue had been able to excuse herself from Becky and had placed the cell phone onto the coffee table. Sue and I smiled at each other as I went back over the couch. I sat down and said, "How did your fib session go." We both grinned. Sue said, "Just fine. She was happy for me and can't wait to meet you. But she wasn't too happy that I wanted her to tell our boss that I was quitting."

I said, "Oh. You two work together." Sue said, "Yes. We work at a restaurant where they have entertainment and stuff. Mostly, I greeted the customers. But that will probably be Becky's job now. I imagine that should cheer her up a bit." Then I said, "I hope it doesn't bother you. But I'm not really into that whole wholesome, country music, family entertainment thing. I'm more of a rock and roll kind of guy." Sue said, "The whole thing is a bit on the square side. But it doesn't bother me. Even though I am more of a rock and roll girl myself." I said, "Well, I guess I can finish my story." I continued where I left off and finished telling Sue about myself. When I was through, Sue said, "Instead of being homeless, why didn't you just join the military." I said, "I didn't feel like being a "grade A" sucker." This caused a bit of a surprised look to come over Sue's face. Then I said, "Capitalism, free enterprise, it's all a load of crap. At least at one time in ancient Rome, the people who were in the military had to be land owners and the like. To give them a reason to fight. I don't have any such reason.

"Sure, poor people in many other countries have it even worse. But that's their lookout. All I know is that in this society, I've been steamrollered. Also, my sensibilities lean more toward a socialist direction. Neither would I care to put my life on the line for any conflict this country would likely have me fight. Despite what this may make you think, I am still a good person." This brought a smile to Sue's face. Which made me smile too. I then said, "Do you think we could set politics aside for now. I really want you to like me." This brought a bigger smile to Sue's face. It made me smile a bit more too as I said, "So would you mind if we set aside my views?" Sue said sweetly, "I don't mind. And I do like you." This made me grin. Sue grinned too. Then I held out my hand to Sue and said, "Friends?" Sue and I shook hands as she said, "Friends!" After shaking each other's hand a few times, we let go and continued to grin at each other for a moment. Then my grin diminished to a smile. Sue's did too as I said, "How about we go and find ourselves a nice quite little restaurant and have some dinner." Sue said, "That would be nice."

I then turned to the money as my smile faded into a slight smile. Sue's smile faded to just a slight smile as I looked back at her. I said,



"We're going to have to hide this stuff." Sue said, "I know a good hiding spot." I looked around the

375

room and said, "I have a good idea." Then I picked up the velvet pouch and handed it to Sue. I said, "Hold this open for me." Sue held the pouch open and I started picking up handfuls of coins and dumping them into the pouch. They made a wonderful clinking sound as they landed in the pouch. After I had gotten them all in, Sue pulled the drawstring shut. I said, "Just a minute." I got up and went over to the sliding glass doors and made sure they were locked. Then I undid the loops that held the curtains and closed them. As I did so, I said to Sue, "Nobody can see in with the daylight anyway. But it's better to be safe than sorry." I went back over into the livingroom area as Sue said to me, "This is a pretty safe area anyway." Then I took off my jacket and laid it on the back of the chair on the left. I then unbuttoned my right cuff and rolled up my sleeve. As I did so, I said, "That may be. But you never know."

Then I went over to a warm air vent near that wall. I crouched down to look at it. Sue said, "That is a good idea." We briefly grinned at each other. The vent cover just sat on the carpeting. I pulled it out and looked inside as Sue came over to me with the pouch. Then I looked and felt around in the ductwork. It was a little dusty. I made sure there wasn't any spot where it might fall to a lower floor. I then reached up for the pouch. We smiled at each other as I took it. Then I placed it deep into the duct and replaced the cover. I then stood up. As I brushed my lower arm and hand off, I said to Sue with a smile, "That should do." Then Sue and I went over to the coffee table. I picked up one of the bundles of ten thousand. I handed it to Sue and said, "Do you have a good spot for this?" Sue said, "I think so." Then Sue took it and went around the coffee table. Then Sue knelt on the couch and shoved the money down into the back of the cushions with both hands. As Sue did so, I picked up a couple more bundles.

When Sue was through, I said, "I'm not one to throw money around. But..." I then tossed Sue a bundle. We both chuckled as Sue caught it. Then I tossed Sue another. Sue caught that too. We were both still grinning as Sue stood up. Sue said, "Just a minute." After picking up her photo of us, Sue went toward the hallway as I picked up the other two bundles. I went over to the other side of the couch. When I could look down the hallway, I could see Sue putting a bundle in some clothes. Then Sue put that and some other clothes in the washer. Sue then closed the top of the washer and slid the slatted door on that side shut. Sue then went into her bedroom with the other bundle and photo. No doubt Sue had a good stash spot in there too. A few moments later, Sue came back out. We both grinned at each other as Sue came toward me. Sue said, "This is kind of fun." I said, "Do you have any foil around?" Sue said, "Sure." We both went over to the

kitchen. When we were in the kitchen, Sue went to one of the end drawers on the right and opened it. Then Sue pulled out some foil. I went over to Sue and sat the bundles on the counter.

As I took the foil and started pulling some out, Sue said, "You're not going to try the old freezer trick are you." I said, "I have another idea." Having taken out a couple of sheets, I handed the foil back to Sue. As Sue put the foil back, I started to wrap one of the bundles. When I was through, I brought it over to the sink with the garbage disposal and stuck it into it. The triangular rubber slats closed over it. Then I rinsed off my hands and my forearm where my sleeve was

376

rolled up. Then I grabbed a couple paper towels and dried off. Afterwards, I went over to the last bundle of money. I smiled at Sue and glanced up at the top cabinets above the hood of the stove. Then I said, "Do you get up there often?" Sue gave them a brief glance and said to me, "Not without my small stepladder." I handed Sue the last bundle of money and said with a grin, "Allow me." Sue grinned too and said, "Ok." I turned Sue around. Then I squatted down and took hold of Sue's legs. I put a little of Sue's wonderful, round, firm butt on my shoulder. Then I lifted Sue up as I stood. Though not wanting to bump Sue's head on the ceiling, I didn't stand all the way up.

Sue laughed a little as I lifted her up. I laughed a little too. Needless to say, I really liked this closeness. Sue opened one of the top cabinet doors and stuck the money up in a pot that she probably didn't use often. Then Sue closed the door and said, "Ok." Then I backed away a little and started to lower Sue back down. As I did so, I said, "I hope you don't mind my saying. But you're surprisingly light." As I went to stand back up after setting Sue down, Sue turned to me with a grin and said, "Thank you." There seemed to be a bit of happiness about Sue over how apparently strong I was. Reaching into my pockets, I pulled out my wallet and took out about twenty five hundred dollars. I handed it to Sue and said with a smile, "I don't want to carry around too much money. Put this away for me too." Sue took it and said, "Ok." I put my wallet back and said, "Is it ok if I put some in your wallet too? I promise I won't fish around for information." As I rolled down my sleeve, Sue smiled sweetly at me. Then I said, "In case we get robbed or I lose my wallet, I would prefer to carry a little less cash." Sue said, "Well If I lose your money, I'll be good for it." We both grinned as we left the kitchen.

I said, "Which channel is there weather on. We might need to change plans if it looks like there may be any tornados that might pop up." Sue said, "It's been so hot and dry lately, I could almost wish." We stopped over by the hallway as I finished buttoning my sleeve. Sue told me which channel it was. Then Sue headed toward her bedroom. I went over to the chair and put my jacket back on. Though I didn't button it. Then I went over to the couch and sat down. I then turned

on the TV. Then I turned on the channel I wanted. After putting my photo back in my jacket pocket, I reached for my wallet and took out about half the money I had left. Then I reached into Sue's purse and took out her wallet. I put the money into it and put it back into her purse. As I watched to see what the weather was going to be like, I thought mainly about Sue. Between Sue and the money, Sue had become more important to me. Which may not be saying much for someone use to not having money. But it kind of amazed me. I waited about ten minutes for Sue to get dressed. Then I heard the bedroom door open and looked over in that direction with a smile.

When Sue walked into view from the hallway, she had a smile on her face and a surprised look came over my face. My mouth also dropped open. This made Sue grin. Sue had transformed herself into a goddess! Her makeup wasn't overly done. But it was done to perfection. Her full bodied, yet straight silky smooth blond hair hung about her shoulders. Sue was wearing a fairly opaque but lacy white button up top. From the photo, I could tell that she had some nice

377

breasts. I could also tell that from the loose fitting T-shirt she wore. But wow! Sue's top also showed some wonderful cleavage. The collar was decorative with some slight, lacy fringe around the edges. As for the sleeves, they went down to her elbows and themselves had some slight lacy fringe around the bottom edges. Sue was wearing a simple white skirt that went down to her knees. It was fairly form fitting. There was a split about five inches long on the end of one of the seams on the side. Sue was also wearing nylons and had on a decorative pair of white shoes. But the heels weren't overly long. Wherever we went, every guy who saw her was bound to drool.

Even though I was well dressed, all of a sudden, I felt underdressed. But with a girl as beautiful as Sue, she could have probably been wearing a potato sack and I would still have felt underdressed. I said, "Wow!" Sue giggled and said with a grin as she entered the livingroom, "Thank you." I stood up and said with a grin, "Now I feel underdressed." Sue said, "Don't be silly. You look fine." I said, "Not that I'm not ready to, but where can we go that I won't have to fight for you." Sue giggled again and said, "Stop it! You're going to make me blush!" This made me grin. Then Sue stepped over toward me a bit and picked up the TV remote. Sue turned the TV off. Then Sue picked up her purse and cell phone. While Sue did all this, I buttoned up my jacket. Sue put the cell phone in her purse and said, "Shall we go?" We continued to grin at each other as we made our way over to the door. As we reached the door, I unlocked and opened it as Sue shut off a couple lights. We stepped outside and Sue closed the door behind her.

## Going Out To Dinner

Sue fished around in her purse. Retrieving her keys, she found the right key and locked the door. Then Sue put the keys back into her purse and smiled at me. I was already smiling at Sue. Then Sue put her arm around mine and we started to head toward the stairs that went down to the parking lot. As we went, I said, "I suppose you know a good place to go." Sue said, "I know a few places. Though one of them we can't go to." I said, "Why not." Sue said, "One of the places is where Becky and I work at. The manager may be a little mad at me. Though after missing so much work, I don't think my quitting will be much of a surprise to him. But even if he is upset a bit, it doesn't matter. Because my dad is friends with the owner." By this point, we had reached the parking area. I pointed over to my car and said to Sue, "That's my car there." As we walked over to it, Sue said, "It looks very nice." I said, "It's just my luck. Now that I have something nice enough to live in, I don't have to anymore." As we walked in the direction of the passenger side, Sue said with a solemn look on her face, "I still can't picture you homeless. I'm so sorry."

As I unlocked the doors and opened the door for Sue, I said, "Well that's all in the past now." Sue smiled sweetly at me as she got into the car. I closed the door after Sue got in. As I made my way to the driver side, I could have started

378

the car with my remote. But I didn't want to seem like a showoff. I got in and Sue and I smiled at each other. Sue was already buckled up. I buckled up too and started the car. Then I looked at Sue again afterwards. We were both smiling at each other. I said, "Where should we go." Sue started to give me directions. I pulled out and followed Sue's directions. In between directions, we talked more about the incredible circumstances that brought us together. After driving and talking for a few minutes, Sue's phone rang again. Sue reached into her purse and retrieved the cell phone. Sue looked at it and looked at me with a smile and said, "It's mom." Sue answered the phone and said, "Hi mom." Sue listened a little and said, "I know. I'm sorry. I should have called. But I was busy." Apparently, Sue had also been avoiding talking to her mom.

After listening a little more, Sue said with a bit more of an emphatic voice, "I know. I'm sorry. Can we talk about this later? I'm on my way to dinner and have to give my new fella directions." Sue gave me a bit of a look like she new she was telling a fib. But by this time, it wasn't all that big of a fib. Then Sue turned her attention back to the phone and grinned. In response to another question, Sue said, "His name is Erik. Erik Neilsen." Then in response to another question, Sue turned to me and smiled. I briefly smiled at Sue as I drove. Sue said,

"Yes. He's very nice. He's both blond and handsome." This made me grin. Which made Sue grin. Sue then turned her attention back to the phone as I drove on with a beaming grin across my face. Sue said, "Mom! I can't talk right now! Let me call you later.... Ok.... Ok! I'll talk to you later. By." Sue lowered the phone and hung it up. Sue looked over at me with a bit of an embarrassed look and said, "My mom is dying with curiosity. Can I take your picture?" I grinned at Sue and said, "Sure." I pulled the car over and turned toward Sue. Sue was grinning at this point too as she messed with her phone. Sue said, "Ok. Ready."

I turned my grin to the phone. A moment later, it flashed. Sue then lowered the phone and said, "Thank you." Then Sue pointed down the road and said, "Just keep going in that direction." After making sure there wasn't any traffic, I pulled away. Sue was making a text. After sending it, Sue put her phone down. I briefly smiled at Sue and said, "I imagine your mom is very protective of you." Sue rolled her eyes a little and made one of those "you wouldn't believe it" expressions and said, "You have no idea." We both chuckled a bit about it. I then said, "Well as long as you're with me, you're about as safe as you can be." This caused a bit of a sentimental expression to accompany Sue's smile. Noticing where we were, Sue's said, "Turn right up at that corner." As we approached the corner, Sue's phone rang again. Then Sue answered it and read a text message. This made Sue giggle. Which made me grin. I turned at the corner as Sue typed in another text. Then I briefly turned my grin to Sue. It didn't take long for Sue to send her text. Then Sue put her phone back into her purse. Splitting my attention between Sue and driving, I said, "Was that your mom again?" Sue said, "Yes it was." I said, "Did you send her my picture?"

I then turned to Sue. Sue pursed her lips together with a smile at the edge of them. With her eyebrows slightly raised, then Sue slightly nodded her head in the affirmative a couple of times and hummed in the affirmative, "Um hum!" This

379

made me laugh a little as I turned back toward the road. Then Sue said with a grin, "What is it." I briefly grinned at Sue and said, "Do you know how adorable it looks when you do that?" This gave Sue a beaming grin. Sue said, "Does it really?" I looked at Sue and did the same thing she had. This made Sue chuckle. Which I quickly joined in on as I went back to looking at the road. I said, "What did your mom text about my picture." Sue said, "Oh, just girl stuff." Somehow, I got the feeling that Sue was hiding something. But I didn't mind. Sue then pointed up to a restaurant up the road and said, "That's the place." It looked pretty nice. There were tables near the front of the restaurant for people to eat outside if they wished to. These were under a large, decorative awning. I said, "It looks like a nice choice." Sue said, "I think you'll like it."

We went up a ways and I pulled into the parking lot. Both of us had smiles on our faces. I pulled into a parking spot and turned the car off. Then I turned to Sue and said as we undid our seatbelts, "Are you the type of girl who likes to have a guy help you out of the car?" Sue was grinning by the time I finished speaking. I grinned too. Sue said with a sweet voice, "Whatever you like to do." I said, "Just stay there." This made Sue's grin widen a bit. I got out of the car and made my way to the other side. We smiled widely at each other as I went. I also slipped the keys into my pocket. When I got to the passenger door, I opened it and held my hand out to Sue. This brought grins to our faces again as I said, "Me lady?" Sue took my hand and I helped her out of the car. When Sue was standing, she stepped away from the door. I closed the door and said to Sue, "This is the first time I've ever helped a girl out of a car." Sue gave me a sentimental smile as she held her purse in one hand. I smiled too. Then Sue took hold of my arm with her free arm. Sue then said with the sweetest, gentle voice, "How did you like it."

Sue's response melted me. It was difficult to keep from showing the love I was feeling. I said, "I could get used to it." This made Sue grin. Which of course made me grin too. We then headed toward the restaurant as we continued to grin at each other. There weren't many people around. But what few guys were around did look at Sue. The ones that weren't with girls were agog. Sue was so beautiful. When we reached a table out front, I said, "Is this good Ms. Richards?" Sue released me and said, "Just fine Mr. Neilsen." This caused us both to chuckle a little. The tables were round with four chairs around them. They had nice white table cloths on them with a decorative candle-centerpiece combination in the middle. I pulled out a chair for Sue to sit down. As Sue turned to do so, I just couldn't get over how incredibly round and fit looking her butt was. As Sue sat down and sat her purse next to one of the table legs, I said, "I don't know if I should bore you with all of the things I've never done before." Sue and I grinned at each other as I made my way to the seat opposite from hers. As I did so, Sue said, "Let me guess. You've never held the seat for a girl before."

As I sat down, I said, "No. I haven't." Sue said, "Anytime you do something for the first time, feel free to tell me. I would like to know." I said, "Given the life I've led, there might be quite a few of those." Somebody wearing a suit started heading for Sue and I. There was a waiter not far behind him carrying a couple

380

of menus. In response to what I said, Sue said, "Oh, goodie!" This made us both laugh a bit. The person with the suit walked up to the table wearing a big grin. The waiter hung back a little. He said to Sue and I in a gracious manner, "Welcome to our little café." I took this person to be something like a head waiter. He said, "I hate to be an

imposition. But you are a very attractive couple.” This made Sue and I beam grins. The head waiter continued on, saying, “At times, we advertise our establishment both through the mail and on the internet. If you would allow me to take a picture of you enjoying our establishment, you can have half off anything you order.” Sue and I turned our beaming grins to each other. Then Sue gave me a slight nod. Then we turned our beaming grins back to the head waiter. I said, “That would be fine.”

The head waiter bowed a bit to Sue and I as he said, “Thank you! Thank you! If you need anything, my name is Philip.” I said, “My name is Erik Neilsen.” Sue said, “My name is Sue Richards.” The head waiter said, “Wonderful! Let me get this out of the way and you can view our menu.” The head waiter waived the other waiter off to the side as he made his way to the other side of the table and back a bit. Sue and I beamed grins at each other. The head waiter had a smart phone in his pocket that he pulled out. After looking at the display a little, he said, “Mr. Neilsen. Could you move your left hand forward and take hold of Ms. Richard’s right hand?” I moved my hand forward. Sue moved her hand forward as we grinned at each other. The camera flashed. Sue and I turned our grins to him. He said, “One more please. And this time, just smile at each other.” Sue and I did as he asked. The camera flashed again. Then he stood fully erect and said, “Thank you!” Sue and I turned our smiles to him. He waved the other waiter over and came up to our table. He said as he put his phone back into his pocket, “If you would like copies of these pictures sent to you, call anytime and ask for Philip. And thank you again.”

Philip then nodded to the other waiter and backed away from the table. He then made his way to one of the other patrons at another table. Probably to inquire if everything was going well. At the same time, the waiter handed Sue a menu. Then handed one to me. He said, “Is there anything I can get you while you decide what to order?” I said, “Some water would be fine.” Sue said, “I’ll have the same. With plenty of ice.” The waiter said, “Very good. I’ll be back in a moment with your water.” Sue and I made some idol chit chat about what to order. The waiter brought our water. Though Sue and I hadn’t quite decided what to order yet. So the waiter left us to decide. We eventually ordered something and had more pleasant conversation as we waited for our food. Sue and I both talked about many things. One of the things I asked Sue was why she never did the super model thing. Sue said that she had been asked. But she didn’t really need the money and she wasn’t interested in fame. We continued to talk about this and that. Eventually, our food came and we ate. Sue even looked beautiful when she ate. The food was very good.

There was of course some mutually enjoyable conversation here and there as we ate. And there was more mutually enjoyable conversation afterward. All in all, it was a very enjoyable experience. A little while after we ate, it was time to leave. We were both smiling of course as I said to Sue, “What should we do

now.” Sue said, “I know of a nice waterfront park with some nice walking paths.” I said, “That sounds like fun.” I called Philip, the head waiter, over and settled up our bill. Though everything was half off, I paid for the deducted portion with the tip. Since I also added a good tip beside, I told Philip, “Make sure the waiter gets fifty of that.” Philip said, “Oh, yes sir! And thank you! Please come again.” He gave us a bit of a bow as he backed away. I got up and went over to Sue. Then I pulled out Sue’s seat for her. Sue reached down for her purse, then stood up. I said, “I’ve never helped a girl out of her seat either.” Sue said with a beaming grin, “You’re such a gentleman. And I just love being your first.” We were both grinning as I said, “Me too.”

Sue and I went back over to our car. We exchanged some happy, idol chit chat about Sue helping me with any lapses in etiquette as we went. When we got to the car, I opened the door for Sue. Sue got in and I closed the door. Then I went over to the other side and got in. Sue was already buckled up. We smiled at each other as I buckled up too. Then I pulled out my keys. For some kidding around fun, I said, “Seeing how I opened the door for you, would you be a gentlelady and start the car for me? It’s the green button.” We both grinned as Sue took the keys with the car remote on the keychain. Sue then said, “sure” and started the car. Then Sue handed the keychain back to me. I said, “Thank you. Which way do we need to go.” As I put the key in the ignition, Sue pointed and gave me directions. I pulled out and started going in the direction Sue indicated. As we went, Sue told me about what things there were around Branson. For a tourist town, it was pretty much like I would have expected. No doubt we would have to do some more exploring as time went on.

After a bit, we talked some about our likes and dislikes. It seemed that Sue and I had quite a bit in common. We soon pulled up to the place Sue wanted us to go. Once we were parked, Sue said, “I can get out myself.” I said, “Ok. Let’s put your purse in back.” Sue said, “Ok.” We got out of the car and went around the back. I opened the back and lifted up a back panel. Sue put her purse inside. Then I closed everything up and locked the car. Then Sue took hold of my left arm and we headed toward the walkway by the water. I pulled out my smart phone and said, “You have one like this. Would you show me more of how it works?” We were both grinning as Sue let go of my arm and said, “Ok.” Sue took the phone, held it up a little for us both to look at and started explaining the functions. We leaned together a little as Sue did so. It was so pleasant having Sue next to me. As she explained the things, we stopped over by a railing near the water. We both turned around and leaned a little against it. Both of us stayed close as Sue explained more of the functions. It was enjoyable for the both of us.

While we were so engaged, there was a middle aged couple nearby



and heading kind of in our direction. The woman was holding onto the man's arm with both of her hands. Both of them were fairly well dressed. When they got nearer, I said to Sue, "Hold on." We both of course were smiling at each other as I took the phone. I then looked at the middle aged couple and said, "Excuse me. Would you take our picture?" We all grinned as the woman let go of her beau. The woman said, "Sure." I set the phone to take a picture and stepped

382

over to them. I said, "Thank you" and told the woman which button to press. As they stepped back, I stepped back over to Sue. Sue took my arm with both of her hands as we grinned at the phone. Then it flashed. The woman then lowered the phone and said, "You're such a cute couple. Can I take one of you two giving each other a kiss?" Sue and I's grins widen a bit. I said, "I'm afraid we haven't got to the first kiss stage yet." The woman took on an open mouthed look of sentimental surprise. Then she turned to her guy and said in a drawn out, sentimental way, "Oh!"

They both turned back to Sue and I with grins and a hint of sentimentality their faces. The woman said, "A first kiss picture! I would be so honored! Please!" Sue and I turned our grins to each other. With a hint of bashfulness on our faces. If only Sue knew how badly, how desperately, I wanted to kiss her. But I knew that I had to play it cool. I said, "Do you mind?" Sue said with a gentle, sweet voice, "I don't mind." Sue and I turned to face each other and held each other in a loose embrace. We brought our lips together and kissed each other gently. It was like an electric shock went through my body. Sue's lips were so soft and wonderful. The woman had time to take a couple of photographs. After a few extended moments, Sue and I parted our kiss and smiled at each other affectionately. As we did so, the phone flashed again. Then Sue and I released each other and smiled at the other couple. Then we all started to grin again as the woman said, "Just beautiful!" The couple came over to us and the woman handed me the phone back.

Then the woman said, "Thank you. By the way, my name's Connie and this is Roger." Sue shook Connie's hand and said, "My name's Sue. Nice to meet you." At about the same time, I shook Roger's hand and said, "And my name's Erik. Nice to meet you too." Roger said, "Pleased to meet you." Connie said, "That goes for me too." Sue also gave Roger's hand a brief shake and then I gave Connie's hand a brief shake. Then Connie started fishing around in her purse. She said to Sue and I, "I'm going to give you my email address. Would you please send us the photos. They will make for wonderful vacation photographs." Sue said, "Sure. I'd love too." The woman found a scrap of paper and a pen. Then she started to write down her email address. As she did so, I said to Roger, "Have you guys been here long?" Roger said, "We've been here for nearly two weeks. It's been

very enjoyable." Connie handed Sue the piece of paper. As she did so, she said, "Here ya go. Don't forget." Sue said, "I won't. And thank you." Connie said, "Thank you." Roger said, "You both enjoy yourselves now." Sue took my arm and said, "We will."

Roger and Connie put an arm around each other's lower backs and started to walk away. The sight of the happy couple caused Sue and I to smile sentimentally at each other. Then I said, "I'll take those." Sue handed me the phone and the paper. I slipped them into my pocket. We both then turned around to look at the scenery. Though we smiled at each other and commented on what a nice couple they were. Then we started talking more. After about five minutes, I said, "Shall we go for a walk?" Sue said, "Sure." Sue took hold of my arm and we started walking as we talked more. One of the things Sue told me about was an incident that happened when she was a child. She said that her

383

family were on vacation and had pulled over to look at some buffalo. Sue said that she fed one some french fries through a partially opened window. Its tongue scared her so bad that it made her cry. This made me laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. I told Sue a story an animal story from my childhood that was quite unpleasant. It was about a mean German Shepherd that ran at me from across the street with the intent of attacking me. But my dog attacked it and they fought until my mom came outside and chased the dog off with a broom.

Sue was suitably horrified. Then we talked about more things. Sue told me about a car accident she was in once. This of course caused me concern. Even though Sue wasn't hurt bad. After that, I told Sue about a UFO sighting I had once. It was a pretty amazing sighting. Sue showed her amazement as I told the story. We had both talked earlier a little about the whole alien abduction thing. After I finished my story, Sue said, "That is pretty amazing. It's almost easier to believe that we were abducted by aliens rather than what happened." We then went on to talk more about everything and anything. To a point that is. There were things about my views that Sue probably wouldn't like. Things that she would probably find to be shocking. Sue had already told me that her father was a doctor. No doubt she led quite a sheltered life. I knew what kind of brainwashing our government has subjected her to. Some of the things I would eventually have to tell Sue, she probably prefer not having known. These I figured could wait until Sue got to know what kind of person I actually was in other respects. As we talked, we of course got to know each other even better. I continued to like everything Sue had to tell me about herself. Sue seemed to equally like the things I had to say. Though both of us stayed away from the topic of past relationships. We continued to find that we had much in common. As we talked, my love for Sue deepened. But as usual, I had to try not to let it show. After all, as far as we knew, we had only first met earlier in

the day. And I didn't want to do anything that might frighten her away. I enjoyed myself immensely as we walked and talked. In fact, apart from feeling the way I did, I have never enjoyed myself so much in the company of any girl. Sue also seemed to really be enjoying herself too. Which made me extremely happy. We walked and talked until the sun began to set. Then I suggested that we head back. I wanted to wake up early and get to a bank as soon as possible. Because the sooner Sue and I could get ourselves some safety deposit boxes, the better I would feel. At this point, I would have been perfectly happy sharing a safety deposit box with Sue. But suggesting that might seem a little too forward. Though even if we did and for some reason Sue did take my money, it wouldn't have done me any more harm. Because my heart would have already been ripped out of my body.

We slowly walked back toward the car. Both of us kept talking and enjoying each other's company as we went. We made it back to the car and drove around a little. Sue pointed out various things. I had of course already found out that Sue wasn't from here. But Sue still seemed to know quite a bit. After a while, we drove back to Sue's apartment. We continued to chat about this and that as we went. Still, there wasn't anything that Sue had to say that I wasn't extremely interested in hearing. And Sue still seemed to be equally interested in

384

hearing whatever I had to say. Every now and then, it seemed as though Sue had to struggle a little to keep certain emotions from showing on her face. I wondered if Sue was having the same kind of struggles I was. We got to Sue's apartment building and parked. As we walked toward Sue's apartment, I said, "Do you know where a good hotel is nearby." Sue grinned at me and said, "Don't you trust me?" This made me laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Afterwards, I said, "After all, as far as we know, we've just met." Sue looked at me with a solemn look. I looked at Sue in the same manner. Sue said, "After everything that's happened, I think I would feel better if you stayed here. You can sleep on the couch."

Then I said, "If it will make you feel safer, ok. It's been a while sense I've slept in a bed." This made Sue look at me with a slightly sad, compassionate look as I added, "I can wait a while longer." We approached Sue's apartment door as she said with a compassionate voice, "It must have been rough." I said, "It wasn't a lot of fun." Sue fished around in her purse again and retrieved her keys. Then Sue opened the door. We stepped inside and Sue turned on the light. I closed the door and locked it. Sue made her way over to the counter on our side of the kitchen. I followed Sue and she placed her purse on the counter. Without pausing, Sue went over to the garbage disposal and stuck her hand inside. Sue pulled out the wrapped money I placed in there earlier. Then Sue showed it to me with a smile on her face

and said, "Still here." I was smiling too as I said, "I'll check the other thing." While I went over to the livingroom, Sue opened an upper cabinet on the far wall and place the money in a large bowl she had up there. I took my jacket off and laid it on the back of the couch. Then I unbuttoned my sleeve and rolled it up as I went over to the vent.

I knelt down and pulled the cover off as Sue stood on the other side of the counter and watched me with a smile on her face. Then I reached in and felt the pouch of coins inside. I grabbed it and pulled it out. I had heard of rats dragging items off. Though this place seemed pretty nice, I didn't want to take the chance on any such critters having found their way into the vents. I brushed the dust off my arm and the pouch and sat the pouch on the floor. Then I replaced the vent cover and stood up with the pouch. Sue and I smiled at each other as I brought it over to the counter. I placed it on the lower counter on Sue's side and said, "You had better put these under your mattress." Sue said, "I put your thing in a bowl in there." Sue then pointed to the cupboard. I smiled and said as I rolled my sleeve down and re-buttoned the cuff, "That should be fine." Sue said with a smile, "Can I get you anything. It would be no trouble." I said, "No. I'm fine. I think I would like to just hit the hay." Sue said, "Ok. Let me get you some things." Sue picked up the pouch and made her way out of the kitchen. We smiled at each other as Sue grabbed her purse. Sue then headed toward her bedroom. I went over to the couch and sat down.

While I waited, I could hear Sue fiddling around with drawers and stuff. Sue came out of the bedroom soon after, smiling and carrying a blanket and a pillow. On top of the pillow, there was a folded pair of pajamas. Sue sat them down on the couch next to me. Then Sue said, "My brother Steve left these here the last time he and Mikey came to visit. You're about his size." I was smiling too as I

385

said, "Thank you." Sue said, "I'll see you tomorrow." I said, "I'll just use the bathroom and turn in. See you tomorrow." Sue gave me a nod with her smile and turned to go to her bedroom. I watched Sue go for a few moments. It was just incredible how fine her butt was. I grabbed my suitcase and opened it. Then I took out the toothbrush and things I had wrapped up in a small towel. After closing the suitcase and setting it aside, I took my jacket off. That, I laid across the back of the chair near me. Then I undid my tie and laid that on it. I then undid a couple of the top buttons. I then picked up the bathroom things, the pajamas, and headed for the bathroom. Sue had closed her bedroom door. I went into the bathroom and closed the door behind me. Taking my shoes and socks off, I sat them by the door. When I took my pants off, I folded them and sat them on the hamper lid. I took my shirt off too and folded it. That I sat on my pants. Then I used the facilities. After I got all cleaned up and dried off, I got into her brother's pajamas. They weren't quite my size. But

they were ok.

My toothbrush and razor, I left on the towel I had folded over on the counter. Then I took my clothes and started to leave the bathroom. I purposefully made a little noise so Sue would know that I was through with the bathroom. As I passed Sue's bedroom door, I could hear her talking to someone. Sue had probably called her mother back. Or maybe she was talking to Becky. I placed my clothes on one of the chairs. Then I spread the blanket out on the couch and placed the pillow on the end that was nearest to the hallway. I then remembered Roger and Connie's email address that I had in my jacket pocket. Figuring that I should put it over by Sue's computer before I lost it, I retrieved it and my phone from my jacket. I sat my phone on the coffee table. The piece of paper I brought over to Sue's computer and sat it down. Then I went over and shut off the light switches near the door and shut off all the lights. Sue had a couple dark activated night lights that came on when I did so. Then I went to the couch and laid down. Apparently, the pillow Sue had taken off her bed. I could smell a tiny hint of Sue on it. Which pleased me greatly. About five minutes or so later, I could see the light from Sue's bedroom. Then I saw the bathroom light come on. Sue then closed the bathroom door.

I tried to go to sleep. But for various reasons, I wasn't having much luck. After about a half hour, Sue came out of the bathroom. The sound caused me to open my eyes. I could see the bathroom light turn off. Soon after, I could see the light from Sue's bedroom disappear as she closed her bedroom door. Then I closed my eyes and tried to go to sleep. But it still wasn't coming too easily. The thoughts of the eventful day kept running through my mind. But foremost in my thoughts was Sue. And the slight, wonderful scent of Sue I could smell on the pillow added to those thoughts. Sue was beautiful, sexy, witty, down to earth and smelled really nice. On top of that, Sue's mannerisms and facial expressions were to die for. Everything I thought about Sue endeared her to me even more. I really hoped that Sue liked me. Though I imagined that a girl as beautiful as Sue was had to be pretty ruthless when it came to guys she had been with. I couldn't imagine anybody being with her that didn't fall in love with her.

This was something that Sue no doubt had been warned against by her mother.

386

Who, despite her age, wasn't too bad looking herself from the photograph Sue showed me. For at least twenty minutes, I laid there trying to go to sleep. But there were too many thoughts running through my head. These mostly revolved around Sue. Then I heard the slight sound of the doorknob on Sue's bedroom door being turned and unlatching. So I opened my eyes and saw the light from Sue's bedroom as the door opened. I figured that Sue probably needed to

use the bathroom again. So I just laid there with my eyes opened. I saw a shadow on the wall that looked like Sue was coming in my direction. Maybe she needed something from the kitchen. Then I heard Sue say very quietly, "Erik." I sat up a bit and laid my arm on the back of the couch as I looked at Sue. Sue was standing at the end of the hallway. The robe Sue was wearing was kind of lacy, but opaque. It was quite nice and tied around the waist with a matching, decorative tie. Sue had a slightly nervous, questioning look on her face. This caused me to say in a soothing manner, "Is anything wrong?" As Sue walked over toward the couch, she said rather timidly, "No." I sat up further and removed my blanket as Sue walked over to the side of the couch.

Sue said, "Can I ask you something?" I sat up more and moved over a little to give Sue room to sit as I said with a reassuring tone to my voice, "Sure." Sue sat down on the edge of the couch and said to me, "At first, I didn't feel anything but bewilderment when I saw the picture of you and me. But then I started to get the feeling that we were somehow close. Then the letter said that we seemed to have made a connection. When you came to the door and I saw you in person, I knew even more that I had feelings for you." Sue's confession sent a wave of love surging through my body. Though I still tried to suppress most of it. I said, "I felt the same thing when I saw your picture. Then when I met you, I didn't want to say anything about how I felt." Sue said, "Do you suppose we fell in love when we spent our missing time together." Answering Sue, I said, "Sense getting to know you, I would say that it was almost a certainty." I figured it was about time to throw caution to the wind and tell Sue how I really felt. So I gently placed a hand on Sue's shoulder and took hold of Sue's hands with my other hand. Sue held onto my hand too. At the same time, I looked at Sue with a look of solemn love. Which caused Sue to look at me with a more loving look.

I said to Sue with loving conviction, "I don't really know why, but when I told Becky that my heart was in your hands, (Sue's expression became a little more emotional at this point) I meant it!" Sue's expression became more emotional. As did mine. Tears started welling up in both our eyes as I added, "I love you more than I can say!" Sue threw herself into my arms and we took hold of each other with equal fervor. Then Sue said, "Oh Erik! I love you too!" I said, "My darling love!" After a couple moments of this embrace, Sue and I eagerly kissed our way to each other's lips and kissed passionately. To say that it was wonderful would have been an understatement. Apparently Sue had brushed her teeth too when she was in the bathroom. Because Sue tasted so wonderful. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as we kissed. It was definitely the best kiss that I have ever had. But then again, Sue had the nicest lips that I had ever kissed. Though not to brag, for a White guy, I didn't do too bad in that department either. As Sue and I kissed, one of my caresses started to include

one of Sue's breasts. I also became aroused. This caused more moans of pleasure and a little more tongue action.

After about twenty seconds of this, Sue and I parted enough to look into each other's loving faces. Sue caressed my cheek and said with a passionate voice, "You're going to be sleeping in a bed tonight darling." I slid an arm under Sue's legs and stood up with Sue in my arms as we continued to look at each other lovingly. I said to Sue with a loving voice as I started to carry her toward her bedroom, "Sue darling, I can't explain it! But it's almost like we were meant to be together!" Sue said with a passionate voice, "Oh Erik. I feel the same way!" Then Sue started kissing me around my neck and ear as I carried Sue toward her bedroom. When we got into Sue's bedroom, I stood Sue up on her feet next to her bed. We again started kissing each other passionately. The tongue action that came into play made us both give off slight moans of pleasure. I undid the tie to Sue's robe. Sue took her arms off from me and allowed me to slide her robe from off her shoulders. The robe slid off Sue's arms and fell to the floor. Sue took my pajama top and pulled it apart. Buttons be damned. I really liked Sue's attitude. So I helped Sue rip apart the remaining button.

I broke off my kiss from Sue. We both looked at each other with passion splashed across our faces. As I pulled off my pajama top, I noticed with much pleasure that Sue was wearing a white, thin, see through top that went down to the bottom of her hips. Underneath I could see Sue's amazing breasts. They were incredibly firm, perky and erect for how large they were. Sue's nipples were also wonderfully firm. Underneath the nighty, I could see that Sue was also wearing some sexy, white, lacy panties. Both of us had glazed over looks of passion on our faces as I said, "You're so beautiful!" Sue said, "So are you!"

That wasn't exactly the term I would have chosen. But I wasn't going to argue. We kissed passionately again for a couple of moments. Then I started to lift up Sue's nighty. We broke off our kissing again as I raised it above Sue's head. Sue also raised up her arms and I pulled the top off. I just let it fall off to the side. Then I caressed my hands down Sue's arms. I then caressed Sue's breasts fully. After doing this, I slid my hands around Sue's back and we kissed passionately again. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure here and there as our tongues also caressed each other's.

While this was going on, I slid my hands down onto Sue's butt. First over her panties to give Sue's butt a loving caress and squeeze, then under them. Sue had the roundest, most pert butt I had ever laid my hands on. I wondered if Sue worked out, or if it was natural. Though I would have to guess it was natural. I couldn't imagine any girl getting a butt so rounded just from exercise. While all this was going on, Sue

started to undo the tie of my pajama bottoms. As I started to slide Sue's panties down, Sue slid her hands down onto my butt under my pajama bottoms and underwear. Sue squeezed my butt cheeks with both her hands and gave out a slight moan that seemed to signify approval too as we kissed. Apparently Sue liked my well formed butt as well. I slid Sue's panties down farther. We broke off each other's kiss. I pulled them down far enough that they would fall the rest of the way themselves. The sight of Sue's nicely trimmed, wonderful muff pie was beyond description. It also pleased me that the

388

curtains matched the carpet. Sue stepped out of them as I stood erect again. Then Sue started to do the same with me. But my underwear got hung up on my fully erect penis.

Sue grabbed a hold of my penis and gave me a bit of a surprised, pleased and passionate look. Then Sue caressed her hand along it as she said with a voice dripping with passion, "Darling. You're so big!" (I wasn't freakishly large. But I did alright for myself) This caused a grin to come over my passionate face. Sue grinned too. I said with a passionate voice, "Thank you darling." Sue released my penis and started to slowly slide down my pajama bottoms and underwear. As Sue did so, she looked with passionate interest at my genitals. When Sue got my pajama bottoms and underwear lowered, I lifted first one leg and the other for Sue to take them completely off. Then Sue began to stand again as she caressed her hands up me. Giving my testicles and penis a gentle caress as she did so. Sue again took hold of my penis and said with passion in her voice and on her face, "Oh darling. You're so hard." Using my penis as a handle, Sue took a step back to the edge of the bed. As I went with Sue, I said with a passionate voice, "Thank you darling." Sue then released me and sat on the bed. As Sue started to move to lay down, I got into bed too. We both looked at each other with glazed over looks of passion as we did so. When Sue laid down, she spread her legs slightly apart.

The sight of Sue's nude body was breathtaking. I laid between Sue's legs as we started to kiss passionately. We also caress each other's genitals. Then Sue pulled on my penis a little to direct it to where it needed to go. We broke off our kiss and both of us gave out slight calls of ecstasy as I entered into Sue. At the same time, looks of ecstasy came over both our faces. It felt so wonderful, I couldn't describe it. The tightness of Sue's vagina made me wonder if Sue was a virgin. But now wasn't the time to worry about that. Most of what went on during our lovemaking, I'll leave to your imagination. But it too was wonderful beyond description. Here and there, our lovemaking was interspersed with brief, impassioned statements of love and endearment. Along with some brief, passionate kisses here and there. There was also quite a bit of loving caresses between us. It only took about a minute and a half to bring Sue to her first orgasm.



Oh how I loved the look on Sue's face when she was brought to the peak of pleasure. Sue's cries of passion sent waves of love and desire through me. A little over two minutes later, I brought Sue to another peak of pleasure. Which of course pleased me a lot.

About a minute later, I felt myself heading toward an orgasm that I couldn't fend off. I asked Sue with a voice dripping with ecstasy, "Are you on the pill darling!?" Sue said fairly quickly, with an impassioned voice, "I can just get a morning after pill darling! Give me all your cum!" I said with a loving, impassioned voice, "Oh darling!" Then I started to finish off with some vigorous action. Which made Sue call out with more cries of ecstasy. Both of us orgasmed at about the same time. I gave out a couple calls of orgasmic ecstasy as I orgasmed. But not wanting to leave Sue in an orgasmic lurch, I didn't completely stop my actions until Sue had finished. As things began to settle down, Sue said with a loving, breathy voice, "Oh darling!" We kissed each other passionately as I remained inside Sue. After

389

about a minute of a caress filled kiss, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other with looks of solemn, passionate love. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "You weren't a virgin were you darling." Sue gently caressed my cheek. I lightly closed my eyes and caresses the palm of Sue's hand back with my cheek. As I moved my face back toward Sue, Sue said with a highly loving, gentle voice, "No I wasn't darling."

I slowly opened my eyes and we looked lovingly into each other's eyes. Though there seemed to be a slight hint of concern on Sue's loving face. Sue then said, "Do you mind?" I lovingly nuzzled Sue's palm a little with my cheek as I said with a soothing, loving voice, "Not really darling." Sue's slight hint of concern was replaced by a bit of relief. As Sue began to caress the side of my head, I said, "But I never want to know about any of your past relationships." Sue looked at me a little more lovingly as she said, "And I never want to know about yours darling." We then brought our lips together and kissed each other with such loving tenderness, that it would have made the gods envious. At the same time of course, we also caressed each other lovingly. After a few extended moments, our kiss started to become more passionate. Our tongues also caressed each other's. Which made us both give off little moans of pleasure. At the same time, our caresses also became a little more vigorous. After about a minute of this kissing, along with the usual slight moans of pleasure here and there, I withdrew myself from Sue.

This made us both give off another slight moan of pleasure. It kind of bothered me that Sue was in a better position to caress me than I was to caress her. So while we kissed, I rolled onto my back as I brought Sue with me. With Sue now on top, I caressed and kneaded Sue just about everywhere I could reach. This reinvigorated our passionate

kiss. Causing us to again give off little moans of pleasure. After about another minute, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss. We looked deeply and lovingly into each other's eyes. As we did so, I rolled onto my side. Taking Sue with me. As we laid on our sides facing each other, I said, "Just a moment darling." Then I moved Sue's pillow for us both to lay our heads on. After we did so, Sue and I entwined ourselves more. Sue smiled lovingly at me. I smiled lovingly at Sue also as Sue said with a tender, loving voice, "At least I know that in our missing time together, we didn't make love. I would have known if I had your big wiener inside me." This caused my smile to be replaced by a look of loving concern. Sue looked at me with a look of solemn love. I moved my hand down and gently massaged Sue's vagina. This brought a hint of passion to Sue's loving look.

I said, "You're not sore are you darling." Sue said, "Maybe a tiny bit darling. But I don't mind." I moved my hand and fully embraced Sue. I had my eyes tightly closed with a look of concern on my face. Sue had her eyes lightly closed with a loving look on hers. I said with an emphatic tone of love to my voice, "I never want to cause you pain darling!" Sue lovingly nuzzled the side of my head with the side of hers and said with a gentle, comforting and loving tone to her voice, "It nothing bad darling. I love it so." I parted from Sue enough for us to look into each other's faces. Sue's loving look made my concerned look completely fade into a loving look. I said, "Oh darling!" I tried my best to kiss

390

Sue as lovingly and tenderly as I could. Sue responded in kind. After about forty seconds or so, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other lovingly as I again laid my head on the pillow. I found out earlier that Sue was nineteen. Even so, I said lovingly, "You're so far beyond a dream darling. How did you ever avoid becoming involved."

Sue caressed the side of my head and said with a loving voice, "My mom asked me to try to avoid getting into a serious relationship as long as I could. Or until the right kind of man came along." I said, "What kind of guy is that." Sue looked at me a little more lovingly. I looked at Sue in the same way as Sue said, "Your kind." My eyes glazed over with love. Sue's did too. As I brought my lips toward Sue's, I said fairly quickly, "Oh darling!" We started kissing each other passionately. I also rolled Sue a little more onto her back. Sue lovingly and firmly caressed and kneaded me about everywhere around my back and buttocks that she could reach. I lovingly caressed and kneaded Sue back to the best of my ability. Which of course also included one of Sue's wonderful breasts. We also rubbed our legs and feet together a bit. After about a minute of this heaven, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We again looked at each other lovingly. I said, "What will your parents think about you getting involved with a

homeless, highschool dropout.” Sue gently caressed the side of my head and said, “I know you well enough to know that none of that matters.”

I fully embraced Sue and said, “Oh darling! I love you so much!” Both of us had our eyes tightly closed with highly loving looks on our faces. Sue said, “I love you so much too darling!” After a few moments of this embrace, we started to nuzzle the sides of our heads together. A few extended moments later, we both slid the edges of our lips across each other’s cheeks and toward each other’s lips. When our lips met, we started to kiss each other passionately again. After a couple minutes of a caress filled kiss, we fully embraced each other again. About a couple minutes of lovingly caressing and nuzzling each other passed. Sue and I parted enough for us to look into each other’s loving eyes. I said, “When I woke up this morning. I could never have imagined that the day would end with my being in heaven.” Sue said, “Oh darling!” We started to kiss each other passionately again. Sue and I must have kissed for about a minute. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked into each other’s eyes with looks of solemn love.

After a few extended moments of drinking in each other’s love through our eyes, I said with a highly loving voice, “Do you like having my live little sperms swimming around inside you darling?” Sue’s eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as Sue said with a highly loving voice, “Oh, you know I do darling!” We started kissing each other passionately again. Sue rolled me a little onto my back as we kissed. I of course took this opportunity to lovingly caress my dear, sweet love over more of her wonderful body. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as we caressed each other’s tongues together. We also lovingly squirmed our bodies a little into each others. After about a minute later, Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine. We looked at each other lovingly as I caressed the side of Sue’s cheek. Sue lightly closed her eyes and turned her head a little as she caressed the palm of my hand back with her cheek. Then Sue turned her

391

face back toward me and slowly opened her loving eyes. As I caressed my hand from Sue’s cheek and back onto her body, I continued to look at Sue lovingly. Sue said with a hint of sadness to her loving face, “If you do impregnate me darling, I don’t really like the thought of making any fertilized egg go away.”

A bit of a soothing expression accompanied my loving look. I said with a loving, soothing voice, “Try not to think about it darling. When the time is right my dearest love, nothing could make me happier than for you to make me a daddy.” Sue’s eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as Sue said with a highly loving voice, “Oh darling!” Then we began to kiss each other passionately. After about thirty seconds, some tongue started to come into play. This made us both give off

little moans of pleasure as our caresses also increased a little. I rolled Sue on her back a little while we kissed. Sue took this opportunity to caress more of my body. After about two minutes, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We smiled at each other lovingly as I caressed one of Sue's breasts. I said, "Before any babies get to your breasts, I'm going to get there first." This increased Sue's loving smile as I started to kiss my way down to Sue's breasts. Sue caressed me about my head and upper back as I did so. At the same time, Sue said in a highly loving voice, "My breasts are all yours darling."

I thoroughly enjoyed Sue's amazing breasts when I got to them. Kissing and nuzzling them, sucking on nipples, caressing and kneading them, etc. Sue had a loving smile on her face as she continued to caress me around my arms, shoulders, back and head. It pleased Sue that her breasts pleased me so much. I gave Sue's breasts some love for the next few minutes. After I was through, I said with a loving smile as I continued to caress one of Sue's breasts, "Mind if I tell you some of the things I love about you darling?" Sue was smiling lovingly at me as she pursed her lips together with the edges slightly curled up in a smile. Sue then slightly shook her head from side to side a few times. At the same time, Sue hummed lovingly in the negative, "Um um." This made my mouth drop open a little for a moment with an adoring look on my face. Then, still with an adoring look on my face, I said lovingly, "That's one of the things right there darling." This made Sue look at me adoringly too as I said, "But I'll get to that in a minute." Then I sat up and moved down to Sue's feet. I sat back on the backs of my calves.

Then I took hold of one of Sue's feet and said, "I love the red toenail polish on your adorable toes." Then I lightly kissed the toenail of Sue big toe. Then I caressed and kneaded Sue's foot and said, "I love your feet." I then caressed my hands up Sue's legs as I said, "I love your legs." Moving up a little, I caressed my hands down and moved them between Sue's butt and the mattress. I said, "I love your butt." Caressing my hand up a little farther, I said, "I love your back." I then caressed one of my hand around to Sue's mons pubis and said, "I love your muff." This caused a bit more passion to come over Sue's face. Then I caressed both hands up to Sue's stomach and said, "I love your tummy. Though I can't wait until there's a baby in there." This caused an emotional look to come over Sue's face. Which caused a similar look to come over my face. Caressing my hands on Sue's sides, I said, "I love your sides." Then I caressed my hands to Sue's breasts and said, "You already know that I

392

love these." Moving up a little farther, I straddled Sue's hips. Then I took Sue's hands and said, "I love the light pink fingernail polish on your adorable fingers." I lightly kissed one on each hand.

I then said, "I love your hands." I then gave the palm of each a light

kiss. Then I caressed my hands up Sue's arms. Sue caressed my arms also as I said, "I love your arms." I then laid mostly on Sue. Though my side was partially on the bed and I was propped up on my left elbow. I caressed my hand up to Sue's neck and said, "I love your neck." As Sue caressed me more, Sue said emotionally, in almost a whisper, "Oh darling!" I started to caress my hand toward Sue's face and said, "I love your skin." Sue had a couple tears roll down the side of her face. I had tears welling up in my eyes. Then I gently caressed a finger around Sue's face. Going from her hairline to under her chin and back up to her hairline on the other side. As I did so, I said with a bit more emotion in my voice, "I love everything about this general area more than I can say." Then I caressed my hand to Sue's ear and said, "I love your ears." I then ran my fingers through her hair, I said, "I love your hair." Then I caressed Sue's cranium and said, "I love your mannerism, thoughts and everything else that comes from in here." More tears flowed from Sue's eyes. I had a couple tears rolling down my cheeks.

Still with a lot of emotion in my voice, I said with a more solemn look of emotional love on my face, "My darling love. To an extent, I can't explain the reasons for my feelings. For some people, love is little more than a word. Especially where there might be just pillow talk going on." More tears started to fall from my face as I said with an even more emotional voice, "Your happiness is all that matters to me! Just say the word anytime darling! Or just leave a text or note if you don't want face me!" An even more emotional look came over my face as tears started to flow from my eyes. Sue was crying more too as I added, "You can keep the money!.. I will just disappear from your life!.." Sue grasped me firmly and embraced me fully with her arms and legs. I held Sue firmly too as Sue said through her sobs, "Oh Erik!.. My darling!.. Don't say that!.. You know how I feel!" I said through my sobs, "Oh Sue!.. My darling love!" Both of us had our eyes tightly closed with looks of intense, emotional love on our faces. After about a minute of this tearful, caress filled embrace, Sue took hold of my head and started peppering the side of my head with quick kisses. These Sue moved and started to spread around my face. Then Sue started to move them around to the other side of my head.

After landing a number of kisses there, Sue again embraced me fully. Then Sue said, "Oh darling! I never want you to leave!" I said with an emotional voice, "Oh my dearest sweet darling!" Sue and I firmly, but lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together as we continued to caress each other. After about a minute of this, I said with a loving, but slightly embarrassed tone to my voice, "Oh darling. I'm so ashamed." Sue moved my head back enough to look at me lovingly. Then Sue saw the loving, but slightly embarrassed look on my face. Sue said, "What for darling." I said, "I'm loving you with my mind and soul. But now I have such a terrible erection." A passionate, loving look came over Sue's face. This caused more of a loving look to come over my face.

Sue caressed a hand down and felt what I was talking about. This caused a more passionate look to come over my face. As Sue gently caressed her hand around my testicles and penis, Sue said with a loving, passionate voice, "Oh darling." Then Sue slightly shook her head from side to side slightly a few times to help convey her conviction as she said, "You never have to be ashamed about that with me." Then Sue took hold of my penis and gently started to pull it toward her. As Sue did so, Sue said with a highly passionate, yet gentle voice, "Make love to me darling." I moved in between Sue's legs as she guided what she was holding to where it needed to go. Both of us again gave out slight calls of ecstasy as I entered into Sue. We both also had looks of ecstasy on our faces. I will omit most of the heaven that followed. As usual, our lovemaking was interspersed with varied moans of pleasure. Here and there, there were also brief, impassioned statements of adoration and endearment. As well as the brief, passionate kisses here and there.

When I wasn't fully experiencing my own ecstasy, I so love the look of ecstasy on Sue's face. At times, we would look into each other's glazed over eyes of ecstasy and much heightened love. It was usually at such points that we would make our statements of adoration or endearment. Or give each other a brief, passionate kiss. Sue was such a dream, it was hard to imagine how I could have gotten so lucky. Oh how much I loved my dear sweet darling love. I tried to show it through my lovemaking to the best of my ability. Without bringing myself to a climax too quickly. Having had orgasmed not too long ago, I was doing ok. I don't know if I had gotten Sue all worked up or what. But it wasn't even a minute before I brought Sue to her first orgasm. Sue again gave off cries of orgasmic ecstasy. Needless to say, it pleased me greatly. Our lovemaking lasted for about fifteen minutes. I was able to bring Sue to an orgasm a few more times before our lovemaking began to near its inevitable conclusion. This all made me quite proud of myself.

Before I orgasmed, I sped up my actions considerably and tried to hold off on my orgasm. This brought Sue to another orgasm. Sue gave off wonderful cries of orgasmic ecstasy as I exploded with orgasmic ecstasy. I gave off fairly loud exclamations of ecstasy as I did so. After I had expended myself, Sue and I looked at each other a little breathlessly with ecstasy splashed across our faces. We then began to kiss each other passionately. With plenty of tongue action of course. Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as we did so. Sue's loving caresses were also to die for. We must have kissed like this for at least a minute and a half. Then I broke off our kiss and we fully embraced each other. Sue said with a loving, passionate voice, "How can you be so wonderful darling!" Both of us of course had our eyes

lightly closed with loving looks on our faces. As we gently and lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together, I said with a loving, passionate voice, "You're the one who's wonderful my darling!" Then I started to lovingly kiss Sue's ear.

Sue gave off a slight sigh of pleasure and caressed me a little more. At the same time, Sue also caressed my lower calves with her feet. Also at the same time, Sue slightly caressed my lips back with her ear. Oh how I loved bringing pleasure to my dearest darling. I of course tried my best to lovingly caress Sue

394

back as much as I could. But with me on top, Sue had the most free reign to deliver caresses. After about a minute of giving Sue's ear some love, interspersed with the usual slight moans or sighs of pleasure here and there, I withdrew myself from Sue. This caused Sue and I to give off another slight moan of pleasure. Then Sue rolled me over onto my back. Sue then started to give my ear some loving kisses too. This caused me to give off a slight moan of pleasure as I took this opportunity to caress and knead Sue just about everywhere I could reach. My dearest sweet love was a heavenly dream within a heavenly dream. Sue gave my ear some love for about another minute. As usual, both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure here and there. Then Sue started to kiss her way toward my lips.

We kissed each other passionately again. This carried on for about another minute. Then I rolled Sue mostly onto her back. I then slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other lovingly. A more emotional look came over my face and my eyes started to well up with tears. Sue looked at me in the same way as tears also started to well up in her eyes. I said with an emotional voice, "I have something valuable to give you darling. I hope you will keep it safe for as long as you have a mind to." A tear started to roll down the side of Sue's face as she said with an emotional voice, "What's that darling." I backed off from Sue a little and kissed her chest above her heart. Then I placed my hand over her heart as a tear fell from my face. I said with an even more emotional voice, "My love." Sue said with an even more emotional voice as she placed her hand over mine and caressed it, "I will darling!" Then Sue lightly shoved me over onto my back as she held my hand to her chest. We were both shedding tears as Sue said, "Forever!" Then Sue backed off a little and propped herself up on her elbow. Sue took my hand from her heart and we intertwined our fingers. Sue then kissed me over my heart.

Then Sue let go of my hand and placed her hand over my heart. I caressed Sue's upper arm with the hand she let go of. Sue then said tearfully, "Tell me my love will always be safe with you darling!" I took my hand off Sue's upper arm and placed it over the hand she had on my heart and caressed it. I said tearfully, "Forever and ever darling!" We then quickly removed our hands and just as quickly fully embraced

each other. Both of us sobbed tears of utter joy. After about a minute of shedding tears, I said with an emotional voice, "You're so wonderful darling!" Sue answered in an emotional voice, "You're the one who's wonderful darling!" After a few extended moments, I took hold of Sue's head and gently moved it away enough for us to look into each other's emotional, loving faces. Then I used my lips to scoop up the tears on both sides of Sue's face. The saltiness of Sue's loving tears tasted wonderful. Sue then did the same with me. Taking a little extra time to get up all she could. Then we fully embraced each other again. I said with a voice full of loving emotion, "If I believed in god, I would pray to him that these are the only kind of tears you ever shed!"

I had told Sue earlier that I was an atheist. So Sue wasn't bothered by what I said. Sue said in an emotional, loving voice, "It seems like it would take a god make someone as wonderful as you!" Sue and I brought our lips together and

395

kissed each other with uncomfortable firmness. After about thirty seconds, the firmness of our kiss diminished to a normal, passionate one. Our caresses also became less firm. We kissed for about another couple of minutes. As we did so, I rolled us onto our sides. We slowly parted our kiss as we entwined ourselves. Sue and I laid our heads on the pillow and looked deeply and lovingly into each other's eyes. For about the next five minutes, both of us tried to transmit the love we felt toward each other through our eyes. As well as through our loving caresses. Then Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "I never thought I could fall so completely in love so quickly." I said, "It's not so strange for me. You're so beautiful. Though getting to know you only made it easier." Sue and I lightly closed our eyes and brought our faces closer. Then we gently caressed each other's noses together.

After about twenty seconds, we kissed each other with loving gentleness. I moved a little more on top of Sue as we did so. After about thirty seconds, we slowly parted our kiss and laid on our sides facing each other. I laid my head on the pillow as we continued to look lovingly into each other's eyes. After a few extended moments, Sue said, "I don't believe in reincarnation darling. But maybe we were lovers in another life." I said lovingly, "If we were darling, they would have had to have been the kind of lovers who had their love tragically cut short and are making up for it now." As I spoke, Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too. Sue said, "Oh darling!" Sue and I then passionately kissed each other. This time, Sue moved a little more on top of me. As usual, Sue's loving lips were so soft and wonderful. Sue's slippery tongue was also a dream. About a minute later, we slowly parted our kiss again. Both of us went back to laying our heads on the pillow in our loving embrace. We also looked lovingly into each other's eyes. After a few extended moments, I said, "I think the term for you darling is "dream angel." This made Sue give me a loving



smile. I gave Sue the same kind of smile.

Sue said, "You're a dream angel too darling." I said, "I don't know if you could really call a guy an angel." Sue said, "I don't know why not. You are." This caused a more loving look to come over my face. Sue took on the same sort of look as I said, "Oh darling!" We began to kiss each other passionately again. For about the next twenty seconds, both of us also squirmed our bodies together a little. After about a minute of kissing and caressing, we parted our kiss and fully embraced each other. We caressed each other more with our hands and legs. Sue and I also lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together. Both of course had our eyes lightly closed, with loving expressions on our faces. After a few extended moments, I said with a loving voice, "I love you Susan Richards." Sue said with a loving voice as she caressed and nuzzled me a little more, "I love you to Erik Neilsen." This brought a thought to mind. I parted from Sue enough to look at Sue with a slight, surprised look. My surprised look caused Sue to take on a surprised look. I said, "I don't know your middle name!" This made Sue grin. Which made me grin too. Sue said, "It's Ginger. It's my grandma's name." I said, "Susan Ginger Richards. I love it." Sue said, "What's your middle name honey."

I said, "Robert. It was my grandfather's name." Sue said, "Erik Robert Neilsen."

396

"That's such a wonderful name." We smiled at each other lovingly. Then we gave each other a loving kiss. After about twenty seconds, we slowly parted our kiss and lovingly smiled at each other again. We laid our heads back on the pillow as we continued to do so. After a couple moments, I said, "Your bed is nice and soft." A more somber look came over Sue's face. Knowing why, a bit of appreciation showed on my loving face. Sue said, "What were you sleeping on before." I said, "A couple pieces of cardboard." A slightly sad, compassionate look came over Sue's face. Then Sue embraced me fully and said, "I just can't see you living like that!" With a comforting tone to my voice, I said, "That's alright darling. It's all in the past." Sue said, "As long as you're my guy, you will never have to live like that again." I gave Sue a few extra caresses. Then I said, "As long as you're my girl, I could put up with anything." This made Sue hold onto me a little tighter. I did the same with Sue. We lovingly embraced, caressed and nuzzled each other for about the next minute. Then we put our heads back on the pillow and looked at each other lovingly.

After a couple of moments, I smiled. Sue smiled too. I said, "When you sent your mom my picture," This made Sue grin as I continued on, saying, "what did she have to say about it." My question made Sue's grin widen a bit. Mine did too as Sue said, "Mom said you looked like a keeper." This gave me a beaming grin. Then I said, "What do you think." Sue rolled me onto my back. We both looked at each other

lovingly. Sue said, "I know it darling." We then started to kiss each other passionately. After about a minute and a half, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss. We looked at each other lovingly. I said, "You're definitely a keeper darling. You're so perfect in fact, I don't know if I'm good enough for you. But then again, I don't know if anybody could be." Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as Sue said, "Oh darling!" We started to kiss each other passionately again. Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as our tongues again caressed each other's. About a minute later, Sue slowly parted her kiss from me. We again looked at each other lovingly. I then gently caressed Sue's cheek with my hand. Sue lightly closed her beautiful eyes and caressed the palm of my hand back a little with her cheek. Then Sue turned back to me and slowly opened her loving eyes.

As we looked lovingly into each other's eyes, I caressed my hand around the side of Sue's head a little. Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "You're definitely good enough for me darling." Then Sue sat up a little. I caressed my hand from Sue's head to her shoulder as Sue said, "Mind if I tell you some of the things that I love about you darling?" This made me grin. I knew what Sue had in mind. Sue grinned too. I then pursed my lips together. Though the outer edges of them were curled up a bit in a smile. I slightly shook my head from side to side a few times. As I did so, I hummed lovingly in the negative, "Um um." This made Sue take on a more loving look. Then Sue moved and knelt near my feet. Sue then picked up one of my feet and started to go through the same whole routine as I went through with her earlier. Starting out by telling me that she loved my toes. Then Sue gave my big toenail a light kiss. As Sue fondled and kneaded my foot, Sue told me how much she loved my feet. Then Sue moved up farther and said how much she loved my legs.

397

Unlike I had done with Sue, Sue also talked of how much she loved my muscles. Sue caressed my testicles when she got to them and said, "I love your balls." This brought more passion to my expression. Then Sue took hold of my penis and waved back and forth a few times the part of it that didn't fit into her hand. As Sue did this, Sue said, "And I really like your wiener." Sue continued farther up. Doing my stomach, chest, hands, etc. Then Sue finished off with my head. Sue said with an emotional voice, "And I love your mannerisms, thoughts, and everything else that comes from in here." Needless to say, we were both again teary at this point. I said with an emotional voice, "Oh darling!" We both began to kiss each other passionately again as I fervently caressed Sue. After about forty seconds or so, I rolled Sue mostly onto her back as we continued to kiss. Sue took this opportunity of course to caress me more. After about another minute, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. Both of us looked lovingly at our tear

moistened faces. Sue lovingly caressed my cheek. I lightly closed my eyes and caressed the palm of Sue's hand back a little with my cheek. Then I turned my face back to Sue and slowly opened my loving eyes.

Then Sue said gently and lovingly, "I love you so much darling." I said in a gentle, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." Sue caressed her hand up to my head. With the slightest, gentle loving pressure, Sue pulled my head toward her to bring my loving lips to hers. We kissed each other with loving gentleness. As always, Sue's soft, loving lips were a dream. As were Sue's gentle, loving caresses. After about a minute, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We again looked at each other lovingly. After a few moments, a loving smile came across my face. Sue gave me a loving smile too. I said lovingly, "Would you do me a couple favors honey lumps." My new term of endearment made Sue grin. I did too as Sue said, "Sure huggy bear." I gave Sue a brief but loving kiss. We both parted our kiss and continued to grin at each other. I said, "Could you lower the lights and get my pillow?" Sue said, "Ok sweetness." We gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Then I moved off from Sue as we continued to grin at each other.

Sue sat on her side of the bed and shut off the small lamp that was on it. The other lamp that was on the other night stand was already off. Sue stood up and made her way over to the dresser. Both of our grins diminished to big smiles. I just couldn't get over how sexy Sue was. It caused me to become a little aroused. There was a fairly large mirror on the back of the dresser. It had a few pictures stuck between the mirror and the picture frame. One of them was of Sue and some other guy. I wasn't all that threatened by it. Because I figured that I was better looking than the guy in the picture was. I said to Sue with a more somber look on my face, "Sue. Who is that with you in that picture." As I said this, I pointed at the picture. Sue looked at me with a slightly embarrassed look accompanying her slight smile. Sue then looked at the photo and then back to me. Sue said, "Just a guy I know." I said, "I don't mind you keeping memories like that around somewhere. As long as I don't have to see them." Sue took on a bit more of a loving look and said, "Ok darling."

Then Sue took the photo down. Sue then opened one of the top drawers a little and slipped it inside. Then Sue closed the drawer again. I looked at Sue

398

lovingly again and said, "Thank you honey bunch." We briefly smiled lovingly at each other. Then Sue turned on a small lamp that was more on the right side of the dresser. The light in it wasn't very bright. There was also a small, reddish shawl kind of cloth near it. Sue draped it over the shade. Then Sue made her way toward the bedroom doorway. I just loved the way Sue's large, pert, slightly pointed breasts preceded her. Sue's breasts were so pert, she could have

probably hung a shirt on them. The roundness of Sue's firm, fit looking butt was also a dream. When Sue got there, Sue flicked the light switch near it. The lights to the ceiling fan turned off. Then Sue went out and headed toward the livingroom. About thirty seconds later, Sue appeared near the doorway. Sue was holding the pillow over her breasts with both arms. Though I could still see Sue's wonderful muff. I decided to have a little fun with Sue as she turned toward the doorway with a smile on her face.

Then I grinned, held up my hand and said, "Wait there a second darling." Sue grinned too and stopped. I scooted over and laid on Sue's side of the bed. Then I said, "As long as you have the pillow darling." I held out my arms to Sue and said, "Jump on me and squish me." Sue laughed a little. I did too. Then Sue happily scampered over to me. Holding the pillow over her front with her hands, Sue jumped into bed and landed on me. I gave out a bit of an "Ooh!" sound. Then we both cracked up laughing. We continued to laugh for about the next thirty seconds or so. I so loved seeing the look of joy on Sue's face. After the laughter died down, Sue said, "That was fun! We should do that more often!" I said, "I can't wait!" This made us laugh a little more. A few moments later, I scooted back toward my side of the bed. As I moved over without Sue, Sue moved over a little too. Sue put the pillow where it needed to be and said, "There ya go sweetie." I said, "Thank you dearest." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. I then folded the pillow over and stuck it under my armpit. I also propped myself up a little on my elbow and faced Sue. Sue did the same with her pillow and faced me.

We entwined our legs. With the hands of the arms we propped ourselves up with, we entwined our fingers. Sue and I also caressed each other a little with our free hands. Both of us looked at each other with loving smiles on our faces. I really hate to cut such a loving, beautiful narrative short. But Sue and I went on to talk lovingly to each other. We asked each other more questions about each other. Which didn't last too long before things again turned passionate. Sue and I made love again. Except this time, I asked Sue to be on top. Which Sue passionately agreed to. It was wonderful beyond description. I also loved fondling Sue's breasts as she did most of the work. Though with Sue setting the pace, I didn't last quite as long as I would liked to have. After all of the usual post intercourse loving, Sue and I again entwined ourselves as we laid on our sides facing each other. Both of us went back to talking lovingly to each other. This entailed various loving expressions and varied kissed here and there. At times, the conversation would turn to a more unpleasant topic. Which we reacted to accordingly.

At other times, one or the other of us would say something humorous. Which we also reacted to accordingly. But for the most part, our conversation was

mainly loving. Sue and I continued to get to know each other better and fall ever deeper in love. Just like we had at the park, we also talked about whatever popped into our heads. Sue and I also talked a little about how we might like to spend our lives together. This soon caused another lovemaking session. But this time with me on top again. And not to brag, but I was on fire. After all the usual post intercourse love, we again entwined ourselves as we laid on our sides facing each other. I said with a loving voice, "You wanted to know about all my firsts times darling." This made Sue grin. Which made me grin too. Sue said eagerly, "Tell me what it is darling!" I said, still with a loving voice, "I hope it's not breaking our rule about not speaking about our past relationships. But we've made love more in one night than I have with any other girl." Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too. Sue said with a highly loving voice as she caressed my cheek, "I've never made love so often either darling."

Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately. Along with our caresses, we also squirmed our bodies together a bit. After our passionate kiss and some nuzzling, I kissed Sue's ear. I also kneaded it with my lips and ran my tongue around it. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving, pleased expressions on our faces. When I was through doing this with Sue, Sue did the same with me. With the same results. Afterwards, we again laid on our sides facing each other and entwined lovingly. We talked lovingly to each other with all the usual caresses and occasional kisses. I loved hearing everything Sue had to say. Sue seemed to equally love hearing what I had to say. Both of us continued to lovingly talk for about another half hour. The dim reddish light of the lamp made Sue look so beautiful. Needless to say, we soon started making love again. As usual, I pleased Sue with great success. Afterwards, as we laid entwined next to each other, I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Are you tired my dearest darling?" We were of course smiling lovingly at each other as Sue said with the same gentle, loving voice, "A little my love."

I gave Sue a brief but loving kiss. Then I said with a voice that was a little more gentle and a little more loving, "I'll get the light my dearest." I then gave Sue another brief but loving kiss. As I went to get out of bed, Sue and I slid our hands down each other's arms. We looked at each other with looks of solemn love until a bit after our fingers parted. Then we lowered our arms as I made my way over to the lamp. As I did so, Sue pulled the bedspread and top sheet over. Sue also straightened up the pillows. After I found the switch, Sue and I looked lovingly at each other again. I then turned off the light. There was a tiny bit of light that came through the window. Sue also had another one of those light sensing night lights in an outlet near the door. I made my way back to Sue as we smiled lovingly at each other in the diminished light. Sue held up the covers as I got into bed. Then Sue covered us both. As we embraced and entwined ourselves, Sue said, "I love you so much darling." I said, "I love you so much too

darling.” We gave each other a loving, tender kiss. As we did so, Sue rolled me onto my back. After about thirty seconds or so, Sue slowly parted her kiss from me. We lovingly looked into each other’s eyes in the dim light.

Sue propped herself up a little on her elbow and gently caressed my cheek. This made both of us take on a little more loving looks. Then Sue said with

400

loving gentleness, “Close your eyes darling.” I did as Sue asked. Then Sue lightly kissed both of my eyelids. After Sue did that, I said with my eyes closed and the same loving gentleness, “Are your eyes closed darling?” Sue closed her eyes and said, “Yes darling.” I then gently caressed the back and side of Sue’s head to get my bearings. Then I pulled Sue’s face toward mine. I then lightly kissed both of Sue’s eyelids. After I did that, Sue scooped down a little laid her head on my chest, between my neck and shoulder. I embraced and caressed Sue as we snuggled into each other. Sue didn’t put her right arm under me. At the same time, I also gently caressed Sue a little near the top of her head with my cheek. Sue had her left leg draped over my thighs. At the same time, Sue also gently caressed my testicles with her hand as she nuzzled my chest a little with her cheek. I said in a soft, gentle loving voice, “You know what will be nice about dreaming of you darling.” Sue squirmed a little with pleasure into me and gave my testicles a little extra caress. I squirmed a little too as we caressed each other.

Then Sue said lovingly, almost in a whisper as she caressed my chest a little again with her cheek, “What’s that darling.” I then said a little bit more lovingly, “All I’ll need to do is wake up to make my dreams come true.” Sue sat up a little and caressed her hand from my testicles to my chest. Both of us looked at each other with highly loving looks. Sue said, “Oh darling!” We started to kiss each other passionately. We both gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each others. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss. Then Sue went back to her previous position. As Sue nuzzled my chest a little with her cheek and gently kneaded my testicles with her fingers, Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, “You’re a dream come true too darling.” Soon, our caresses became less and less frequent. Until we drifted off into blissful sleep.

## Chapter Eighteen Waking Up To Love

Not surprisingly, we both slept a little later than I had planned. I was the first to wake up. I opened my eyes and saw Sue sleeping like an angel next to me. Which brought a loving smile to my face. It also

gave me some raging morning wood. Sue was sleeping on her side facing me. I thought about gently waking Sue and let her know how stiff I had become. But another idea came to mind. I decided to put off my own personal pleasure and do something else loving for Sue. As carefully as I could, I got out of bed on the other side. I made sure that Sue stayed covered. Quietly walking around to the other side of the bed I picked up my underwear and put them on. Then I put on my pajama bottoms. I then carefully walked out of the bedroom and closed the bedroom door as quietly as I could. I then went into the kitchen and looked around for some food. As quietly as I could, I made Sue some scrambled eggs and toast. I also made a couple slices of toast. On which I put some margarine and jam. Putting everything on a plate, I got my wonderful Sue a small glass of milk. I found a tray and put the things on it.

401

Then I went back into the bedroom. Sue was laying on her side facing toward the right side of the bed. It appeared as though I hadn't woken her. I turned on the light, walked over to the bed and said softly, "Sue darling." Sue opened her eyes with a sleepy but loving smile on her face. (Quite a long time later, Sue admitted to me that she had woken up from sounds she heard coming from the kitchen. Having a good idea of what I was up to, Sue got up, carefully opened the door a little and peaked out. Hearing me cooking, Sue carefully closed the door and got back into bed. It was so dear of Sue to let me have my illusion of surprising her) I said with a grin, "I've made you some breakfast my love." Sue was grinning too as she sat up and said with a bit of sleepiness in her voice, "That's so sweet!" As Sue sat up, her wonderful breasts popped out from under the covers. I said, "You should cover up a little sweetness. I don't want you to get any crumbs on your boobies." This made Sue's grin widen a bit. Sue moved back a little and put the pillows behind her. Then Sue pulled the bedspread up over her breasts a little. But there was still an alarmingly wonderful amount of cleavage showing.

I sat down with the tray and said, "This is the first time I've made breakfast in bed for anybody." Sue looked at me lovingly and said, "I just love being your first darling." We leaned over the tray and gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I said, "I hope you like scrambled eggs sweetest." Sue said, "Yes I do darling." I took the fork and grabbed some scrambled eggs. I said, "Open wide!" With a loving expression, Sue opened her mouth and took the eggs. We both looked at each other lovingly as Sue chewed and then swallowed the eggs. I picked up more eggs to give to Sue. Sue said with a loving, kidding around voice, "What are you trying to do, spoil me?" I grinned. Which made Sue grin too. I said, "Only as much as I can honey bunch." Sue took another bite and chewed her food as we smiled lovingly at each

other. After Sue was through eating that bite, I started to skewer more eggs with the fork. Sue put her hand on my fork hand and said lovingly to me, "Let me give you some darling." I said, "Ok sweetie." Sue took the fork and fed me some eggs. In this manner, Sue and I fed each other, with a little loving chit chat going on here and there. When we were through, we wiped each other's mouths off with a couple folded paper towels I had on the tray.

Afterwards, Sue said lovingly, "Set the tray aside and get into bed darling." Sue pulled back the bedspread from my side. Revealing her wonderful, nude body.

This caused me to begin to become aroused. I sat the tray on the small night stand as well as I could. After doing that, I got into bed. Sue and I looked at each other with passionate looks as I moved over Sue. Sue scooped down a little and embraced me as I laid down on my side on the other side of her. We began to kiss each other passionately as Sue moved me onto my back and undid the tie to my pajama bottoms. I caressed one of Sue's breasts as she did so. Both of us gave off little moans of pleasure. I gave off a bit more of a moan as Sue reached her hand into my pajama bottoms and caressed my genitals. Sue also gave off a little extra moan of pleasure. Then Sue began to shove my pajama bottoms and underwear off from my hips. I raised my hips a little to help Sue do so. Then Sue parted her kiss from mine and sat up a little. Sue then

402

took my things off the rest of the way. With passion still on her face of course, Sue drank in the sight of my ready genitals.

After my things were off, Sue caressed her hands up my legs to my genitals. For a few moments, Sue fondled them and passionately took in the sight of them. Then we looked at each other passionately. Sue said with a voice just dripping with passion, "Mind if I'm on top again darling?" I said passionately, "Whatever you want my love." Sue then straddled me. Standing on her knees and one outstretched arm, Sue's firm, hanging breasts looked wonderful. Then Sue took hold of my stiff appendage and moved it to where it needed to go. A look of ecstasy came over both our faces. We also gave off moans of ecstasy as Sue moved her hips toward mine. Causing my stiff appendage to slide deep into her. As usual, I will omit most of what followed. But, as usual, it was unbelievably wonderful. I caressed Sue everywhere I could as my dear, sweet, darling love went to work on me. Along with varied moans of ecstasy, there were the usual, interspersed, brief and impassioned statements of love or endearment. At times, I would caress Sue's breasts. Or at times I would caress Sue in other places and allow them to wonderfully bounce with her movement. When Sue started to head toward her first orgasm, Sue sat up as we held each other's hands with our fingers entwined. Sue moved her body up and down vigorously on her knees. This made



Sue's large, pert breasts bounce up and down even more wonderfully. Sue gave off calls of ecstasy as she climaxed. I was having trouble keeping from climaxing myself. Oh how I loved the look of orgasmic ecstasy on Sue's face. After things settled down a bit, I lowered Sue's upper body and let her support herself on her outstretched arms. Both of us still held each other's hands with our fingers intertwined. Sue slowed her actions down a little. Long enough for us to give each other a passionate kiss for a couple moments. Then Sue parted her kiss from me and continued to do her thing. I released Sue's hands and started to caress her more. In all, our lovemaking lasted for about five minutes. Which, with Sue setting the pace, I thought was pretty good. Sue also managed to orgasm a couple more times. When it came to be about time for me to orgasm, I took hold of Sue's hips. Even though I was on the bottom, I really started to go to town. I gave out three or four fairly loud calls of ecstasy as I exploded with pleasure. After things settled down, Sue stopped her actions as we looked at each other's ecstasy filled faces.

I said to Sue with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling. How can you be so wonderful." Sue said with a highly loving voice, "You're the one who's wonderful darling." We then started to kiss each other passionately. Sue tried to caress me to the best of her ability. I caressed Sue just about everywhere I could reach. As I had often done, and Sue had often done with me, I also made sure that Sue's butt was well caressed and squeezed. My sweet, darling love was such an unbelievable dream. We must have kissed for the next two minutes. Then Sue slowly parted her kiss from me enough for us to look into each other's loving faces. I said with a tender, loving voice, "I'm so glad you're my woman darling." Sue then said with a tender, loving voice, "And I'm so glad that you're my man darling." We then gave each other a tender, loving kiss that lasted for about thirty seconds or so. Then Sue slowly parted her kiss from me again. As we

403

again looked at each other lovingly, Sue propped herself up on an elbow. Sue then gently caressed my cheek with her other hand. I slightly caressed Sue's palm back with my cheek.

Then Sue smiled lovingly at me. I did the same with Sue as she said, "There's something I can't wait to do for my man." I caressed Sue a little extra and said, "What's that my woman." Sue said, "Wash your dishes." This made me grin. Which made Sue grin too. As Sue caressed her hand up from my cheek to around my ear, I said, "I should do it darling. After all, I'm the one who dirtied them." Sue said, "That's ok darling. It's just my womanly duty." I said, "You could just use your dishwasher." Then Sue said, "There isn't enough to clean for that." Sue and I lovingly kissed each other again for a few extended moments. Then after slowly parting our kiss again, Sue said as we looked at each other lovingly, "Well, for as much as I hate to do it."

Then Sue moved her hips forward little. My penis slid out of her. A brief look of pleasure from the feeling came over our faces as Sue did so. Then we smiled at each other lovingly. Sue said, "Why don't you use the bathroom first darling. Then I will. After that, we can get cleaned up together." I said, "That sounds like a wonderful plan darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Sue then got out of bed. I got out of bed too as Sue picked up her panties. Then I went over to where Sue had dropped my underwear and pajama bottoms. I then put them on. Sue put on her largely see through, sexy nighty. As I started over toward Sue, I said with a loving voice, "You're so beautiful darling." Sue came over to me too and caressed her hands up my chest as I held Sue in a loose embrace. At the same time, Sue said with a loving voice, "So are you darling." As we brought our lips together, Sue wrapped her arms around my neck and upper back. We kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. This caress filled kiss lasted for about a minute. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. We then smiled at each other lovingly and parted a little. I said, "I won't be long darling." Sue said, "Ok honey." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I started to back away from Sue in the direction of the bedroom door. Both of us slid our hands down each other's arms as they parted. Then our fingers parted. I took another step back as we lowered our arms. Then I headed toward the bathroom.

When I got into the bathroom, I used the facilities. When I was through, I left the bathroom. Sue was in the bedroom and changing the sheets. Sue had also put my suitcase in there. The tray and my pajama top was also gone. I went into the bedroom. We smiled at each other as I said, "I'll finish that while you're using the bathroom lovie love." Both of our smiles turned to loving smiles. Sue said as she came over to me, "Ok honey bear." I said, "Where do the love sheets go." As we held each other in a loose embrace, Sue said, "There's a basket on the right in the laundry room." To the right of the bed, there was a door which I took to be a closet. Sue nodded her head slightly in that direction and said, "You can hang your clothes in there." Then Sue nodded to the dresser and said, "You can find room in any of the drawers for your other things." I said, "I take it that we're going to be living in sin for a while." This made Sue grin.

404

Which made me grin too. Sue said, "Yes darling. A whole lot of sin." This caused a loving look to come over my face. Sue took on the same look. Then I said, "Oh darling!"

We began to kiss each other passionately. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as we did so. After about a minute and a half, we both slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I said, "Go do your thing sweetness." Sue also gave my butt cheeks a

squeeze and said, "Ok honey buns." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we released each other. Sue started toward the bathroom. I gave Sue's wonderfully rounded rump a bit of a slap. Sue turned a little as we both grinned at each other. Then Sue turned back as she continued on her way. Then I started making the bed. When I was through with that, I put my clothes away. As I did so, Sue came out of the bathroom and went to the kitchen. I closed the closet door at about the time Sue returned from the kitchen. Sue stood in the bedroom door holding a blue plastic glass. It was just like the one that was already in the bathroom. We both grinned at each other as Sue said, "Ready honey." As I went to Sue, I said, "I can't wait to get you all soapy." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed toward the bathroom. When we got inside, we did all of the usual bathroom things. There was also the kind of loving chitchat as you might expect. Along with kisses here and there.

We flossed and brushed our teeth. When we were through with that, I got ready to shave. Sue said, "Can I shave you darling?" I said "Sure sweetness." We gave each other a brief kiss. Then Sue lathered me up and shaved me. When Sue was through, Sue said, "I never shaved a guy before. How did I do." I felt around my chin and said, "Just fine darling." We gave each other another brief kiss. Then we got naked and went to the shower. Showering with Sue was heavenly. The shower had one of those hanging shower heads with a chrome hose. When our shower got to that point, I asked Sue if I could bidet her. Which Sue lovingly agreed to. So I adjusted the shower head and did so. I enjoyed doing so almost as much as Sue did. Doing so almost brought Sue to another orgasm. When I was through, I said, "I never helped a girl bidet before darling. How did I do." Sue said with a little extra passion in her voice, "Just perfect darling." We gave each other a passionate kiss with some slippery caresses. When Sue and I were through showering and dried off, I helped Sue dry her hair with a blow dryer. Even this was a pleasure. And Sue was happy to know that it was the first time I helped a girl do that too.

By the time we left the bathroom, I was even more in love with Sue than I was when we went in. No doubt Sue felt the same way. We went into the bedroom and got dressed. (Though when it came time, I didn't put on my jacket) Helping Sue put on her bra was yet another pleasure. I told Sue that this was yet another first for me. Which pleased Sue a lot and caused some passionate kissing. Afterwards, I just put on the suit I had on yesterday. Though I used my other shirt. Sue chose for herself a dark blue skirt. Sue also chose a light blue, fuzzy, sleeveless shirt. It was a V-necked button up shirt. Even though Sue hadn't put on any makeup, Sue still looked like a million bucks. Though as I said before, Sue was the kind of girl who didn't even need any makeup. Sue put on a

pair of attractive shoes that matched her skirt. Then Sue sat at her vanity and put on a little makeup. I sat on the bed and we chatted a little as Sue put some on. When Sue was through with that, we stood up. I complimented Sue on her makeup. We looked at each other lovingly and kissed.

After about thirty seconds or so, we parted our kiss and again looked at each other lovingly. Then I picked up my jacket. Sue and I put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed out of the bedroom. Lovingly chatting a little as we went. As we made our way to the kitchen, I laid my jacket on one of the stools. When we got into the kitchen, Sue and I made coffee. Sue also cleaned our dishes. Of course, we continued to talk lovingly about this or that. When we were all through doing these things, Sue and I went to the dining area table with our cups of coffee. Sue sat in the chair near her computer. I sat in the chair that was on the livingroom side. All of the loving chatting Sue and I had done on the way to the kitchen and in the kitchen was nice. But I thought it was about time I told Sue about my terrible secret. I had hoped to bring it up before we became intimate. But things didn't turn out that way. I hoped Sue wouldn't find it too shocking.

The apprehension of what I had to tell Sue brought a bit of a concerned look to my face. Sue took on the same look and said, "What's the matter." I said, "There are some things about my political beliefs that I have been dreading telling you. Because I don't know how you'll take it." This brought a little more concern to Sue's face as she said, "I hope it isn't something really bad." I gave Sue a slight smile and said, "No. It isn't. At least not to me." This brought a bit of a relieved look to Sue's face as I added, "But it may make my having told you that I was an atheist seem like a minor thing in comparison." I took Sue's hands on top of the table. We looked at each other with more somber looks and said, "It's nothing that is likely to threaten our relationship. But you and I have lived very different lives. Some of the things I have to say, you may not believe. But they're true. You can even check them for yourself. Though in all, some of these things are things you may prefer to have not known." Sue said, "Don't worry about that. I can take it." I said, "Though I'm not all radical about it. I really hate niggers, Jews and all non Whites. I really wish they were all dead."

A bit of a shocked look came over Sue's face and she said with a slightly exclaimed voice, "Why!" Then I said, "I'll tell you. But please don't interrupt me until I'm through. I don't want to lose my train of thought. First of all, throughout human history, there are countless examples of one group of people try to take what other people have. All of them have probably been fought for justifiable reasons as far as the attackers are concerned. The current economically friendly, politically correct dogshit this country is mired in isn't going to change things. Somebody once said that the more things change, the more

they stay the same. With the way things are now, it allows many people to feel good about themselves. But it means strife for future generations. And you can't give rights to one group of people without taking rights away from another group. Neither can you be friends with them without ultimately betraying your own kind. White people may not be perfect. But I am happier with my own kind of imperfect human than I am with another kind. Whatever the cost. I know you

406

can't expect life to be easy. But you have to draw the line somewhere. Which brings me to our Jewish slave masters.

"I think it was an English officer around the time of the first world war who said that in war, truth is the first casualty. And it remains a casualty. Especially when it comes to world war two. Have you ever read the bible?" Sue said, "Yes I have." I said, "Then you know that Jewish history is full of them justifying wiping out one group of people or another. And being the supposed chosen of god by default makes everybody else shit. That many Jews reformed Israel only shows that their feelings haven't changed. They could have probably peacefully acquired a similarly sized piece of the Baja peninsula, Australia, southern Siberia or anywhere. But because of their religious based filth, they didn't. And instead of sticking with their most common language, Yiddish, they went with Hebrew. I remember watching this show one time where a couple of Jews were pulling a prank on somebody. This nigger broad who was nearby told the person being pranked, "Those two white boys are messing with you." The one Jew said, "We're not white." Then the other Jew chimed in and said, "Yeah. We're not white."

This caused a bit of a surprised look on Sue's face. Continuing on, I said, "Though both of those scum would probably go after a White woman just like any other nigger would. Over the centuries, the Jews probably learned how to fly under the radar of the countries they infected with their presence. Though there's only about fourteen million of them on earth, they run just about everything." Sue listened to me with an interested look on her face as I continued on, saying, "I saw one of the reasons how they are able to do so on TV a couple times. On one, there was this Christian evangelist they showed in Israel. He was talking to a group of Jews at what looked like a restaurant. He told them that they should really stick to their guns and protect the holy land. On another program I happened by once, they were showing a Christian fund raising thing. The purpose of which was to send some poor Jews to the holy land. Apparently, for many Christians, a way to prove the power of their god is to support the Jews. Coupled with the Jew's success oriented form of warfare, it's no wonder they're running everything. Another reason is that the Jews really know the best place to stick a knife.

"Back at the advent of the movie industry, most if not all of the major

movie studios were run by Jews. Like Warner Brothers, MGM, Columbia, Universal, Paramount and others. Because after all, there is no better place to seize people's minds than through mass media. One of the countless examples was a movie called, "Pleasantville." According to it, White people would be living in a bland, colorless existence without the nigger influence. Which I of course don't agree with. Though not that it would come down to it, I would rather live like an Amish person rather than betray my own kind. Another disgusting, anti-White brainwashing Jewish movie was "The Last Samurai." Where a nineteenth century American soldier in Japan turns against his own kind. It's too bad that the traitorous white scum the star portrayed probably wouldn't have known that centuries earlier, the Japs themselves nearly completely wiped out a species of human who had been living there before they showed up. Then there are the

407

large numbers of movies that portray the White man as the villain in our conflict with the Indians. Even though the Indians themselves tried at times to wipe each other out. Sometimes they even skinned enemies alive with sharpened clam shells. Yet we're supposedly the biggest assholes.

"There are just too many examples of Jewish movies degrading the White species to go into. And now, they control the great god, TV. I was watching a program once where there was this blond actor and his friend who got dropped off by a bus on the wrong side of town. Though I don't remember what happened to his friend, he got stabbed and was nearly killed by a bunch of niggers for being White." Sue said, "I think I saw that." I said, "Then you know that the solution he came up with was to put more of a lip lock on nigger ass. Though to be honest, I can't say if came up with that solution because he was a brainwashed pussy. Being an actor, he may have not wanted to say anything that would have upset any potential Jewish employers. Though I would say that both reasons came into play. All of this, and more, shows to me that the Nazis were right in doing what they did to the Jews. When referring to what the Jews call "the holocaust," the Jews are fond of saying, "Never again!" Unfortunately, they have a good weapon to help make their wish come true. The convolution they cause the White man is just added security to them.

"For example, the Egyptians refused to take the Statue of Liberty for the Suez Canal. So they brought it here." This again caused a brief bit of surprise to show on Sue's face. Then I said, "It was some Jew who wrote that, "Give us your tired, your poor" crap on it. With there probably being so few Jews in the U.S. back then, they were being mighty free with a country they didn't hold a very big stake in. But with other peoples to take the heat off them, I can see why a Jew would have said it. Though to be fair, the opinions of those who held sway in this country were no doubt eager for more people to exploit.

For example, there's that traitorous piece of shit, Bill Gates. I saw him sitting in front of a congressional committee and telling them that he wanted to see unlimited immigration of skilled foreign workers. There are enough skilled workers here to do such jobs. At least for now. Though who is going to go the trouble or expense of being an engineer for example if pieces of shit like him will just import people to do the work for a cheaper price. But once you've sold out your species, why not sell out your country too.

"Needless to say, I don't hold spicks in very high regard either. It's bad enough that this country sent so many good jobs overseas. But now we have these beaner, scab invaders coming here to take what jobs are left. There is this racist Mexican organization called "La Raza." Which in Spanish means, "The Race." Which sounds pretty racist to me. Not surprisingly our government has given them tens of millions of dollars. (I of course didn't remember Mav or his telling me that Bill Gates had also given millions of dollars to LaRaza) Against that, White people are free to say anything they want. As long as it's something that doesn't really matter. Show a Nazi flag anywhere, and you're likely to get thrown in jail. White people have to support their own kind. Because no other species is going to. Another species I don't like are gooks. There are too many reasons to go into. But some of things I don't like is their fleshy slits for eyes. I was told

408

that during the Vietnam war, women there spent more money on getting their eyes done to look more European than what the yearly value of the countries exports was."

This again briefly caused a little surprise on Sue's face. I then added, "And yet, we're the assholes. Neither do I like their eating dogs or bird spit soup. What they call bird nest soup. Also, to still be using a medicinal tiger penis remedy when there is Viagra around is pretty screwed up. But the people I hate the most are niggers. Sure, they've written some interesting music. But big deal. Also, they have a few more of what they call quick reflex muscle cells. That gives them an edge in sports. Also, they have longer arms and legs. They also have narrower hips. These may be some admirable traits, but all of these things don't make them worth having around. For example, look at what niggers did to niggers in Rwanda and other places. That blond actor found out what they can do to somebody who they are aesthetically jealous of. Also, they're three times more likely to carry Herpes and nine times more likely to carry Chlamydia." This again brought a brief bit of surprise to Sue's face.

Continuing on, I said, "There are other messed things up about niggers. No doubt some things I don't even know about. Which is no surprise. Because such information isn't something the media likes to talk about. Instead, we're expected to concentrate on our sameness rather than our differences. But fuck them. In the town where I came

from, there was a fairly diversified nigger population. Ninety eight times out of a hundred, every time I saw some nigger out in public with a woman, it was a white woman. Apparently, even those niggers find nigger bitches to be too ugly. Yet again, my not liking it makes me the asshole. And you can be sure that niggers don't do it because Whites are being promoted in the Jew media. I told you about my mom's boyfriend who I called uncle Bill. He told me a lot of this stuff. The reason being that he had three different members of his family killed by niggers." This brought a bit of surprise and sympathy to Sue's face.

I said, "As I said, he was the kind of guy who you could trust. He told me of a couple instances where he heard niggers on TV calling White people "White devils." I saw a thing on TV where they wanted people to have the "Race talk" with their kids. Meaning to get them to be more politically correct. Obviously, it wouldn't have encouraged parents discussing why no nigger populated country on the planet is worth a damn. (I know it's spelled damn. But I prefer my spelling) Or why brunets are more likely to go blond rather than blonds dye their hair brunet. Let alone any of the other things I've told you. Clearly, we can't count on our government for any help with White sovereignty. In a surprising bit of honesty, I saw a politician on TV speaking some truth. He said that there was so much legal graft going on in Washington, that only a fool would get involved in the illegal kind. These are the last kinds of people I would look to for some sovereignty for the White race. Also, look at oil. I have a theory as to one of the reasons why we're still so dependant on it. As long as oil is important, the middle east is important. And as long as the middle east is important, Israel is important. That is, apart from the importance Christianity places on it.

"Our whole country is in a whirling vortex of shit. They say that you can't fool all

409

the people all the time. But all you need to do is fool just enough of the people for just long enough. There may not be much I can do about these things personally, but I will never surrender my principals. I know better than to throw this stuff into people's faces. Most people don't want to know the truth anyway. And unless there's some reason for them to do so, I'm not sure a brainwashed mind could accept it. Despite being half Jewish, Einstein was pretty smart in some ways. He once said basically that the solution to a problem couldn't be found by the same sort of mind that created that problem. As long as people can put gas into their car and have a huge selection at the supermarket to choose from, that's all they really care about. All of which is part of the reason I was homeless. When you hear experts talk about it, they say that the whole thing will come crashing down someday for some reason or another. Then speaking in a much kinder voice to Sue, I said, "Though I have to say that what the



government did for us turned out to be a good thing.”

This brought a smile to Sue’s face. I smiled too. Then I said, “You can just look at some of the things I’ve said as a guy thing. I really wish that I didn’t have to tell you such things. But it’s important to me that you know the real me.” Sue smiled at me a bit more lovingly. I did the same with Sue. Then I said, “Besides, it would be doing you a disservice to remain silent. Even though all I want to do is protect and shield you from the world.” This caused Sue to look at me a bit more lovingly. I looked at Sue lovingly as Sue got up and came over to me. I moved my chair back a little to make room for Sue to sit on my lap. Sue sat across my lap. As we caressed our hands around each other, Sue said lovingly, “You’re so wonderful darling.” We then kissed each other lovingly. This lasted for about a minute. Then Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine. We smiled at each other lovingly as we caressed each other a little. Sue said, “Though nigger is such an ugly word. But until other people get to know you, if the subject comes up, I hope you’ll remember to say negro or black instead.”

This made me grin. Which Sue did too. I said, “How about, “spade.” Sue chuckled a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Then Sue said, “No!” I then said, “Spook?” We chuckled a little again. Sue gave me a light slap on my arm and said, “No!” I said, “How about, “tar baby.” This made us both laugh a little. Then Sue gave me another light slap on my arm and said, “No!” This had turned into a fun little game. I then said, “How about, “jungle bunny.” We both chuckled a little. Then Sue gave me another light slap on my arm and said, “No!” We both then chuckled a little again. Both of us had similar fun as I went through, darkie; suction cup lips; coon, spear chucker and porch monkey. Then I said, “Have it your way darling.” We then gave each other a loving kiss. After about another minute, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. I said, “Darling. Are you sure you can love an atheist, White Separatist patriot, Nazi sympathizer.” Sue said lovingly, “There’s only one way to answer that darling.” As Sue got up, Sue said, “Come with me.” I took Sue’s hands and stood up.

We then held each other’s hand as Sue led the way and guided me over to the couch. I had a good idea of what Sue had in mind. And it caused me to begin to become aroused. We got to the front of the couch and started kissing each other passionately. Sue turned me so my back was facing the couch and started

410

to undo my pants. I also raised up Sue’s skirt and started to fondle her butt. We both gave off slight moans of pleasure as we kissed. Sue started to lower my pants a bit. I started to slide down Sue’s panties and pantihose. Sue stopped me as she parted her kiss from mine. We both looked at each other passionately as Sue said, “Not now darling.” Then Sue lowered my pants more and made me sit down. When I did

so, Sue lowered my pants and underwear to my ankles and knelt in front of me. Now I had an even better idea of what Sue had in mind. I said with a passionate voice, "Oh baby!" Sue tore her attention away from my genitals as she spread my knees and caressed her hand up my thighs to my genitals. Sue said to me with a passionate voice, "I've been wanting to give this a try."

Then Sue went back to fondling my genitals. After a few moments, Sue began to pleasure me orally. Sue gave off an encumbered moan of pleasure. I gave off moans of ecstasy with a look of ecstasy on my face. From what Sue said, I took it that Sue had never done this before. But Sue seemed to know what she was doing. Though Sue had probably seen such things on the internet. And from what I had heard, girls talked about such things. Throughout the process, here and there, I would make a brief but impassioned statement of either endearment or love. Which only seemed to heighten Sue's enjoyment. After about a minute and a half, I started to approach an orgasm. Considering what Sue was doing, I decided to tell her with an impassioned voice what was about to happen. This news only invigorated Sue's actions. A few moments later, I exploded. As I gave out calls of ecstasy, Sue gave off encumbered moans of pleasure as she slowed down her actions. About a minute later, Sue stopped what she was doing and looked up at me with a loving smile on her face. I looked at Sue passionately as she continued to hold my penis.

Sue wiped her mouth a little with her other hand and said with a passionate voice, "That was my first time darling. How did I do." I said with a passionate voice, "You really know how to milk me darling." Sue said, "I want to milk you as much as I can darling." I said, "Oh darling!" Then Sue and I kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. We caressed each other as we did so. Though Sue continued to hold onto my penis. After about a minute, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. Then I smiled lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. I said with a passionate voice, "If you're trying to get me to propose to you darling, you're going about it the right way." This brought a grin to Sue's face and mine. I then said, "Stand up darling." As Sue released my penis and did so, I used my feet to take off my slippers. I then took my pants and underwear off the rest of the way as Sue caressed my shoulders. I then said, "Let me get your shoes darling." Sue lifted each foot as I took her shoes off. Then I lifted up Sue's skirt and started to slide down her pantihose and panties.

When I had uncovered Sue's wonderful muff, I nuzzled the side of my nose into Sue's mons pubis as I continued to caress Sue's under things off her. Sue gave off a sigh of pleasure as I breathed in deeply. Eager to take in the slightest hint of Sue's natural bodily scent. Then I parted my nose from Sue and took her things the rest of the way off. I then looked up at Sue. Both of us had passion

on our faces. No doubt Sue knew what I had in mind. I moved Sue over to the couch and said with a passionate voice, "Lay down darling." My dearest love sat on the couch and did as I asked. I knelt on the floor, spread Sue's legs and caressed Sue's inner thighs as I took in the breathtaking sight of Sue's vagina. My eyes were glazed over with passion. I was dying to lick Sue's clitoris silly. I said, "Oh darling! You're such a dream!" Sue said with a passionate and loving voice, "Oh my love!" As I massaged either side of Sue's vagina with both of my hands, Sue gave off a moan of pleasure. Then I brought my lips down to where they need to be. Sue gave off moans of ecstasy as I began to do my thing.

It only took me couple moments to realize why there were lesbians. This was pure heaven. Sue tasted so fleshy and utterly wonderful. The tongue technique I had heard of really seemed to work. It wasn't too long before I could feel Sue's clitoris begin to stiffen under my tongue. Knowing that Sue was being stimulated added to my pleasure even more. It wasn't long after that I brought Sue to the verge of a climax. With an impassioned voice, Sue basically told me that she was about to orgasm too. It was wonderful news to know. I let Sue know it with some extra tongue work. A couple moments later, Sue gave out calls of ecstasy as she gushed. Sue enthusiastically gave me what I received and I enthusiastically drank it down. After things settled down a bit, I kept going. I knew that Sue was capable of multiple orgasms. And I was eager to drink down more of Sue's wonderful love juice. The whole thing was far too wonderful to really describe. After about another minute and a half of this heaven, Sue approached another orgasm. Sue again told me with an impassioned voice what was about to happen.

This was again news that I received with eager anticipation. I then received more of what I sought as Sue gave out more calls of ecstasy. As before, the way Sue writhed and squirmed was also far beyond a dream. Oh how I loved bringing my darling such pleasure. After things settled down, I began to slow down my actions. Then I stopped what I was doing and wiped my mouth a little with my hand. I then started to move up toward Sue. We both looked at each other with passionate love. I said with a highly loving voice, "That was my first time too darling. How was I." Sue said with a highly loving voice, "You're so wonderful darling! If you're trying to get me to accept a proposal, you're going about it the right way." Then Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately. We must have kissed and caressed each other for a couple of minutes. Then I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other lovingly as I said in a tender, loving voice, "I love you so much darling." This caused an emotional, loving look to come over Sue's beautiful face. I took on such a look too as I added, "Now I have some of you inside of me too."

Tears started to well up in my eyes. An even more emotional look came over Sue's face as I added, "I always want some of you inside me

darling." Sue grabbed me firmly around my back and shoulders with her arms. At the same time, Sue took hold of me with her legs. I ran my hands between Sue and the couch and took a firm hold of Sue too. Sue said in a teary voice, "Oh Erik! My darling!" I said in a teary voice too, "My darling love!" After a bit of hugging, caressing and nuzzling, we started to kiss each other around the sides of each

412

other's neck and around each other's ear. Which soon turned into us kissing each other passionately again. After a bit of this, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss. I pulled back enough for us to look at each other with emotional, loving looks. Then I said with a questioning, highly loving voice, "Do you really want me my love?! Really really?!" Sue said to me with a voice full of emphatic love, "I really do!" Sue then fully and firmly embraced me. I embraced Sue fully and firmly too as Sue said, "I really, really do!"

This caused me to embrace Sue a little more firmly. Sue also embraced me more firmly with her arms and legs as I said, "My darling Sue!" Sue also said, "My darling Erik!" After a bit more hugging, caressing and nuzzling, we slid our lips toward each other and began to kiss each other passionately again. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as we did so. We kissed for a little over a minute. Then I broke off my kiss and started to kiss my way toward Sue's ear. I said softly into Sue's ear, "I hate the thought of us parting. But you know we have things to do." Then Sue gently pushed me back just far enough for us to look into each other's smiling, loving faces. Sue said, "I suppose you're right darling." Then my loving smile widened slightly. Sue's did too. I said, "You know darling, we never did get to drink any of our coffee." This made Sue grin. Which made me grin too. Sue said, "I can fix that darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I sat back and helped Sue sit up. I sat on the couch as Sue put her other leg on the floor. Then I picked up Sue's panties and pantihose.

I handed them to Sue and said, "Here ya go darling." Sue took them and said, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After our kiss, I stood up. Sue turned the legs of her pantihose the right side out, took her panties and started to put them on. Then Sue stood up long enough to put them on the rest of the way. Then Sue put on her pantihose too. While Sue was doing all this, I put on my underwear and pants, tucked in my shirt and did my pants up. When I was through, I sat back down and picked up one of Sue's slippers. We smiled at each other lovingly as I said, "I'll do this darling." Sue said, "Ok darling." Then Sue placed her hand on my shoulder and lifted her foot a little. I took hold of Sue's ankle and put her slipper on. Once I did so, I turned a slightly bigger loving smile back to Sue. I said, "It fits darling. You must be my Cinderella." This caused Sue to grin lovingly at me. I grinned lovingly too as I released Sue's foot. I caressed Sue's

legs as Sue said, "And you must be my Prince Charming." Sue then leaned over. We gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments. Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine.

We smiled at each other lovingly as Sue stood erect again. Then I looked away and picked up Sue's other slipper. We briefly turned our loving smiles to each other. Then I put Sue's other slipper on. When I was through, I released Sue's foot and caressed my hands up Sue as I stood. Sue embraced me a little more and said, "Thank you darling." I said, "You're welcome my love." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we parted and released each other. I stuck a foot into each of my loafers and quickly slipped them on. Then Sue and I caressed a hand around each other's lower backs from the side. We leaned the sides of our heads together and headed back toward the kitchen. Both of us

413

caressed each other's butts as we did so. As we went, I grinned and said with a loving voice as we nuzzled the sides of our heads together a little, "I think you've turned me into a lesbian darling." We parted and looked at each other as we laughed. Oh how I love to see Sue happy. We shared in each other's laughter all the way to the table. When we got there, we faced each other and held each other in a loose embrace.

Then Sue said with a mirth filled voice, "I hope not completely darling." I said with a mirthful, loving voice, "No. Not completely darling." Then Sue smiled at me lovingly. I did the same with Sue. Then Sue caressed a hand down and fondled my genitals through my pants. I took on a more passionate look. Sue did too as Sue said, "You've turned me into such a homo." I said with a voice just dripping with passion, "I hope not completely darling." Sue said with a soft, passionate voice, "No darling. Not completely." Both our eyes glazed over with love as Sue beckoned me with her lips. And I didn't keep Sue waiting. We began to kiss each other passionately. We both gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. At the same time, Sue caressed her hand around from my genitals to my butt. I also caressed and kneaded Sue's butt with one of my hands. We kissed each other for at least a minute as we spread our loving caresses around. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "Sit down darling. I'll get your coffee." This made me smile lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me.

I said with a loving voice, "Are you trying to spoil me darling?" This made Sue grin. Which I did too. Sue said, "Only as much as I can darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. We grinned at each other again afterwards. I said, "Have it your way dearest." We then gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, we smiled lovingly at each other and released each other. I then stepped

over to my chair and sat down. Sue picked up our coffee cups and headed toward the kitchen. As Sue did so, I said, "Sweetie. Did I hear you in the bedroom last night talking to your mom?" Sue turned a little as she walked and said, "Maybe. Or it could have been Becky." I said, "Did you tell your mom that I would be staying the night?" Sue said as she poured out the cold coffee, "No. I didn't tell mom." I said, "Your mom seems very nice. I can't wait to meet her. And I hope your dad likes me." Sue was at the coffee machine at this point. As Sue started to pour the coffee, Sue said, "I'm sure he will. How could anybody not." This caused us both to grin for a few moments. Sue then finished pouring the coffee. Then I said with a loving smile, "I'm so glad you came to me last night darling."

Sue was adding the cream and sugar at this point. Though Sue took on a bit more of a concerned look. Sue said, "I hope I didn't come off as seeming too slutty." This caused me to briefly take on a surprised look. Then a more solemn look of sincere love came over my face, I said, "I could never have thought that about you darling!" Sue smiled lovingly at me with the slightest hint of relief on her face. I think Sue already knew that I couldn't have thought that about her. Then Sue said, "Thank you darling." As Sue picked up the coffee to bring back over to the table, I said with a more loving look on my face, "I thought of you as

414

my love; a dream; an angel; a sweet smelling goddess; A charming dear." Sue sat the cups on the table near me. We were both looking at each other lovingly.

I added as Sue went to set across my lap, "A down to earth honey. After you came to me," Sue sat across my lap and we both took hold of each other as I added, "those feelings only increased. Some exponentially." Sue said with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!" We began to kiss each other passionately. With a little more than the usual tongue action going on. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure.

This kiss lasted for about two minutes. Then Sue slowly parted her kiss from me. We both smiled lovingly at each other. Then Sue said with a tender, loving voice, "Our coffee is going to get cold again darling." I said to Sue with a tender, loving voice, "Ok darling." We gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Sue and I took our cups and took a drink. Afterwards, we sat our cups down and smiled lovingly at each other again. Speaking of the coffee, Sue said, "Is it as good as before darling?" I said, "I hope you can cook as well as you make coffee dearest." Sue said, "I can sweetie." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I said, "Here's what I think we should do honey bunch. You should be able to fit all of the money and coins in your purse." Sue said, "I have a little larger purse. I'll just use that." I said, "You can take five thousand and I'll take my change." Sue said,

"I don't really need it darling." This made my smile turn to a grin. Sue's smile turned to a grin too. I said, "Did I get myself a rich girl?" Sue said, "My dad isn't super rich. But I do ok." I said, "Well, leave five thousand here in case I need it. And leave about six coins here. When we get around to it, we can spread them around at whatever jewelry or coin stores they have around here." Sue said, "Ok."

We gave each other another brief kiss. Then we took another drink of coffee. After we had our coffee mugs sat back down, I said, "I'll follow you to your bank. When you're inside, I'll leave and go to get plates and insurance. By the way, where should I go." Sue gave me directions. Afterwards, we took another drink of coffee. Once our cups were back on the table, I said, "Is there a place where you can see a doctor without waiting around too long?" Sue said, "I know a place." I said, "Good. Though it would be no great tragedy, I wouldn't want you to get pregnant too soon." Sue's look became more loving as I spoke. I also looked at Sue more lovingly. Sue said, "Oh darling!" We started to kiss each other passionately. (With all of the usual loving caresses) As usual, Sue's lips were so soft and loving. Our tongues caressing each other's was also a dream. It made Sue and I give off a slight moan of pleasure here and there. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked lovingly at each other. Then I smiled lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. I said, "I take it you want me to hang around for a while."

Sue grinned. Which made me grin too. Sue said, "You know I do my love." I said, "Then you're going to have to get some things to keep your new fella." Sue stroked the side of my face. Both of our grins reverted to loving smiles. Then Sue said, "I suppose you're right darling." Then I said, "There's something else I also need to know. How would you like me to get my hair cut." Sue grinned. Which caused me to grin too. Sue ran her fingers through my hair and felt the

415

bump. A look of concern came over Sue's face as she said, "Does that still hurt?" Giving Sue a reassuring look, I said, "Not much." Sue said, "Let me kiss it and make it feel better." I said, "Ok darling." I lowered my head and let Sue kiss my bo bo. Afterwards Sue and I looked at each other with happy, loving expressions. Sue said, "How does it feel now sweetheart." I said, "Your kiss had completely healed me darling." This brought a wide grin to Sue's face. That I quickly matched. I then said, "About my hair." Sue explained how she would like to see it cut. Afterwards, I said, "Ok sweetness." We then kissed each other tenderly. After a few extended moments of this, we slowly parted our kiss. Then I gently caressed Sue's cheek as we looked at each other lovingly.

I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Let's grab the money darling." I caressed my hand from Sue's cheek, down to her shoulder and then

down her arm as I added, "The sooner we leave, the sooner we can get back." Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "Ok darling." We gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Then Sue got up as we looked at each other with loving smiles. I stood up too. We both took another drink of coffee. Then we went into the kitchen as we continued to chat. When we got to the stove, Sue said with a grin, "Lower yourself down honey and give me a lift." I was grinning too as I said, "Ok sweetness." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I turned toward the stove and squatted down. As I did so, Sue moved behind me and pulled up her skirt. Then Sue put a leg over my shoulder. I held that leg and Sue put her other leg over my other shoulder. Then I took hold of that too and lifted Sue. Lifting Sue this way was of course much more pleasurable than the way I did it the last time. I didn't stand all the way up to keep Sue's head a comfortable distance from the ceiling.

Sue opened the cabinet door above the exhaust hood of the stove and reached in. After grabbing the money, Sue closed the cabinet door. I backed away a little and squatted back down. Sue took her legs off me and stood. After I stood up and turned around, we were both grinning again as Sue handed me the money. Sue said, "Here ya go darling." I took it and said, "Thank you lovie love." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue then lowered her skirt the rest of the way down. Then Sue went for the other bundle of money she had stashed in another cabinet. Sue stood up on her tippy toes as she reached up for the money. I couldn't help but admire how especially nice it made Sue's sweet, sweet butt look. Sue retrieved the money and unwrapped the foil from it. As Sue did so, Sue said, "The garbage disposal sure was a good hiding spot." I said, "Thank you" as Sue sat the foil aside. I handed Sue my stack of bills and said, "This for you sugar lips." This brought a wider smile to Sue's "sugar lips." Then I said, "And this is for you too." Then I gave Sue a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue said, "Thank you darling."

Then Sue and I put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed for the living room. We stopped over by the couch. Then we released each other and I bent over the couch. I shoved my hand down into the couch where Sue had put a stack of hundreds. As I did so, Sue gave me a loving slap on my butt and

416

kneaded my butt cheek with her fingers as I grabbed the money. We grinned at each other as I started to stand again with the money. I said, "Was that because I've been a naughty boy?" Sue said as I handed her the money, "No. It's because you've been such a wonderful boy." We gave each other a loving kiss. After a few moments, we parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue



said, "I'll be right back sweetness." I said, "Ok dearest." Then Sue started to make her way toward the bedroom. I lovingly watched Sue go for a moment as I admired her form. Then I went to the coffee table. I picked up the television remote and turned the TV on. Just to check the weather. Then I picked up my phone. I brought the remote and the phone over to the table. Then I sat them down and went to grab my jacket. I sat my jacket on the back of the chair. Then I sat down and took another drink of coffee.

After doing that, I picked up my phone and called Sue with a smile still on my face. I could hear the faint sound of Sue's phone ringing in the bedroom. Sue answered the phone and said, "Yes darling." I said, "Just checking my phone sweetie. I love you." Sue said, "I love you too." I then said, "By darling." Sue said, "By honey." Then I hung up the phone. I turned to watch the weather as Sue gathered up the rest of the money. It looked like it was going to be hot out. But not as hot as it could get sometimes. I didn't see anything that looked like bad weather. It didn't take Sue too long to get what she needed. We smiled at each other as Sue came from the hallway. Sue was holding the straps of her purse in one hand and was holding some folded over money in her other hand. I stood up as Sue came over. We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue handed me the money and said, "Here ya go darling." I took it. Then Sue raised her forearm and let the handle of the purse slide up to her elbow. Sue had also been holding a key in that hand. Then Sue handed me a key as she said, "This is a spare key to the apartment darling. I'll need you to get a copy made."

I took the key and looked at Sue more lovingly. Sue looked at me the same way. I said, "It's like you're giving me the key to your heart my love." Sue briefly caressed her hand up and down my chest. Then Sue placed it over my heart as she said, "This is the key to that darling. And it's already unlocked my heart." I said, "Oh darling!" We then began to kiss each other passionately. Sue moved her hand from over my heart. At the same time, Sue straightened her other arm out toward the floor and let her purse fall to the floor with a thud. I could also hear the coins clanking together a little in her purse. Sue then brought that arm up and embraced me with it too. We both more fully embraced each other. Though I still held some money in one hand and Sue's spare key in the other. As usual, both of us started out this kiss with slight moans of pleasure. After about a minute, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I then parted from Sue a little and said with a loving voice, "Your heart's the key that's unlocked my heart too darling."

Then I leaned over and gave Sue a brief kiss between her cleavage. When I was standing erect again and we were again looking at each other lovingly, we gave each other a tender, loving kiss for a few extended moments. Afterwards, Sue and I released each other with loving smiles on our faces. I slipped Sue's

key into my pocket. Then I took out my wallet and put the money in it. As I did so, Sue leaned over to pick up her purse. Sue then stood erect with it again and slung the straps of the purse handles over her shoulder. After I had my wallet back in my pocket, I grabbed my jacket and put it on. Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other as I did so. After I buttoned it, I put my phone in my jacket pocket. Then I picked up the TV remote and turned the TV off. After setting the remote back down, I smiled at Sue and said, "Ready honey." We gave each other a quick smooch. Then we held each other's hand with our fingers entwined and headed to the door. As we went, Sue and I smiled at each other as she said, "Maybe when I get the chance, I'll get rid of my laptop and get an Apple laptop instead."

As I opened the door, I said with a more solemn expression, "Because of what I said about Bill Gates?" As we stepped outside, Sue said with a more somber expression, "Yeah. Fuck that asshole." I closed the door. Then I reached in my pocket for the key Sue gave me as I said, "I think there are other operating systems out there that aren't microsoft." As I locked the door, I said, "I don't know if getting an Apple computer will do any good. That traitorous dick has so much money, he probably bought a bunch of Apple stock." Then I put the key back into my pocket as I said, "Besides, I don't know if the people who own Apple are any better." We took each other's hand with our fingers entwined. As we headed in the general direction of the parking lot, Sue said, "They do make a lot of stuff overseas. I don't suppose it's really possible to make a patriotic purchase like that."

I said, "I heard that president Clinton was the one who opened the flood gates for jobs to go overseas. What a complete douche bag. Once that happened, a lot of other companies had to commit treason in the same way just to compete. Some people may have made some money. But I don't think they took into account the social costs. Maybe with the grinding poverty they have in the countries they ship our jobs to, rich people thought it would be politically incorrect to not let poor people here experience that level of poverty too. But I have a better idea. And it doesn't include political correctness. It involves sticking up for yourself." We were at the bottom of the steps by now. Sue pointed over to a covered parking section across the parking lot. As Sue did so, she said, "That's my car over there." It was a shiny new red Camaro. As we headed toward it, Sue said, "Just as you said, a whirling vortex of shit." I then looked lovingly at Sue. Sue still had a somber expression on her face. Then I said, "There's one bright spot darling." This made Sue smile lovingly at me. I said, "I'm going to try to fill your life with more happiness than you can take."

This caused an emotional, loving look to come over Sue's face. I took on the same sort of look as Sue and I stopped to face each other. Sue said, "Oh darling!" We then embraced each other fully and tightly. I said with an emotional voice, "My dearest love!" After a few

moments, Sue said with an emotional voice as we embraced, "How can you be so wonderful darling!" I said with an emotional voice, "You're the one who's wonderful darling!" After about thirty seconds or so of this embrace, we parted enough to look at each other lovingly. Then we kissed each other lovingly. We might have kissed each other

418

passionately. But we were out in public. After about thirty seconds or so, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then we caressed a hand around each other's lower backs and walked the remaining way to Sue's car with the sides of our heads leaning together. When we reached the drivers side of Sue's car, we parted a bit and looked at each other lovingly. I briefly looked at Sue's car and said, "I would feel better if you drove a tank."

My statement made Sue laugh a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Sue said, "I'll be fine darling." Then I looked at Sue with a look of solemn love. Sue looked at me the same way. Then I said with a gentle loving voice, "I hope so darling." My demeanor then changed to an emotional one again and tears started to well up in my eyes. Sue took on an emotional look too as I said with a bit of a choked up voice, "I swear on my mother's grave!" I then slightly shook my head from side to side to emphasize what I was saying and added, "I would kill myself if anything happened to you!" Sue broke into tears as we fully embraced each other tightly. Both of us had our tearing eyes tightly closed with highly emotional looks on our faces. Sue said tearfully, "Don't say that darling!... I would want you to live!" A couple moments later, I said tearfully, "How could I darling!" After about thirty seconds of this tearful embrace, Sue started peppering the side of my head with quick kisses. These Sue moved around my face and then to the other side of my head.

After Sue had delivered a number of quick kisses around there, I delivered a number of quick kissed around the side of Sue's head. These I moved around Sue's face as I kissed my way to the other side of Sue's head. Sue's purse slipped from her shoulder as I did so. Though Sue caught the purse with her arm. But then Sue briefly lowered her arm to let the purse fall to the ground. Then Sue took hold of me again with that arm. After I delivered a number of quick kisses on the other side of Sue's head, we fully embraced each other again. Sue said with an emotional voice, "I love you so much darling!" I said, "I love you so much too darling!" After about thirty seconds, we parted enough to look into each other's emotional, tear stained faces. Sue said, "Oh darling! I don't want to go on the pill! I want to have your baby!" I said, "Oh darling!" Then Sue and I fully embraced each other again. I picked Sue up off her feet. Then I said, "Oh my dearest sweet darling love!" Both of us were crying again. After about twenty seconds, I sat Sue's feet back on the ground. We lovingly caressed and nuzzled each other for about another forty seconds or so.

I then said in a highly loving voice, "There's time enough for that darling. I need your help my love. Will you obey your man?" Sue said with a highly loving voice that was tinged with a little reluctance, "Yes, I will darling." Sue and I parted enough to look into each other tear moistened, loving faces. I brought my hands up and lovingly held the sides of Sue's head. With my thumbs, I lovingly wiped away Sue's tears. Then I used my palms to wipe away the rest. Then Sue did the same with me as I caressed my hands down to her shoulders. The love we showed in each other's eyes spoke volumes. When Sue was through, Sue gently pulled my face toward hers. We kissed each other with such loving tenderness, it was extraordinary. While we did so, Sue lovingly caressed her hands down from my face to embrace me too. After about a minute of this, we

419

slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly again. I said, "You better go darling. Before I impregnate you right here." This made Sue laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. After sharing in each other's laughter for about twenty seconds or so, Sue said with a mirth filled voice, "Ok darling."

We released each other as we grinned at each other. I leaned over and picked up Sue's purse. Then I handed it to her. Sue reached into her purse and retrieved her keys. Then Sue pressed a button on the remote of the keychain. Sue's car made that bleep sound and unlocked. I opened Sue's car door and said, "Don't go too fast. My car couldn't keep up." Sue said, "Ok darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue got into her car. I closed the door once Sue was inside. We smiled at each other as Sue rolled down her window. I said, "I don't want you talking on your phone while you drive sweetness." Sue said, "Ok dearest." I leaned in the opening of the window. Then Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. I then took my head out and said, "I'll be with you in a minute sweetie." Sue said, "Ok honey bunch." I then stood erect, turned and started walking over to my car. Sue watched me go with a loving smile on her face. I took out my keys as I approached my car and unlocked it. Sue then put her seatbelt on and started her car. After I got inside, I started the car and put my seatbelt on. Sue backed her car out as I did so. I then backed out. Then Sue pulled her car up near mine.

As we smiled at each other, Sue kissed her fingertips and blew me a kiss. This made me grin as I pretend grabbed it out of the air. Sue grinned too. Then I held the pretend kiss to my chest and opened the fingers of my fist to squish the pretend kiss into my chest. Then I blew Sue a kiss too. Sue pretend grabbed the kiss. Then Sue put her fist to her chest and opened her fingers to squish the pretend kiss into her upper cleavage. Sue then started to drive away. I drove up behind Sue's car and followed. We then started making our way. After a couple of minutes, Sue turned on her blinker and pulled over. I pulled

over too. Then I saw Sue reach into her purse and pull out her phone. Apparently Sue was receiving a call. Probably from her mom or Becky. It caused a wave of love to run through me that Sue was doing as I asked. Sue's safety meant the world to me. How very quickly I would sacrifice my life for Sue's if it came down to it. Unfortunately, I couldn't stand between Sue and danger while she drove. After about a minute, Sue put her phone back into her purse. Then Sue turned back to smile at me. I smiled at Sue also as we gave each other a little wave. Then Sue turned back forward and put her car into gear.

I looked into the side rear view mirror to make sure there were no cars coming. At the same time, I put my car into gear. There weren't any cars close by. Sue then pulled out. Then I pulled out too. We drove until we got to Sue's bank. Sue pulled into a parking spot. I pulled into the spot next to hers. Sue turned off her car and got out. We grinned at each other as Sue closed her door. Then Sue came over to my car. I rolled down my window. We were still grinning as Sue came up to my window. I turned in my seat a little and put my forearms on top of the opening of the window. Sue came up and placed her hands on my arms. Then Sue said as she leaned over a little, "Thanks for the escort darling." I said, "Who was on the phone." Sue said, "It was mom. She just wanted to

420

chat. I told her how wonderful you were. It was nice to be able to be completely truthful about it." We smiled at each other lovingly. I said, "I may be an atheist darling. But I believe there still could be an afterlife. It would make me happy to know that my mom's spirit knew I found my true love." Sue and I looked at each other with a look of more solemn love. Then Sue said, "I wish I could have met her."

Sue then stood erect and looked around like she was trying to see something floating around that she couldn't see. As Sue did so, Sue said, "If you're around here Ms. Nielsen, I promise to always love and look after Erik." I looked at Sue with a highly loving look on my face. Sue also gave me a highly loving look as I took hold of Sue's hands. As I did so, Sue leaned over again as I said with a highly loving voice, "I love you so much darling!" Sue said, "I love you so much too darling!" We gave each other a firm, passionate kiss as we held each other's hands firmly. After about thirty seconds, Sue slowly parted her kiss from me and we again looked at each other with looks of solemn love. Then a slight smile came over Sue's loving face. I looked at Sue in the same way. Then Sue said, "Let me show you where you want to go from here darling." Sue then gave me directions to where I needed to go for plates and insurance. When Sue was through, I said, "Ok darling. Would you like me to walk you to the door?" Sue said, "That's ok sweetness. I'll see you back at the apartment." I said, "Ok dearest." We both then leaned toward the window opening again and gave each other a brief but loving kiss.

Afterwards, Sue said, "By honey." I said, "By sweetness." I watched Sue go with a smile on my face. Before Sue went through the door, we briefly smiled at each other again. Then Sue went inside. Since Sue was nice and safe now, I pulled out and started following Sue's directions. I went to where I needed to go to get insurance. Once I was done with that, I went to where I needed to go to get plates. When I was through there, I found a store that sold tools. I picked up a set of tools for my car. I also had a spare key made for Sue's apartment and my car. After that, I went back outside and put the plate on my car. I also took down the dealer's tag. After that, I figured I would get Sue an engagement ring. We had fallen so deeply and madly in love, the only thing that remained was to make it official. I wasn't sure on when, where or how I would pop the question. All I knew was that I wanted to make the event special. So I drove around and looked for a jewelry store. I thought it was too bad that I probably wouldn't find one that wasn't actually owned by a Jew. And I wasn't about to go through the trouble to search for one that wasn't.

I wished that things were like they were in prewar Germany. Where Jewish establishments were required to identify themselves. Another thing that didn't please me much was that I had to get a diamond. I knew that in fact they were basically worthless. But I was forced to stick with tradition. Instead of finding a jewelry store, the first place I happened across was a barber shop. So I decided to go there first. They would likely be able to direct me to a good jewelry store anyway. I pulled over and parked. Then I got out and walked over to the barber shop. After the usual greetings and after I was seated, the barber asked me how I wanted my hair cut. I told him how to cut it the way Sue explained it to me.

421

Though I had to warn the barber about the bump on my head. Examining it, the barber asked how I got it. I just told him something heavy fell off a high shelf. The barber gave me some polite advice as to being careful about such things. For which I thanked him. As the barber cut my hair, we engaged in the usual chit chat. After my hair was cut, I went over to the cash register with him. Once I paid him, I also gave him a good tip. For which he thanked me.

Then I asked him where the nearest, reasonably priced jewelry store was. The barber asked me with a big smile if I was planning to get married. I grinned and told him yes. The barber grinned too and congratulated me as he shook my hand. For which I thanked him. After I got the directions and bidding each other a good day, I left the barbershop. I made my way to the jewelry store the barber had directed me to. It was within walking distance. So I just walked. Passing a pharmacy on the way, I went inside and got a small bottle of mouthwash. I wanted to be as fresh as possible when I kissed Sue again. Leaving there with the small bottle in my jacket pocket, I

walked over to the jewelry store. Going inside, there was a male and female salesperson in the store behind different counters. The male was near the counter that looked like it held engagement rings. I went up to the counter and looked around. The salesman came over and asked me what I was looking for. I told him what I wanted and what price range I was interested in. The salesman pointed to a number of rings. I looked around and asked to see a couple of them.

Trying to recall the size of Sue's ring finger, I took the one I chose and put it part way on my pinky finger. The size seemed right. The salesman said that if it didn't fit perfectly, they would resize it for free. I told him that I wanted something engraved on it and how that would effect any possible resizing. The salesman said, if necessary, they could resize it and re-engrave it for thirty dollars. I asked him how long it would take to engrave it. The salesman told me that they could do it while I waited. I told him that I didn't mind waiting for a while if necessary to do an extra good job. The salesman said it wouldn't be a problem. He then asked me if I would care to select some fonts for the lettering. I told him that all capital letters in a legible print would be fine. The salesman asked me if I would be interested in looking at any wedding rings. I figured it would probably be a good idea for Sue and I to pick those out together. So I told the salesman that I didn't need them right now. The salesman asked me what I wanted engraved on the engagement ring. I told him, "My heart is in your hands." The salesman gave me a kind smile and said, "I think you have a very lucky girl."

This caused me to grin and thank him. He then asked me how I would be paying for it. I told him "cash." Looking pleased, he said, "This won't take long." He took the ring into the back. While I waited, I looked around the store. The saleslady in the store asked me with a smile if I would like a cup of coffee. With a smile, I said, "No thank you" and continued looking around. As I did so, I wondered if I should tell Sue what I had engraved on the ring. If I let Sue find out on her own someday, she might think that I didn't tell her because I didn't think the words were important enough to mention. And I wouldn't want Sue to think that. So I decided I would tell her. But not right away. This thinking about Sue caused me to long to be with her again. It seemed that every second without

422

Sue was a torture. I just couldn't wait to again have my sweet lovable darling in my arms again. It wasn't too long before the salesman came back out with a smile on his face. I examined the engraving and it was just fine. Handing it back to the jeweler, he put it back into the small decorative, blue velvet case and brought it over to the checkout counter. All of this was with the usual small talk. Then I paid for the ring and left the store.

I wasn't in any big hurry to get back to the car. Knowing that Sue was

probably busy. So I walked around a bit and did some window shopping. About five minutes later, I saw the older couple Sue and I met in the park. Roger and Connie. They came out of a store and happened to head my way. They were both dressed casually, but nicely. It kind of made me self conscious that I was wearing the same thing I had been yesterday. They saw me. All of us grinned and waved at each other. We continued to grin as we got closer. When we got close enough, I said in a slightly louder than normal voice, "How are you two doing today." Connie said, "Just fine." After a few moments, Roger said, "How did your first kiss with Sue turn out." We stopped near each other. I didn't really want to let them know just how wonderfully things turned out. So I decided to stretch the truth a bit. I said, "If you two see Sue around anywhere, do you think you can keep a secret?" Connie said a little excitedly, "Our lips are sealed!" Then I pulled out the wedding ring box. As I did so, I said, "If things turn out like I hope, it turned out this well."

Then I opened the box. Connie got a bit of a surprised, sentimental look on her face. She also held her hands clasped together over her chest. Roger's grin widened a bit. Which made my grin widen a bit too. Connie said with a sentimental voice, "It's beautiful!" Roger said, "You work fast!" This caused us all to exchange chuckles. Then I said, "We talked and talked last night. I just know Sue is the girl for me. And I think Sue feels the same way. If things progress the way I hope they will, I'm not going to let such a beautiful girl wiggle off the hook." This made Roger and Connie laugh a little. Which I quickly joined in on. I closed the box and put it back into my pocket as we laughed a little. Then Connie said, "You sweet dear!" Connie then came over and gave me a brief kiss on the cheek. Then Connie backed away as she said, "I hope that things turn out the way you hope!" Roger put out his hand for me to shake as he said, "That goes for me too." I shook Roger's hand and said, "Thank you. Thank you both." Roger and I then released each other. Then Roger took hold of Connie's far shoulder from behind and her other shoulder from the front. At the same time, Connie put her arm around Roger's lower back.

Roger said, "I knew from the first second that I saw Connie that she had to be mine." Roger and Connie looked at each other lovingly. Connie said, "Oh darling!" Roger released Connie's shoulder that was closest to him. They then kissed each other lovingly. I gave them a sentimental smile as they did so. After a few moments, they parted their kiss again and smiled lovingly at each other. I said with a bit of a sentimental voice, "I'm so happy for you both." They both turned sentimental grins to me. I grinned too. Connie said, "Thank you!" Roger said, "I hope you're as happy as we are." They both briefly gave each other a little extra firm hug from the side. I said, "I hope so too. Well I have to do some



things before Sue and I meet later.” I held out my hand for Roger to shake as I said, “It’s been nice to run into you again.” Roger shook my hand and said, “For us too.” Then Connie released Roger and took my hand. As we gave each other’s hand a slight shake, Connie said, “Tell Sue that you met us and that we said hi. And tell Sue that I said she should make sure that she doesn’t let you get away.” I said, “Thank you. I will.” As we let go of each other’s hand, Connie said, “And make sure you send us those photos.”

This caused a bit of a surprised and slightly shocked look to come over my face. I said, “I will. But how inconsiderate of me!” I pulled out my phone and said, “I should get your picture too!” This made Roger and Connie beam grins. These they briefly turned to each other and then back to me. I briefly fiddled with the phone. Then I held the phone up and said, “Ready?” Roger and Connie embraced each other a little more from the side and placed the sides of their heads next to each other’s. Connie said, “Ready.” When they were both grinning, my phone flashed. Taking the picture. I then held the phone up to them for them to see the view screen. They released each other a little and grinned as they looked at the picture. Roger said, “Very nice.” Connie said, “Just wonderful.” Then I put the phone back into my pocket and said, “I’ll show Sue the picture later. She’ll be glad to see it. I’ll also send it to you with the others.” Roger held out his hand again to be shook as he said, “Thank you.” Connie released Roger and gave me another brief peck on the cheek and said, “Yes. Thank you.” We all let go of each other and took a step back. I said, “I have to be going. Have a good time.”

Roger said, “Good luck!” Connie said, “From me too!” I said, “Thank you. By.” Roger and Connie both said, “By.” We then continued on our way. After a couple moments, I could slightly hear Connie telling Roger how wonderful it was to run into me. They seemed to be such a nice couple. On the way back to the car, I spotted a store that looked like it sold fashionable, men’s clothing. I decided to go over there and pick out a more casual outfit. As far as my wardrobe on the whole went, I figured that I would let Sue shop for me. From my understanding of how things worked, girls just loved to shop. And I wanted Sue to do anything that brought Sue enjoyment. Also, I wanted to dress the way Sue wanted me to dress. I went over to the shop and looked around. Though I took my time. Figuring that Sue would probably still be busy. It probably took about a half hour before I was again walking in the direction of the car with the clothes I purchased. Once I was again in my car, I started it and turned on the air conditioner. Then I took out my phone and called Sue. Sue answered on the fifth ring and said, “Hello darling. I miss you.”

I grinned through our whole conversation. Because I was so glad to be talking to my sweet love. I said, “I miss you too sweetheart. You’re not driving are you.” Sue giggled and said, “No dearest. I pulled over.” I said, “Thank you sweetie.” Sue said, “You’re not driving are you.” I said, “No honey. I’m parked.” Sue said, “Good. I don’t want

anything happening to you either.” I said, “Guess who I ran into.” Sue said with a little curiosity in her voice, “Who.” I said, “That nice couple from the park. Roger and Connie.” Sue said with a happy tone to her voice, “Oh! How are they!” I said, “Just fine. Connie said to tell you that they said hi.

424

Connie also wanted me to tell you that you should make sure that you don't let me get away.” Sue said, “How sweet! But I don't plan to.” I said, “I'm going to head back to the apartment.” Sue said, “Do you remember where we went for a walk after dinner?” I said, “How could I forget.” Sue said sentimentally, “Oh darling.” Then Sue said in a more normal, loving voice, “Could you go hang around there for a while? I want to whip something up before you get back to the apartment.”

This news filled me with such joy. Sue basically said earlier that she could cook well. I guess Sue wanted to prove it. Then I said, “Are you going to make something nice?” Sue said, “I'll try. But I want everything to be just perfect.” I could just imagine my walking into the apartment and seeing Sue standing next to a finely set table with a loving, welcoming grin on her face. It was even possible that Sue might doll herself up even more. I said, “How long should I stay away my heart.” Sue said, “It won't be too long my love. I'll call you when I'm about ready. Ok?” I said, “Ok darling. But I can't wait!” Sue then said in a tender, loving voice, “I'll try to hurry honey bunch. I'll call when I'm ready. By darling.” I said in a loving voice, “Alright. By darling.” Then I hung the phone up. Now the anticipation of seeing Sue again was going to kill me! Though I did what Sue asked. I drove over to the park. On the way, I stopped by a store and got a bottle of water. When I was through there, I got back into my car and continued on to the park. After I was parked, I got out, went to the back of the car and opened the hatch. I then placed the ring in the compartment where the spare was kept.

After stowing it away, I took my water and closed the hatch. I found a shady bench and sat down. The whole time, thoughts of Sue and what she had planned ran through my head. As I knew it would be, my desire to be with my dear, sweet darling love was killing me. While I waited, I put the apartment key I had made on my keychain. It didn't do a lot to take my mind off the torturous wait. But it was something. After about forty minutes, my phone rang. Quickly retrieving my phone, I saw that it was Sue. I answered and said, “What kept you darling! I'm dying!” Sue giggled and said, “You can come back home sweetheart.” I said with a highly loving voice that was tinged with some loving, emphatic emotion, “Oh darling! Tell me again where I'm going!” Sue said with a highly loving, soft voice, “Home my darling. I want you to come to your home.” I said with basically the same kind of voice as before, “Oh darling! I'll be there as soon as I can my love!” Sue said with a bit more earnest, loving emphasis to her voice, “I want

you to drive carefully darling.” I said with a bit more calm, loving voice, “I will darling.” Sue then said with a more loving voice, “I’ll be waiting darling. By.” I said, “Goodby my love.” Then I hung up the phone.

## Chapter Nineteen My Love Awaits

I put my phone back into my pocket. Then I reached into my other pocket and pulled out the small, travel bottle of mouthwash. Then I used it. After some

425

good swishing and a gargle, I spit it out in the grass next to the bench. I put the cap back on the bottle and stuck it into my pocket. Then I walked a bit hurriedly to my car. When I was back on the road, trying to be careful as Sue asked, I drove as fast as I could without getting pulled over for speeding. It didn’t take me long to drive back to the apartment. After I parked, I hated to waste time with it, but I opened the back door and grabbed my bag of clothes. After closing the door, I hurried toward the apartment as I hit the keychain remote to lock the doors. I ran up the stairs and walked quickly to our apartment door. When I got there, I used my key to unlock the door. Then I opened the door. A surprised look came over my face. All of the lights in the apartment were off and the shades were drawn. I saw a path a little over three feet wide consisting of two rows of small candles. Each candle sat on a small tray.

In the hallway, the candles were about a foot from the walls. Starting about three feet from the front door, this path led to the closed bedroom door. There were about fifteen candles on each side with a trail of red rose petals along the center of the path. Apparently Sue’s talk of whipping something up had been a ruse to cover her real surprise. My surprised look was replaced by a joyful, loving look of anticipation. I was absolutely delighted! Then I went inside and dropped my bag of clothes off to the side. I then closed the door and locked it. Then I headed toward the bedroom at a fairly quick pace. When I got there, I threw the door opened and looked inside. A look of awe came over my face and my mouth dropped open. Sue was sitting in the middle and near the head of the bed. My dear love was leaning back against our pillows. Sue’s arms were propped up a little on either side by a couple decorative pillows. My vision of loveliness was beaming a grin at me. And what a vision Sue was!

The sexy clothing Sue was wearing made me wonder if she had stopped by a Victoria’s Secret store. But what I saw didn’t conceal many secrets. Sue had her knees alluringly bent a little to my side of the room. The nighty Sue was wearing was a white, see through, lacy top. It went down to just below Sue’s hips. Under which I could see

that Sue was wearing some wonderfully lacy and largely see through white panties. Sue's amazing, large perky breasts were a dream. They protruded wonderfully under Sue's top. Sue's silky, straight blond hair laid beautifully around her shoulders. There were lit candles here and there in the room. Though Sue had all the lights on. Which I really enjoyed. Because it helped me drink in this unbelievably wonderful sight. The trail of petals went from the bedroom door to the bed. There were also quite a few rose petals scattered around on top of the bed. Apparently, Sue had gotten some change. Because scattered on the bed, not only were there nice crisp hundred dollar bills, but a number of twenty dollar bills as well. Though most of this money was partially covered by rose petals.

I slowly walked along the trail of petals toward the bed with an agog expression on my face. Sue said with a soft, sexy voice, "Welcome home darling." I stopped a few feet from the bed and looked at Sue over with awe and passion on my face. After giving Sue a good looking over for a few extended moments, I said to Sue with an astonished tone to my voice, "You're so beautiful darling! I'm afraid if I touch you, you'll vanish like a wonderful vision!" A passionate look

426

came over Sue's face. Sue sexily writhed her body a little and said in a soft, passionate voice, "But I want you to touch me darling. As much as you can." A look of even greater passion came over my face. I started to hurriedly take off my clothes as I kicked off my shoes. All the while, we looked at each other passionately. As I got undressed, I said with a voice just dripping with passion, "Oh darling! Can I ever love you as much as you deserve!" Sue squirmed with pleasure a little and said with an alluring look on her face, "You know you can darling." Then Sue's eyes glazed over with passion as my rock hard penis came into view. I ripped off my pants, underwear and socks.

As I made my way into bed, Sue held out her loving arms to me. At the same time, I said fairly quickly with a voice just dripping with passion, "If I don't last very long darling." Sue started to take me into her arms as I added, "You'll only have yourself to blame." We started to kiss each other passionately as I first caressed one of Sue's breasts. Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. I started to caress more of Sue as Sue caressed me back. Including of course, my genitals. Then I started to take off Sue's nighty. We parted our kiss as I slipped it over Sue's head. Both of us looked at each other with glazed over looks of passion. At the same time, I said fairly quickly with a passionate voice, "You're such a vision darling!" I dropped Sue's top off the side of the bed as Sue said with a passionate voice, "So are you darling!" Then I backed away from Sue a little and took hold of Sue's hips. I then slid Sue back to lay more flat. Sue helped me do so as I said, "How can anybody be so beautiful!" Then I took hold of Sue's panties and pulled them off. I

looked at Sue's amazingly perfect muff pie as I did so with the same glazed over look of passion on my face.

I tossed Sue's panties aside too. Then I caressed Sue's mons pubis with one hand as I started to move back to Sue. I caressed my hand upwards more as Sue began to caress my genitals again. As I started to move on top of Sue, I said with a highly passionate voice, "Put me inside you darling." Sue said with a highly passionate voice, "Oh yes darling." Then my love did as I asked. A look of ecstasy came over both of our faces as I entered into Sue. Both of us also gave off moans of ecstasy. As usual, I will leave most of what followed to your imagination. It was such heaven. Through our lovemaking, here and there, there were short but impassioned statements of love or endearment. Along with all the usual and varied moans of pleasure here and there. Sue's moans of pleasure were music to my ears. No doubt Sue felt the same about mine. Here and there, there were also brief but passionate kisses. Along with all of the loving caressing going on. Sue must have been fairly worked up. Because it only took about twenty five seconds or so for my dream love to reach her first orgasm. Which pleased me to no end. As did Sue's cries of ecstasy. It also pleased me the way Sue squeezed my buttocks with both hands as she did so.

This all made me wish I could turn off my orgasmic response and really give it to Sue. But I had to pace myself and try to keep from orgasming as long as possible. Because, as always, Sue's pleasure was more important to me than mine. Nothing made me happier than making sure Sue as happy as possible. Sue and I made love for about the next five minutes. Which, considering the

427

circumstances, I thought was pretty good. In that time, I also managed to bring Sue to another orgasm. As I started to approach a climax myself, Sue also approached another orgasm. I started to speed up my actions. Which soon brought Sue to a climax. I climaxed myself. Both of us gave off cries of ecstasy as our juices erupted. I had heard that girls experienced orgasm for a little longer than guys. So I kept going at a slower pace until Sue settled down a bit. Then I stopped and, of course, remained inside Sue. Sue and I looked lovingly into each other's glazed over eyes with passion and ecstasy on our faces. Sue said with a slightly breathless, soft, loving voice, "Did I milk you good darling?" I said with an equally soft, loving and slightly breathless voice, "Oh yes darling. It's like you milked my soul." Sue said, "Oh darling!"

We began to kiss each other passionately. My dearest sweet love was such a dream! Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as we kissed. While I had the firmness to remain inside Sue, I rolled over onto my back and brought Sue with me. With Sue now on top, I caressed the hell out of her. This caused us to give off more moans of

pleasure. As I caressed Sue, my hands ran over a few rose petals that were still on her. Which was also endearing. At the same time, we also squirmed a little with pleasure against each other. After about forty seconds or so, I brushed Sue's hair off to one side and slid my lips to her ear. I said in a soft, loving voice that was almost a whisper, "My darling everything!" Then I gave Sue's ear a big, brief kiss. This made Sue writhe a little with pleasure as she also gave off a moan of pleasure. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with looks of ecstasy and passion on our faces. I then said, "My life!" Then I began to kiss Sue's ear again. At the same time, Sue massaged her genitals against mine and started to give off more moans of pleasure. I stopped kissing Sue and said, "Are you getting ready to cum again darling!?" Sue said with an impassioned voice, "Yes darling!"

That was all I need to hear. I started to roll Sue onto her back. This caused me to slip out of Sue, I quickly caressed my hand down to Sue's muff. I started to massage Sue's muff as I quickly slid my body down and brought my face down there. As I did so, Sue said with an impassioned voice, "Oh darling!" Sue's moist pubic hairs were a dream. Then I started massaging Sue's stiffened clitoris with my tongue. This may seem kind of gross to some people. Considering what I had just been doing. But being so caught up in the passion, I was far beyond caring. And the more of Sue's wonderful love juice I could ingest, the better. Sue gave off cries of passion as I mercilessly licked her. At the same time, Sue lifted her hips off the mattress. A few extended moments later, Sue exclaimed with a voice full of ecstasy, "I'm going to cum!" I repositioned my lips a little. Sue then gushed orgasmically and gave off cries of ecstasy. I eagerly took in what Sue had to give me through my massaging lips. Sue also writhed with ecstasy. As before, it was so far beyond heavenly, I couldn't begin to describe it.

After Sue settled down a bit, Sue lowered her hips onto the mattress again. I enjoyed Sue's clitoris a little more, then I started to kiss my way up Sue. As I did so, Sue said with a slightly breathless voice full of loving passion, "Oh darling! You make me so happy!" I paused at Sue's breasts. We looked at each other

428

with glazed over eyes of loving passion. I said with a highly loving voice as I lovingly caressed one of Sue's breasts, "You make me so happy too darling." After giving one of Sue's nipples a good suck, I kissed my way up toward Sue more. I kissed up the side of Sue's neck and to Sue's ear. After giving it a little loving, I kissed my way toward Sue's lips. We kissed each other passionately when our lips met. After about a minute, I parted my kiss from Sue enough for us to look into each other's passionate, loving faces. Then I started to roll over onto my back. At the same time, I gently pulled on Sue to indicate that I wanted her on top of me. Sue rolled over onto me and straddled my

hips. I said with a passionate voice, "Feed me your breasts darling." Sue said with a pleased, passionate voice, "Yes darling." Sue moved up a little and supported herself on her extended arms.

Then Sue hung her huge, luscious, firm breasts near my face. I lovingly caressed them both as I sucked on one of Sue's nipples. Sue had a loving, pleased look on her face as I enjoyed myself. After sucking on one nipple as I caressed and gently kneaded both breasts, I switched and started to suck on the other. For the next couple minutes, I would switch now and then from one breast to the other. Every now and then, I would give off a moan of pleasure. Then I stopped what I was doing. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. Then I said with a highly loving voice as I continued to lovingly caress Sue's breasts, "I can't wait darling until these bad puppies are producing milk." This made Sue grin as I added with a half kidding around voice, "I'm going to want your milk in my cereal, coffee and everything." Then I grinned too. Sue said, "You're going to have to save some for the baby darling." I said as I gave Sue's breasts a slight shake, "These massive jugs could feed an army!" This made Sue laugh. I laughed too. As we did so, Sue moved back down a little and laid on me. After our laughter, Sue said, "Thank you darling." I rolled Sue and I onto our sides. Then I said, "You're welcome darling."

I then grabbed a decorative pillow for Sue and one for myself. We embraced and entwined ourselves on our sides as we laid our heads on a pillow. Both Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other. After a few moments, I then took on a bit more of a somber countenance. Sue did too. I then said, "Speaking of babies darling, did you take care of that matter I asked you to?" Sue lovingly caressed the side of my head. We both looked at each other lovingly as Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "Yes I did darling. I'm all safe now." I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Thank you darling. But someday, you are going to get pregnant. I promise. I just hope all of the babying and pampering I give you while you're pregnant doesn't make you sick of me." Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too. Then Sue fully and tightly embraced me. I did the same with Sue as we tightly closed our eyes with highly loving expressions on our faces. Sue said, "Oh darling! That will never happen!" I rolled Sue a little more onto her back. After a few moments of more intensive nuzzling and caressing, I said, "Oh my love!" Then I started peppering the side of Sue's head with quick, loving kisses. These I moved around Sue's face and then to the other side of Sue's head.

After that, Sue did the same with me. When Sue was through, Sue kissed her way back to my lips. Then we kissed each other passionately. Both of us gave

429

off slight moans of pleasure as we also squirmed our bodies a little into each other. At the same time, we caressed our legs against each

other's a little more. As we had fairly often done before, a couple times during the kiss, we cocked our heads a little and switched the position of our heads. I brought my forehead to the right side of Sue's face. After a little kissing, we repositioned our faces so that my forehead was on the left side of Sue's face. After a few minutes of kissing and caressing, we slowly parted our kiss and fully embraced each other again. Sue and I lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together as we also lovingly caressed each other more. After about a minute of this, Sue said softly and lovingly, "Darling." We caressed our heads apart from each other and looked at each other lovingly. I gently caressed Sue's hair back a little as I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Yes darling." Sue said, "I hope you don't mind my misleading you about dinner."

This brought a loving smile to my face. Sue smiled lovingly at me too. My loving smile answered Sue's question. But I said, "How could I mind darling. Your feast for my eyes was far beyond what any food could do for my stomach." I then gave Sue a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, I slowly parted my kiss again. As we smiled lovingly at each other, I said, "I got something much better to eat anyway. I could live off your cum darling." This made Sue look at me more passionately. I looked at Sue in the same way. Sue said, "Oh my love!" We then kissed each other passionately. With plenty of tongue action going on. As we did so, Sue rolled me a little more onto my back. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Sue then said lovingly, "I don't think that's a nutritious enough of a diet darling." I said, "I suppose you're right darling." I then smiled lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. Sue then said, "We can order something later to keep up our strength." I said, "Ok darling." Then I caressed my hand down between us and caressed around just above Sue's pubic area.

I said, "Now you have another hoard of my little wiggly spermies inside you darling with nothing to do." This caused a bit more of a loving look to come over Sue's face. I took on a similar look. Sue said, "That's ok darling." Then Sue slid off to my side a little and caressed her hand downward. I caressed my hand from Sue's tummy, over her arm and to her back. Then Sue began to gently caress my testicles. This caused a more passionate look to come over our faces. Then Sue said, "I love having them in my stomach too. And they have nothing to do there either." I said, "Oh darling!" We then started to kiss each other passionately again. Sue continued to lovingly and gently caress my testicles as we did so. I found out earlier, when we were showering together, how much Sue enjoyed to caress them. And I was more than happy that Sue liked to do so. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I said with a tender, loving voice, "The money and the flower petals were a nice touch darling."

Sue said tenderly and lovingly, "I thought you would like it darling." I said, "You could have been laying on garbage. And all I would have seen was you." Sue said, "Oh darling!" We then started to kiss each



other passionately. Sue also briefly gave my testicles some extra caresses. As we kissed, Sue caressed her

430

hand from my testicles and started to caress more of my body with that hand. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss again and looked at each other lovingly. Sue ran her fingers through my hair on the side of my head as a pleased, loving smile came over her face. Sue said, "They cut your hair just right darling. I love having a little something to run my fingers through." I said, "Thank you darling." Then Sue took on more of a concerned look and said, "Does the lump on your head still hurt?" A little reassurance accompanied my loving smile as I said, "Not really darling." This news reassured Sue some. I said, "How does it feel." Sue caressed her hand up through my hair and gingerly caressed the lump. Then Sue said, "The swelling seems to have gone down."

We smiled at each other lovingly as Sue moved her hand and caressed my chest with it. I said, "I'm sure your kiss is causing it to heal faster." Sue said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a tender, loving kiss. After close to a minute, Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine. We smiled at each other lovingly. I then picked up one of the flower petals and gave it a bit of a lick. Then I stuck it to Sue's upper arm. We smiled at each other with a little wider, loving smiles. I said, "I should paper mache you with these darling." Sue grinned. Which made me grin too. Sue said, "That gives me an idea darling." Then Sue got up as we released each other. Sue then went to sit over my thighs. I was again taken with how beautiful and sexy Sue was. Sue picked up a flower petal and gave it a good lick. Seeing Sue use her tongue was so sexy. Then Sue pasted the petal to my penis. This made us both laugh. Afterwards, I said, "I hope those are clean enough." Sue said with a grin, "They are darling. The place I got them from grows them organically and washes them before putting them in the cooler." Sue then licked another petal and pasted it near the other.

Then Sue said, "Some restaurants and bakeries use them as a garnish." I leaned up on my elbows and said, "Are you going to do my whole wiener darling?" Sue was picking up another petal as I said so. With a happy face, Sue pursed her lips together. Though the outer edges were upturned a little in a smile. Sue nodded her head a little a few times in the affirmative and hummed in the affirmative, "Um hum!" It was so utterly adorable, I couldn't help but laugh a little with delight. Sue also laughed. After the laughter, I pulled a pillow under my head and leaned back with my arms a little above my head. I also rested the back of my head in my hands. Sue licked the petal and pasted it to my penis. Both of us had happy, loving smiles on our faces. I was happy to let Sue have some fun with her play toy. Sue then said as she went for another petal, "Your wiener is as sweet as a

flower darling. I thought this would look nice.” Then Sue licked another petal and stuck it to me. I said, “I hope you don’t take too long darling. Or you’ll be needing more petals.” We briefly grinned at each other before Sue reached for another petal. Then Sue turned her grin back to me. We were both deliriously happy.

Sue said, “I’ll try darling. But haste makes waste.” Then Sue speeded up her actions a little. It was such a joy to watch Sue have fun with her new play toy. Sue took some time to make sure that the petals conformed to the head of my penis. When Sue was through, Sue picked up a few of the hundreds and laid

431

them under my penis. Sue laid them one next to and above the other horizontally. Even in my more flaccid state, my penis easily reached halfway across the third bill. With a happy, grinning face of accomplishment, Sue said fairly quickly, “Hold on darling!” Sue then got out of bed and happily scampered over to her dresser where she had her purse. Then Sue reached into it and retrieved her phone. This caused me to laugh as Sue hurried back over to the bed. I knew what Sue had in mind. I said with a mirth filled voice, “I hope you’re not going to show that to anybody.” Sue said with a wry tone to her voice, “I’ll never tell.” This made me laugh again. Sue did too. Then Sue looked at the view screen as she kneeled on the bed. Sue was so utterly beautiful and sexy, how could I refuse her anything.

Then Sue then leaned in for a bit of a closeup. The phone then flashed. Sue looked at the picture with a big grin on her face. Then Sue walked over on her hands and knees to me. Sue then came over and laid next to me. I moved my arms and put one under Sue. As Sue laid there propped up on an elbow, Sue proudly showed me the picture she had taken. When I looked at it, I laughed again. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the laughter, I said, “You’re so silly darling. I love you so much.” Sue expression took on more of a loving tone. Mine did too. Then Sue said, “I love you so much too darling.” We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I said, “Set up on me again darling and bring your wonderful boobies close.” Sue said lovingly, “Ok darling.” Then Sue sat up. Sue placed her phone on the night stand and then straddled me. With her arms extended to support herself, Sue then hung her amazing, luscious breasts within easy reach. As I caressed Sue’s breasts, I sucked a little on one of Sue’s nipples.

I then grabbed a petal and gave it a good lick. Then I put it on Sue’s wonderfully protruding, fairly thick nipple. I then formed the petal over it to make it stick. Then I did the same with Sue’s other nipple. I then said, “Lean up darling and let me take a look.” This made Sue grin. Which made me grin too. Sue leaned back on her knees and sat up. Then Sue put her arms behind her head and stuck her amazing breasts out a little. Sue turned her upper body a few times to make her

breasts sway a little and said, "Whaddya think." It caused feelings of arousal to run through my loins. I said with a little passion in my loving voice, "Very nice darling. What do you think." Sue looked down at her nipples with a smile on her face. Then Sue moved her hands from behind her head and reached under her breasts. Sue then lifted them a little to get an even better look at her nipples. This too was extraordinarily sexy. Sue said, "Very nice." Then Sue let her breasts go. I reached for Sue's breasts as I said, "Now let's see how edible the petals are."

A passionate look came over my face again as Sue brought her breasts to me. I caressed them and ate one of the petals off Sue's nipple. Giving off a slight moan of pleasure as I did so. After eating it and sucking on Sue's nipple a little, I then went to work on Sue's other nipple. The whole time, Sue had a loving, pleased smile on her face. After I was through with that, I smiled lovingly at Sue. Which Sue did with me. I said, "I don't think your petals are fitting anymore darling." Sue said lovingly, "Oh goodie!" Sue moved off me and looked at my

432

penis with a little more passion on her face. I was fully erect. Sue looked at me lovingly and said, "I guess they don't." I grinned and said, "Would you like to take another picture?" Sue was grinning too at this point. Sue said, "Sure!" Then Sue reached for her phone and grabbed it. Sue then went to kneel between my calves. Then Sue sat the phone aside and rearranged the money. This time, my penis extended beyond the width of the three bills. Sue also picked up a couple of the petals that had come off and gave them a lick before reattaching them.

Then Sue picked up her phone and prepared to take a picture. The phone then flashed. After that, Sue said with a loving grin, "That will make a good before and after picture." Then Sue set the phone aside and started peeling petals off my penis. The first one Sue took off from the head of my penis, Sue ate. Both of our expressions turned to passion as Sue did so. Sue just peeled off the other petals and sat them aside. When Sue was through, Sue turned her passionate look to me as she backed away a little. Then Sue took hold of my penis and said with a passionate voice, "Now for some nutrition for me darling." Leaving the bills where they were, Sue then started pleasuring me orally. My passionate look turned to one of ecstasy as I gave out a moan of ecstasy. As before, Sue started out slowly and with much relish. At the same time, Sue gently caressed my testicles with one hand. Sue also gave out an encumbered moan of pleasure. Then, with a look of ecstasy on my face of course, I said with a voice full of ecstasy, "Oh! Darling!" Through the whole process, here and there, I would make brief but impassioned statements of love or endearment. That is, when I wasn't giving off moans or sighs of ecstasy.

Sue certainly enjoyed herself. At a couple of points, Sue swallowed

me down farther than I thought it was possible for Sue to do. It was quite impressive. After about a couple minutes, I did that thing Sue and I had come to do to enhance each other's enjoyment. I basically told Sue with a voice full of ecstasy that I was about to orgasm. Needless to say, this was information that Sue happily received. A couple moments later, Sue happily received something else. I gave out calls of ecstasy as I exploded. Sue gave off encumbered moans of pleasure. Again, it was all just too wonderful to describe. About thirty seconds later, when I was less rigid, Sue briefly swallowed me down again. Taking me down further than she had before. I hoped that in Sue's enthusiasm, she didn't hurt herself. About thirty seconds alter, Sue stopped what she was doing and started to kiss her way up to me. As Sue did so, I said with a voice full of loving passion as I lovingly caressed her, "Oh my dearest darling!" Once Sue got near me, we looked at each other passionately. Though my expression was a bit more passionate.

Then Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "I just love milking you darling. It's interesting how your balls shrivel up when you're about to give milk. How did I do." I caressed Sue's cheek as my passionate look began to be replaced by more of a loving look. Sue lightly closed her eyes and caressed my hand back a little with her cheek. As Sue did so, I said with a highly loving voice, "Just fine darling." Then Sue turned back to me and slowly opened her loving eyes. After a couple moments, I grinned. Which made Sue grin too. I then said with a  
433

mock, determined look and tone to my voice, "But I don't care what you do. I'm not going to propose to you until I'm good and ready." This made Sue laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, we grinned lovingly at each other. Then I took on a bit of a concerned look. Sue gave me a bit of a somber, questioning look. I said, "That swallowing thing you did was nice darling. But it isn't any better than the other things you do." Knowing the reason for my concern, Sue took on more of a loving look. I then said, "It certainly isn't worth hurting yourself over."

Then Sue lovingly caressed my cheek with her hand. I slowly closed my eyes and caressed the palm of Sue's hand back with my cheek. Then I turned back to Sue and slowly opened my loving eyes again. Sue said, "I'll try to be careful darling. But I just love your dick so much." We then kissed each other passionately. Both of us gave off a slight moans of pleasure. I rolled Sue a little more on her back to give her a turn to caress me more. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then I lightly pulled on Sue to indicate that I wanted her to lay on her side facing me. That was all it took for Sue to do so. As we laid on our sides facing each other, I said softly and lovingly, "Just a moment darling." I moved the smaller decorative pillows and grabbed one of the normal ones for

my love to lay her dear, sweet head on. Then I got another pillow for me to lay my head on. Then we entwined ourselves a little more as we looked at each other lovingly. I then said, "I love you so much darling." Sue gently caressed the side of my head and then my cheek. I lightly closed my eyes to let myself be swept away a little by the pleasure of it. At the same time, I again caressed the palm of Sue's hand back a little with my cheek. Then I turned back to Sue and slowly opened my loving eyes.

Sue said with the same soft, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." I then gently caressed Sue's cheek. Sue caressed my arm and lightly closed her eyes. Then Sue again caressed my hand back a little with her cheek. Sue then turned back to me and slowly opened her loving eyes. We brought our lips together and lovingly kissed each other for about a minute. Then I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other lovingly as I laid my head back down on the pillow. After a few extended moments of drinking in each other's love through our eyes, Sue smiled lovingly at me. I did the same with Sue. Sue said, "You're such a naughty boy." This made me grin. Which Sue did too. Then Sue added, "It makes me so happy." I said, "And you're such a naughty girl. It makes me so happy too." We gave each other a loving kiss. After about thirty seconds or so, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Then a more somber look came over my face. Sue took on the same sort of look as I said, "You know darling. All of our lovemaking seems so natural. Almost familiar at times. Sometimes it almost seems like something we've done before we first made love."

Then Sue said, "From time to time, I kind of get the same impression darling. Even my swallowing you down gave me a slight, familiar feeling for a moment. But as I said, in our missing time together, I would have known if we had vaginal intercourse. And I would doubt that we had oral sex." I said, "I doubt it too darling. But I don't doubt that I would have thought about how nice it would be."

434

Though I had no idea how wonderful it is." This caused a more loving look to come over Sue's face. I took on the same kind of look. Sue said, "Oh darling!"

Then Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as I rolled Sue a little more onto her back. After about a minute and a half, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then a more emotional look started to come over my face. Sue took on the same kind of look as tears started to well up in my eyes. I said with some emotion in my voice, "Tell me again I'm home darling." Tears were welling up in Sue's eyes too by this time. Sue said with some emotion in her voice as she took hold of my head, "Put your ear on my chest darling." I did as Sue asked as Sue directed my ear to her chest.

Sue said softly with a little emotion to her voice, "Can you hear my heartbeat darling?" I listened for a moment as tears started to flow from my eyes. Sue's wonderful heartbeat came into my ear. I said with a bit of a choked up voice, "Yes darling!" Sue was crying at this point as she said through her tears, "That's your home darling!" I embraced Sue firmly and said tearfully, "Oh darling!" Keeping my ear to Sue's heart, I moved my legs a little as I grasped Sue with one arm. With my other arm, I shoved myself up as I picked Sue up. I sat up and sat back on my calves as I brought Sue with me. Sue wrapped her legs around my hips as I grasped Sue with my other arm. My tears ran down my face. Some of which also ran down one of Sue's breasts. Sue also pressed her cheek into the top of my head. It was a little close to the slightly painful lump I had there. But I didn't care. Nothing could have been better for it than Sue's tears anyway. I said with a soft, tearful voice, "Oh darling! How can I love you so much!" Sue said tearfully, "Oh darling!" The sound of Sue's heartbeat sent pulses of love through my body. After about thirty seconds of this tearful embrace, we began to caress each other a little more.

We must have cried in each other's embrace for about another two and a half minutes. Then I parted myself a little from Sue. We looked at each other with tear moistened, emotional looks of love as I moved Sue off me. I then went to kneel in front of Sue as I said with a soft, emotional, yet loving voice, "Listen to my heart darling." Sue put her ear to my chest as we embraced again. I said with a soft, loving voice, "Can you hear my heart darling?" A moment later, Sue gave me a brief, extra firm embrace. At the same time, Sue said with an emotional tone to her soft voice, "Yes darling!" As I lovingly nuzzled Sue's head with my cheek, I said, "It can only beat as long as you're happy darling." Sue said, "Oh my love!" This got our tears flowing again. Sue and I embraced each other pretty much the same way we did the last time. After about another few minutes, we parted enough to look into each other's emotional, loving faces. Then we began to kiss each other passionately. After a few extended moments, we laid back down as we kissed and caressed each other. Sue and I kissed each other for about the next two minutes. Before we stopped, I pulled on Sue for us to lay on our sides together. We entwined ourselves when we did so.

Then Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. As we laid our heads on the pillows, we both looked deeply and lovingly into each other's eyes for about the next five minutes. Both of us tried our best to transmit

435

our love through our loving gaze. Afterward, I was the first to speak. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "I'm so happy that you're my lady." Sue said with a gentle loving voice, "And I'm so happy that you're my gentleman." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. A couple

moments after our kiss, Sue said, "I'm so happy that you're my man." I said, "And I'm so happy that you're my woman." We then gave each other another brief but loving kiss. A couple moments after the kiss, I said, "I'm so happy that you're my girl." This brought a loving smile to Sue's face. I smiled lovingly at Sue too. Sue said, "And I'm so happy that you're my guy." We then gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Sue and I switched back and forth like this. We went through hottie and hunk; chick and dude and gal and fella.

Afterwards, Sue asked me what she could do to give me more pleasure during oral sex. This brought more loving looks to our faces as I told Sue that what she did was wonderful as it was. But I did make a couple suggestions as to what she might try. Then I asked Sue what I could do to increase her pleasure. Sue said that what I did was fantastic. But gave me a couple suggestions as to what I might try from time to time. I then smiled lovingly at Sue again. Sue did the same with me. I told Sue that I had heard about a technique that I used on her. Then I asked Sue if she would like to know what it was. Sue happily said that she would. I told Sue that I wrote on her clitoris with my tongue in big, capital letters. Also, that I wrote loving things. Sue was awash with happiness and curiosity as she asked me what I wrote. I told Sue that some of them were pretty naughty. But Sue said that she didn't care. Some of the things I told Sue that I had written with my tongue were far more explicit than anything you've seen me write. Things I told Sue made Sue take on various expressions. Some were a little of surprise, slightly embarrassed grins or looks of passion.

Then I told Sue that I wrote other things. But one was a loving little secret that I was going to keep to myself for now. This again caused Sue to take on a passionate look. Which did too. Then Sue and I passionately kissed and caressed each other. As Sue and I kissed, I became aroused again. Sue used this opportunity to put to use some of the oral sex suggestions I had made. I didn't quite expect them to turn out to be as wonderful as they turned out to be. When it came to be my turn to orally pleasure Sue, I passionately told Sue that I would write something especially nice for her. I made sure that it was a nice long love letter. Four times during the course of which, I was able to drink down more of the heavenly, orgasmic love juice Sue gave me. After everything ended and we were again in a passionate, loving embrace, Sue asked me what I wrote. The loving things I told Sue brought tears to her eyes. It also brought tears to my eyes. Needless to say, there were some emotional, passionate kisses and caresses going on. Sometimes with me on top of Sue and sometimes with Sue on top of me.

After about ten minutes of this, I asked Sue if she would like to call for some order out. Which Sue happily agreed to. Sue and I then got up and picked up the money. As with all the time we spent together, we talked lovingly to each other. Sue put the money away. We then got dressed. Sue put on her sexy panties and nighty. I put on my underwear, pants and shirt. As Sue arranged to

have some food delivered, I picked up the candles that Sue had made a trail of. While we waited, Sue got my phone and emailed that nice couple Roger and Connie the pictures we promised. As Sue did so, I used Sue's vacuum cleaner to pick up the rose petals that were outside the bedroom. When I was all through with that, Sue sat across my lap at the table. We talked lovingly, with some loving kisses here and there, as we waited for the food. The food came about fifteen minutes later. We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue got up and happily scampered to the bedroom. When Sue was in our bedroom, I answered the door and gave the delivery person a couple twenty's. Then I took the food and told him to keep the change.

The food Sue had ordered was Chinese food. After I had the food and the door locked, Sue came out of the bedroom. With the usual, loving chitchat, we sat at the table with our chairs near each other's and lovingly fed each other. It wasn't long after we finished eating that I got a raging erection. I told Sue that I had heard of newlyweds that did it so much, they became sore. And that I didn't want the same thing to happen to us. Sue basically agreed to postpone our carnal lusts for a little while. So we went into the bathroom, brushed our teeth and got cleaned up a little. After that, we went into the bedroom. Sue turned off most of the lights and blew out the remaining lit candles. The rest of the night progressed as you might expect. After we had been in bed again for about an hour, lovingly enjoying each other's company and conversation, Sue and I had vaginal intercourse. Though Sue was on top. My dear, sweet, darling love made sure to put a little extra breast jiggling into it for me. Which I of course enjoyed immensely. Our lovemaking was of course also accompanied with all of the wonderfully usual moans of ecstasy here and there. Along with the interspersed, brief but impassioned comments of love or endearment.

Later on, Sue and I had vaginal intercourse again. This time with me on top. As usual, it was heavenly. After enjoying some post coital loving, Sue and I fell asleep in each other's loving embrace. I woke up in the middle of the night with another raging erection. So I moved a little and looked at Sue. My eyes were adjusted to the dim light in the room. Sue looked like a sleeping angel. It sent a wave of love through me. I really hated to wake my dear sweet love. But I knew that Sue wouldn't mind. I gently and lovingly started placing kisses around Sue's face. Sue mumbled a little. It was so adorable, it caused another wave of love to surge through me. I then placed a soft, loving kiss on Sue's lips. Then I backed away a little as I gently caressed Sue. Sue opened sleepy, but loving eyes and saw me looking at her with a loving look. This brought a loving smile to Sue's face as Sue said with a slightly sleepy voice, "What is it darling." I said with a soft, loving voice as Sue started to caress me a little, "I was woke up by a terrible stiffie darling. I hope you don't mind me waking you." Sue caressed



her hand down as a more passionate look came over her face. A passionate look came over my face too as Sue gently caressed my penis.

Sue said with a passionate voice, "Oh darling. I'll never mind being woken up for a stiffie." I said, "Oh darling!" We began to kiss each other passionately. Both of us gave off moans of pleasure as Sue spread her thighs a little and pulled gently on my penis. I got on top of Sue as we kissed. Then Sue guided

437

my penis to where it needed to go. We parted our kiss and gave off moans of ecstasy as my penis slid into Sue. Again, most of what followed I will leave to your imagination. Besides, with everything that there was to describe, it would probably take longer to write and for you to read than the actual act of lovemaking took. As wonderfully usual, there were the varied moans or sighs of ecstasy here and there. There were also the interspersed, brief but impassioned statements of love or endearment. Along with some brief but passionate kisses here and there. There were of course also Sue's cries of ecstasy when I brought my dear sweet love to an orgasm. Which of course pleased me to no end. Sue and I made love for about the next ten minutes. Through the course of our lovemaking, I caused Sue to orgasm three times. Another one was coming up when I decided it was time to join Sue. So I speeded up my actions.

About fifteen seconds later, we both gave off cries of orgasmic ecstasy. After about another fifteen seconds, I stopped my actions. Sue said passionately, "Stay inside me darling." Then Sue rolled me onto my back and laid on top of me. I used my hands to move Sue's hair back a little, Sue said with a passionate voice, "I love you so much darling." I said, "I love you so much too darling." We kissed passionately for a bit as we caressed each other. Afterwards, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then Sue moved her pillow to the side of my head. Sue then laid her head partially between my shoulder and neck, with part of her head also on the pillow. Then Sue made herself comfortable on top of me. I said with a gentle, highly loving voice, "Should we uncouple darling?" Sue squirmed slightly on top of me and gave me a little extra caress. Then Sue said with a slightly sleepy, loving voice, "I want your wiener inside me always darling." I caressed Sue a little more and said, "I love you so much darling." Sue kissed me near my ear and squirmed with pleasure slightly into me again. At the same time, Sue caressed me a little more.

Then Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." We began to relax. Both of us were sexually satisfied and comfortable. It was so utterly wonderful. As I got sleepier, my caresses also diminished. Soon, we were asleep again. With Sue on top of me of course and me still inside Sue. At some point during the

night, Sue and I had become disconnected. When we woke up the next morning, Sue was laying partially on me and I had an arm around Sue. We were both as happy as you might expect. After our mourning greeting, kiss and loving conversation, we made love again. A while after that, Sue and I took turns using the bathroom. Then we took a shower together. Which again was a heavenly experience. About a half hour after we were through, Becky called Sue. There was simply no putting Becky off any longer. So we planned to go out and do whatever fun outdoor activity we decided on. Sue and I got dressed. I put on the nice casual clothes that I bought. My shirt was a nicely tailored, short sleeve pull over shirt. The collar was slightly V-necked with a folded over collar. Its color was a dark green. This I had tucked into some rather expensive blue jeans. With my jeans, I wore a black belt. I had also bought a rather expensive pair of mostly black tennis shoes.

Sue put on a yellow bikini. I really liked helping Sue do up her top. Sue was also glad to know that this was the first time that I had done this also. Which of

438

course led to some passionate kissing. Afterward, Sue put on an attractive yellow T-shirt over her bikini. On the front, it had three words in bold black letters. The top word said, "GET." Over Sue's breasts, it had, "OVER." Below it, there was the word, "IT" I suppose if any guys were ogling Sue because of how impressive her breasts were, (along with everything else) her answer was on the shirt. Also, Sue had on a slightly loose fitting pair of beige colored shorts. Sue also wore some stylish, white tennis shoes with kind of short sweat socks. When we left to do whatever, we planned to pop into a store somewhere and pick up something for me more appropriate for outdoor activity. Sue sat across my lap at the kitchen table as we had coffee and chatted lovingly. It took Becky about a half hour to come over. Sue answered the door. As Sue and Becky excitedly greeted each other, I got up with a beaming grin and went a little closer to them. I had seen pictures of Becky. She was even prettier in person. Becky was blond too. Though not quite as blond as Sue. She wasn't quite as stunningly beautiful as Sue. Which meant that Becky was only a knock out.

She had a killer body too. Though Becky didn't have quite the same thing going on in the breast department as Sue. But she was far from small. I would say that she had to be a thirty six D cup. If not a little larger. She was wearing clothing like Sue with a bikini underneath. Becky wore a light blue T-shirt with a cutely drawn picture of a fuzzy kitten on the front. She was also wearing some slightly loose fitting dark blue shorts. Becky also wore stylish white tennis shoes and socks kind of like Sue's. After their greeting, Becky turned her happy grin to me and said, "So this is the mysterious Erik!" I walked up as Sue

introduced us. We shook hands and greeted each other. I then said, "Wherever we go, all the guys who see me are going to be so jealous of my being with two such hot chicks." This made Sue and Becky giggle delightedly. Then Becky said with a wide, beaming grin, "Thank you! You're so sweet! You wouldn't happen to have a brother would you?" This made us all chuckle. Then I told Becky that I didn't.

After a bit more happy conversation, we left the apartment. I decided that we would take my car. On the way, we began to talk about what to do. There was quite a lot to do. One of the things Sue had told me about was a zip line tour. So I told them that I wanted to do that first. I had my own reasons for wanting to do so. That, I kept to myself. Becky and Sue happily agreed with my choice. We stopped by a store like we planned. I let Sue and Becky pick out some outdoor activity clothing for me. They were just men's shorts and a T-shirt. I then went into a changing room to put them on. Sue paid for the clothing as I did so. I had the attendant give me a bag for my other clothing. Then we left the store. When we got back to the car, I opened the back. I put my clothing inside. Though my phone and wallet I gave to Sue to put into her purse. Then we were on our way again. Happily chatting about this and that as usual. When we got to the zip line place, we had to wait about ten minutes to start the tour. As we waited, Becky used her phone to take a selfie of us all. (We took some others throughout the day with our phones)

We then went on the zip line tour. There was the usual bits of chit chat going on here and there with the other people who were going on the zip line tour also. I decided to go first. It was on the second leg of the zip line tour that, between

439

Sue, Becky and myself, I asked Sue to go first. Which Sue happily agreed to. We of course hooted and hollered as Sue started out. I then said to Becky, "Becky. Can I trust you with a secret?" Becky said with a big grin, "Sure!" Then I said in a low voice as we stepped away from the few other people who were around, "I'll be really mad if you give it away!" Becky said in a low voice, "You can trust me! I promise!" I said, "It may have been a whirlwind romance. But Sue and I are terribly in love." This made Becky take on a happier, sentimental look as I added, "There's something I would like you to do for me." Becky said, "Ok!" I held up the edge of my hand to Becky's ear and quickly whispered into her ear what I had planned for tomorrow. A thrilled look came over Becky's face. Becky also held her hands clasped over her chest. Then I parted from Becky. Both of us looked at each other with beaming grins. Though Becky looked a little more sentimental and excited. I said in a low voice, "Remember! You can't let on!"

Becky seemed to be trying to restrain herself as she said in a low voice also, "Don't worry! I won't!" We then turned back to see Sue's

progress. Sue was just reaching the next landing. Becky was the next to go. The rest of the tour went as you might expect. It was a lot of fun. We were given a ride back near to the entrance when we were all through. The next place we went to was a place with a roller coaster. We spent the rest of the day having fun there. Afterwards, we went to a restaurant to have a light snack. We already had a couple snacks earlier. After we did that, we went back to my car to get ready to drive back to our apartment. It had been a wonderful day. Becky and I had become good buddies. Which pleased Sue. On the way back, I told Sue that one of the things I wanted to do the next day was do some shopping. Which Sue was pleased to do. I then asked Becky if she would like to join us. Knowing what else I had planned for the next day, Becky readily and happily agreed to join us. Though to keep our secret, Becky didn't act too excited to join us tomorrow.

When Sue again looked forward as Sue continued to talk, Becky and I looked at each other in the rear view mirror. Knowing what else I had planned for the next day, Becky gave me a knowing wink. Which widened both of our smiles a bit. When we got back to the apartment, we got out of the car. I went to the back to retrieve my clothes. As I did so, Sue asked Becky if she wanted to come up. Becky said, "I've been enough of a third wheel as it is. But shopping tomorrow sounds like fun." As Becky and Sue stood next to each other, Becky took on a sentimental look. Sue did too. Becky then said, "Erik is just the kind of guy you deserve!" Sue said, "Oh Becky!" Then Sue and Becky hugged. Sue said, "I'm so happy!" I locked the car and started to walk up on this touching scene with my bag of clothes. As I neared them, Sue said with a sentimental tone to her voice, "I know you'll find a guy of your own." Becky and Sue parted a bit and took each other's hands. Becky said, "You know me. I'm picky." Becky and Sue giggled a little. I put a hand on Sue's far shoulder and said, "Whoever he turns out to be, he'll be a lucky guy."

Sue and Becky looked at me with sentimental, appreciative smiles. They released each other's hands. Sue put an arm around my lower back as Becky said, "Thank you! You're just the sweetest thing!" Then Becky stepped over to

440

me and gave me a kiss on my cheek. Becky then took a step back and said, "You two have fun. And don't do anything I wouldn't do." This caused Sue and I to laugh a little. Which Becky quickly joined in on. Afterwards, Becky started walking to her car as she turned toward Sue and I. We were all grinning as Becky said to Sue, "I'll call you tomorrow!" Sue said, "Ok! We'll be waiting!" Sue and I waited until Becky was in her car and had turned it on. Then we all gave each other a wave. Becky then pulled out and went on her way. As Sue and I held each other, I walked around Sue as Sue stepped back. Then we headed for the apartment. As we did so, we of course chatted happily.

I asked Sue how far away Becky lived. After Sue told me, I told Sue that Becky was a real sweetheart. I also told Sue that I was glad that she had such a good friend. For which Sue thanked me. Sue also said that she was glad that Becky liked me. But that was no big surprise.

By this point, we were at the apartment door. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue reached into her purse for the keys. Sue then opened the door. I said, "Hold on darling." Sue put her keys in her purse as she said, "What for darling." Then I handed Sue the handle to my bag of clothes and said, "Take this darling." Sue did as I asked. I then bent down and put my left arm behind Sue's legs and my right arm around Sue's lower back. A big grin came over Sue's face, as she knew what I was up to. I then picked my sweet darling love up and cradled her in my arms. Sue said with a loving voice, "But we're not newlyweds darling." I was grinning too as I said with a loving voice, "Why should they have all the fun. Besides, if someday we decide to not live in sin anymore, I'm going to need the practice." We both grinned lovingly at each other as I carried Sue inside. Once inside, I closed the door with my foot. Both our grins diminished to big, loving smiles. Then I removed my hand from around Sue's side. Though I still held Sue's back with that arm. I then flipped on a light switch and then turned the latch to the door.

After that, Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other again as I started to carry Sue to the bedroom. I said lovingly to Sue, "I hope you got all nice and sweaty today darling." This made Sue grin lovingly at me. I did the same with Sue. Then Sue said with a loving voice, "Why's that darling." I said, "I'm not that weird about it, but there was a famous letter that Napoleon (Sue's face lit up with a bit of happy surprise at this point. Apparently Sue knew what I was talking about) sent to Josephine." Sue said, "I know what you're talking about! He sent her a letter telling her that he would be home in a couple weeks and that he didn't want her to bathe." We were just inside the bedroom at this point. I flipped the light switch on. Then I said lovingly to Sue, "That's right darling. I'm dying to smell some of your natural bodily scent." At this point, we were near the bed. What I said made Sue smile at me a little more lovingly at me as I sat her on her feet. As I stood erect again, Sue dropped the bag of clothes and her purse to the floor. I smiled more lovingly at Sue too as we held each other in a loose embrace.

Then I said, "And I'm hoping it makes you taste a little more wonderful too darling." This caused a more passionate look to come over Sue's face. I took on the same sort of look. Sue said with a passionate voice, "Oh darling!" We

441

then started to kiss each other passionately. Both of us gave slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. At the same time, we also embraced each other more fully. I also started to

become aroused. After about thirty seconds of kissing and caressing, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Sue said lovingly, "Let's get our shoes off darling." We began to release each other as I said lovingly, "Ok darling." Sue went to set on the edge of the bed. I sat on the edge of the bed near Sue and we began to untie our tennis shoes. Once Sue got her second shoe and sock off, I stopped what I was doing and reached for Sue's sock. I said, "Let me see that darling." Sue handed it to me with a loving smile. I took the sock and gave it a good sniff. This made Sue smile at me a little more lovingly. I then smiled at Sue with a pleased, loving smile and hummed, "Umm." Then I said, "Yummy." As I dropped the sock to the side, Sue said lovingly, "Let me see yours darling."

I took off my remaining sock and handed it to Sue. Sue then gave it a good sniff. Afterwards, Sue lowered the sock as we smiled lovingly at each other. Sue hummed, "Umm." Then Sue said lovingly, "I love your scent too darling." Sue then dropped the sock and we stood up. We then faced each other as I pulled up on Sue's T-shirt. Sue raised her arms above her head as I pulled the shirt up. Once I got the shirt off, I held onto Sue's fingers and said, "Keep your hands there darling." Sue kept her arms raised as I let the shirt drop off to the side. Then I lovingly caressed Sue around her sides and back as I brought my nose down to her armpit. I gave it a good sniff. It didn't smell as gamy as I would have liked it to have. Then I gave it a good lick. This made Sue flinch a little and give out a little giggle. Then Sue said, "That tickles!" I stood erect again as we grinned at each other. Sue lowered her arms. Then I smacked my lips a little and said, "A little heavy on the deodorant, but nice." I then looked at Sue more lovingly. Sue looked at me in the same way as I said, "I could lick you clean darling." This made Sue look at me more passionately. I looked at Sue in the same way as Sue said passionately, "Oh darling!"

We then began to kiss each other passionately as we held each other in a caress filled embrace. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. After a few extended moments of this, I paused my caressing and started to untie Sue's bikini top. Once I had it undone, I pulled it out from between us and started to caress Sue's breasts. This made us give off more slight moans of pleasure. After a few moments, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Then Sue pulled up on my shirt. I released Sue's breasts. Once my arms were raised and Sue took off my shirt, Sue said with a passionate voice, "Keep your arms there darling." I did as Sue asked. Sue dropped my shirt off to the side and caressed me around my sides and back. Then Sue brought her nose to my armpit. Sue gave it a good sniff. Then Sue gave it a lick just below my underarm hair. Then Sue stood erect again as I lowered my arms. We looked at each other passionately. Then Sue smacked her lips and said, "Yummy." We then started to kiss each other passionately again.

As we did so, we both began to lower each other's shorts with loving

caresses. I also took down Sue's bikini bottoms and Sue took down my underwear. As

442

Sue did so, Sue lovingly caressed my stiffened penis and then my testicles. All of which made me give off a little added moan of pleasure. I gave Sue's pubic area a couple loving, kneading caresses as I did so. Which also made Sue give off a little extra moan of pleasure. Once our things were lowered enough, we wiggled our way out of them and stepped out of them. After that, we started to get into bed as we continued to kiss. When we were in bed, Sue laid me on my back and caressed my genitals. I caressed Sue around her butt, back and breasts. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Using much more naughty words, Sue basically told me with a passionate voice that she was really going to enjoy fellating me. Then Sue added, "Prepare to be milked." My eyes were already glazed over with passion as I said with a passionate voice, "Oh baby!" Sue then started to kiss her way down me as she continued to fondle my genitals. I gave out a drawn out, passionately sighing, "Oh!" Then I passionately said, "Oh my darling!"

Once Sue got down there, Sue began by nuzzling her cheek and the side of her nose around my testicles as she caressed my penis. Trying to take in as much of my natural bodily scent as she could. I gave off moans of pleasure. After Sue had satisfied herself, Sue slowly ran her tongue up the shaft of my penis. I looked at Sue do so with a glazed over look of ecstasy on my face. Then Sue began to pleasure me orally. Doing so slowly and with much relish. I gave off a moan of ecstasy. Sue gave off an encumbered moan of pleasure. I said with a voice full of ecstasy, "Oh my love!" After doing her thing a few times, Sue slid her lips off from me. I looked at Sue with the same glazed over look of ecstasy on my face. Sue looked at me with a glazed over look of passion on her face. My dearest darling was holding part of my penis and caressing her cheek against the upper shaft of it. Sue said with a voice just dripping with passion, "I love the way your dick tastes darling." As Sue continued to caress my penis against her cheek, I said with a highly passionate voice, "Oh darling! My love!"

Sue then slowly ran her tongue up my penis. Then Sue went back to doing her thing and gave off a couple more encumbered moans of pleasure. I gave out another moan of ecstasy. Through the whole process, here and there, I would make a brief but impassioned statement of love or endearment. I also lovingly caressed Sue's shoulders now and then. After about two minutes, I said with an impassioned voice, "Oh darling! You're about to milk me!" This was information that Sue gladly received. A few moments later, I exploded and gave out calls of ecstasy. Sue gave off encumbered moans of pleasure. About thirty seconds or so later, Sue again did her deep throat thing. Afterwards, Sue continued to enjoy herself for a little

over a minute. When Sue was through, Sue wiped the edges of her mouth a little with the side of her hand. We looked at each other passionately. I took hold of Sue as Sue said passionately, "How was that darling." I said with a voice full of passion as I gently pulled Sue toward me, "You just keep getting better darling." We then began to kiss each other passionately. I lovingly caressed Sue just about everywhere I could reach.

After about thirty seconds, I rolled Sue onto her back. Sue took this opportunity to caress more of me. After about thirty seconds or so, I parted from Sue a little. We looked at each other passionately as I said with a passion filled voice, "I

443

hope you built up a good supply of cum darling. Because I'm going to drain you." Sue's eyes glazed over with love as she said, "Oh darling!" I then started to kiss and caress my way down Sue. Sue of course also lovingly continued to caress me. I stopped for a few extended moments to give Sue's breasts some loving. Then I kissed my way down farther. When I got to my destination, I nuzzled the side of my nose into Sue's mons pubis and breathed deeply. Happily, I was able to detect a hint of Sue's natural, genital scent. Which filled me with even more desire. Sue said with a voice full of passion, "Oh my love!" I then began to pleasure Sue orally. The taste seemed to be slightly more wonderful than before. Sue gave off moans of ecstasy. I gave off a slight moan of pleasure. As usual, here and there through this whole process, Sue would make brief but impassioned statements of love or endearment.

When things got to that point, Sue said with an impassioned voice full of ecstasy, "I'm going to cum!" This was news that I received with joy. A couple moments later, my joy turned to heightened ecstasy as Sue gushed her orgasmic love juice. Which I took in with joyful ecstasy. Sue gave off cries of ecstasy and writhed with pleasure. It was all so terribly heavenly. I kept pleasuring Sue orally for about the next ten minutes. During which time, I received a few more juicy treats. After things had settled down from the last one, I stopped what I was doing. As I firmly nuzzled Sue's mons pubis with my cheek and the side of my nose, Sue said with a voice just dripping with slightly breathless passion, "Oh my dearest sweet love!" After I satisfied myself with this nuzzling and taking in more of Sue's wonderful scent, I started to kiss my way back up Sue. Sue of course caressed me more as I did so. I gave Sue's breasts more love along the way. Then I kissed my way up a little farther. When my face was near Sue's, we looked at each other with loving passion. Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "What did you write this time darling."

I said with a gentle, loving voice, "At first, I wrote about how much I love your scent and taste. I also wrote about how much I enjoyed seeing you enjoy yourself today. Though I didn't feel it would be right



to have mentioned Becky at all.” This caused a loving smile to come over Sue’s face. Which I matched. Then I said, “I also wrote about my loving little secret that I’m not going to tell you about yet.” This caused a passionate look to come over Sue’s face. I took on a passionate look too. Then I said, “Then I wrote you another love letter.” Sue said with passionate enthusiasm, “Tell me darling!” I said, “I wrote, When I looked into your teary eyes of love, time seemed to slow. My heart beat, and I wished there was a higher power I could thank for the miracle of you.” Sue began to take on an emotional look of love. I did too as I continued on, saying, “My heart beat again, and I wondered if I could love you as much as you deserve.” Sue had tears starting to run from her eyes. I had tears start to well up in mine. I said, “My heart beat again, and my soul split open. Unable to contain my love.” Sue fully embraced me and said through her tears, “Tell me more darling!”

Then I said with a highly emotional voice as tears fell from my eyes, “My heart beat again, and your love entered my soul. (As I embraced Sue even more, I added) My love enveloped you. My heart beat again, and your love enveloped

444

my soul. My heart beat again, and my love enveloped your soul. On and on, throughout infinity, I pray it will always be the same.” Then I said through my tears, “That’s all darling.” Sue managed to get out through her tears, “It will        darling!.. I swear!..” Sue and I cried in each other’s loving embrace for about the next three minutes. Then we parted our embrace enough to look into each        other’s teary, loving faces. There was also a little loving emotion in our expressions. For about the next two minutes, we tried to transmit our love as we looked deep into each other’s eyes. It was Sue who spoke first. My dear sweet love said to me with a soft, loving voice, “I love you so much darling.” I said, “I love you so much too darling.” We then began to lightly close our eyes as we brought our lips together. Sue and I kissed each other tenderly and lovingly. Just as we did with our eyes, Sue and I tried our best to transmit our love through our kiss and through our caresses.

Sue and I did this for about the next two minutes. Then we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. A slight, loving smile then came across my face. Sue looked at me in the same way. I said, with a loving tone to my voice of course, “I hope you don’t expect a love letter every time darling.” By the time I finished saying this, Sue was giving me a wider, loving smile. Then I added, “It’s a little difficult to do off the top of my head when I’m enjoying myself so much.” Then I gave Sue a wider, loving smile. Sue said, “Your sweet little nothings are good enough darling. Though not that I mind at all dearest, I have to admit that it’s a little distracting to wonder what you’re writing. But I know something we can try sometime. You can write something

ahead of time. I'll try to read it while you write it on me." What Sue said made me and then Sue grin. I said, "That does sound like fun darling. Though I'll always try to come up with something lovingly creative to write." Sue said, "Thank you darling." We gave each other a loving kiss for a few extended moments. Then we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly again.

I said, "Hold on a second darling." I got off of Sue and went to lay on my side facing her. Sue turned on her side facing me as I pulled out the pillows from under the bedspread. I placed one for Sue to lay her head on. Then I did the same for myself. Sue and I then laid our heads on the pillows as we entwined ourselves. As we looked at each other with loving smiles, I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Remember when I said that I could lick you clean darling?" This widened Sue's smile a little as she said, "I remember darling." I said, "I wasn't being completely honest. You know that I'm not onto the whole anal thing." (This was something Sue and I had discussed before. I told Sue that I wasn't into the anal intercourse thing. Sue wasn't interested in it either. In Sue's opinion, an un-stretched out sphincter muscle served a useful purpose. And my big wiener would destroy hers. Though the bluntness of the way Sue had said it made us laugh a bit) Continuing on with the anal topic, I said, "So I wouldn't lick it clean. Though with it being your poopiness darling, (This brought a grin to Sue's face as I added) it wouldn't be any great tragedy if someday in my enthusiasm my tongue happened to stray too far." I then grinned too.

Sue said with a bit of amusement in her voice, "If you do darling. Let me know before you kiss me again." This caused us both to laugh.

After our laughter, we

445

grinned at each other for a few moments. Then our grins turned to loving smiles. I said, "I love you so much darling." Then Sue took on more of a loving look. I did too. Sue said, "I love you so much too darling." Then Sue and I kissed each other passionately. I rolled Sue a little more onto her back as we did so. This gave Sue freer reign to caress and knead me with her fingers just about everywhere she could reach. After a few extended moments, I rolled back onto my back. Bringing Sue with me of course. Giving me freer reign to caress and knead with my fingers just about everywhere I could reach. After a few extended moments, Sue gently pulled on me as she went back to lay on her back. I went with Sue of course. For the next couple minutes, Sue and I kept rolling back and forth like this, like a couple squirming worms of love, as we enjoyed each other's passionate kisses and caresses. Then we laid on our sides facing each other and entwined ourselves. We then slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly.

Then Sue and I continued to talk lovingly about this and that while we basked in each other's love. Every now and then of course, we would

take a little kiss break. After about forty five minutes, I started to become aroused again. Then I said to Sue with a loving voice, "I think it's milking time again darling." Sue looked at me with a loving smile. I looked at Sue in the same way as Sue said, "Oh goodie!" Sue rolled me onto my back and caressed her hand down to my genitals. This caused a more passionate look to come over my face. Sue took on the same sort of look. Then Sue said with a passionate voice, "You know I just love milking you darling." I said with a passionate voice, "Oh darling!" Then we started kissing each other passionately. After a few extended moments, Sue parted her kiss from me and started to kiss her way lower down my body. I continued to caress Sue as I said with a passionate voice, "You're such a dream darling!" When Sue got down there, Sue again nuzzled me down there with her cheek and the side of her nose. Taking in whatever scent of my genitals she could. As Sue did so, I said with a passionate voice, "My dearest darling love!"

A few moments later, Sue took hold of my penis and said, "Darling." I looked down at Sue with a glazed over look of passion on my face. Sue had a passionate look on her face. Then Sue said with a passionate voice, "This is even better than a pop sickle. But one of these days, I'm going to have to try this with some whipped cream." Then Sue slowly ran her tongue up the side of it. I said with a voice full of ecstasy, "Oh my love!" Sue ran her tongue up a couple more sides of it. Then Sue began to fellate me as she lovingly caressed my testicles. I gave out a moan of ecstasy. Here and there, as Sue did her thing, I would make brief but impassioned statements of love or endearment. Along with other moans of ecstasy here and there. After about two and a half minutes, I basically told Sue that I was about to ejaculate. As usual, this was information that heightened Sue's enjoyment. A couple moments later, I did ejaculate. I gave out cries of ecstasy. Sue gave off a slight, encumbered moan of pleasure. A few moments later, Sue slowed her actions to fully enjoy herself.

About a minute and a half later, after Sue had enjoyed what she was doing more and making sure I was completely empty, Sue stopped what she was doing. Sue then went back to nuzzling and caressing my genitals. I said with an

446

impassioned voice, "Oh darling! You're so wonderful!" After Sue enjoyed

herself a bit more, Sue started to kiss her way up me. I caressed more of Sue the closer she got. When Sue got up to me, we looked at each other passionately. Sue said with a passionate voice, "I just love your juicy dick darling." I gently caressed Sue's cheek. Sue lightly closed her eyes and caressed my hand back with her cheek. Then Sue turned back to me and slowly opened her beautiful, loving eyes. I said with loving passion in my voice, "My love for you is far juicer darling." Sue's eyes glazed over with love. Mine did too as Sue said, "Oh darling!"

We then began to kiss each other passionately. I caressed Sue more just about everywhere that was within easy reach. We both gave off moans of pleasure. After about thirty seconds or so, I rolled Sue onto her back as we continued to kiss.

Another thirty seconds went by before I kissed my way to Sue's ear and started giving it some loving kisses. Sue gave off some sighs of pleasure as I did so. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with pleased, loving expressions on our faces. Then I started to kiss my way lower down Sue's body. When I got to Sue's breasts, I gave them a little extra loving. Sue said with a passionate voice, "My dearest darling!" A few moments later, I started kissing my way further down Sue's body. Sue squirmed her body a little with pleasure. When I got down there, I again nuzzled Sue's pubic area with the side of my nose and cheek. The slight, intoxicating smell of Sue's genitalia sent a wave of desire through me. I then started to pleasure Sue orally. Sue gave out moans of ecstasy. I did everything that seemed to bring Sue pleasure. With great success. Every now and then, Sue would make brief, impassioned statements of love or endearment. After about a minute, I could tell through Sue's movements and her stiffened clitoris that my dear sweet love would soon be orgasming. All of which brought me more joy.

A few extended moments later, as Sue had her hips raised up off the bed, Sue basically told me that she was about to orgasm. As usual, it was information that increased my enjoyment. A couple moments later, Sue began to gush. Sue gave out cries of ecstasy. As wonderfully usual, taking in what Sue had to give me was pure heaven. I also loved the feel of Sue's muscles twitching orgasmically. After things settled down a bit, Sue again had her hips on the bed. Though I kept going for more. I pleased Sue orally for about the next ten minutes. Receiving a few more orgasmic treats. When I was through, I again nuzzled Sue's pubic area with my cheek and the side of my nose. Drinking in more the slight scent of Sue's genitals as I caressed around Sue's thighs and tummy. As I did so, Sue said passionately, "Oh my darling!" After doing what I was for at least thirty seconds, I started to kiss and caress my way up Sue. Of course, I paused for a bit to give Sue's breasts a little more love. Then I kissed my way up farther. When my face got a little nearer to Sue's, we looked at each other passionately. I basically said with a loving, passionate voice that I couldn't drink enough of her love juice. Sue basically said with a passionate voice how much she liked to ingest my love juice. I said, "Oh darling!"

Then Sue and I began to kiss each other passionately. After about a minute of this, our passionate kiss lessened to a loving one. About thirty seconds later, we

447

slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue and I

rolled back onto our sides and entwined ourselves. As before, we would either talk lovingly to each other as we gently caressed each other, kiss, or just bask in each other's love. After a while, I said to Sue, "I have to use the bathroom darling." Sue said, "I should probably go too. I'll come with you?" I said, "Ok darling." We got out of bed and put an arm around each other's lower backs. Then we went toward the bathroom. Both of us grinned at each other as Sue asked if she could hold my wiener for me. Which I happily agreed to. When we got to the toilet. I lifted up the seat. Being one of the things we had talked about before, Sue had earlier made it so it would stay up by itself. Sue then held my penis as I peed. We both had quite a bit of fun doing so. After I was through, I asked Sue if I could help her do so. Sue said that I could. I lowered the seat again and Sue sat down. Then I said, "Hold on a second darling."

I then went over to the sink and thoroughly rinsed off my hands. As I did so, I looked at Sue and said, "You know I'm particular about any body parts touching the toilet seat." Sue smiled lovingly at me and said, "I know darling. That's one of the things I love about you." I smiled lovingly at Sue also. Then I dried my hands and went back over to Sue. Sue spread her legs a little and said, "Just kneel here darling." I knelt between Sue's knees and put my hands on her thighs. Then Sue said, "Just hold open the outer folds of my skin a little darling." I happily held open Sue's outer labia a little. Helping Sue pee was both interesting and fun. After Sue was through, Sue had me take some toilet paper and daub her dry. After I was through, I looked at Sue with a slightly hopeful, loving look with my hands on Sue's thighs. I said, "How did I do darling." Sue said, "Just perfect darling." This news brought happiness to my face. Sue and I then gave each other a loving kiss. After a few moments, we parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other again. Then I stood up. I then took Sue's hands and helped her stand up. Sue flushed the toilet, then we both went over to the sink and washed our hands a little.

After drying them, we put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed back toward the bedroom. I said to Sue as we leaned the sides of our heads together, "I love you darling." Sue said, "I love you too darling." When we got into the bedroom, we stood next to the bed and faced each other with loving smiles on our faces. Then I grinned. Which made Sue grin too. I said, "Jump up on me darling." This made Sue's grin widen a bit. Sue said, "Ok." Then Sue jumped up on me. Sue wrapped her thighs around my hips and upper thighs. Sue also wrapped her arms around my neck and upper back. I helped support Sue with my right forearm and hand under Sue's butt. I had my left arm around Sue's back. Then I said as I turned toward the bed, "Do you have a good hold darling?" Sue made her grin go away long enough to purse her smiling lips together. At the same time, Sue nodded her head a few times in the affirmative and happily hum in the affirmative, "Um hum!" Sue grinned again and I said, "Here we go!"

I then bent my legs a little. Then I leapt onto the bed as Sue laughed.

I made sure that I didn't land too hard on Sue. Then I laughed too. We looked at each other and shared in each other's laughter. Afterwards, Sue said with a grin,  
448

"That was fun. But it could be a little hard on the mattress." I took on a loving smile. Sue did too. I said, "Not that I don't enjoy being next to you of course darling. But one of these days, we should probably get ourselves a king size bed." Sue took on a more loving look and caressed my cheek. I took on a more loving look too. Sue said, "If I'm going to have a king, I may as well have a king sized bed." I said, "Thank you darling." Then I said, "Let's kiss and lay back down darling. But whoever breaks off our kiss loses." We both smiled lovingly at each other. Sue said, "Ok." Then Sue and I lovingly kissed each other. We then let go of each other. As we kept our kiss going, we both made our way back to our normal laying position. When we got there, we laid on our sides facing each other and entwined ourselves. After we had done so, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then Sue said lovingly, "Neither of us lost darling."

Then I looked at Sue more lovingly as some emotion came over my face and tears started to well up in my eyes. Sue looked at me in the same way. I slightly shook my head from side to side a few times to add emphasis to what I was saying as I said with a highly loving voice, "I could never lose as long as I have you darling!" Sue said with an emotional voice, "Oh darling!" We then kissed each other passionately. Though with a little uncomfortable firmness. We also held each other more firmly too. Sue and I must have kissed each other like this for at least thirty seconds. Though I was in such a loving state, it was hard to judge time. After this interval, the firmness of our kiss lessened to a normal, passionate kiss. We also caressed each other more and squirmed our bodies together a little. Sue and I also caressed each other with our legs and feet. After about another minute, our passionate kiss lessened to a loving one. About another minute later, I started kissing my way to Sue's ear. I then gave it some loving kisses. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces. Sue would occasionally give off a slight sigh of pleasure.

After making sure that Sue's ear was well kissed, I said with a soft, tender, loving voice, "I love you so much darling." Sue brought her loving lips near my ear and said with the same soft, tender, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." Then Sue started to lovingly kiss my ear. This made me give off a slight sigh of pleasure. Sue rolled me onto my back as she did so. After a few moments, Sue caressed her hand down and began to gently caress my genitals. This made me give off another moan of pleasure. I started to become aroused. Feeling what was going on, Sue stopped kissing my ear. We

looked at each other with glazed over eyes and passionate looks on our faces. I said with a passionate voice, "I think I should put some cum in your vagina this time darling." Sue said with a passionate voice, "As long as your cum is in me darling, it doesn't really matter where it is." I said, "Would you be on top again my heartbeat." Sue said, "Of course darling." Sue straddled me and sat up a little. As Sue supported herself with one arm, Sue held my stiffened penis with the other. Then Sue directed it to where it needed to go. A look of ecstasy came over both our faces as Sue slid her muff pie down onto my hips. Both of us also gave off moans of ecstasy.

As usual, there isn't much point in going into too much detail as to what

449

followed. I so loved being able to caress Sue as my dear sweet love did most of the work. Interspersed here and there throughout our lovemaking, there were the wonderfully usual brief but impassioned statements of love or endearment. There were also brief but passionate kisses here and there. When I wasn't fondling them, as usual, I so loved seeing Sue's luscious breasts swinging from her movements. As usual, when Sue was on top, I found it difficult to keep from climaxing too soon. But I didn't mind. Over the next three minutes, I was able to bring Sue to an orgasm. I could tell Sue was getting ready to reach another. So, even though I was on the bottom, I started to help Sue out with her actions. This heightened the ecstasy for both of us. Soon, we both gave out calls of orgasmic ecstasy. We both slowed down our actions during the event. About twenty seconds later, Sue stopped what she was doing and laid on top of me. Sue said with a loving, slightly breathless voice, "You make me so happy darling." I said with a slightly breathless voice, "You make me so happy too darling."

After the usual post sex loving, we laid on our sides facing each other as we entwined ourselves. Sue and I spoke lovingly about this and that. A few times, one or the other of us would say something funny. Both of us of course enjoyed seeing each other laugh. Needless to say, there were also quite a few statements of love. There were also quite a few kisses here and there. Along with some full embraces and some nuzzling. Sue and I had sexual intercourse a couple more times as the evening progressed. Though I was on top both times. After our last lovemaking session and after its usual post sex loving, both Sue and I were a little sleepy. My dear sweet love got out of bed and turned the lights off. As Sue did so, I pulled back the bedspread and sheet. I also straightened up our pillows. Sue got back into bed and I covered us. After exchanging the kinds of loving comments and kisses as you might expect, we got more comfortable. Sue laid her head on my shoulder and chest with a slightly bent leg draped over my hips. I had one arm around Sue and caressed Sue's thigh a little with my other

hand. Sue and I both squirmed with pleasure a little into each other.

Then I moved my hand from Sue's thigh to her forearm. I held Sue's forearm and caressed it with my fingers. After some loving comments, another loving squirm, a little nuzzling and caressing, we eventually fell asleep in each other's loving embrace. The next morning, I was awakened by Sue caressing my chest from behind. Sue was spooning me from behind. I moved and turned to face Sue. We smiled at each other lovingly with a little bit of sleepiness still in our eyes. As we entwined each other a little more, Sue said lovingly, "Good morning darling." I said lovingly, "Good morning my love." We then gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly again. Sue said, "I love you darling." I said, "I love you more." This briefly caused a bit of a surprised look to come over Sue's face. Then Sue said with a bit more of a determined tone to her voice and expression on her face, "No you don't! I love you more!" I said with a bit more determination too, "No you don't! I love you more!" Sue gave me a slap on my butt and said with a bit more determination, "No you don't! I love you more!" I then smiled lovingly at Sue.

450

This lessened Sue's look of determination a little. Then I said with a loving voice, "Well let's just say that we love each other just as much honey bunch." This again brought a loving smile to Sue's face. Sue said, "Ok darling." I then said, "Though there has to be some explanation for my erection." We looked at each other more lovingly as Sue caressed her hand down and felt what I was talking about. As Sue held my stiffened penis, Sue said lovingly, "Just because you have a hard on darling doesn't prove anything." I said lovingly, "Maybe not darling. But now that you have it, what do you want to do with it." This cause Sue to look at me passionately. I looked at Sue in the same way. Sue said with a passionate voice, "I want to put it in me darling." I said passionately, "Oh darling!" We then began to kiss each other passionately. As we did so, I rolled Sue onto her back. At about the same time, I went to lay between Sue's legs, Sue spread her legs more. Then Sue guided my penis with a gentle pull to where it needed to go. As I entered into Sue, we parted our kiss with a look of ecstasy on our faces. We also gave off moans of ecstasy.

Instead of continuing my actions. Sue and I looked at each other with expressions of ecstasy. I said with a voice just dripping with loving passion, "After all of our lovemaking darling, how can you still be so tight." My sincere compliment made Sue say with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!" We then started to kiss each other passionately as Sue gave me some extra caresses. After a few moments of kissing, I began to move my penis in Sue. We both gave off moans of ecstasy as we kissed. Then we parted our kiss and gave off more moans of



ecstasy. As usual, interspersed throughout our lovemaking, there were the usual but wonderful, impassioned comments of love or endearment. Along with the brief but passionate kisses here and there. Sue and I made love for about the next fifteen minutes. I was quite proud of myself. During that time, I brought Sue to orgasm three times. A few minutes after Sue's last orgasm, I could tell that Sue was getting ready to orgasm again. So I started to speed up my actions. Needless to say, this heightened the ecstasy for both of us. It wasn't long before both of us gave off calls of orgasmic ecstasy. I started to slow my actions as my loins pulsed orgasmically.

Afterwards, Sue and I embraced each other fully. Caressing and nuzzling each other with moans of spent pleasure as we caught our breath. After about twenty seconds or so, Sue said softly, yet passionately, "I love you so much darling." I said softly, yet passionately, "I love you so much too darling." Sue then began to lovingly kiss my ear. Both of us of course had our eyes lightly closed with loving expressions on our faces. We also both of course caressed each other lovingly. Every now and then, I would give off a sigh of pleasure. Sue would every now and then give off a little moan of pleasure. After about a minute of Sue kissing my ear, I then did the same with her. With similar results. After about a minute of this, I parted from Sue enough for us to look into each other's loving faces. I said lovingly, "If you keep getting better like that darling," Sue smiled lovingly at me as I said, "I don't know if I can handle it." Then I smiled lovingly at Sue too. Sue lovingly caressed my cheek. I caressed Sue's hand back with my cheek a little as we continued to smile lovingly at each other.

Sue said lovingly, "I could say the same thing about you darling. But I think we

451

can take it." I said, "We're going to have many, many opportunities to find out my life." This caused Sue to take on a more loving look. I did too. Sue then said with an even more loving voice, "Oh my love!" We then started to kiss each other passionately. About a minute later, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then I smiled lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. I said, "Are you ready to do some shopping today darling?" This made Sue grin. Which I did too. Sue said, "I'm always ready to do some shopping darling." I said, "I'm sure I'll like the way you decide to dress me honey buns." This made Sue smile a little more lovingly at me as I added, "You have such good taste." Then I smiled a little more lovingly at Sue also. Sue said, "Thank you darling." We then gave each other a loving kiss. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other again. I said, "I suppose we should get ready sweetness. Ready for wiener removal?" This made Sue laugh a little. Which I quickly joined in on. Afterwards, we both grinned at each other. Then Sue

took on a more loving look. I looked at Sue in the same way too. Sue said with a voice just dripping with love, "I'm never ready for that darling. But go ahead."

I gently caressed the side of Sue's head as I brought my lips to Sue's. We kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. Then I slowly withdrew myself from Sue. We both gave off little moans of pleasure as I did so. Our kiss also turned fully passionate. Sue and I kissed and caressed for at least thirty seconds. Our kiss then diminished and we slowly parted our kiss. We both smiled lovingly at each other. I then moved off to the side of Sue a bit. Though I still laid a little on her. As I caressed one of Sue's breasts, I said, "Why don't you use the bathroom first darling. Then I will. After that, we can get cleaned up together." Sue said, "One of these days, we should get side by side toilets." This made me grin as Sue added, "Then we can do our poopies together." What Sue said made me laugh a little. Which Sue quickly joined in on. Afterwards, we were both grinning as I said, "You're so silly darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue and I grinned again at each other afterwards. Then I said, "I think people would find that a little weird." Our grins faded to smiles.

Sue said, "They used to set some outhouses up like that." I said, "And look at ancient Rome. They used to have benches with rows of holes in them. Which is pretty bad. But to clean themselves afterwards, they used communal sponges." Sue said, "How do you know so much darling." I said, "I'm not a fan of regular TV programming. I prefer to watch nature, science or history shows." Sue said, "It shows darling." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Afterwards, I rolled off Sue a little more and caressed her tummy. Sue was caressing by back still with one hand and my upper arm with the other. We looked at each other more lovingly as I said with a loving voice, "No go do your poopies darling. While I can still have the strength to be parted from you." Sue said lovingly, "Ok darling." We gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we parted our kiss and smiled at each other lovingly. Sue then got out of bed and started to head toward the bathroom. As Sue went, Sue turned to me a little and said, "I won't be long darling." I said, "Ok darling." I just loved seeing Sue's

452

perfect, wonderful butt as she walked toward the bathroom. I couldn't wait until we were in the shower together and I would be able to give it some soapy, loving caresses.

Chapter Twenty  
Another Big Day

While Sue was in the bathroom, I took my other clothes out of the bag and gave my shirt a sniff. It smelled ok. So I laid my shirt over the back of Sue's rocking chair and my pants over the arm of it. I then took out some socks and underwear from Sue's dresser. Those I sat on the bed. Then I went to the closet. During the course of things, my dark blue suit had been put away. But I decided to wear the dark grey one. It was going to be a big day today. And I wanted to look nice. I laid the suit on the bed. After that, I went out to the dining area. Sitting at the table, I turned on Sue's computer. When it loaded, I turned on a writing program on it. Then I typed in, I LOVE YOU !!!!!!!!!!!!!!! : ) This is me when you're away : ( No doubt, Sue would enjoy reading how I felt. Then I heard the bathroom door open. I got up and headed to the hallway. Sue was standing by the bedroom door. We smiled at each other as Sue came my way too. Sue said, "Your turn honey bear." We came together, held each other in a loose embrace and gave each other a brief but loving kiss. We then parted and smiled at each other. I said, "I won't be long lovie love."

We then gave each other a quick peck on the lips. Then I headed toward the bathroom. Sue headed for the kitchen. When I got to the bathroom, I just leaned against the far door jam with a big smile on my face. I figured it wouldn't take Sue long to see my message. I heard Sue give off a slight, loving exclamation, "Oh!" Then Sue came scampering back toward the hallway. I had a big grin on my face. I so enjoyed seeing Sue expression of joyful sentimentality. But seeing Sue's large, pert breasts bounce as she ran a little toward me was wonderful too. I took a couple steps away from the door jam toward Sue. Sue said, "Oh darling!" Then Sue and I fully embraced each other. I lifted Sue off her feet and spun us around. As I did so, Sue said, "I love you too! And I'm sad when you're away too!" After turning us around a few times, I sat Sue on her feet. We parted enough to grin lovingly at each other. I said, "I thought you would like my message darling." Sue said, "I sure did darling." We then kissed each other passionately. Caressing each other passionately as we did so.

After about thirty seconds or so, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. I said, "I'll see you in a few sweetness." Sue said, "Ok dearest." My dear, sweet love and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we caressed our hands off of each other as we parted. The last thing to part was our fingertips. We continued to smile lovingly at each other as I slowly closed the door. I did my thing in the bathroom. When I was through, Sue was in the bedroom when I opened the door. I told Sue that I was ready. Then Sue came into the bathroom with me. Just like before, with all of our loving talk, kisses here

453

and there and everything else, getting cleaned up with Sue was a

dream. After we were all through, we left the bathroom and went into the bedroom. Then we got dressed. We of course lovingly chatted about this and that as we did so. Sue had chosen a white, button up shirt. The embroidery of the fabric almost gave it a lacy appearance. Sue's shirt also displayed some cleavage. The sleeves went down to Sue's wrists. Both the cuffs and the collar of Sue's shirt was a more lacy fabric.

Sue had also put on a pair of neatly pressed, cream colored pants. The tail of Sue's shirt was tucked into them. Sue also wore a thin belt that was the same color as her slacks. Keeping up with the color scheme, Sue also wore some sensible but attractive slippers that were about the same color as her pants. After Sue was dressed, Sue put on a little makeup. When Sue was through, Sue dug out some money. I after we got all loaded up with cash, Sue took the purse she had chosen and we went back out in the kitchen. We of course kept talking about this and that. Sue and I made some coffee. As it brewed, we sat at the table. Sue called Becky and they happily chatted. When the coffee was done, I got up to make it as Sue and Becky continued to chat. We decided to pick Becky up. Soon after I brought the coffee to the table, Sue and Becky ended their conversation. Sue and I continued to happily talk about this and that. Both of us knew that it was going to be a wonderful day. But Sue didn't know how wonderful.

When we were through with our coffee, we left the apartment. We decided to use my car again. Sue and I drove to Becky's place. The apartment complex where Becky lived seemed to be just about as nice as the place where Sue and I lived. Becky was apparently waiting by a window as we drove up. Because it didn't take Becky long to come out. Becky was wearing a frilly blue top. She was wearing a nice pair of darker blue slacks. We grinned widely at each other as Becky came up to the car. Becky got in and we all greeted each other. Knowing how much girls liked such things, I complimented Becky on her outfit. Which of course pleased her and caused her to thank me. Needless to say, more happy conversation ensued. Though most of it was between Sue and Becky. We eventually pulled up to a place with plenty of stores around. After we got out, Sue and Becky happily hugged each other as they spoke happily. When I came around the car, Sue took my one arm. Becky took of Sue's other arm. We then headed to a store. Becky let go of Sue's arm as we went into a store. Sue let go of me too once we went inside.

The girls started looking at some cloths for me. I tried to keep up. But shopping wasn't something I enjoyed a lot. I took out my wallet and took out some money. Then I said to Sue, "Shopping isn't really my thing darling. You know what my measurements are." Sue said in a kidding around kind of voice, "Most of them." This made Becky look at Sue with an amused, slightly open mouthed look of surprise. Seeing Becky's reaction, Sue giggled. Which Becky quickly joined in on. I chuckled too. Afterwards, I handed Sue some money. Sue took it as I said, "You guys might want to pick up some things for yourselves too.

Then I'll really be lost." I then handed Becky some money and said, "It may not buy a lot these days. But here's three hundred. Just in case you find  
454

something you like." Becky got a really happy expression on her face. Becky took the money, and said, "Thank you!" Sue was grinning at Becky as she said with a half way kidding around voice, "Just don't get used to it." This caused us all to chuckle a little. Becky then gave me a quick kiss on the cheek and a little hug. Then Becky parted her hug and stepped back over to Sue.

Sue said to me, "What are you going to do darling." I said, "Don't worry about me honey bunch. I think I'll just go look at some guy stuff. Maybe I'll pick up a tape measure." Then I gave Sue a bit of an overly exaggerated, playful wink. With this, along with Sue's kidding around comment about my measurements, they knew what I was referring to. This made Sue and Becky look at each other with amused, slightly open mouthed looks of surprise. Then they started laughing. Which I quickly joined in on. After the laughter, I said, "I think I'll pick up a small tarp. You can put whatever you buy in the back of the car and I'll cover it with the tarp. Just to keep anybody from seeing what you bought and stealing it. Even so, keep your receipts on you just in case I do have to turn something into the insurance company." Sue said, "Ok honey." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Becky looked at us with a sentimental smile. I said, "Just give me a call if you don't see me. I won't be far." Sue said, "Ok sweetie." We gave each other another brief but loving kiss.

Then I started to leave. Though I was turned a little as I said, "Have fun you two." Sue said happily, "We will." Becky said happily, "See ya soon." I then left the store. As I walked around in no big hurry, I found a place that did sell small tarps. After looking around a little, I purchased one. Afterwards, I headed back to the car. As I did so, I saw Becky and Sue heading into another store a little farther away. They were both carrying bags. When I got to the car, I opened the back. I put the tarp package in and opened the back compartment to check on the ring. After that, I closed the back and continued to walk around and window shop. Then I ran across a store that sold computers. Just for the heck of it, I went in and asked the salesman about their laptop computers. They didn't carry any Apple laptops in the store. But they could get them. We talked about them and other laptops as he led me over to their display models. I found out that one of the laptops really rocked it when it came to memory and disk space. Not only that, but comparable Apple laptops were pretty pricy. It looked like microsoft based computers really had me by the balls.

I then left the store and walked around more. I also stopped someplace for some coffee. After about an hour, I decided to go looking around for Sue and Becky. Though I was in no hurry. Because

I knew that they were still shopping. I found them about fifteen minutes later. They were both coming out of a store and happily chatting. Both of them were now carrying a number of bags. Being caught up in their conversation, they didn't spot me as they went in the other direction. I didn't call out. Instead, I started walking a little faster to catch up to them. Seeing them chatting, I kind of wondered how much of their talking was about me. I hoped that Becky didn't spill the beans about what I had planned. But after getting to know her, I knew that she probably wouldn't have done that. As I got closer to the girls, I called out, "Oh ladies!" They turned with big grins on their faces and stopped. I was grinning too as I walked toward them. As I did

455

so, I said, "It looks like you guys have been buying everything in sight!" Both Sue and Becky giggled. I laughed a little too.

Afterwards, Sue said, "Maybe we did get a little carried away." Becky said, "But it was fun." I walked up to them. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, I said, "Let me take those darling." Sue started handing me her bags and said, "Thank you darling." After taking Sue's bags, Sue took some of the bags Becky was carrying. We talked happily as we headed toward where the car was parked. From Sue's demeanor, I could tell that Becky hadn't spilled the beans about the surprise I had planned. When we got to the car, Sue reached into my jacket pocket for me and got my keys. Sue opened the back hatch. I then put the bags in. As one or the other of us continued chatting about this or that, I took the tarp I bought out of the package and used it to cover the things. When I was through, I closed the back. Then I said to Sue, "I found a place that sells laptop computers. There's just no getting away from the influence of that microsoft maggot Bill Gates. So I decided to buy one. But I thought I would wait until I found you guys." Sue and Becky grinned. I grinned too. Sue said, "Ok. Let's go."

As we started walking to the store, Becky said, "Why don't you like Bill Gates." I said, "I have my reasons. But I would prefer to not go into it." Becky said, "Ok." I then said, "I found out that Apple laptops were pretty pricy for their specifications. Though they didn't carry any in the store anyway. I found another laptop that looked pretty nice." We continued talking until we got to the store. When we got inside, the salesman was of course pleased to see me again. He came up and gladly greeted us all. I had him bring us over to the display model I was looking at earlier. It was the best they had in the store. As we went and as we stood by it, for Sue and Becky's benefit, he talked about all of its positive attributes again. Sue said, "That's a little nicer than mine." Sue and I smiled at each other. I then turned my smile to Becky and said, "Is Sue's computer better than yours?" Becky said with a bit of a hopeful look on her quite attractive, sweet, smiling face,

“Oh yes! It is!” Both Sue and I grinned at her as Sue held my arm a little tighter. Becky grinned too. I said, “How do you feel about hand me downs.”

Becky took on a happier look and said, “That would be wonderful!” I then said, “Well I don’t like hand me downs.” This caused Becky and Sue to take on surprised looks as I turned to the salesman. I said as I gestured to the display model, “We’ll take three of these.” Becky’s look became overjoyed as she held her hands clasped over her chest. Sue grinned at me widely. Becky said, “Oh! Really!” I grinned at Becky and said, “That’s what you get for being such a dear friend of Sue’s.” Becky said, “Oh!” Then Becky gave me a big hug and said, “Oh! Thank you!” Sue said to Becky, “I told you he was wonderful!” As Becky hugged me, the salesman said happily, “I’ll get those right away sir!” He then walked away fairly quickly. Becky was doing better than I had been doing until recently. Even so, it made me feel really good to do something nice for her. Becky parted her hug from me and took hold of one of my arms. Sue held onto my other arm. Then Becky said, “I wish you had a brother!” This made us all laugh.

456

Afterwards, I said, “Well Sue has a brother.” Becky said, “I know. And he seems nice. But you know how it is with going to collage, long distance relationships and all that.” Sue said to Becky, “Well, however things turn out, I’m sure you’ll find your prince charming one of these days.” Becky said to Sue, “I’m still going to try and hold out for a guy like yours.” I said, “Thank you.” We continued happily chatting. It wasn’t too long before the salesman brought the computer boxes up to the checkout counter. We went over to it and I paid for the computers. Once that was done, we left the store. As we headed back to the car, we continued to happily talk about this or that. Sue held my one arm and Becky held my other arm as I carried the three computer boxes in my hands. When we got back to the car, Sue again got my keys and pressed the button to open the back. Then Sue put my keys back in my pocket. I put the computers in the back and covered them with the tarp. Once that was done, we got into the car and decided to drive around. We stopped at one of the attractions they had there and looked around. As usual, the whole time, there was a lot of happy conversation and some laughs going on. After that, we went to another place and did the same. We spent about an hour there.

After that, we stopped by a couple more attractions. By the time we were finished with the last one, most of the afternoon had gone by. Then I suggested that we go get something to eat. Which Sue happily agreed to. Knowing what I had planned, Becky of course happily agreed too. But Becky didn’t let on that there was anything out of the ordinary in the works. I told Sue that I would like to go to that restaurant with the nice waiter, Philip. Sue and Becky happily agreed.

I had already used a bathroom earlier. And I needed to get Sue's ring from the back of the car before we went to the restaurant. So I asked them that if while we were here and before we went to the restaurant, if they might need to use the bathroom and freshen up. Both Becky and Sue thought it was a good idea. I told them that I would go get the car while they were doing that. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue and Becky took each other's arm and headed toward the bathroom as they continued to happily chat. I went toward the parking lot.

When I got to the car, I made sure that Sue and Becky were out of sight. Then I opened the back and opened the rear compartment. The things we bought didn't get in the way much. I retrieved the small velvet covered box with Sue's engagement ring in it. After slipping it into my jacket pocket, I closed the back. After doing that, I got into the car and brought it around to where Sue and Becky would be coming out. As I waited, I thought about how surprised Sue would be. I couldn't wait. It took about five minutes for Sue and Becky to come out. They were again holding each other's arm and chatting as they came to the car. Once they were back in the car, Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then I started to drive. As we went, there was the usual, happy conversation going on. Which of course included the occasional laughs here and there over something funny somebody said. When we got to the restaurant, we got out and headed for the outside tables. There were a few more people around than the last time Sue and I were here. After we sat down, Philip, the head waiter, came over. He said, "Hello Mr. Neilsen, Ms. Richards. Happy to see you again. And

457

who is your lovely guest." Sue introduced Becky and they exchanged pleasantries.

Sue thanked Philip for emailing her the pictures he had taken of Sue and I. After a few more pleasantries, the waiter came over and Philip bid us a good dining experience. We thanked him and he excused himself. The waiter gave us our menus and left himself. Sue, Becky and I chatted a little. About a minute and a half later, the waiter brought us some glasses of water and some silverware. He asked us if we had made a selection yet. We told him that we hadn't. He excused himself and left. Then I said to Becky, "How would you like to take a picture of Sue and I." Becky said with a big grin, "Sure." Sue and I were grinning too. Becky knew what it would mean when I asked her to take a picture of Sue and I. I was glad that Becky was able to compose herself so well. Then Becky sat down her menu and reached into her purse. Becky then got her smart phone out and stood up as she fiddled with it a little. Then Becky took a few steps back as she aimed the camera at Sue and I. Though instead of setting her smart phone to take a picture, as we arranged the other day, Becky set it to



record video. While Becky did this, Sue and I sat down our menus, took each other's hands and leaned toward each other a little.

I said, "How do things look." Improvising, Becky took another step back and said, "It's missing a little something." My grin got a little bigger as I said, "I can fix that." Letting go of Sue's hands, I stood up and took a glass and knife. Sue got a surprised look on her face. I then stood up on my chair as Sue's expression became even more surprised. Then I tapped the glass with the knife as I looked around at the people. They all looked at me with surprise on their faces. Though Sue's was more surprised as I then said, "Attention fellow Bransonians and welcome visitors!" While I did this, an emotional look accompanied Sue's surprised expression. Figuring out what was going on, varying degrees of happiness came over everybody's faces. Most of the women started reaching for their smart phones. Sue's mouth dropped open a little as she held up her fingers to her cheeks. Tears also started to well up in Sue's eyes. No doubt, Sue also knew what was coming. Tears also started to well up in Becky's eyes as she recorded the scene. Seeing what was going on from inside the restaurant, Philip too came out with his smart phone in hand. He had a slightly thrilled look to his sentimental expression. Philip started recording while he got closer.

Then I held the knife and glass in one hand. Other people were recording also. Then I gestured to Sue with my other hand. I said to all of the people around, "Believe it or not, this lovely lady is more beautiful on the inside than she is on the outside!" Tears started turning down Sue's emotional face as Sue held her hands clasped over her chest. I then said, "And she claims that she loves me! Let's put her to the test!" Sue and I looked at each other as I stepped down from the chair. I had an emotional, loving look on my face. Sue had tears of joy running down her cheeks. I sat the glass and knife down. Sue said with a highly emotional voice, "Oh darling!" I then moved toward Sue as Sue turned in her chair toward me. Then I knelt down on one knee in front of Sue as tears started to well up in my eyes also. I said with a highly loving, but little louder voice than

458

normal for the people around to hear, "Oh my darling love! My heart is in your hands!" I could hear this cause murmurs of sentimental joy coming from most of the people. Then I reached into my pocket and produced the decorative box with the ring in it.

I opened it and showed Sue what was inside as I said, "You mean everything to me my darling! Please tell me that you'll be my wife!" Sue said with a highly emotional voice, "Oh yes darling!!! I will!!!" This caused more murmurs of sentimental joy to come from most of the people around. I took the ring out of the box as tears of joy also ran down my cheeks. Setting the box aside, I then took Sue's left hand and slipped the ring on her ring finger. Many of the people started

applauding or tapping their glasses with silverware. There were also many happy murmurings going on as people spoke a little about what they were witnessing. I hardly noticed. Sue and I were in our own world. Most of the female patrons both inside and outside the restaurant were misty eyed. I said, "Oh darling! You've made me happier than I thought I could ever be!" Then I gave Sue's ring a brief, light kiss to seal it. Sue said, "Oh my love!" Then Sue leaned over a little more and we fully embraced each other as well as we could in this position. Both of our teary eyes were tightly closed with looks of emotional joy on our faces.

Becky moved in a little closer to get a better shot of Sue and I. First Becky made sure she got a shot of Sue's emotional, joyful face. Then Becky moved around us to get a shot of my emotional, joyful face. Becky at this point had tears of joy rolling down her cheeks. After a few moments, Becky moved back a little closer to where she had been to get a little wider shot of us both. About twenty seconds or so later, being mindful that we were out in public, Sue and I kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. This caused the people to chat sentimentally with the people they were there with. Sue and I kissed for about thirty seconds. Then we parted and looked at each other with emotional, loving joy. Becky said with some emotion in her voice, "That was so beautiful!" Sue and I both beamed tear moistened grins at her. Then some of the other people that were around voiced congratulations to Sue and I. Sue and I happily thanked them as I we stood up. Becky stopped recording and stepped over to Sue and I. Sue and I parted. Then Becky and Sue embraced as Becky said, "I'm so happy for you!" Sue said, "Oh thank you! I'm so happy!"

As they did this, Philip came over with a sentimental and happy look on his face. He said with some emotion in his voice, "That was just beautiful!" Then he put out his hand to shake mine and said, "Congratulations!" I shook his hand with a big, still somewhat emotional grin still on my face and said, "Thank you!" After we shook hands, he said, "If you would like, we have a much more comfortable booth inside for you." Becky and Sue let go of each other, but continued to hold hands and grin at us. I said to my fiancée, "You're the boss now darling. What do you think." Sue and Becky let go of each other's hands. Then Sue and I fully embraced. As we did so, Sue said, "That would be just fine darling!" Philip said, "I'll go and get things set up. Come in whenever you're ready." Sue said, "Thank you." He then turned to go back inside. After Sue and

459

I enjoyed each other's loving embrace for a few extended moments, we parted a little and looked at each other lovingly. Becky said to Sue, "Ok! My turn!" Sue and I grinned at Becky as we let go of each other.

Then Becky and I hugged. As we did so, Becky said, "You've got yourself quite a girl there! I know you'll both be very happy!" I said, "I know! And thank you!"

After a few moments, we let go of each other. Becky took a step back as Sue and I grinned happily at each other. I stepped over to the table and picked up the ring case. Then I closed it and put it back into my pocket. As I did so, Sue picked up her purse and put the straps over her shoulder. I then reached for Sue's hands and said with a voice just dripping with joy and love, "Shall we go inside future wife?" Becky also went over and picked up her purse. Sue said with the same joyful, loving voice, "Ok future husband." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue and I parted and put an arm around each other's lower backs as we grinned lovingly at each other. Becky led the way as we started to head inside. Everybody we passed on the way gave us congratulations, well wishes and compliments. Sue and I thanked them and briefly shook some people's hands. Some of the patrons also exchanged sentimental statements with some of the other patrons. When we got inside, we got the same treatment from the people who were inside and witnessed the event too. Sue and I thanked them also.

Philip directed us to our booth. A waiter also was heading in that direction with a bottle of champagne. It was in one of those decorative, silver bottle holders that sat on a stand. We all sat down. I made sure that Sue and Becky would be sitting next to each other. Knowing how they could be together, I didn't want to be between them when they got to happily chatting. Then Philip said, "The champagne is compliments of the house." We all thanked him as he opened the bottle. Then he poured some champagne for each of us. When he was through, he said, "Order whenever you wish." We all thanked him again. Then he moved away. We all picked up our glasses. Becky held hers toward us a little and said, "To the happy couple." Sue said, "Thank you." I said, "Thank you Becky." We all clinked glasses. Then we all then took a drink. After setting our glasses down, I lovingly said to Sue, "Now you know what my loving little secret was darling." Sue said with a big, loving grin, "That was so embarrassing darling! But so wonderful!" I said with a loving grin, "I want the whole world to know how I feel darling."

Sue's eyes, then mine, glazed over with love. Sue said with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!" Still being mindful that we were out in public, we then began to kiss each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. Sue and I also embraced and caressed each other as we did so. Becky looked on with a happy, sentimental and slightly emotional look on her face. Knowing that we needed to control ourselves, Sue and I slowly parted our kiss after about twenty five seconds. We looked at each other with loving smiles as we parted a little more and took each other's hands. Becky said with a bit of emotion in her voice, "It's so wonderful!" Sue and I released each other as Sue turned to Becky and said with some emotion, "Oh Becky!"

Then Becky and Sue hugged each other with happy emotion. They hugged for about fifteen seconds or so. Then

460

they parted with happy looks on their faces. Becky said excitedly, "When you were zip lining yesterday, Erik told what he had planned!" A slightly open mouthed, happy, but surprised look came over Sue's face as she said, "You knew!" Becky said, "Yes! And trying to keep it secret was killing me!"

This caused us all to laugh. After the laughter, Sue and Becky hugged again. Sue said, "I'm glad you did! It was such a surprise!" I was still grinning too as I said to Becky, "I'm glad you're the trustworthy type." Sue and Becky parted their hug and turned their grins to me. As Sue and I went to take each other's hands, Becky said, "I knew Sue's surprise would be worth it." Sue and I turned our grins to Becky. Sue said, "You're such a good friend!" Becky said, "I try. Now let's take a look at that ring." Sue released her left hand from me and showed Becky the ring. Becky held Sue's fingers with both hands as she looked at the ring. Then Becky said, "What a rock!" This caused us all to laugh for about ten seconds. During which time, Becky let go of Sue's fingers. The ring wasn't all that spectacular. But it was nice for Becky to say. Of course, Sue and Becky's excitement didn't die down much as Becky told Sue how she and I arranged to have dinner and for her to take a video instead of a picture when I asked her to take a picture of us at the restaurant. They also talked about wedding plans and all that sort of thing.

Though being considerate, they both included me in their conversation as much as possible. Though I didn't care in the slightest. I knew that for girls, things like engagements and wedding plans held an extra special significance. And I was so very happy myself. We were all having such a wonderful time. Sue said that she wanted to get married back home in St. Paul. But that she planned on having Becky there to be her maid of honor. Which of course pleased Becky greatly. At one point, Sue gave Becky her phone to take our picture. Sue and I sat closer together and with the sides of our heads touching and beaming grins. I held onto Sue's shoulder as she held up her hand with the engagement ring and pointed at the engagement ring with the finger of her other hand. Becky took the picture. Sue said that she would send it to her mom tomorrow. Because if she sent it now, she would never get her off the phone. This caused a bit more laughter. We eventually ordered some food. Though I and no doubt Sue were a little too excited to be hungry. So we didn't order anything very big. We continued happily talking until our food came. Though we would talk more in between bites of food. At one point, Becky asked what we had planned for the future. I said that we hadn't really made up our minds yet. But whatever we decided, she would probably be the first to know. This caused a little more laughter.

After we were through eating, I called Philip over to pay the bill. Philip came over with a grin on his face. He said that a couple from outside had insisted on picking up the tab. Then Sue, Becky and I briefly looked through the windows with happy expressions on our faces. Sue asked who it was. Philip said that they had already left. Sue, Becky and I voiced a little disappointment that we couldn't thank them. But Philip said that he sees them every now and then. And that he would pass on our thanks the next time they came in. Sue and I thanked Philip with big grins on our faces. Then I grabbed my wallet and took out three

461

hundred and forty dollars. After putting my wallet back, I folded the money over and handed it to Philip. I asked him to make sure that the waiter got forty of it. To which Philip happily agreed. Sue Becky and I then started to leave. There were still some people around inside and outside who wished Sue and I well again. For which Sue and I thanked them. Of course, there was more happy conversation as we went back to the car. Sue was holding my arm and Becky was holding Sue's.

When we got into the car, the happy conversation continued. It continued as we drove back to Becky's place. The happy conversation continued as we got to Becky's place and parked. It continued as we got out and unloaded Becky's things. I was holding Becky's computer as I said, "You may as well show me your place. And I can make sure you don't have any intruders. I wouldn't want anything to happen to our maid of honor." Sue and Becky gave me happy, appreciative and sentimental smiles. Then Becky said, "Ok." On the way to her apartment, Becky explained that they didn't have to worry about intruders much around there. The happy talk continued as we went inside and sat the things down. Then Becky showed Sue and I around. But Sue was already familiar with the place. It was almost as nice as Sue's place. I went up to Becky's closet and opened the door quickly. In a kidding around manner, I looked around in it quickly and intently to make sure there were no intruders hiding in there. This caused Sue and Becky to laugh. Which I quickly joined in on as I closed the closet door.

The happy talk continued as we made our way back to the general area of the front door. Sue and I had an arm around each other's lower back as we happily talked a little more. Then I said, "Well, we should be going. Sue and I have some things to discuss." Sue held me with her other arm and rested her cheek on my shoulder as she grinned at Becky. Becky and I grinned too as Sue caressed me a little. Then Sue said to Becky with a kidding around voice, "I'm going to discuss his brains out." (I don't suppose I need to tell you what Sue meant by "discuss") What Sue said made Becky and I laugh. Which Sue quickly joined in on. After the laughter, Becky said with a big grin, "Ok you two. Get out of here and have fun." Becky gave us both a quick kiss

on the cheek and we then did a group hug. Then Becky said, "I'm so happy for you guys!" Sue said, "Thank you!" I said, "Thank you!" too. We parted our hug with big sentimental smiles on our faces. Then Sue and I started to leave. There was more happy talk and goodby's as we left. Becky stood in her doorway with a grin on her face as Sue and I went to the car.

When we got to the car, I opened Sue's door on the passenger side. We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue got in. I closed the door, went around to the other side. Becky waved a little at us again as I made my way to the drivers door. As Becky did so, she called out, "Drive carefully!" I waved at Becky too and called out, "I will!" Sue waved at Becky too from inside the car. When I got to the drivers side door, I got in myself. Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Sue already had her seatbelt on. So I had to lean over a little more. Then I put my seatbelt on and started the car. As I did so, Sue said, "This has been such a wonderful day." I took on a more loving look. Sue did

462

too. I said with a loving voice, "It's going to be a wonderful life darling." Sue said with a loving voice, "I just know it's going to be darling." We both leaned over and gave each other a loving kiss. After we parted our kiss, we looked at each other lovingly for a couple moments. Then I pulled out. Sue and I saw that Becky was still in her doorway and smiling at us sentimentally.

So Sue and I grinned at her and waved again. Becky grinned too and waved. Then Becky closed her door with a grin on her face. I then drove away. As Sue and I went, needless to say, there was quite a bit of loving conversation that went on as we drove back to our place. I had to divide my attention between Sue and driving. One of the first things that happened was that I held Sue hand and brought her ring up to my lips. I then gave it a brief and light kiss. We exchanged loving statements as Sue brought my hand to her lips and gave the back of it a brief, light kiss. When we got back to our apartment and parked, Sue and I went to the back of the car and got our things. We continued to speak lovingly to each other. With a brief but loving kiss thrown in. Then we walked to our apartment as we continued to speak lovingly to each other. When we got to the door, I opened it and said, "Hold these for me please darling. Then I handed Sue my boxes. With Sue's purse, bags and boxes, Sue was carrying a pretty good load. I leaned over a little and put my left arm behind Sue's lower legs. Then I picked Sue up and held my dear sweet love in my arms as we looked lovingly at each other.

Sue said with a loving voice, "Are you still practicing for carrying me over the threshold darling?" I said with a loving voice, "No darling. I just love doing it." We gave each other loving smiles as I brought Sue inside. Once inside, I sat Sue on her feet. We gave each other a brief

but loving kiss. Then I turned on some lights, went to close and lock the door. As I did so, Sue went over to the table and sat her things down. I then supported myself with one arm on the door jam and used my feet to slip off my shoes. Sue held onto the back of a chair and used her feet to slip off her slippers too. I went to stand near Sue and turned my back to her. As I grinned at Sue over my shoulder, Sue was grinning too as I said, "Let me give you a ride darling." Sue said, "Ok!" Then Sue jumped up into my back and wrapped her legs around my hips. Sue also wrapped her arms around my upper chest. We both chuckled a little as I held onto Sue's thighs. Then I said, "Hold on!" I then started running for our bedroom. We both laughed as we went. I came almost to a stop when I reached the bedroom door. It was a little harder to stop with Sue on my back than I thought it would be. But I managed. Then I dashed into the bedroom. I stopped fairly abruptly near the bed.

We continued to laugh as Sue slipped off my back. I then turned to Sue. We held each other in a loose embrace as we shared in each other's laughter. After a few moments, I grinned lovingly at Sue. Sue did the same with me. Then I said with a loving voice, "You make me so happy my fiancée." Sue looked at me with a more solemn look of love. I did the same with Sue. Then Sue said with a loving voice, "And you make me so happy my fiancé." We then started to kiss each other passionately. We both gave off moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other's. After a few extended moments, we began to

463

undress each other. Here and there, there were other kisses and passionate statements of love or endearment. Once we were in bed, I went to lay between Sue's legs. Sue had an arm around my shoulders and one on my penis. Both of us were looking at each other with glazed over looks of passion. Sue said with a passionate voice as she caressed her hand up and down my penis, "Oh darling. Only a fiancé's dick could be so hard."

I said with a passionate voice, "Oh my love. Put me in you." Sue pulled on my penis a little and directed it to where it needed to go. Looks of ecstasy came over both of our faces as my penis slid into the wonderful tightness of Sue's slippery vagina. Sue and I began to make love. I couldn't say that our sexual intercourse was better than it had been. But because of our newly engaged state, it was a little more loving. Sue and I made love for about the next ten minutes. Over the course of which, I managed to bring Sue to a climax three times. Though I brought Sue to a fourth climax as we finished. At which point, because of my increased actions, I also climaxed. Both of us gave off cries of ecstasy. After things settled down from our lovemaking, I remained inside Sue as we kissed each other passionately. After about a minute, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. I looked at Sue with a loving and emotional look. Sue looked at me in the same way. I said

with a loving, emotional voice, "From all that has passed between us darling, I have a question to ask you that I know I don't need to ask."

Tears started to well up in my eyes. Sue also had tears starting to well up in her eyes as I said, "But now that we're engaged, I know it's safe to ask." Sue said with an emotional voice, "What is it darling!" I had tears starting to fall from my eyes as I said, "I need you so bad darling! Please tell me that it's ok for me to need you so bad!" A more emotional look came over Sue's face before Sue fully embraced me with her arms and legs. I shoved my arms between Sue and the mattress as I held Sue more firmly. Then Sue gave out a cry of emotional passion. Sue then said fairly quickly with a voice full of emotional ecstasy, "Say it again darling!" I said with a highly emotional voice, "I need you so bad darling! Please tell me it's ok for me to need you so bad!" Sue clutched me a little more firmly and twitched orgasmically. At the same time, Sue gave out a cry of emotional ecstasy. What I said obviously caused Sue to orgasm again. It may not have been as intense as some of Sue's other orgasms. But I was pretty impressed that Sue was able to do so again so soon after her last one. I guess I pretty much had my answer.

After a few extended moments, Sue said with a voice full of emotional ecstasy, "Oh, need me darling!... Because I need you even more!" Then Sue started peppering the side of my head with quick kisses as I said with a highly emotional voice, "My darling!" Sue then peppered my face with a number of quick kisses. Then Sue moved her kisses toward my lips. When our lips met, we kissed each other passionately. Though with a tiny bit of uncomfortable firmness. Both of us gave off moans of passion. This only lasted for about twenty seconds. Then Sue broke off her kiss and fully embraced me again. Sue then said with a passionate but highly emotional voice, "Hold me darling! Hold me!" We both held each other firmly as we both shed tears from our tightly closed eyes. Both

464

of us of course also had emotional looks of love on our faces. We tightly embraced each other for nearly a minute. Then our hold of each other began to lessen. We held each other in a loving embrace for about another minute. Then Sue slid her calves onto my lower legs. I began to nuzzle Sue with my cheek. Sue started to caress me more and nuzzled my cheek back with hers.

A few extended moments later, Sue said with a soft, loving voice, "I love you so much darling." I said with a gentle, loving voice, "I love you so much too darling." We then began to caress our cheeks against each other as we brought our lips closer together. Sue and I kissed each other with a loving tenderness that was extraordinary. This lasted for at least thirty seconds. Then some tongue became involved. Our kiss then turned passionate as we both gave off moans of pleasure. Sue and I kissed each other for about another two minutes.



A few times, we would briefly lessen our kiss enough to change the position of our heads. I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We both slowly opened our eyes and looked at each other lovingly. Both of us looked around each other's faces before again looking into each other's loving eyes. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "You're going to make such a wonderful wife darling." Sue said, "And you're going to make such a wonderful husband darling." We then kissed each other lovingly again. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss again and looked at each other lovingly.

I said, "Are you ready for wiener removal darling?" This made Sue smile lovingly at me. I smiled lovingly at Sue too. Sue said, "You know I'm never ready for that darling. But go ahead." I slowly withdrew my penis from Sue. Both of us took on slightly pleased looks as I did so. Once we were separated, I went to lay on my side facing Sue. As I did so, I helped Sue a little to lay on her side facing me. Sue and I entwined our legs. I said with a more loving countenance, "Just a second darling." Then I pulled out one of our pillows from under the bedspread. I placed it so we could both lay the sides of our heads on it. We then did so as we entwined ourselves further. Both of us again took on looks of solemn love. We looked deeply into each other's loving eyes. Knowing that someday we would be man and wife, both of us were in a dream scape of love. Sue and I absorbed our love through each other's eyes for about the next two minutes. Then I brought up a topic that we had discussed before. I said with a gentle, loving voice, "You know what one of the things I love about you is darling?" Sue smiled lovingly at me. I looked at Sue in the same way.

Sue said, "What's that darling." I said, "That you don't have any tattoos or anything but your ears pierced. It shows that you're not that much of a pack animal." A little appreciation showed in Sue's loving smile. Sue said, "Thank you darling. I just don't like pain. And I don't have anything to prove. I love that you don't have any of those things either." I said, "It just seemed stupid to me for people to do something permanent for a temporary cheap thrill." I then started telling Sue more of the things I loved about her. I had already gone through all of the major things. So I started talking about the minor things. This progressed to the very minute things. Which of course caused more kissing and caressing. After that, Sue began to do the same thing with me. But at one point, Sue carried it a little farther. Sue said, "I just love the way your cells divide darling."

465

This caused us both to laugh. Afterwards, I said with mirth in my voice, "You can't see that!" Then Sue said in a kidding around kind of voice, "Sure I can!" Then Sue pointed to a spot on the front of my shoulder and said as she looked closely, "There goes one now!"

We both cracked up laughing. Sue and I shared in each other's laughter a little. Then we joyfully and fully embraced each other as we

continued to laugh. After the laughter and more kissing, we again laid our heads on our pillow as we looked at each other lovingly. Sue and I then discussed our futures together. After about forty minutes, as Sue and I smiled lovingly at each other, I said with a loving voice, "Would you do me a favor darling." Sue said with a loving voice, "Sure darling." I said, "Would you feed me your breasts again?" Sue said, "I'd love to darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue and I released each other. As Sue got up and I laid on my back, I moved our pillow more under my head. Sue straddled me and took hold of my hands. We looked at each other passionately as Sue moved my hands off to the side. Sue said with a loving voice, "No touching darling until I say it's ok." My eyes glazed over with passion as I said with a passionate voice, "Ok darling." Sue then let go of my hands and sat up on her hands and knees. Then Sue brought one of the nipples of her amazing breasts to my eager lips.

I sucked on Sue's nipple enthusiastically. After a few extended moments, Sue pulled her nipple from my lips. Then Sue brought her other one to me. I eagerly sucked on that one too. After a few extended moments, Sue pulled that one from my lips. My passionate enthusiasm for what Sue was doing brought a loving smile to Sue's face. Then Sue brought her other nipple to me. But before I could get much of it, Sue pulled it away. Sue giggled, then said with a grin, "You have to be quicker than that darling!" Sue then brought her other nipple to me and did the same thing. This made Sue giggle again. Then I said with a plaintive, yet passionate voice, "Oh darling! You're such a tease!" This made Sue giggle again. Then Sue grinned again and said with a mirthful, yet loving voice, "How do you like this!" Sue then started swaying and slightly turning her upper body. As Sue did so, I was getting smacked on both sides of my head with her luscious breasts. I gave off exclaiming moans of passion. Then Sue stopped what she was doing and hung her large, firm breasts near my face.

Sue then said, "You can touch them now darling." I quickly took hold of Sue's breasts with a look of passion and relief on my face. Then I enthusiastically caressed Sue's breasts and kneaded them with my fingers. I went back and forth as I peppered both of them with quick kisses. Sue had pleased, loving smile on her face. Then I started sucking on one of Sue's nipples with gusto as I caressed and kneaded both her breasts. This also included pressing one of Sue's other breasts against my cheek so I could nuzzle it. While most of this was going on, I had my eyes lightly closed with a highly satisfied, loving look on my face. After about thirty seconds or so, I started sucking on Sue's other nipple in the same way. While I did so, I started to become aroused. After I was through sucking on Sue's other nipple, I looked up at Sue with passion on my face as I continued to fondle and caresses Sue's breasts. Sue was smiling at me lovingly. I said, "Would you do me another favor darling." Sue said, "What's

that darling." I said, "Put me inside you darling." A passionate look came over Sue's face. Sue backed down a little and reached her hand down. At the same time, Sue looked down between her knees that she had herself propped up on.

Then Sue began to caress my firm appendage. Sue then looked back at me. We both had glazed over looks of passion on our faces. Sue said with a passionate voice, "Oh yes darling!" Then Sue moved my erect penis to where it needed to go. A look of ecstasy came over both our faces as Sue slid her hips onto me. Then Sue said with a voice full of ecstasy, "Oh darling!" Sue still supported her upper body on her straightened arms as she moved on me. Even though I had a look of ecstasy on my face, I also took on a bit of a determined look. I said to Sue with ecstasy in my voice as I caressed her, "Do you know what you get for teasing me darling?" Sue looked at me with a face of loving ecstasy. Then Sue said a little quickly with a voice full of ecstasy, "What's that darling." I caressed my hands down to Sue's hips and took hold of them. As I did so, I said, "This." I then started speeding up my actions. With the hold I had on Sue's hips, I helped myself do this. An even greater look of ecstasy came over Sue's face as her eyes rolled back a little and became a little more glazed over with ecstasy. Sue also gave off a greater moan of ecstasy.

I also gave off a greater moan of ecstasy as I speeded up my actions even more. We were really going at it. I was merciless! It only took about twenty five seconds for Sue to give off cries of orgasmic ecstasy. But I was relentless. Sue's breasts were really rocking. Which only added to my pleasure. After about another fifty seconds at this greater speed, I could tell Sue was about to orgasm again. Which was a good thing. Because I was about to orgasm myself. About ten seconds later, Sue gave off cries of orgasmic ecstasy. A few seconds later, I did too. I began to slow down my actions as we both gave off calls of orgasmic ecstasy. About ten seconds later, I stopped my actions. Sue laid on me as we both caught our breath with sighs and moans of ecstasy. Then Sue said a little breathlessly, "I should tease you more often darling!" As I caressed Sue more, I said a little breathlessly, "I'm surprised I lasted as long as I did!" After a few extended moments, Sue caressed the side of her lips across my cheek on the way to my lips.

We kissed each other passionately as our lips met. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure. As we remained connected, I rolled Sue onto her back. With me now on top, Sue of course took this opportunity to caress me just about everywhere she could reach. I did my best to caress Sue as well as I could. We kissed each other for about another minute. Then I slowly parted my kiss from Sue enough for us to clearly look into each other's loving faces. Then I moved my face a little farther away and said to Sue with a loving voice, "I wasn't too hard on you, was I darling?" This made Sue smile lovingly at me. I smiled lovingly at Sue too. Sue said with a kidding around

voice, "I won't know until I try walking." This made us both laugh. After sharing in each other's laughter a little, we fully embraced each other. A few moments later, Sue and I nuzzled the sides of our heads together. I said with a loving, joyful voice, "You make me so happy darling!" Sue said, "You make me so happy too darling!" After a little more nuzzling and caressing, we slid the corners of our mouths along each other's

467

cheeks, on the way to kiss each other again. Sue and I kissed each other lovingly when our lips met.

After all of the usual but wonderful post sex loving, Sue suggested that since neither of us ate very much at the restaurant, maybe we should order more food. I agreed with Sue's plan. We got up and got dressed. Then we put an arm around each other's lower backs. As we made our way out of the bedroom, I said, "You seem to be walking ok." This made Sue laugh. Which I quickly joined in on. Sue and I shared in each other's laughter on the way to the dining area. After a little laughter, Sue said with a kidding around, mirth filled voice, "It surprises me too!" This caused us to laugh again. We stopped at the dining room table and gave each other a loving kiss. Afterwards, Sue and I happily chatted about computers as we unpacked them. I also ordered some takeout food. While we waited, we plugged in our new laptops and gave them a whirl. Sue and I skyped Becky. We sat next to each other at the table so Becky could see us both. Becky was happily enjoying her new computer too. We talked happily for a while. With, as usual, a few laughs along the way.

Then our food came. I told Becky that some food came and excused myself to go pay for it. Sue and Becky continued to talk. After I paid for the food, I brought it over to the counter. Then I went over and leaned my head next to Sue's. After a little more happy talk, we said our farewells and ended the connection. Sue and I then had a loving meal together. Often feeding each other bites of food. While we ate, in between bites of food, we decided to watch a pay per view romantic movie. Afterwards, Sue and I got undressed again, went into the bathroom and cleaned up a little. Sue said that she planned on having some cummy desert. And she wanted to be clean because, if she knew me, I would like some as well. I said, "You know me so well!" This made us both laugh. So after brushing our teeth, Sue and I stepped into the shower and got cleaned up. Each of us also helped clean each other. Of course, I really enjoyed helping Sue rinse herself out. When we were through in the bathroom, I got a blanket and put it over the couch so we wouldn't get it all messy. There wasn't any sense in putting on any clothing. Both of us knew that our clothes would just end up coming off again at any time.

As Sue looked for a movie, I asked Sue if she had a magnifying glass around anywhere. Sue told me where to find one. I went to a drawer

in the kitchen and found it. Then I went back over to the couch with it. I sat down and we smiled lovingly at each other. Then I told Sue that she could take a close look at her ring. Sue sat the remote aside and used the magnifier to look at her ring. A more loving look came over Sue's face as she said with a loving voice, "It's just beautiful darling!" After looking at it for a couple more moments, I said with a gentle, loving voice, "Look at the inside of the band darling." Sue looked at me with a surprised, loving look. Then Sue slipped off the ring and looked at the inside of the band. Sue saw what I had inscribed there. Sue said, "Oh darling!"

Tears started to well up in Sue's eyes as she examined it for a few extended moments. Tears started to well up in my eyes too. Then Sue and I looked at each other with highly loving, emotional looks. Sue said with an emotional voice, "Your heart will always be safe in my hands darling!" Then Sue dropped the

468

magnifier to the floor and held the ring up to me. Sue said, "Put it back on my finger darling!" I did as Sue asked and gave the ring a brief, light kiss afterwards to seal it again. Both of us were a little teary at this point. Sue and I then began to kiss each other passionately. After about a minute, Sue began to caress my genitals. Which caused me to become fully aroused. We parted our kiss and looked at each other passionately. Sue said with a passionate voice, "Feed me all of the fiancé cum you can darling." My eyes glazed over with love. Sue began to kiss her way down my body as I answered with a passionate voice, "Oh darling!" As Sue knelt between my legs, Sue began to pleasure me orally. Most of which I'll leave to your imagination. Sue went at it like a happily engaged woman. It only took about a minute and a half before I told Sue with a voice just dripping with ecstasy that she was about to receive the juicy treat she desired.

As usual, this was information that pleased my dear sweet love. Soon after, I was giving off calls of orgasmic ecstasy. After Sue was through, Sue kissed her way back up to me. We kissed each other passionately when our lips met. After about thirty seconds, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. Then I said to Sue in a highly loving voice, "Can I lick you darling?" Sue said passionately, "Of course darling." Then I gave Sue's forehead a quick but good lick. Then I grinned lovingly at Sue and said, "There. How was it darling." This caused Sue to chuckle. Which I quickly joined in on. A couple moments later, Sue said with an amused voice, "That's not where I was expecting you to lick me!" We chuckled a little more. Then we smiled lovingly at each other. I wiped away my forehead lick, then caressed my hand down to Sue's wonderful muff pie. Sue's smile was replaced by a look of ecstasy as I slid a couple fingers down around Sue's clitoris and then slid them further into her vagina. A highly

loving look came over my face as I said with loving enthusiasm while I massaged Sue down there, "I hope you want me to lick down here darling. I really love licking you down here." Sue said with a look of loving ecstasy on her face, "Oh yes darling! Lick me down there!"

I said, "Oh yes darling!" Then I started to kiss my way down Sue. I continued to massage Sue down there as I paused briefly to give one of her nipples a good suck. Then I kissed my way further down Sue until I got to where I was going. I then pleased Sue orally. I pleased Sue with as much gusto as I could. But of course, I couldn't really go too crazy on my dear sweet love. Because Sue was pretty sensitive down there. It only took about thirty seconds to bring Sue to her first orgasm. Needless to say, it was beyond wonderful when Sue basically told me with a voice of heightened ecstasy that I was about to receive an orgasmic treat. Though it was even more wonderful when I did receive it. I only pleased Sue long enough to get another helping of wonderful, fiancée love juice. After I finished my thing, there was more of the wonderful, post sex loving. During which, basically, I passionately told Sue of the indescribably joy it gave me to have my mouth gush full of her wonderful love juice before I swallowed it down. Then Sue basically told me of the joy she felt sucking my juicy penis until she had ingested every bit of my love juice from it. Sue then took on a more joyful expression. I smiled lovingly at Sue. Then Sue said, "In fact, I'm declaring the rest of the night to be strictly oral."

469

A happier expression came over my face as I said, "Oh goodie!" This made us both laugh. After a little more joyful loving, we ordered up a romantic movie. Then I put one leg up on the couch and Sue sat a little between my legs. Though Sue put her shoulder against my side with an arm around my back. I held Sue's shoulder with one arm and had another slid down to hold one of Sue's breasts. Sue had her other hand on my testicles. We leaned the sides of our heads together. Though my cheek was a little closer to the top and side of Sue's head. As we watched TV, our blissful snuggliness was pure heaven. Occasionally, we would caress each other or nuzzle a little. More often, Sue would gently knead my testicles with her fingers. There was also the occasional comment about the movie. Along with the occasional loving comment about each other. This usually led to a loving kiss. Then we would fully snuggle again. We paused the movie a couple of times to take an oral sex break. After the movie was over, we found something else to watch. During the course of which, I became aroused again. This led to another oral sex break. For myself, I just couldn't get enough of Sue's love juice. And Sue had told me again just how much she loved milking me.

Later that night, we decided to go to bed. After stopping by the bathroom to help each other pee again, we went to bed. Both of us fell

asleep in each other's loving embrace. The next day, we woke up. Sue and I lovingly enjoyed our waking up together. We shared a little extra love. Then we had some wonderful sexual intercourse. After that, we took turns using the bathroom. Then we both used the bathroom to get cleaned up together. We brushed our teeth. After spitting out, Sue and I gave each other a fun, slippery toothpaste kiss. When we were through with all that, Sue shaved me. We then took a shower. One of the things I did was shave any stubble on Sue's underarms and legs. Shaving around Sue's pubic area was especially wonderful. After doing all of our usual things, we got dressed. I won't bore you with the details of how we dressed this time. After we were through, we were both dressed casually, but nicely. Then we went to the kitchen and made coffee. We drank it at the diningroom table. While we did so, Sue sent her mom the picture Becky had taken of Sue and I as Sue held up her engagement ring.

Sue's mom called her back quickly. We did a skype thing on the computer. I met Sue's mom on it. We had quite an enjoyable, if a bit long, conversation. Keeping up with the cover story we had decided on and had used on Becky, I told Sue's mom about myself. We told Sue's mom all of the things we had planned to do. Sue and I planned to do some organic farming and raise organic animals. Along with producing some organic milk. This made Sue's mom happy. But she was thrilled when we told her that we planned to do so near St. Paul. I told Sue's mom that I only had about a hundred thousand to play with. The rest would probably have to go for farming equipment, furniture, animals and whatever else might come up. So I asked her if she could look at some farms in her area that we might be able to put a down payment on. Knowing that she would have her little girl living near her, Sue's mom was also thrilled to help us do that too. Eventually, Sue and I tore ourselves away and went out. We took some of Sue's coins to sell them around the town. Sue and I had already

470

decided that we would eventually sell two thirds of them. The rest we would save for a rainy day. Sue had said that their value would only increase. Knowing this myself, I agreed with Sue.

We stopped at a coin store and took the coins Sue and I brought with us inside. Then we went up to a counter and were greeted by the person behind the counter. Sue told the person that she had inherited some Spanish gold doubloons that she would like to sell. Then Sue took the six that she had brought with her and sat them on the counter. The person behind the counter was immediately drawn to one of them. So he picked it up and examined it carefully under a magnifying glass. He was impressed. Then he told us that the coin was worth ten thousand dollars. Sue and I had surprised looks come over our faces. These we briefly turned to each other. Then the person explained to us why it was so valuable. After doing so, Sue told

the person that she would like to hold onto that one for now. He seemed a little disappointed. But told us that if we changed our minds, to bring it back anytime. We sold the other ones. They were worth about what Sue said they were. After we left the coin shop, Sue said, "I didn't go through the coins that thoroughly. I guess we're going to have to check them more carefully."

I said, "If you hadn't suggested that we hold onto that coin, I was going to. We can use it to compare to the others." Sue said, "I noticed that they weren't all exactly the same. But I didn't think there might have been any especially valuable ones amongst them." We got back into the car. Then I said, "I wonder if the person who gave them to you knew that there were more valuable ones in there." Sue said, "It's hard to say. To me at least, Spanish doubloons are just Spanish doubloons." I said, "I suppose if it came from the treasure we spoke about, they may have just listed that portion of the treasure as so many hundreds of pounds of gold doubloons and stuck them somewhere secure with the rest of the treasure." Once we had our seatbelts buckled, I then said, "It's a good thing that you didn't choose one of the valuable ones to look up sweetest. Or you might have thought that you were more wealthy than you thought." As I started the car, Sue said, "If I had managed to look up one of the more valuable ones, I would have probably checked them out more carefully." I said in a kidding around voice, "I kind of wish I had gotten more money than you darling. Then I would feel a little less like a gigolo." This made us both laugh.

Afterwards, Sue said, "If you're a gigolo darling, you're worth every penny." Then I took on more of a loving look. Sue did too. Then I brought up one of the things Sue and I had talked about that I didn't mention. I said with a loving voice, "As I told you darling, I would rather have you than the money." A little more loving emotion showed on Sue's face. I took on such a look too. Sue said, "Oh darling!" We both then leaned over and kissed each other passionately as we embraced each other as well as we could. Both of us gave off slight moans of pleasure. After about a minute, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly. I said with a gentle, loving voice as we held hands and sat back a little more in our seats, "Let's go to the bank next darling." Sue gave me a loving smile. I smiled lovingly at Sue too. Sue said with a loving voice, "Ok darling." We leaned over and gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then we released

471

each other. I put the car in gear and started to pull away. Sue and I continued to talk lovingly as we went to the bank. When we got there, even though Sue and I weren't officially married yet, we got a joint account. One of the things I did was send my sister five thousand dollars.

While we were in there, we went into the safety deposit room and got



the pouch of coins. We were going to look at them carefully when we got back to the apartment. After we left the bank, we put the pouch in the back of the car and in the spare tire compartment. After that, as we went on our way, Sue directed me to a place she wanted to go to. The place we went to was kind of secluded. As we pulled in, I said, "What are we going to do here sweetie." Then Sue said with a grin, "I just can't wait to suck your cock darling."

Sue's playful bluntness and grin made me grin too as I pulled up to a spot to park. I said, "You don't have to try to get me to propose anymore darling." Sue said as she undid her seatbelt, "That's not what I'm doing darling. I just want to milk you." I undid my seatbelt as a passionate look came over both of our faces. Then Sue undid my pants. After taking out my penis, Sue began to fellate me. Which I of course enjoyed greatly. After Sue was through, there was the usual post sex love and kisses. I then did up my pants. Then Sue and I drove back to our apartment to check out our coins. When we got there, even though I was curious about the coins, the first thing I did was pleasure Sue orally. We did this with Sue standing and leaning her butt on the back of the couch. I was kneeling in front of Sue with her pants and panties around her ankles. After all of the usual post sex loving, we went to our computers and started looking up coins. With the coins dumped out on the table between our computers, we went through them pretty carefully.

As far as we could tell from the internet, there were seven of the more valuable coins. There were also a couple that, as far as we could tell, were worth nearly twenty thousand dollars. All of this as you could imagine made Sue and I very happy. Though with the two really valuable ones, Sue and I decided it was best not to get our hopes up too high until we had them checked out by an expert. Sue and I decided to keep a couple of the valuable ones, one of the really valuable ones and five of the regular ones. We put the rest back into the pouch. The coins we decided to keep, we stashed around the apartment. Then Sue and I got cleaned up a little. This mainly consisted of us brushing our teeth. Then we left again. We drove back to the bank. Sue and I put the rest of the coins into our safety deposit box. After that, we drove around and found some other fun things to do. Both of us had a wonderful time. Sue and I decided to stop by the place where she had worked and Becky was now working. It was close to Becky's quitting time. Becky was happy to see us when we came in. Then we greeted each other and chatted a little.

We decided to go hang out and do whatever when Becky got out of work. Sue and I hung around until Becky got out. As we did so, a couple of the other waitresses Sue knew came over. They were happy for both of us. Sue's old boss, Ed, came over too and talked a little with us. He didn't seem upset by Sue's quitting. After congratulating us again, he went back to doing other things. Becky soon came over. Then all three of us went out. After having some fun in

town, we went back to where Becky worked and dropped her off at her car. When Becky was on her way, we went back home. Needless to say, the rest of the night was extremely pleasant for Sue and I. Sue and I went out again the next day. Both of us had fun for the next couple days. We also sold some of the other coins we decided not to keep. Sue and I drove up to Springfield to dispose of most of them. It turned out that the one really valuable one was as valuable as we thought. During these two days, we also spent a little more time with Becky. Then Sue and I left and went on a road trip. Being roomier, we took my car.

Before we left, Sue and I again stopped by the bank. We deposited some money and put the rest into our safety deposit box. Then Sue and I took half of the rest of the coins and brought them with us. Sue and I did our road trip thing for about two weeks. We drove around to various cities and sold the coins we brought with us here and there. Sue and I had the money sent to our account. While we were traveling around, Sue and Becky would talk on the phone nearly every day. Either Sue would call Becky or Becky would call Sue. Though Sue also talked to her mom quite often. On one of the calls Becky made to Sue, Becky said that she met a wonderful guy too who came into the restaurant. His name was Henry. We were both very happy for her. After our trip, we returned to our apartment. We arranged for Becky and Henry to meet us there with some packing boxes. They already knew of Sue and I's plans. Which was to move to St. Paul and get married. We grinned at each other and waved as we pulled up. Sue and I got out of the car. Then Sue and Becky happily hugged and greeted each other. Then Becky proudly introduced Henry to us. Obviously, Becky was happy with him.

Sue gave him a brief hug with the kinds of verbal greetings as you might expect. I then shook his hand and greeted him too. He seemed really nice. I already knew from a picture Becky sent that he was blond too. I suppose that we were just about equally as attractive. After a little more chatting, I suggested to the girls that they go on ahead and make some coffee while Henry and I got the boxes. Which they happily agreed to. They put an arm around each other's lower backs and headed for the apartment. Both of them chatted happily and excitedly to each other as they went. Henry and I went over to his shiny new pickup as we talked about how lucky we were. Then Henry lowered the tailgate of his truck. There were a number of folded packing boxes and tape in the back. As we got them, I said with a smile, "Becky is really hot." This made Henry grin as I added, "Any guy would be lucky to be with her." Henry said happily, "I know." I said, "As you no doubt know, not only are Sue and Becky best friends, but they're just as close as sisters." Then I took on a more somber expression. Henry did too.

I said, "Becky is also terribly sweet and deserves to be treated well."

Henry took on a sentimental smile as I said, "I would hope that if she ever did manage somehow to make you angry, you would have the sense enough to just walk away. Because if you ever mistreated her and she came to Sue and I for protection, she would get it." Henry gave me a couple appreciative pats on the shoulder. After doing so, he said, "You don't need to worry. I love Becky too

473

much to ever think of hurting her." I grinned. Henry grinned too as I put out my hand to be shook. We shook each other's hand as I said, "In that case, we're now best friends too." Both he and I laughed and gave each other a slap on each other's shoulders. Then we grabbed the boxes and packing tape. Henry closed the tailgate and we headed toward the apartment. As we went, I asked him what he does for work. He said that he was a fabricator, but he didn't work anymore. Then he told me basically the same thing that Becky told Sue on one of the occasions that they talked on the phone. Which was that his grandmother died and left his parents a good chunk of change. She also left all of her grand kids a nice little nest egg in the form of a trust fund. Though Becky didn't say how big of a nest egg it was. Henry didn't say either. And I wasn't about to ask.

Henry said that right now, he was staying at a vacation house his grandparents had owned in Branson. Nearing the apartment, I said with a grin, "Not to be all gay or anything." I then put an arm around Henry's back with my hand on his far shoulder and said, "Let's make the girls happy." Henry was grinning too as he put his hand on my far shoulder. Holding the boxes under our outside arms, we walked into the open apartment door like this. Becky and Sue beamed happy grins at us from the kitchen. Becky said, "You two look as thick as thieves!" This caused a little laughter. Henry and I let go of each other as I said, "It turns out we have something in common." We stopped and dropped the boxes and tape. Then Henry said, "We have the two hottest girls around." Loving and thrilled looks came over Sue and Becky's faces. They happily scampered over to us as they gave off little exclamations of delight. Sue and I happily embraced and Becky and Henry did the same. We all expressed the love we had for our partners. After doing this and kissing our partners, the girls went back into the kitchen and continued making coffee. We all talked as Henry and I assembled some of the boxes.

When the coffee was done, we sat down at the table with the chairs moved near our partners. Though Becky had no doubt told Henry what Sue and I had told her about myself, I told Henry about myself. Though of course, I wasn't completely truthful about it. He was also interested to know that he and I at one time did the same kind of work. We talked a little about that. Which Becky and Sue listened to with interest. Assuming that Henry wasn't filthy rich, I asked Henry what he planned to do for a living. He said that he wasn't sure. He heard of

people who did aquaculture. And they needed fish food for fish farms. Then he brought up the jumping carp problem this country has. He planned to check into if any money could be made by catching the carp and turning them into fish food. Seeing how they weren't really good for anything else. Though he also had to find out if the fish were toxin free enough to do anything like that. He also brought up how fishing trawlers scoop up everything and dump what they don't want overboard. Even though a use could be found for the by catch. Such as food for fish farming. This started us all to start talking about the environment. We all had things to say that interested everybody else.

Both Becky and Henry said that they really liked my idea of organic farming. I had found out earlier that Becky wasn't from Branson earlier. Becky said to Sue that since her parents lived closer to St. Paul than Branson, she would really like

474

to live near us. Sue and Becky became excited and started to talk about how wonderful it would be. Henry said to Becky that if he ever decided to make her an honest woman, maybe we could find property next to each other's and go into organic farming together. This caused everybody excitement. Except for me. I took on more of a somber look. Everybody looked at me and were a little puzzled by my countenance. I said, "Before you make such a decision, there's something you need to know about me." Everybody else took on a somber look too. Though Becky's had a touch of worry to hers. I looked and said to Sue, "I'm going to have to tell them my filthy, disgusting secret darling." Sue's somber look was replaced by a look of loving pride. Then Sue said lovingly, "Ok darling." Sue's attitude greatly reduced Becky's trepidation.

I turned to Becky and Henry and said, "The mind games people have been exposed to are probably like a baby duckling hatching from an egg with a human and imprinting itself on them. You two may be too imprinted by our government to accept what I'm going to tell you. But please don't interrupt me until I'm through. I don't want to lose my train of thought." I started out by telling Becky and Henry that I wasn't a member of the KKK or anything like that. Then I told Becky and Henry basically what I told Sue about my views toward other races. They listened with solemn interest and sometimes surprise. Though I added a couple things that I didn't tell Sue. One was, "Probably the stupidest argument I've heard about race mixing is people bringing up what humans were tens of thousands of years ago. Or what they may be tens of thousands of years from now. But to a large extent, it is today that matters. If I need an apple, I'm going to get one. Not plant a tree and wait for one. Neither am I going to wait for some sort of evolution to straighten out the mess. Neither am I willing to throw my species of human on the garbage heap.

"Some people would try to keep from recognizing the truth even if it

bit them in the ass. Or like that blond actor I mentioned, if it stuck a knife in them. Sure, these other races often say that they wouldn't mind interbreeding with us. Like a mouse wouldn't mind interbreeding with a rat; Or a chihuahua with a German shepherd; Or a sea gull with an eagle. No doubt they would also like for us to "share" the best country on earth with them." Then, in another spot, I added, "I had heard on a couple documentary types of shows that there are too many people on the earth for it to support. But the world population keeps growing. I also found out here and there that White people aren't responsible for that growth. So what's the solution to the problem? Well the holiest of holy solution you guys are probably most indoctrinated with is the sick concept that it doesn't matter what race you are. Unfortunately, as I said, our diseased economic system invites non whites to exploit. And look at South Africa. The Whites there were against race mixing. But just like the entrepreneurial, capitalistic plantation owners in the old south, South Africans employed hordes of niggers. Now niggers run the place.

"But rather than doing things like learning Mexican, I choose to shun all non whites. I may eat Mexican or Chinese food from time to time. But I would rather have not even heard of such foods that have those creatures around. Neither do I watch nigger sports or listen to rap. I also avoid movies with nigger stars. I will

475

even turn the channel if a commercial comes on that shows niggers. For one reason, too often they're a subliminal assault against "whitey." One example is that most of the time, whenever they show a White woman, there is a nigger male in there somewhere. Or vice versa. For all the shit going on, neither can I look at the problem like a lot of religious people do. Which is look forward to the destruction of the earth so we can all go float around in the sky with Jesus. That's about all I have to say." Sue also reminded me of something I told her that I forgot to mention. After I was through, Becky said, "There's nothing filthy or disgusting about what you said." Henry held out his hand to be shook as he said with a slightly determined, appreciative look, "You've only strengthened my resolve best friend." I shook Henry's hand with a big grin on my face. Which made Henry grin too. Sue and Becky's looks became overjoyed.

They got up and happily ran around the table toward each other. Henry and I released our handshake and grinned at the girls as they happily embraced. Sue said, "Oh Becky! It's so wonderful!" Becky said, "Oh Sue! I'm so happy!" After the girls embraced for a few extended moments, Henry said to them in a kidding around voice, "Don't get ahead of yourselves. I haven't proposed yet." Sue and Becky turned big grins to Henry as they embraced. I said to Henry, "It's only a matter of time. Only a fool would let Becky get away." We all laughed a little. Then Becky said to me with a sentimental grin on

her face, "Thank you! You're so sweet!" Then Sue and Becky let go of each other and headed back to their men. Sue said to me, "I think your coffee's gotten cold darling. Can I get you some more?" I said, "Yes please darling." Becky said to Henry, "Can I get you more coffee darling?" Sue and I were giving each other a loving kiss as Henry said to Becky, "Yes my love." Sue and I parted our kiss as Becky and Henry applied one to each other.

After they parted, the girls picked up our coffee cups and went toward the kitchen. As they went, they happily chatted about how wonderful things would be. At the same time, Henry said to me, "All those things you said. You must be some sort of expert on the topic." I said, "I could talk about that kind of stuff all day." Then I added in a more sarcastic voice, "Like the gratitude mentally diseased spicks show for living here by trying to breed White people out of existence." Then I added in a more normal tone, "But it would be too much of a downer. Most of what I said I learned from my mom's boyfriend. Who I called uncle Bill. He was the kind of person you could trust. Also, he had three different members of his family killed my niggers. Which caused him to become an expert on the topic. Neither was he affected by the politically correct dogshit the media likes to portray." Then, to change the subject, I said, "Your truck looks pretty nice. When did you get it." Henry said, "About a week ago." As the girls started coming back with our coffee, Henry added, "If you weren't moving so far away, we could have put it to some use."

The girls set down our coffee mugs near us. As we all smiled at our partners, I said to Sue, "Thank you sweetness." Sue said, "You're welcome honey bunch." We then gave each other a brief but loving kiss. At the same time as all this happened, Henry said to Becky, "Thank you darling." Becky said, "You're welcome darling." Then they gave each other a brief but loving kiss too. I said

476

to Sue, "Would you grab a phone book for me my heart." What I said brought a bit more love to Sue's smile. Becky and Henry smiled sentimentally at us. I then said, "You might also want to grab a magnifier." This caused Sue to grin as I added, "Henry might want to look at the inside of your engagement ring." This caused Becky and Henry to grin too as I added, "It might give him some ideas." Everybody was beaming grins at this point. I grinned too. Sue said, "Ok darling!" Sue and I gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue started toward the kitchen. Becky said, "I'll come with you!" They went back to the kitchen and chatted happily about Sue's engagement ring.

Henry said to me with a bit of sentimentality on his face, "Becky showed me the video of your proposal. It was just wonderful." I said with a bit of appreciation on my face, "Thank you. It couldn't have turned out better if I had hired a sky writer." Sue and Becky came

back over to the table. Sue had the phonebook and Becky held the magnifying glass. We all smiled happily and lovingly at our partners. Sue sat the phone book down and took off her engagement ring. Then Sue handed it to Becky. Though Sue had already shown Becky the inscription on one of our outings, Becky looked at it again under the magnifier. Becky said, "It's interesting how they can get the lettering so crisp." Then Becky handed them both to Henry as Sue and I beamed grins. Though there was a bit more pride in Sue and I's expression. Henry looked at the ring with a sentimental smile on his face. Becky stood behind Henry, put her hands on his shoulders and the side of her face next to his. Becky also caressed the side of Henry's head a little with her cheek. Which brought a little pleasure to Henry's expression.

Then Henry said, "It's just beautiful." Sue and I both said, "Thank you." I then said, "The inscription isn't very original. I got it from a song by Styx." Henry stopped examining the ring. As he sat the magnifier down, he said with a sentimental smile on his face, "If I ever decide to make an honest woman of my darling, I'll have to come up with something equally nice for her." Becky gave Henry a kiss on his cheek. Then Henry handed the ring over to Sue. Sue took it and said, "Thank you." I said to Henry, "I have no doubt you could come up with something equally nice." Sue stepped closer to me and said as she handed me the ring, "Here ya go darling." I took it and Sue's left hand as Becky and Henry looked on with sentimental smiles on their faces. I said to Sue, "Thank you darling." I then put Sue's ring back on and gave it a light kiss to seal it. (This was what I did the last time Sue let Becky look at her ring. I had told Sue that if she ever took it off when I wasn't around, to remind me to give it a kiss to seal it again) Sue and I then gave each other a loving kiss. Becky and Henry gave each other a loving kiss too.

After everybody parted their kiss, Henry told Becky that he loved her. At about the same time. I told Sue the same thing. Also at about the same time, Sue told me that she loved me too and Becky said the same thing to Henry. This all made us couples give our partners a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue started to go to her seat. Becky and Henry smiled lovingly at each other as Becky went to her chair. As Sue sat in her chair, I took my phone out of my pants pocket. While I looked for a moving company, Sue, Becky and Henry talked a little about

477

how wonderful everything was. I found a moving company and called them. Sue, Becky and Henry all paused their talking and smiled at me as I made arrangements for some movers to come the next day. After hanging up my phone, we happily talked more as we drank our coffee. When we were through, Becky and Henry helped Sue and I pack. Sue also did some laundry as we did so. There was a lot of happy or

pleasant conversation going on as we did so. As usual, occasionally we would laugh about something amusing somebody had said. We also took some breaks for coffee or giving our partners a kiss.

It was later in the day when we had everything all packed up. Sue had also ironed my suits, dress shirts and ties. Then Sue packed them away also. After everything was done that we could do, we ordered ourselves some pizza. We all sat at the kitchen table and talked more. Becky and Henry also were showing each other more love. No doubt they were eager to be alone together. But seeing how Sue and I would be leaving the next day, they weren't about to bail on Sue and I. After the pizza came, we ate and had more happy conversation. When we were through eating, we talked more. About an hour later, Henry suggested to Becky that they should probably get heading out. Becky agreed with Henry's suggestion. After a little more pleasant talk, we got up from the table. Henry went over to the counter and picked up Sue's cable box. We had already asked them if they would drop it off for us at the local cable place. Which Henry happily volunteered to do. Then we went over to the door. Sue and Becky hugged with a bit of sorrowful emotion over parting. They both expressed that they couldn't wait to see each other again. Henry and I looked on with sentimental smiles on our faces.

After Sue and Becky parted, I gave Becky a brief hug and said I would miss her too. Then I shook Henry's hand. We both expressed how great it was to finally meet. Both Sue and I also thanked Henry and Becky again for helping us pack. The movers would be over fairly early the next day. So there was no sense in them seeing us off then. We then bid each other farewell. After the door was closed, Sue and I spoke with a little melancholy at Becky and Henry's departure as we went into the bedroom. There we got undressed and went to the bathroom. Our mood had improved by then. We lovingly helped each other pee again. Then we started to get cleaned up. As always, taking a shower together was a joy. When we were through there, we went to bed. Sue and I's loving and conversation mostly centered around various aspects of how wonderful our lives were going to be together. During this time, Sue and I had regular vaginal intercourse three times. The last time was with Sue on top. After we were through, we remained connected with Sue on top. In this position, we lovingly fell asleep.

The next day, the movers showed up and loaded our things. They were able to tow Sue's car behind their truck. Then the truck left. Sue and I followed it. Until we got to St. Paul. Then we had the truck follow us. Meeting Sue's family in the flesh was nice. They seemed to be very pleased with Sue's selection of me for the guy she would marry. Sue's brothers also seemed to like me. (Eventually, we became good friends) Both Sue and I, for the time being, stayed at Sue's parent's place. They practically lived in a mansion. Sue and I put most of our



things in storage and moved into their guesthouse. About a couple days later, Becky sent Sue a picture. Becky, Henry and Philip were standing next to each other at the restaurant where I proposed to Sue. They must have had a waiter take the picture. All three were all wearing big grins. Though Becky and Henry's were just beaming. In the background, there were some people at other tables. Most of whom at the moment were grinning at them. Becky had her arm stretched out forward with her wrist bent down. On her ring finger was displayed an engagement ring. Sue and I were overjoyed.

Sue called Becky right back. Sue and Becky put each other on speaker phone. Then all of the happy, excited congratulations ensued. Needless to say, Becky and Sue were especially excited. They were still at the restaurant. So I told Henry to give Philip our greetings. And that whatever he planned to give Philip for a tip, to double it. I would pay him back. Henry was so happy, he said that he would quadruple it and for me not to bother. I said in a kidding around voice, "What are you trying to do. Make me look like a pauper to Philip?" This caused us all to laugh. I knew that Henry's grandmother had left him a nice little nest egg. Though I had gotten the impression that he was more well to do than Sue and I were. We must have happily chatted for about half an hour. Apparently, Henry indeed liked the way I had proposed to Sue. Because he did the same thing with Becky. Becky said that she was embarrassed, but oh so happy. Henry had also called ahead and asked that Philip record the event for them like Becky had done for Sue and I. It was all so very romantic. During this conversation, I told Henry that I wanted him to be my best man. Needless to say, this made added to everybody's happiness.

After a couple more minutes of happy conversation, their food came. So after saying that we couldn't wait to see them again, we said our happy goodby's and hung up. A week later, Becky and Henry also moved up and rented a nice apartment. Sue waited for Becky to show up before they, and Sue's mom of course, went shopping for Sue's wedding dress. Sue's aunt also accompanied them. About a week later, Sue had the kind of wedding she deserved. Among the many people who were invited, Sue and I had invited that nice couple responsible for our first kiss, Roger and Connie. We also invited Philip and whoever he wanted to bring as a guest. They were all able to come. Sue's parents had accepted my religious views and the ceremony was performed by a judge that Sue's father was friends with. Apart from living in a really nice place, Sue's father must have been loaded. Because he paid quite a bit for the ceremony and the wedding reception afterwards. Which was no surprise. Because he absolutely adored his darling little girl. At the wedding, Sue looked absolutely stunning. I again wondered how I could have gotten so lucky. Sue and I were both teary eyed as we were wed.

When the ceremony was over, as we left the church, there was the

customary tossing of rice. (Some people think that rice can cause birds stomachs to explode. But it just isn't true) When it came time to open presents at the reception, Becky and Henry's wedding presents were really nice. Sue and I were happy of course when we opened one of Henry's wedding presents. It was a computer tower. Henry said that he was happy that I had bought Becky a nice

479

laptop. He said the one Sue and I were now happy about had mega storage space and computing power. It could of course play any top of the line video game. Becky said it was just in case we wanted to do some serious computing.

Along with the monitor and keyboard, they had also gotten us the biggest flat screen TV they could find. Though the size of the huge, fairly thin, wrapped box leaning against the wall near the gift table pretty much gave away what was inside. Of course, Sue and I were very grateful and happy. The other presents we got were nice. But the most expensive presents came from Sue's father. Because in a very small box, there were a set of car keys! Sue's dad said for what I would be doing, I would need a pick up truck. Sue and I were of course overjoyed. It turned out to be a really nice dark blue Chevy four wheel drive. There wasn't going to be any getting stuck in mud or snow with it.

Sue's dad's other present was just a decorative envelope. Inside were a couple tickets to Hawaii! That was where we were going to be spending our honeymoon! Sue and I were again overjoyed. Though Sue's father did make one small request in return. But it was Sue's mother who he let make the request. She asked that, for the time being, Sue stop taking birth control pills. Because they were both eager to be grandparents. Needless to say, this led to some emotional hugging. The next day, Sue and I left for our honeymoon. It lasted two weeks. We both of course had a wonderful time. We went hiking, parasailing, scuba diving and did other fun things. Not long after we returned from our honeymoon, Sue discovered that she was pregnant. We were overjoyed. Becky and Henry got married a couple weeks after Sue and I's honeymoon. I was the best man. Their wedding was very nice too. Having told them and showing them pictures of Sue and I's honeymoon, Henry decided that they would have their honeymoon there too. It wasn't long after their honeymoon that Becky found out that she was pregnant too.

Both Sue and Becky were also overjoyed that they would have each other for support during their pregnancy. Sue and I put up a sizable deposit on a farm house with some land, a barn and a couple large utility buildings. Sue and I wanted to give Becky and Henry some land adjacent to ours. But Henry insisted that he purchase it. I used the money to buy more land bordering both of our properties. Henry and Becky did the same. We of course had decided that we would be

partners in our organic farming business venture. Becky and Henry had a house built just down the road from us. It was within shouting distance. Becky and Henry stayed with us as their house was built. Henry and I did as much of the work as we could. During the course of which, we became as close as brothers. We made Henry and Becky's place as energy efficient and sustainable as we could reasonably do. After it was built, Sue and I temporarily lived at Becky and Henry's place as we practically gutted our house. Even though they were pretty heavily pregnant, the girls really had fun being let loose with some crowbars. Though Henry and I made sure that they wore respirators and were safe.

It was great having Henry's help remodel the place. Becky and Sue also helped out as much as they could. Henry and I's collaboration on many things made things easier for the both of us. Sue and I also made our house as energy

480

efficient and sustainable as we could reasonably do. Even though it was a fairly large house, we also had an addition built onto it. Along with doing all these things, there was a bit of a steep learning curve involved in learning the farming and animal husbandry we wanted to do. But it wasn't that big of a problem. Sue and Becky were of course a great help in this. In the one building I had, I had it set up for milking cows. In the other building, I set it up to make cheese. Henry had a quite large building built on his property. This nearly cost as much as his house. Its footprint took up over an acre. The bottom floor of it held areas for farming equipment and processing animals. But the rest of it was made to house chickens in a more humane manner than factory farms. There was also a quite large wire coop section behind it for the chickens to enjoy some outside time if they chose to. But the upper floor was really where the rubber met the road. It was a large, hydroponics greenhouse.

Sue's pregnancy progressed well. We were living back at our house when Sue had a little girl. (Though Sue didn't have it at the house of course) Sue decided to name her Beverly. Which seemed like an excellent choice to me. She was the most adorable baby and had platinum blond hair. Which pleased not only Sue and I, but Sue's parents to no end. Sue's mother, Stella, was especially pleased that Sue and I gave little Beverly the middle name of Stella. We mainly just called little Beverly Bevie. Though Sue and I decided when she got old enough, we would just call her Beverly or Bev. Not long after, Henry and Becky had a child too. It was a boy. Though he was blond, he wasn't platinum blond like little Bevie. They named him Nicholas. Though they called him Niki. About a year and a half later, Sue and I had another baby. He was a beautiful boy with platinum blond hair too. Sue and I had already decided that we would name him William. After my mom's ex-boy friend. Who as you know I liked and called

called uncle Bill. We called little William Billy. When he got old enough, we would just call him Bill. Not only were Sue's parents extremely pleased with him too, but Sue's father was also especially pleased that we gave him his name for a middle name. Not long after, Henry and Becky had another child too. It was a little girl this time. They decided to name her Catherine. But they called her Katie. Again, she wasn't quite as blond as little Billy.

Our lives had turned out wonderfully. The business we went into was a little bit of hard work. But it was doing well. The kids of course got along just great. It was nice that if either of us couples felt like being alone together, we could just have each other's kids sleep over at the other's house. Though they often liked doing that anyway. We spent our Christmases at Sue's parent's place. But every day, Sue and I left early to help Henry and Becky take care of the animals we jointly owned. Sue and I just left Bevie and Billy with their adoring grandparents. Both Sue and I had become comfortably settled into our lives. Before Sue and I met, I could never have imagined that my life would have turned out to be so wonderful. Over time, we talked less and less of the mysterious circumstances that brought us together.

## Chapter Twenty One Zem And Bev's Return

481

One morning, Sue and I as usual were sleeping. The sun hadn't quite risen. We were both under our blanket. I was just wearing my underwear. Sue was wearing panties. Over which Sue wore a loose fitting, kind of long, light blue T-shirt. Though Sue and I didn't know it at the time, little Bevie, who was just over four years old at this time, appeared out of nowhere at the foot of our bed. She was holding a slightly larger than normal sheet of paper. It was the kind of art paper Sue had bought her to draw on. A couple examples of Bevie's cute drawing we had on the refrigerator with flowery magnets. Bevie called out in an excited manner, "Mommy! Daddy!" Bevie hopped up on the bed. As she scampered between us, Bevie said, "Mommy! Daddy! Mommy! Daddy!" Waking both of us up a little more. We had a white pet German shepherd dog named Rex. He came to the bedroom door and looked on with a bit of an excited countenance to him. Sue said in a groggy manner, "Bevie!" I said in a groggy manner too, "Bevie! It's too early!" Bevie shook Sue's shoulder and said, "Mommy! Mommy!" Bevie then said in a cute, emphatic manner, "Mommy! Look at the picture I drew!"

Sue opened her eyes and sat up a little. Little Bevie, who was still wearing her pajamas, was grinning from ear to ear. Sue said in a bit of an impatient manner, "Ok. Let me see it." Sue looked at the picture Bevie had drawn casually for a moment. Then Sue's eyes widened and

her mouth dropped open. Sue started to go faint. Sue said, "Erik!" I turned over quickly and sat up on one elbow with concern on my face. Even though Sue seemed to be dazed, Sue managed to hand me the picture. I took the paper and looked at it. I looked at the crudely drawn picture for a moment. Then my eyes widened too. It showed two people without any hair standing next to each other. They were holding hands and smiling. Near them were two children with white hair holding hands. Above the taller figures there were two small black circles in the air above them. There were two little reddish colored animals with tails near them and something that looked like a teddy bear. But the words caused me to start to go faint too. Near the figures was written, "Bevie, Billy, Zem, Bev, Pim, Mim, Panny, Lika, MoMo." All sorts of thoughts rushed into my mind. After a few moments, Sue started to come out of her stupor.

Then Sue said in a bit of a dazed manner, "Bev and Zem!" Little Bevie started to jump excitedly up and down closer to the end of the bed. She was waving her arms a little and turning in circles a little. As little Bevie did so, she was saying excitedly, "Aunt Bev! Uncle Zem! Aunt Bev! Uncle Zem!" (Little Bevie of course didn't pronounce the U when she said aunt) Sue's face started to become overtaken with emotional surprise as she repeated, "Bev and Zem! Bev and Zem!!!" Then Sue shook me a little as tears started flowing from her eyes. Sue repeated herself. The pitch of Sue's words lowered in pitch at the end of what she said as she started to be overtaken with extreme, teary joy and emotion. Sue said, "Oh Erik! It's Bev and Zem!" Rex came over and jumped on the bed in an excited manner. He started licking the both of us. We also had a grey and white cat named cuddles that came to the bedroom doorway and looked at us. Sue started crying uncontrollably as she repeated between sobs, "Oh Erik! It's Bev and Zem!" Little Bevie was still jumping up and down on the bed and

482

saying, "Aunt Bev! Uncle Zem!" I started to return to my senses and said with stunned surprise on my face, "Zem and Bev!"

I then put the picture near the head of the bed and pushed Rex away. As I did so, I said with emotional emphasis in my voice, "Rex! Lay down!" Rex did as I said. Then I looked at Sue and said, "Zem and Bev!" I started to have tears rolling from my eyes too as Sue and I firmly took hold of each other. I said, "It's Zem and Bev!!!" Little Bevie continued to jump on the bed saying, "Aunt Bev! Uncle Zem!" All of a sudden, Zem appeared on my side of the bed with a sentimental smile on his face. Bev appeared on Sue's side of the bed with a sentimental smile on her face. Bev was holding Billy on her side and front a little. Bev was supporting him with one arm under his bottom and her other hand on his lower back. Little Billy had his legs around Bev and his arm around Bev's neck. His other hand he rested on Bev's forearm. He was wearing his pajamas too and looked very

happy. Pim was near Zem. Mim was near Bev. Mav and Til also appeared a little ways from the foot of our bed. They too were smiling sentimentally at us. Both of them stood with an arm around each other's lower backs.

Near them were San and Pam. They were circling around each other's surfaces at differing angles. A few feet away, there was Tal and Sas doing the same thing. All the Nal were their normal black color. Panny and Lika also appeared with Mav, Til and the others. I didn't know it at the time, but they had all appeared at the same time as little Bevie. They just couldn't be seen or heard. As usual, they were all dressed casually, but tastefully. Zem was wearing a dark blue long sleeve shirt. It was a button up shirt. There was a slightly thicker band of material around the collar that laid flat on his shoulders around the base of his neck. Though it exposed slightly more of his lower neck region. The shirt was tucked into a pair of very dark red pants. These were something like jeans. Except just below the black belt he wore, there were two smaller than normal pockets on either side of his zipper. There were two more pockets on the sides of the pants and two more pockets on the back.

Bev was wearing a short sleeve, light blue top that hung just below the tops of a pair of darker blue pants. Bev's top was a little V-necked and showed a bit of cleavage. The fabric of Bev's top was fairly thin, yet made up of what looked like finely woven, half round strands of yarn like material about a half inch across. These ran vertically up her shirt. Though down her shoulders, around the collar and around the bottom of Bev's top, these strands ran in a different direction. About halfway down Bev's sleeves, these strands of material became fully round and weren't connected to each other. These were a few inches long.

Mav was wearing a dark grey pullover shirt. The fabric of it consisted of patterns that were interlocking X's. This fabric was simply hemmed around the collar and bottoms of the sleeves. The sleeves went nearly to his elbows; The collar went around the base of his neck; The bottom of the shirt was tucked into his pants. He also wore a black belt. Though his had a shiny, metallic, dark blue buckle the same width as his belt. It was about five inches long and was molded with an interlocking X pattern. Mav's pants were like blue jeans.

Til was wearing a V-necked, cream colored top. It also showed a tasteful

483

amount of cleavage. The sleeves came down to just below her shoulders. Of the material was made up of, it had shapes like elongated, connected leaves. I would guess these were about three quarters of an inch across and two and three quarter inches long. The bottom quarter of these separated from underlying fabric and curved out from the shirt a little. Where they did so, they took on a little more

of a yellowish hew. Around the edges of Til's top, it was simply hemmed. The bottom of Til's top hung a little below the top of Til's pants. Til's pants were a slightly darker cream colored. They were neatly pressed and the fabric was a little shiny. Just like silk. I won't go into detail, but everybody was wearing appropriate footwear.

After everybody appeared, Rex excitedly went over to Zem. Zem grinned at him and rubbed Rex's head with a little vigor. At the same time, Zem said, "Hi fella!" At about the same time, cuddles went over to Mav and rubbed against his leg. Bev, Mav and Til grinned too. Zem's statement to Rex caused Sue and I to part our teary embrace enough to look at Zem. Bevie said, "Uncle Zem!" Then Bevie scampered over to Zem. Zem stopped petting Rex and let go of the paw that he had tried to put on Zem. Then Zem reached out to Bevie. Bevie jumped into Zem's arms. Zem caught Bevie in his arms said to her with a grin as they hugged, "Hi sweetie!" Panny and Lika jumped up on the bed as they chattered excitedly. They scampered over to Sue and I and excitedly jumped on us. I managed to get out, "Panny!" Sue managed to get out, "Lika!" We were both crying, but unbelievably happy to see them all as I petted Panny and Sue petted Lika. At the same time, Bevie said to Zem with happy excitement, "How did I do uncle Zem!" Zem said, "Just fine sweetie! You didn't say our names until mommy did!" Zem then gave Bevie a quick peck of a kiss on her forehead and then they hugged a little.

While this was going on, Pim levitated down near our night stand. On it, below him, materialized Sue and I's wedding album. On top of which also materialized our Reall made wedding rings and Sue's engagement ring. Also at the same time, Mav briefly bent over to give cuddles a pet. Sue and I both looked at the others with emotional tears of joy streaming down our faces. I said with an emotional voice as I looked at them, "Zem! Bev! Mav! Til!" Sue said with an emotional voice as she glanced at our Nal friends, "And Mim! Pim! Pam! San! Sas! Tal!" I don't know how. But I was able to tell who all of our Nal friends were. Despite their all being their normal black color and looking the same. Which was something I hadn't been able to do before. Zem said, "Hello again. We've been visiting from time to time. But you haven't seen us." Bev said, "Nice to have you back." Pim said in an audible voice, "Glad for you to see us again." Mim said, "We've missed having you know when we were around." Sas said, "Hello dears." Tal said, "Hello again." Pam said, "Hello. I bet Flappy can't wait to see you again." San said, "Hello again. Weem and the other bartok you met had inquired of you." Til said, "You should have seen the look on your faces!" Mav said, "It was worth the wait!"

This caused Zem, Bev, Mav and Til to laugh a little. Our Nal friends also emitted a little telepathic humor. Bevie and little Billy quickly joined in on the laughter, but laughed a little more happily. Sue and I briefly kind of smiled a bit

at everybody. But we were too overcome with emotion to do more. Bev said, "I hope you don't mind us sharing these little darlings." Both Sue and I looked at Bev with tears of joy streaming down our faces. The inner parts of our eyebrows were still upturned a little from the emotional looks on our faces. I said, "Why would we mind!" Sue quickly added, "It's so wonderful!" Still grinning of course, Zem thought to us and said with a sentimental, happy thought, "I didn't want to say anything that would set this little dear off right now. But we're overjoyed that little Bevie has some hug monster in her too." Bev added with the same kind of sentimental, happy thought, "As does little Billy." Sue and I let go of Panny and Lika. Then we embraced each other fully and started to cry more. Even though Sue and I were doing ok, we knew what kind of a shit world we lived in. And that it was likely to only get worse. What this was going to mean for our children was something that Sue and I had agonized over from time to time. Not only was all that now a thing of the past, but Zem and Bev really liked Bevie and Billy!

Zem, Bev, Mav and Til again took on sentimental smiles as Sue and I cried. Though there was a slight hint to them like they were looking at something adorable. Little Billy said to Bev, "Just like you said aunt Bev. Mommy and Daddy are crying happy tears." Bev gave little Billy a brief little extra hug as she said with a happy and sentimental voice, "Yes they are dear." After a few extended moments to try and compose myself a little, I parted my embrace from Sue a little and turned my teary face to Zem. Sue looked at Bev and little Billy with an emotional, happy face. By this time, Zem and Bev were looking at us with wide, sentimental smiles on their faces. I said to Zem as well as I could through the tears of joy, "Why did you wait so long to come for us!" Sue turned to Zem also. Zem grinned and said, "Even though we can do what we want, you know what family planning is on planet Bev." The joy this caused Sue and I was difficult to take! Zem and Bev allowed us to have more than one child of our own! At this point, Panny, Lika and Rex were happily playing a little at the edge of the bed. Though Rex was being gentle with them. Sue and I looked at each other, then tightly embraced each other again.

We cried uncontrollably with utter joy. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til all smiled at us with a little more sentimentality on their faces. They allowed us to cry uninterrupted for a few extended moments. Then Bev said with a sweet, sentimental voice, "There's another reason why we chose now to come back. If you think you can take it." Both Sue and I tried to compose ourselves a little. At the same time, we parted a little to look at Bev. Bev said to Sue and I, "Nobody is going to mind your being exempt from any eugenics program. Especially sense you have already had three children off planet Bev. Both Sue and I said with surprise accompanying over our emotionally joyful faces, "Three children!" Bev said to Sue, "Yes dear. You have another bun in the oven." Sue and I then turned these expressions to each other. We



then embraced each other and started crying more. Bev, as usual, was right. The added joy was almost overpowering. Bev grinned at little Billy and said, "You're going to have another little brother or sister." Billy said, "Oh boy!" He then gave Bev a big hug. Bevie said, "Yeah!" She hugged Zem more too.

After this hug, Zem said to Sue and I, "We're going to leave for a little while. It

485

will give you two some time to adjust to your reawakened memories and compose yourselves. That shouldn't take more than a couple hours. I'm afraid the adventure has just begun for you two." Then Zem said to little Bevie and Billy with an extra happy face, "Who want's to go have some ice cream on a taser!" Both Bevie and Billy said excitedly, "We do! We do!" Little Billy excitedly hugged Bev a little more and little Bevie excitedly hugged Zem a little more. Sue and I again looked at the others with emotional joy. Bev said, "Just give Mim and Pim a think when you're ready to go. They will come for you." Both Sue and I had turned to Bev as she spoke. But all we could manage were some emotional, teary nods in agreement. Bev said, "When you get around to it, there are also some extra pictures in your photo album that may interest you. We'll see you later." Til added with a happy voice, "See ya soon!" Then everybody fairly quickly faded out of existence. They even took Rex with them. No doubt Panny and Lika would be having fun playing around on a taser with him. But they left cuddles behind. I don't know what she would have thought about a taser anyway.

Sue and I fully embraced each other again in our sitting position and cried more. Cuddles also jumped up onto the bed. She rubbed up against us a little and purred. But Sue and I were too preoccupied to take much notice. As if everything else wasn't an overload to Sue and I, I felt my previous love for Sue. After about a minute and a half of our intensely loving, tearful embrace, Sue and I began to adjust more to our new reality. About twenty seconds later, I parted from Sue a little. We both looked lovingly into each other's emotional, teary faces. Though our tears at this point had lessened some. I said with an emotional voice, "I'm so ashamed darling. I thought I loved you as much as I could. But now I love you even more!" Sue said with an equally emotional voice, "I feel the same way my soul! But we're only human. At least we were." Then Sue said with a little less emotional, more questioning voice as she gave cuddles some pets, "Could you sense who our Nal friends were darling?" I said with a little less emotional voice, "Yes my life. I suppose they did a little something with our brains. But I don't feel any smarter."

Then Sue said, "Apart from being able to remember our time with them like it was yesterday, I don't either. Though I remember that in a sort of Nal form, we were able to see most of each other's memories.

But at best, all I have of them are vague impressions. But I remember the love and sensations clearly.” I said, “I suppose they have their reasons.” Sue said, “They’re such dears. Let me try to think something to you.” I said, “Ok darling.” Then Sue thought to me. But I didn’t hear anything. I said, “I didn’t hear anything darling.” Sue said, “I guess they didn’t change our brains that much darling.” I looked at Sue a little more lovingly. Sue did the same with me. Then Sue stopped petting cuddles and we began to kiss each other with a loving tenderness that was more than a match for any loving, tender kiss we ever shared. After about thirty seconds of our kissing and caressing, our kiss began to turn more passionate. We both gave off moans of pleasure as our tongues also caressed each other’s. I also became aroused. After a few extended moments, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. I said with a bit of a shamed edge to my loving voice, “Now I’m ashamed again my

486

heartbeat.” Years ago, I had told Sue this back in her apartment. Because I became aroused while I was feeling love for Sue on a spiritual level. Which somehow, a little bit, seemed to cheapen the spiritual love I was feeling for Sue. For which Sue said that I had nothing to be ashamed of. Remembering this, Sue said, “I think I know why darling.”

Then Sue took cuddles and moved her off the bed. Then Sue took little Bevie’s picture and sat it over on her night stand. Sue then turned back to me and caressed her hand down my body. Sue then took hold of my stiffened appendage through my underwear. Both of us took on more passionate looks as Sue said with a highly loving voice, “I told you before my love that that’s nothing to be ashamed of. And do you remember what I whispered to you on the top patio of Til and Mav’s place?” I said to Sue with a passionate voice as Sue kneaded my penis with her fingers, “Yes I do darling. And you’re going to get it.” We began to kiss each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate as I started to pull up on Sue’s T-shirt. Once I got it up to Sue’s breasts, we parted our kiss and looked at each other with loving emotion. Then I raised Sue’s shirt up more. Revealing Sue’s magnificent breasts. Sue’s nipples had the wonderful appearance of having been used for breast feeding. But apart from that, even after two children, they weren’t any different than they were when I first saw them. After I got Sue’s shirt off, I let it drop off to the side of the bed. As we looked at each other with emotional passion, we both scooted down to a laying position. Then we started to kiss each other passionately. I started to caress off Sue’s panties with one hand and Sue started to caress off my underwear with one of her hands. Both of us raised our hips a little as needed to help each other do so. The round firmness of Sue’s butt was another thing that hadn’t changed. Once our underwear were low enough, we used our legs to

maneuver out of them. Then Sue started to caress my genitals as I caressed one of Sue's breasts. I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We looked at each other with emotional passion again. I said with an emotional, passionate voice, "I love you so much my very being." Sue of course had an emotional, passionate look on her face too. Then Sue said with an emotional, passionate voice as she gently pulled my penis toward her, "I love you so much too my other self." Having gotten on top of Sue, Sue guided my penis to where it needed to go. A look of emotional ecstasy came over our faces as I entered into Sue. Even though Sue had two children, Sue felt as tight as she had what now seemed to be a day ago. As Sue and I made love, we looked into each other's ecstasy filled, emotional eyes.

There wasn't much of the usual, wonderful, statements of love and endearment going on here and there as we made love. Our loving, teary eyes said it all. Every now and then, I would use my lips to scoop up and suck in some of Sue's tears of love. Sue would do the same with my tears of love every now and then. After about a minute and a half, I brought Sue to an orgasm. For the time being, this caused much of Sue's emotional look to go away and be replaced by a look of heightened ecstasy. Sue also gave off cries of ecstasy. After things settled down a bit, an emotional look of ecstasy again came over Sue's face. We continued to drink in each other's love through our teary eyes. Every now and

487

then, as we continued to make love, we would kiss up more of each other's tears of love. Along with everything else, the multidimensional togetherness Pim and Mim allowed Sue and I to experience of each other before we were sent back to earth was part of the reason for our emotional state. Sue and I had never quite made love in such a state. It was beyond anything any human could have experienced. After about a minute and a half, Sue began to approach another orgasm. I knew that because of the overpowering love I was feeling, despite my best efforts, I couldn't last much longer myself. So I decided to join my sweet darling love and speeded up my actions.

About twenty seconds later, both of us gave off cries of ecstasy as we both orgasmed together. After things settled down some, Sue and I fully embraced each other. We nuzzled the sides of our heads together with our teary eyes tightly shut and emotional, loving looks on our faces. Sue said with a little breathless, emotional and passionate voice, "How can you make me so happy darling!" I said to Sue in pretty much the same way, "Oh my everything! Making love with you is just as wonderful as it was years ago!" Sue said with an emotional, loving voice, "Oh my dearest heart!" We then slid our lips toward each other's. Then we started kissing each other passionately. With a little uncomfortable firmness. We also caressed each other fervently. After about thirty seconds or so, our passionate kiss became more

comfortable. Our caresses also became more loving. After about another thirty seconds, I rolled onto my back and pulled Sue along with me. It caused me to slip out of Sue. But it didn't matter. With Sue now on top, I of course used this opportunity to caress more of Sue. We kissed each other for about another minute. Then Sue slowly parted her kiss from mine.

We looked at each other with highly loving looks. Most of our tear causing emotional state had subsided. Sue then caressed my cheek lovingly. I lightly closed my eyes and turned my cheek a little into Sue's hand. At the same time, I put a hand over Sue's and used it to help me nuzzle Sue's palm back with my cheek. Then I moved my face a little more toward Sue's hand and pulled it over my lips. I then kissed the palm of Sue's hand. Then I slid Sue's palm back to my cheek and nuzzled it a little more. I then slowly turned my face back toward Sue. Then I slowly opened my loving eyes as I caressed my hand from Sue's hand to up her forearm. Sue caressed her hand from my cheek and started to caress my shoulder with it. We were of course looking at each other with highly loving looks. I lovingly caressed my hand off from Sue's forearm to her cheek. Then I lovingly caressed Sue's cheek also. Sue lightly closed her eyes and turned into my caress a little. Then Sue caressed her hand off from my shoulder and brought it up to place over mine. Sue then used it to help her nuzzle my palm with her cheek. Then Sue turned her face a little more and used her hand to move the palm of my hand over her lips. Sue then kissed my palm too.

Afterwards, Sue turned her face a little toward mine as she slid my palm back to her cheek. Then Sue nuzzled my palm a little more with her cheek. After that, Sue turned a little more to me and slowly opened her loving eyes. Then Sue caressed her hand from mine and down to my forearm as we continued to look into each other's loving eyes. Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "You're so  
488

wonderful darling." I said with a gentle, loving voice as I caressed my hand from Sue's cheek to the side of her head, "How can you be so wonderful darling. And on your way to making me a daddy again. You make me burst with pride!" Sue said, "Oh my dearest!" We then began to kiss each other passionately again. Knowing Sue, I rolled her onto her back as we did so. So Sue could more freely give me caresses. Which Sue of course did. We kissed for about another minute and a half. Then I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We again looked at each other lovingly. I said lovingly, "I'm so happy there'll soon be more of you to love again darling." Then I got up a little and moved lower on Sue on my hands and knees. Sue said with a highly loving voice, "Oh darling!"

Then I caressed Sue's tummy a little, then kissed it. As I went back to lay on my side next to Sue, I said, "I know it's been a little tough at

times darling.” Sue also turned on her side to face me. As we entwined ourselves in a loving embrace. I added, “You already know what I think darling. But I bet you’ve made Zem and Bev proud too at being such a wonderful mother.” Sue said lovingly, with a bit of appreciation in her voice, “And I bet you’ve made them proud too darling by being such a wonderful father.” I said, “I hope it’s a little girl this time darling.” As Sue caressed me, Sue said, “And I hope it’s a little boy darling.” We started to kiss each other passionately again. We kissed for about another minute and a half. Afterwards, I slowly parted my kiss from Sue. We again looked at each other lovingly. I said with a gentle, loving voice, “Let me get a pillow dearest love.” Sue said gently and lovingly, “Ok darling dearest.” I moved Sue’s pillow for us both to lay our heads on. As we laid our heads on the pillow, we both smiled lovingly at each other. Sue said, “It’s kind of nice not having the kids around to interrupt us.” I said, “Zem and Bev probably know what a handful they can be.”

This caused Sue and I to laugh a little. Afterwards, we were both grinning as Sue said, “But I’m sure they enjoy it.” I said, “I guess we were fooled pretty well with that whole story about being kidnaped by some mysterious government agency for a secret mission.” This caused us to laugh a little. Afterwards, Sue said with some mirth in her voice, “It was a more believable story than the truth!” Which caused us to laugh some more. Afterwards, Sue took on a little more surprised look. I did too as Sue said, “And the pictures of us in that military getup! They changed the look of the forest a little! But that was us in the virtual reality game!” I then said, “And the money! That was the money I asked the maketake machine for before disposing of it! Though I think they threw in a few more valuable coins!” Sue said, “Probably! But still, it’s too bad that you didn’t ask for more!” We both laughed. Afterwards, Sue said, “It’s no surprise, but they also made the coins look used a bit. If people here knew where they actually came from, they would be priceless.” I said, “That worthless hobo who tried to rob me when I got back to earth. It must have been Zem who put the money back into my pocket. I wonder what he did to those guys.” Sue said, “Probably something they didn’t like.”

I said, “Do you suppose they had anything to do with your deciding on Beverly for little Bevie’s name?” Sue said, “I always liked the name Beverly. But I suppose it’s possible. I’ll have to ask Bev later.” Then Sue said, “Maybe we

489

should rename little Billy Zem.” I said, “Being a girl, Bevie might be able to get away with being called Bev when she gets older. But there are a lot of Mexicans who name their boys Jesus. There are also a lot of sand niggers who name their boys Mohammed. Those things would make naming little Billy Zem seem sacrilegious. If that sort of thing happens on planet Bev, I’m going to ask Tal and Sas if they should put

an end to it." Sue gave me an understanding look and a slight nod. Then Sue took on a more somber countenance. I did too. Sue said, "Bev and Zem said that we could save our families. But what are we going to do about Becky, Henry and little Katie and Niki? We can't leave them on this hell hole planet. What are we going to do." I said, "I know. It's like the situation we faced when we asked Zem and Bev about our families. They've already been so wonderful. How can we dare ask for more." Sue said, "All we can do is ask. But I'll be so ashamed." I said, "Me too darling. But we owe it to them to ask."

Sue and I looked at each other for a couple moments with concerned looks on our faces. Then I said, "Maybe things will work out." Then Sue smiled a little. I did too. Sue then said, "Let's look at our wedding album darling." I gave Sue one last loving kiss and said, "Ok darling." Sue and I separated ourselves from our wonderful embrace and we sat up. We took our pillows and repositioned them for us to lean back against. I then reached for our wedding album. Picking it up with our rings on top, I laid it on my lap. Then I picked up my Reall made wedding ring. I held it and my ring hand up to Sue. I then said to Sue with a living smile, "Would you do the honors my love?" Sue said, "Of course darling." As Sue took off my wedding ring, Sue said, "I guess we can keep these things as keepsakes." Then Sue put on my maketake made wedding ring. We smiled at each other lovingly as Sue did so. Then Sue gave it a light kiss to seal it. Sue then held up her ring hand. I took off Sue's wedding ring and engagement ring. I replaced them with Sue's Reall made engagement ring and wedding ring. Afterwards, I sealed them with a kiss.

I then said, "That feels better darling. We're properly married again now." Then Sue and I gave each other a loving kiss. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue then picked up our other wedding rings and turned a little toward the night stand on her side of the bed. Then Sue sat them on Bevie's picture that Sue had put on her night stand. Once Sue was sitting back against the pillow and headboard, Sue took our wedding album, pulled her knees up some and leaned it against her knees. It was the only way for Sue to see it well without Sue's large, pert, succulent breasts getting in the way. I put an arm around Sue. Then Sue opened the wedding album to the first page. The love letter I had written Sue was on the right. I said to Sue, "After all these years darling, your happiness is still like a bright flame in the darkness." We were of course looking at each other lovingly as I added, "And it always will be." Sue said lovingly, "Oh darling!" We then kissed each other with a kiss that was halfway between loving and passionate. After a few extended moments, we slowly parted our kiss and looked at each other lovingly again. Then we turned back to the wedding album.

Sue turned the love letter to the left side of the photo album. The large picture of Sue and I when we were married was on the right. With the planets up in the

sky behind us, this picture was especially beautiful. Sue and I looked at each other lovingly. Sue said, "It's so beautiful darling. And you were so handsome." I said, "You're so beautiful darling. Zem and Bev's wedding arrangement was so wonderful." Sue and I gave each other a loving kiss for a few extended moments. Then we turned back to the wedding album with joy on our faces. Sue turned the page and we looked at the other wedding pictures. One was a page sized picture of Zem and Bev together. Another page sized picture showed Zem, Bev, Sue and I together. We both made some joyful comments about them. Turning the page, there were other smaller wedding photos. Sue and I made loving comments about them and each other as we looked at them. Which brought about some brief but loving kisses before continuing. A few pages in, there was a picture of Sue and I when we first saw each other. Sue was laying on the examination table.

The Reall doctor was paying attention to the instrument he had around Sue's cranium. Even though Sue was looking scared as we looked at each other, it brought tears of joy to our faces. This was the moment I fell in love with Sue. Little did I imagine the depth to which that love would deepen. The back of my head was just in frame. It was appropriately cropped so as to not show too much of Sue's breasts. Another showed a picture from the other side of Sue that showed my face. Even though I was trying to suppress my feelings at that moment, there was still a hint of love in my eyes. Another picture was of when I had just covered Sue. Of course, I remembered telling Sue that if anybody asked me if I had seen anything, I would tell them that I didn't. It was at that point that Sue had said that she fell in love with me. Apparently, Sue had told Bev about this. We lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together a little as I caressed Sue a little more. I lovingly said to Sue, "It was so wonderful darling." We turned to look at each other lovingly as Sue said, "And it got a lot more wonderful darling." We gave each other a loving kiss.

After about twenty seconds, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Then we looked at the picture of Sue and I sleeping in bed on our first morning together. We both were facing each other with our faces close to each other's. Sue and I had our bedspread snuggled around our necks. This picture brought sentimental, loving smiles to our faces. We also lovingly nuzzled the sides of our heads together again a little. Sue said lovingly, "That was a good idea you had darling of making the room chilly." I said, "Thank you my love." The ones of Zem, Bev and Panny dressed as hillbilly's made us laugh. Both Sue and I made some joyful comments about them. Turning the page again, Sue and I came across the new pictures Bev had spoke of. Looking at the pictures made Sue and I lovingly reminisce about them. There were a few too many to go into. One was a picture of Sue and I on the smaller ship. Another was a picture

of Zem, Bev, Sue and I greeting the adoring crowds on planet Bev. A particularly nice one was of Sue and I from behind as we walked nude together down the beach on planet Bev. (Though this was at a bit of a distance) Even though we knew that the Nal weren't snoop, it was nice of them to be aware enough to have taken such an artistic photo.

There were pictures of us all sitting on the beach, swimming underwater and

491

feeding the exotic fish. Sue and I of course made reminiscing, joyful comments about them too. Another particularly fun one was one of Bev and Sue wrestling as they sat on Zem and I's shoulders in the ocean. Turning the page, there was a couple pictures showed us feeding Tucuxi. Another showed Zem, Bev, Sue and I from behind as we sat next to our partners after dinner at Zem and Bev's place. The sunset of course looked beautiful. We were all enjoying the cuddliness of our partners and looking at the sunset. Another picture showed the beautiful scene from the front. It showed part of the beach house and the softly illuminated woods on the other side of the beach. One picture I particularly liked was of me carrying Sue down the trail at night as Sue slept in my arms. Just in frame of the picture, it also showed Pim carrying a sleeping Mim as they held each other with loving tendrils. Turning another page, on the left there was a panoramic, page sized picture of Zem, Bev, Sue and I riding a taser. This picture was from the front and showed the head of our taser. Other tasers were flying at varying distanced and altitudes in the sky behind us.

On the right, there were smaller pictures of Zem, Bev, Sue and I doing so. The next picture after these was from planet Til. It showed the amazing spectacle from behind Zem, Bev, Sue and I as we saw the Tenat rising above the horizon. Another showed Mav and Til in all their playfully showing off glory as they were being borne on a throne by twelve mentally diseased humans. Turning the page, other pictures showed Zem, Bev, Mav, Til, Sue and I feeding animals from the deck. One of these made us laugh. It showed Grabby grabbing one of Sue's breasts. The look of surprise on Sue's face was so adorable. There were pictures of us feeding animals on the ground. One of the pictures showed us flying houks. Turning the page, there were other pictures of us doing so. There were also pictures of us interacting with bartok; feeding and riding multa and our time riding Grabby. (But of course, not of Sue and I having sex on him when we were alone on him) Turning the page, there was a picture of Zem, Bev, Sue and I standing in the hallway back on the Pol-Wim. All of us had surprised looks on our faces. It was when we were told of Mav and Til's surprise.

But the next picture caused emotional expressions came over our faces again. Our eyes also welled up with tears. It showed a closeup of Zem and Bev in the examination room. It must have been before



they had sent us back to earth. Zem was holding one of Bev's shoulders from the side and another from around her back. They were both grinning widely. Bev was holding up a softly glowing yellow Mim up as she sat on Bev's palm. Pim was close by and softly glowing orange. Bev was closely pointing at Mim with her other hand. Below the picture, there was some printed words. It said, "Mim is taking care of a little Bevie zygote for you inside her." Sue and I looked at each other with tears starting to flow down our cheeks. I said with an emotional voice, "You did get pregnant darling!" Sue let go of the wedding album and we embraced each other. Sue said, "Oh darling! It's so wonderful!" Sue and I tearfully embraced for about a minute. Then I said with a loving voice, "We're going to have to get that one blown up like some of the others!" Sue and I parted our embrace and looked at each other with emotional, joyful looks. Then we went back to looking at the photo album.

Another picture made Sue and I laugh. Which was obviously the point of it.

492

But it wasn't the picture that made us laugh. It was what was written below it. It was a picture of Sue and I hugging each other on the couch in Sue's apartment. As you remember, I was wearing the pajamas Sue had given me and Sue was wearing her nighty with her robe over it. This was just after Sue and I declared our love for each other. Below the picture, it said, SUCCESS!" Another picture made Sue and I laugh even more. It was at the church where we got married on earth. Zem, Bev, Mav and Til were standing behind the altar. They were all dressed in wedding finery. Apparently, they had made themselves invisible in all other respects. Near them were Pim, Mim, San, Pam and Tal and Sas. Both Bev and Til were standing near each other. Bev was holding Panny and Til was holding Lika. They were laughing at Zem and Mav. Zem and Mav were standing a little farther away and farther apart from each other. Mav was looking at Bev and Til as he laughed with an extra amused expression on his face. He was also pointing at the crucifix on the wall. As Zem looked at the girls, he was holding his nose with a disgusted look on his face as he was giving a shoving away, wave gesture with his other hand at the crucifix.

Sue and I looked at each other and shared in each other's laughter. Then Sue said with a mirth filled voice, "Those guys are so funny!" I said with a mirth filled voice, "They sure know how to have fun!" We chuckled a little then went back to looking at the pictures. Another picture showed Sue and I getting married. One was from the audience side. It showed Zem, Bev, Mav, Til, Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas in the background. They were standing off to the right side a bit. Our Nal friends were in contact with their partners. No doubt they were circling the surfaces of their partners at differing angles. Panny and Lika were laying on Zem and Mav's shoulder with a tail around their necks. Zem

and Bev had an arm around each other's lower backs. Mav and Til were doing the same thing. They all had sentimental smiles on their faces. Even Panny and Lika had happy expressions on their cute little falik faces. Another picture showed Sue and I getting married from behind the judge that married us. This picture made us both happy. Even though this wedding didn't mean nearly as much to Sue and I as the wedding Zem performed, no photographer took a photo from this angle. Sue and I were looking at each other lovingly and teary eyed. It was nice to see our families in the background.

Yet another picture showed Bev and Til holding a newborn Bevy in our nursery with their grinning faces close to the baby. Mav was standing next to Til with a hand on her far shoulder. Zem was standing next to Bev with a hand on her far shoulder. They were grinning too. Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas were also in the photo. Though Pim and Mim were a little closer to Bevie. They were looking at what I assumed to be a spare Nal that had taken the picture. Bev and Til held little Bevie up in that direction too. There was a similar picture (But a little more close up) of Bev and Zem doing the same thing. Though only Pim and Mim were also present in this picture. Other pictures showed basically the same thing going on with little Billy. Sue and I looked at each other again with tearful joy. Sue said, "Oh darling!" I said, "Oh my love!" Then we went back to looking at the pictures. Turning the page, there were a couple photos that were especially surprising. Sue looked at them and said, "Oh darling!" One showed

493

Sue as a child in the back of a suv. Sue was with her two brothers. Sue's brothers looked surprised. But Sue was crying.

There was a buffalo sticking its tongue through a partially opened back window, trying to get at some french fries. Though it didn't look like a fully grown buffalo, it was still pretty big. The other picture showed Sue's parents from the back seat. They were turned around a little and looking at what was going on. Sue's mom had a bit of a surprised look on her face. Though Sue's dad had a bit more of an amused look on his. Sue said, "Mim and Pim must have went back in time to take these!" Sue and I looked at each other with expressions of surprise and joy for a moment. Then we went back to looking at the pictures. Other pictures were various pictures of the kids birthday parties. Zem, Bev, Pim and Mim were also in the pictures. Zem and Bev were dressed casually, but nicely. They were smiling as they all stood off a little ways. Sue and I of course could clearly remember these moments. But just like our earth wedding, neither of us saw them. Turning the page again, it showed pictures that must have been taken more recently.

Surprised, happy and emotional looks came over Sue and I's faces. Tears were still falling down our cheeks every now and then. We had to blink our eyes now and then to clear our vision from the tears. Sue

and I already knew that apparently little Bevie and Billy knew what tasers were. But neither Sue or I knew to what extent Zem and Bev had been sharing them with us. A couple of the pictures showed Zem and Bev with the kids. They were all smiling while riding a taser. There was another picture of Zem, Bev, Mav and Til with Bevie and Billy. It must have been taken at the mud themed amusement park Zem and Mav mentioned. Because they were all wearing beach clothes and they were covered with mud. All of them were grinning. Also, floating about in the photo, were Pim, Mim, San, Pam, Tal and Sas. They were all muddy too. Sue and I knew it must have been because they wanted to be. But what surprised us even more was that who I assumed to be the Firume couple, Fillok and Keekay, were with them in another photo.

Little Bevie was embracing Keekay from the side. They were all grinning. Near them was who I assumed to be a couple Firume Nal. They were a little larger than the Reall Nal and were muddy too. Sue and I looked at each other with emotional, happy surprise. Sue said, "They must be Fillok and Keekay!" We looked back at the picture as I said, "It's so wonderful!" After a couple moments, Sue said, "Bev and Zem must have been making little Bevie and Billy forget these things!" I said, "I'm sure it didn't cause them any harm. But they're obviously not forgetting anymore!" After joyfully looking at these pictures, Sue turned the page. There was no telling what wonders would be revealed. There was a piece of paper here on the right with writing on it. I could just make out that there was a picture under it and more writing on the other side. On the paper, it said, "Before you look under this paper, even though you will be tempted to do otherwise, you must keep this picture secret for now." Sue and I briefly looked at each other with surprise. Then we turned back to the photo album. Sue took the paper and turned it to the other side of the photo album.

Both Sue and I's mouths dropped open with surprise. It was a picture of Becky

494

and Henry sleeping together! It was just like the one Sue and I had of just before we woke up on our first morning together when we were on the Pol-Wim! Their faces were close to each other's with their blanket snuggled up around their necks. On the other side of the paper, it read, "Til and Mav had to have a pair of humans for their own. Bev" Sue and I turned our astonished, joyful faces toward each other. Sue and I then embraced each other. Sue said, "Oh darling! It's so wonderful!" I said, "I know! And now we don't have to plead for them!" Sue and I embraced for a few extended moments. Then we parted enough to look into each other's joyful faces. Sue and I then got back into picture viewing position and looked at the picture of Henry and Becky again. I said, "Mav and Til must have made their room cold too!" Sue said, "They must have thought it was an unusual

request.” Then Sue and I turned happy, but thoughtful expressions back to each other.

Sue said, “I wonder how much of what we went through they had them go through too?” I knew what Sue was talking about. That virtual reality battle with the Gitak. Then I said, “I know one thing I hope they didn’t go through.” We gave each other a somber nod. Then we went back to looking at the pictures. Which lifted our mood again. After doing so for a couple moments, Sue and I again turned joyful expressions back to each other. Sue said with some excitement in her voice, “I don’t know when Mav and Til plan to make their memories come back! But we have to be there to see it!” We both beamed grins. I said with a little excitement in my voice, “I’m sure they’ll let us!” Sue said, “They must have been told to tell some kind of cover story too! Boy am I going to tease Becky for lying to me!” This caused us to laugh. Afterwards, I said with an amused tone to my voice, “But we lied to them too!” This caused a little more laughter. Afterwards, Sue said, “Let’s see what else is in here!” We eagerly turned back to the photo album with grins still on our faces. Sue then turned the page. On the right, there were two blank pictures. To the left, there was a piece of paper with writing on it.

It said, “These next two pictures will respond to your touch only. They can be shown to Becky and Henry if you must. But only because they have similar pictures of their own. They must not be shown to or discussed with any other human. Bev” Sue and I looked at each other with astonished looks. These pictures must really be something! Sue and I turned back to the photo album. Both Sue and I touched the bottom of each photo. The pictures they revealed were so beautiful, so wonderful, that we started crying again. The one picture showed Bev sitting in our nursery chair with little baby Bevie in her arms and cuddles laying on her lap. Nearby, Zem was sitting on the floor with Panny, Lika and Rex. Zem was petting Rex. Lika was laying near Rex’s head. Panny was laying on Rex. Pim and Mim were up near the ceiling next to each other. Bev had one of her breasts exposed from a partially unbuttoned, loose fitting top. And Bev was breast feeding Bevie! Bev was looking at baby Bevie with a gentle, loving smile. I wasn’t surprised that Bev had the ability to make herself lactate. No doubt it was something that Zem enjoyed as well.

The other picture showed pretty much the same sort of thing. In this picture, Rex was laying partially across Zem’s lap. Panny was laying on Zem’s shoulder

495

and Lika was laying on Rex. Sitting in the chair, Bev was breast feeding little baby Billy! Here also, Bev was looking at baby Billy with a contented, loving smile on her face. It was clear what Bev meant about not showing or discussing these photos with any other humans besides Becky and Henry. For any humans on planet Bev, for them to

know that Bev had actually breast fed Bevie and Billy would cause humans there to practically worship our kids. Which wouldn't be good for their upbringing. This further confirmation that Bev and Zem loved our children was so wonderful, it was difficult to take! Sue and I fully embraced each other as we cried. As we did so, Sue said through sobs of joy, "Oh darling!.. How can they be so wonderful!" I said through my sobs, "Oh darling!.. I love them both so much!" Sue and I must cried tears of joy as we embrace for about five minutes. Afterwards, Sue and I parted enough to look into each other's tear moistened, emotional, joyful faces.

I said, "Are those the last ones darling?" We turned back to the photo album. Sue turned the page. But there were no more pictures. Sue said, "I guess that's all." Then Sue and I turned our emotional, joyful faces back to each other. I said, "Let's get cleaned up darling. I know some wonderful Reall and Nal who deserve some serious hugging and kissing!" Sue said with the same emotional, joyful expression on her face, "The faster, the better!" We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. Then Sue sat the photo album nearer to the end of the bed. We both then got out of bed on the same side. I said, "See you in a few darling." Sue said, "Ok darling." We then gave each other another brief but loving kiss. Then Sue and I headed toward different bathrooms. It was our custom to go to different bathrooms to do our toilet things. Then I would meet Sue in the master bathroom. Where we would get cleaned up together. When I was through in the bathroom, I pressed the button on the intercom for the master bathroom. I said, "Let me know when you're ready darling." Sue came back after a few moments and said, "Ready my love."

Then I went to the other bathroom. As Sue and I got cleaned up, we were just bursting with joy. We also discussed all sorts of things about what happened before and after we came back to earth. Such as somebody implanting Sue with the false memory of her being pulled over by cops just before our supposed secret government mission. Though Sue of course remembered what really happened now. Another of the many things Sue and I discussed was the wonderful thing that Pim and Mim let Sue and I experience. Which brought about some loving comments and passionate kissing. While we were showering, we continued to talk about too many things to go into. Though at one point, Sue held me in a loose, loving embrace. I held Sue also as Sue said with a highly loving voice, "Remember darling when you said that you couldn't wait for me to get sick. So you could baby, pamper and comfort the hell out of me?" I caressed Sue a little more and said with a highly loving voice, "I remember darling." Sue loving caressed the side of my wet head and said with a gentle, loving voice, "Even though you didn't remember saying it darling, when I caught a cold that one time, you were true to your word."

I said with the same kind of loving voice, "You did the same with me my love those two times I caught a cold." Then I took Sue's hand from the side of my

head, brought it to my lips and kissed the palm of Sue's hand. Then I moved Sue's hand and placed her palm over my heart as a look of loving emotion came over my face. My eyes started to well up with tears. Sue's did too. Though it was hard to tell. Because we were both wet from the shower. I said, "The way you insisted that I stay in bed darling and did my chores for me." I said with a little more emphatic expression of emotional love on my face, "You filled me with so much love and pride my life." Sue said with an emotional voice, "Taking care of my family is what I live for darling love." I released Sue's hand and fully embraced my sweet darling love. Sue fully embraced me too. I said with a highly emotional voice, "How can I deserve somebody so wonderful!" Sue said with a tearful, emotional voice, "How can I deserve somebody so wonderful darling!" After a little embracing and caressing, Sue said, "I love you so much darling!" I said, "I love you so much too darling!" Sue and I caressed and nuzzled a little more. Then we kissed each other passionately. Though we didn't do it for too long. Because unlike a Reall shower, our hot water wouldn't last forever. After our kiss, Sue and I went back to showering.

While we did so, Sue and I also discussed that the reason Henry and Becky's kids weren't platinum blond too (at least for the time being) was that it may have seemed suspicious. This led to a little more talk about how wonderful our alien friends were. At another point, Sue said, "For the few minor disagreements that we've had, I wish we would have remembered what Bev said about a candle session." I said, "Even without the incredible wisdom of our alien friends, we came through our little difficulties well enough. There were also a couple times where it would have been helpful for us to have a less intimate, friendship candle session with Henry and Becky." Sue said, "That could have been helpful." Then Sue looked at me more lovingly. I did the same with Sue. Sue added with a loving voice, "But at least between us darling, I don't think we'll have any need in the future for a candle session." I said with a loving, slightly more emphatic voice, "I definitely don't think so, home of my heart." This made Sue's eyes glaze over with love. Mine did too. Then we began to kiss each other passionately again. With plenty of loving caresses over each other's wet bodies. After we were through showering, we dried off and did our hair. To varying degrees, we continued to talk lovingly or happily. Depending on whatever it is that we talked about. When we were through, we went back into the bedroom and put on some cloths. Of course, I helped Sue fasten her bra. For the rest of our lives, it would continue to be something Sue would never have to with me around. Afterwards, I embraced Sue from behind. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with loving looks on our faces. I said lovingly, "You're such a dream my love." As we lovingly nuzzled our cheeks

together, Sue said lovingly, "You'll always be my dream darling." After a few extended moments of this, we released each other enough for Sue to turn in my embrace. Then we kissed each other lovingly as we caressed each other more. After about a minute of this, we slowly parted our kiss and smiled lovingly at each other. Sue said with a gentle, loving voice, "Let's finish getting dressed darling." I said, "Ok my love." We gave each other a brief peck of a kiss, then parted. Then we went back to getting dressed.

497

I won't bore you with what we put on. But our clothes were nice, yet appropriate for taser riding. Sue also put on a tiny bit of makeup at her vanity. After we were through, Sue picked up our photo album and put it on a shelf. We could pick it up later. Then Sue and I put an arm around each other's lower backs as we grinned at each other. I said, "Would you care to think to Pim and Mim darling?" Sue said, "Ok darling." We gave each other a brief but loving kiss. After parting, Sue and I continued to grin at each other as Sue thought to Pim and Mim. Sue and I heard Mim's thoughts in our minds. She said, "Ok. We'll be there in a moment." Even though Sue and I had become used to it, it was still incredible that our friends could cross millions, perhaps billions of light years so quickly. About three or four seconds later. Pim and Mim appeared. A little more off to the right side of our bedroom, there also appeared exact replicas of Sue, myself and little Bevie and Billy. The replicas were grinning at Sue and I and wearing the same kinds of clothes as we usually wear. They were all also holding hands. Even though Sue and I had seen Nal make replicas of us before, it and the addition of Bevie and Billy still caused a bit of a surprised look to come over our faces. Pim then spoke. Sue and I turned to Pim and Mim as he said verbally, "These are just maketake Nal that we will be controlling with a tiny sliver of our consciousness." As Sue and I grinned, Mim said, "Pim and I will be you two. Tal and Sas will be little Bevie and Billy." Sas-Bevie said with Bevie's voice, "Playing the role of Bevie and Billy will be a bit of a challenge. But it will be great fun." Sue and I had turned our grins to Sas-Bevie as she spoke. Then we turned our grins back to Pim and Mim. Sue said, "Are you sure that nobody will be able to tell the difference?" Mim said, "Knowing this time was coming, rather than just read various aspects of what is in your minds, we simply monitored all of your communications with others." Pim said, "It also gave us the opportunity to keep an eye on you two to make sure you remained safe. Except for what you may do when you're being intimate, not even you could tell the difference." This caused Sue and I to smile sentimentally at them, with a little appreciation also showing on our faces.

I said, "Before we go. We're so grateful for what you let Sue and I

experience.” Sue then added, “And what you did with our little Bevie zygote!” Then Sue held up her hands to Pim and said, “You guys get loved first!” I also held up my hands to Mim. They became fuzzy and came to us. Sue and I brought them to our faces and started peppering them with kisses. The replicas grinned at the scene, then grinned at each other for a few moments. Then they turned sentimental smiles to us. While this was going on, Sue started caressing and nuzzling Pim’s against her cheek. I did the same with Mim. Both of us had our eyes lightly closed with highly sentimental smiles on our faces. Sue said to Pim with a highly sentimental voice, “You’re both such dears!” Pim said to Sue with a sentimental voice, “I envy Sas and Tal for the time you will spend together on planet Bev.” I said to Mim with a sentimental voice, “I guess what you did makes Bevie a little bit yours too!” Mim said to me with a sentimental voice, “I would like to think of Bevie as a tiny bit mine.” After a few extended moments of giving Pim and Mim some love, Sue and I parted our nuzzling and exchanged Pim and Mim. Then I nuzzled and caressed Pim against my cheek. Sue gave Mim a few

498

quick pecks of a kiss and did the same. Both of us again had our eyes lightly closed with sentimental, appreciative smiles on our faces. I said to Pim with an appreciative and sentimental voice, “Is there any end to how wonderful you guys are?” Pim said with a sentimental voice, “We try to be.” Sue said to Mim with the same kind of voice, “I just love the thought of little Bevie having been inside you too!” Mim said with a sentimental voice tinged with a dash of humor, “You did all the hard work.” This caused Sue and I to chuckle. Pim and Mim emitted telepathic humor. Pim-me, Mim-Sue, Sas-Bevie and Tal-Billy also chuckled a little. Sue and I briefly grinned at them. By this time, Sas-Bevie was holding and petting cuddles. Who had come back around when everybody showed up. Then Sue and I held Mim and Pim away from our faces. We held them cupped a little in the palms of our hands as we grinned at them. Sue said to Mim, “Erik and I could sense who all you dear Nal were. How did that come about.” Mim said, “It was just a little modification to your minds. We did the same for little Bevie and Billy. But don’t worry. It won’t hurt them. Though we still like to be colorful for them at times. What we did for you all is about at the limit in that regard as to what a human mind is capable of.”

I said to Pim, “When you let Sue and I experience a little of what it was like to be a Nal just before you brought us back, Sue and I sort of remember, at least to some extent, that we had access to each other’s memories. But we can’t remember those any more. Why is that.” Pim said, “It isn’t necessary for you to remember. Even now, there are probably things about each other that you may not know. We wouldn’t want to deprive you of the fun of discovering them on your own.” Mim then said, “Besides, you will remember them someday.” Pim said, “I’m



sure you have about a zillion questions you would like to ask. But Zem and Bev would probably enjoy answering them. As would Mav and Til." After Pim spoke, Sue turned her grin back to Mim. Sue said to Mim, "Before we go, could you do something with our hair?" Mim said, "Sure." Mim and Pim levitated out of our hands and began to retract their fur. Sue and I lowered our hands and took hold of each other's hand. Pim said, "Stand just slightly farther apart please." While Sue and I still held each other's hand, we did as Pim asked.

Pim started to do a circle around my head at about six inches. Mim did the same with Sue. Underneath them, our hair turned platinum blond. After they did their thing, Sue and I happily grinned at each other. Sue again looked even more like an angelic, super fine ultra goddess than she did before. Pim said, "Are you ready? Everybody is chomping at the bit for our return." Mim said, "But prepare yourselves. No doubt you are going to be amazed when we get there." Sue and I looked at each other with open mouthed looks of surprise mixed with anticipation. I hoped they would take it easy on us. I didn't know how much more "amazing" I could take! After a couple moments, we turned these expressions to Pim and Mim. Then Sue and I beamed wide grins. I said with a bit of excitement in my voice, "I'm ready!" Sue said with a bit of excitement in her voice, "Me too!" Pim and Mim then said at the same time, "Ok. Here we go." We then fairly quickly faded out of existence.

The End

499

Postscript

As things turned out, Mim wasn't kidding when she cautioned Sue and I to prepare ourselves for some amazement. Sue and I were to experience other things that were equally as amazing as anything we had yet experienced. Even more so in fact. And having the children along only added to the joy. I hope you enjoyed Sue and I's story. It's too bad that you'll probably not be hearing any more of it. Because even though I made the first book available for free on a number of web sites, not very many people seem to be interested in it. Which means that there is unlikely to be much money for the sale of this book. That money I wanted to donate to a worthy charity. Oh well. Though probably the main thing people didn't like about the first book was the politically incorrect views it states at times. As it does in this book. But reality is what it is. Also, for humans on earth, fantasy usually trumps reality. There are also billions of people who will actually pay money to be lied to by experts in lies. This is bad for too many reasons to list. But one is that, like a Ponzi scheme, the lies that matter require ever increasing lies to sustain themselves. As you

know, this won't end well. At least you know that deep out in space, humanity will survive and thrive.

Just in case you're interested, I am including a translation of the bartok words I've mentioned in this book.

Ak - Thank (Or thanks)	Hayme - Love	Rega - Danger
Deg - Great	Heep - Weapon	Si - We
Em - Take	Hof - Rise	Seech - Together
Fi - Look	Hoot - From	Ta - I
Flig - Sick	Hult - Safe	Terat - Brave
Fon - Go	Kata - Food	Ub - Good
Fucose - Understand	Keem - Little	Ubly - Goodby
Ga - For	Ly - By	Wal - Drink
Gias- Eat	Nag - No	
Glat - Much	Otal - Up	
Guah - Strong	Ohem - Rest	









